



WYCLIFFITE MANUSCRIPT *The New Testament* ENGLAND, 1400-1450 BRIDWELL LIBRARY Octavo



Jesus is  
in the



Peſert Joſeph<sup>h</sup> meridiente dno egipti non fuiſſe templū ī egipto in q̄ nō cadert ꝛ cōfingent aliq̄ idola, inq̄ eſſa-  
meret egipti ꝛ cōmouebūtur ſimulacra eiꝝ  
aliq̄, antea tñ rex p̄hiraan<sup>h</sup> Aſſim ꝛ ſb<sup>h</sup> p̄ſſe dñs  
ꝛ ſolomā neceat pueros, anteaſ iohēnē  
ꝛ iacobolā ꝛ negos herodis magni  
ꝛ grippa iacobū clauden<sup>h</sup> in carcere petriū

Here bigynen ve newe testamēt

**T**hen of Jewerie *plagi on mact*  
born as he is putt first i orde.

So first he wrote the gospel in ierusalem  
his language / whos clepis to god was  
fro purplicants dedis / he takige bi  
fore. the bigynnyngis of twayne. A  
brahm & dany in genacioun of eit.  
of oon was abrahm of the which the  
firste circucioun was in flesch / of  
anof dany whos elecioun was after  
herte / of bope fadris forlofe eit was  
born / & so the noumber of fourtene yeres  
putt. he streechige forp the bigyn  
nyng. fro the fey of bileuynge was  
in abrahm into the tyme of chesling  
was in dany / & dreslyng fro chesling.  
anoon into the day of tynnyngcioun / &  
dyllyng fro the day of tynnyngcioun.  
anoon into eit. he shewep the genaci  
oun of the comyng of eit / fulfild euer  
passinge in reuynge was he makige god  
od bove to the noumber & to the tyme bo  
the shulde shewe hi self what he we  
re / and in hym self mynistrige the  
werk of god. also in hem whos kyn  
rede he putte of shulde not denye  
the witnesse of eit / wordyng fro the  
bigynnyng of alle. whiche yis the  
tyme the ordre the noumber the dispo  
sicioun of the reison is was eit is god /  
that is necessaie to the fey the whi  
ch was maid of anbowman maid vn  
der laue. born of a mayde sustre  
in flesch al yis fithid the croll  
was the oucomynge fulke yis in hi  
self rplige in body bove the name  
of the fader in fadris to the sone. &  
the sones name to the fader. restoi  
ge in sones wyoute bigynnyng. wy  
oute endyng. shewynge the fader.

to be oon wir hi for he is oon in ve is  
hich gospel it is profitable to me de  
sirige god so to knowe ye furste ye  
mydmette of ye laste y<sup>e</sup> pei redige  
bi alle pigis vnderstonde bove ye  
depig of ye apostle & ye werk of ye  
gospel & ye loue of god kēynge i fle  
uith and pei bi knowe in hym in pe wh  
ich pei ber knowe & desir<sup>e</sup> to knowe  
to us forlofe it was to studie of pre  
yngs bove to take ye feir of pig do.  
& not to be stille to mē sechige bish  
liche ye ordynance of god wordhige  
to be vnderstonde // *Here endy pe*

prolog: & bigynner ve gospel of matth<sup>in an</sup>

He booke of ye / **C. p.**  
 generatiō of ihū  
 c̄t: ye sone of dauid  
 ye sone of Abrahā. **A**  
 brahā gedide oz bigat. **A**

ac **Maac** forlore bygant **Jacob** **Ja**  
**cob** forlore bygant **Judas** **J** his  
 bypwe **Judas** forlore bygant **pha**  
**res** **J** zaram of thamar **fares** for  
 lore bygant **elrom** **Elrom** forlo  
 re bygant **aram** **Aram** forlore  
 bygant **amnadab** **Amnadab** fo  
 lore bygant **naison** **Naison** for  
 lore bygant **salmon** **Salmo** forlore  
 bygant **booz** of **raab** **Booz** forlore  
 bygant **obeth** of **ruth** **Obeth** forlo  
 re bygant **ielle** **Jelle** forlore bygant **da**  
 uir **pe** **Epug** **Wamy** forlore **re** **Fig**  
 bygant **salomon** of **p** **woma** **p** was  
 vries **wyf** **Salomo** forlore bygant  
**roboam** **Roboam** forlore bygant **ab**  
**as** **Abias** forlore bygant **ala** **Ala** for  
 lore bygant **jolophath** **Jolophath** forlo  
 re bygant **iozam** **Ioram** forlore bygant  
**olias** **Olias** forlore bygant **ioathan**  
**ioathan** forlore bygant **achaz** **Achaz**







ego promitto ille dabit.

I waulthe you i watir into penaunce  
 but he rat that come after me. is fir  
 onger ran J. whos schoon I am not  
 worin to ber / he that baptise oz etne  
 zon in ye hooly god <sup>thru his</sup> / fier / whos wif  
 newis <sup>James iudic</sup> doy oz fan i <sup>his</sup> hand. & he  
 that fully <sup>certan</sup> dense his corn flooz / & that  
 gader his <sup>elabor</sup> where ito his berne. but  
<sup>malis</sup> chaits he that beene wif fier vnque  
nable oz p'neue that be quenched

I pāne ihe cam fro gahile into Jorda  
 to John: for to be cētened of hyȝ / sove  
 li John forbeed hyȝ & seide / I owe for to  
 be cētened of pec: & you comest to  
 me: / forsoþe ihū answeride: & seide  
 to hyȝ / suffr now / for so it bitomeȝ  
 us to fultille al riȝtfulnesse / pāne  
John leet hyȝ or suffride hyȝ / forsoþe  
 ihe was cētened & they up andō fro  
 þe water / and lo hevenes were o  
 penid to hyȝ: & he sez þe spirit of god  
 comȝe doū as a culuer: & comȝ  
 ge on hyȝ / & lo a voȝs fro hevenes:  
 heyringe / þis is my loned sone: i wh  
 ch I haue plesid to me // *am. m.*

**A**nne <sup>the churche</sup> ~~the~~ was led of a spi-  
 rit into <sup>to churche</sup> ~~desert~~: p<sup>r</sup> he schul-  
 de be teiptid of pe deynl & whā  
 ne he hadde fastid fourty day-  
 es. & fourty nyghtis. <sup>he f. m. p. cocke like a myghte</sup> afterward  
 he hūgride / & pe tēpter <sup>came myght</sup> cam myz-  
 & seide to hym / if thou art godis sone.  
 sepe p<sup>r</sup> ves stoones be maid loies.  
 which answeride & seide to hym / it  
 is writū / amā hūney not ī breed al-  
 doone: but in every woꝝ pat comer  
 forþ fro pe mowþ of god. pāne pe  
 deynl took hī into an hooly citee: &  
 settide hī on pe pyṇacle <sup>tabernacle</sup> of pe tem-  
 ple & seide to hī / if p<sup>r</sup> art godis so-  
 ne: leude p<sup>r</sup> doun for it is writū for  
 to his angelis he comaūdide of pee.  
 & pei schulen take pee in hondis.

leet peramētur p' herte p' foot at  
 a doon; eftloone hi seide to hy; it is  
 wēntū; p' iſhalt not tēpce p' low god;  
 eftloone pe deuyſ took hi into a ful  
 hūz hūl. & iſherēde to hym alle pe reu-  
 mes of re word. & pe glorie of hem;  
 & seide to hy; alle pes vīgīs i ſchal  
 zīne to pee; if v' falle doū & wozū  
 pe me; pāng iſe seide to hi; go lūda  
 nas for it is wēntū; pou iſhalt woz  
 iſhpe p' low god; & to hi p'loone p'  
 iſhalt ſerue; pāne pe deuyſ leſte hi  
 and lo ang'ſ camen mīz; & leuēde  
 to hi. **S**orely wāne iſe hadde be-  
 rd. p' iohn was takē; he wente into  
 gahle; & he leſte pe citee of naſherēn;  
 & cam & dwelte in pe citee of caſar  
 nān biſhpe; pe se; in pe endis of ſabu-  
 lon & neptalym; p' it iſhulde be  
 fulk iſlid; pat was leid by iſayre pe  
 pfete; pe lond of ſabulon & pe lond  
 of neptalym; pe weye of pe ſee; o  
 jordan; of gahle of heyen me; pe pe  
 ple p' walk iſe i der kuellis; hīz gret  
 liſt; and while mē ſaten i pe ciit;  
 of iſſagebe of deey; hīz roos to hē  
 fro pēns for iſe bigan to p'edye  
 & ſey; do ze penānce; for ze hūdo  
 of heuenes iſhal come mīz. **S**ore  
 ly iſe walk iſe biſydis pe ſee of ga-  
 ile; & hīz twey brūpen; s' monit pat  
 is clepid petre; & andzeis hīs brof;  
 puttige nett into pe ſee; for pei ve-  
 re fīſheris; & he seide to hem; co-  
 me ze aſar me; & iſſhal waſe you  
 to be mad fīſheris of mē; & ando  
 pei forloken her nettis; & ſneden  
 hym; & he zede fory fro p' place; &  
 s'z tweyne ope brūpen; james of  
 ſebete; & iohn hīs brof; in pe iſchp;  
 wīp ſebete her ſadn; mak iſe azen  
 oz beet iſe hor nettis; & he depite hē  
 ſopeh ando pei forloken pe nettis

apti vocati sūt pmo i simplice noticia sol: deinde  
in unitate lucis. tercio i aptatū h 2 me 10

⁊ þe fadir ⁊ sūede hī and ihc eyn  
 rolynete al galilee techyge in re  
 synagoge ⁊ heru ⁊ ptechyge þe  
 godel of kyngdom ⁊ heelige al  
 soons oz acte. ⁊ al sykenesse i þe  
 people ⁊ his opymon oz fame wen  
 te into al iurie ⁊ rei bronzte to hi  
 alle mē haunȝe þuel tak i wip  
 dynerle sorwis ⁊ turmetris ⁊ he  
 pat hadde deuels. ⁊ lnnatyk mē  
 ⁊ mē in palasie ⁊ he heclide he  
 and y sueten hi many ciþames  
 of galile ⁊ of decapoly. ⁊ of ierlin.  
 ⁊ of iude ⁊ of byzoute jordan  
 Helus forloze ez ci **Chaloz**  
 panpes. ⁊ wente up. ito an hyl  
 and whine he hadde sete: hyle diti  
 plis came upz to hōm ⁊ he openye  
 his mouy ⁊ saide hem ⁊ seide blef  
 tid be þe poze i spirit. for þe kyg  
 dom of heuēnes is hern blisid be  
 imple me. for rei thulen welde þe  
 erpe. blefid be rei pat mochen for  
 rei thulen be confortid/ blefid be  
 rei pat hugren ⁊ ynsken rystwif  
 nesse. for rei thule be fulfulid/ blef  
 tid be merciful me. for rei thule  
 ge te mcy/ blefid be rei pat be of  
 deue her te. for rei thule se god  
 blefid be pelible mē. for rei thul  
 len be clepid þe sones of god. blef  
 tid be rei pat suffren perlecucion  
 for ryzfulnells. for þe kygdom of he  
 uēnes is hern ⁊e thule be blemid  
 whāne mē thulen carle zon. ⁊ thul  
 len purlike zon. ⁊ thule sepe al muel  
 agens zon. ⁊ lye for me/ joye ze wrr  
 ine. ⁊ glate ze wyppute for: for you  
 re mete is pleintuous in heuēnes  
 for so rei han purlied allo þe  
 rat weren bifore you. **Se** þen salt of  
 ze erpe/ y if þe salt vanylethe awaye.  
 wher me shal it be saltid/ to no ryg

it is woꝝ ouer no but y<sup>t</sup> it be cast  
out & be de fould of me he ben lizt  
of ye woꝝld a citce put ou an hil  
may not be hid neſ me tenten a  
lant ne. & putte it vnder a bull hel  
but ou a candilſtuke pat it zyne lizt  
to alle pat ben i ye hous so lthyn  
zour lizt bifoze me y<sup>t</sup> ye se zour  
goode werkis. & glorie zour fadir  
which is in heuenes. **Wyle ze geſte**  
**oz deme y<sup>t</sup> i cam to vndo oz diſtipe**  
ye laue oz profetis i cam not to vn  
do ye laue: but to fulfille foxloꝝe  
i ſeie to zou treipe. til heuene & er  
ye paſſe oon i **Fis ye leeſte leſtre.**  
oz o titil. ſhal not paſſe froꝝe laue  
til alle rigis be don i ſtoze he pat v  
dor **oz bick y<sup>t</sup> oon of yeſ leeſte man**  
demetis. & techy y<sup>t</sup> me ſhal be  
clepid ye leeſte in ye reſuime of he  
neues foxloꝝe yis pat dor & techy  
ſhal be depid greet i ye kinglydom of  
heuenes. **I foxloꝝe i ſeie to zou y<sup>t</sup>**  
no but zour ryzt ſuſneſſe be more  
plenterious. pa of dꝛibis & farulee  
ze ſchulen not entri into kinglydom of  
heuenes ze han herd y<sup>t</sup> it was ſeid  
to elde me pon ſhalt not ſle foxloꝝe  
ye he y<sup>t</sup> ſleer. ſhal be gilty of dom  
but i ſeie to zou fox ech ma pat is  
woꝝ to his broꝝ. ſhal be gilty of  
dom foxloꝝe he pat ſey to his broꝝ  
raſa y<sup>t</sup> is a word of ſtoꝝ. ſhal be  
gilty of conceil ſoreh he pat ſey to  
ſhal be gilty of ye frer. of helle y<sup>t</sup>  
foze if pon offriſt y<sup>t</sup> ziſte at ye aut  
& per bꝛenkiſt. y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>t</sup> broꝝer hap ſu  
what azen ꝛee leeſt y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>t</sup> ziſte b  
foze ye auter. & go turt foꝝ to be  
reconciled to y<sup>t</sup> broꝝ **oz acordid &**  
ꝛane pon ſhalt come. & ſhalt of  
fre y<sup>t</sup> ziſte. **I be pon ſentẽtuge to**  
y<sup>t</sup> aduerſarie ſoone ye while pon

Greg. Iudiciū ē disceptatio eā q̄ culpa ē occulta. Cōsiliū ē diffusio s̄mē q̄ culpa ē nota.  
marta. Gehēna ē exccatio s̄mē q̄ tā culpa q̄ pena nota ē.







be blyt to hym self / sopeh it suffi-  
cy to pe day. his malice p is travel  
He ze deme. **V** // **vi**  
ze be not denyd / for i wylt  
dom ze demen / ze thulen  
be demed / in what mesure ze me-  
ten / it thal be meten azen to zoi / but  
what seest p a festu or lital mote i  
pe yze of pi brop. / & pou seest not a be-  
em in ym owne yze / or what mani-  
fest pou to pi broper. broper enst  
i thal caste out a festu fro pi yze.  
to a beem is in ym owne yze / i po-  
cite cast out first a beem of pi yze.  
i pane pou thalt se. for to caste out  
a festu of pe yze of pi broper. **Th**  
le ze yne hooly yng to hoidis. ne  
p sende ze zoi. margarit is o pre-  
tious stones bifoze sibyn / lest per-  
amentur pei defoulen hem wip her  
feet. / & lest pei turned to gidre al  
to breke zoi. **Al** ze ze & it thal be  
zoiu to zoi. seke ze & ze thule fyn-  
de knocke ze & it thal be openyd to  
zoi / for ech rat aryp. takip / & he pat  
sekyr. fyndip / & it thal be opened  
to amā knockyng / epyr who of zoi  
is amā who if his lone ape breed.  
wher he thal drese to hy a stoon.  
ep if he are a fylyth. wher he thal  
drese to hym a serpent. / p fore if ze  
whie ze ben yuele me kinen yne  
goode zytis to zoi. / dunes. hou mo-  
che more zoi. fadir p is in heue-  
nes thal yne goode ygis to me  
ar ynge hym. / p fore alle ygis wht  
euer ygis ze wolen p me do to zoi.  
ze do to hem / for pis yig is pe laste  
& profetis. **E**ntre ze bi pe strett  
zate. for pe zate rat ledy to perdi-  
cion or dāpnacion. is large / & pe weie is bzo-  
dd. / & per ben manye rat entren  
bi it / hou strett is pe zate & narw.

pe weie rat ledy to hyl. / & p ben  
fewe rat fynde it. **P**er seyne ze  
& fle fro false profetis. whiche co-  
me to zoi in dopigis of sheep.  
but wip ine pei ben ramys thig  
volues of her fruytis ze thulen  
knowe hem / wher me gadren gra-  
pis of pornes. or figis of briers.  
so epyr good tree maky goode frui-  
tis / sopeh an yuel tre. maky yue-  
le fruytis / a good tre. may not ma-  
ke yuele fruytis. ney an yuel tre.  
make goode fruytis. eueri tre pat  
maky not good fruyt. thal be kut  
doun. / & thal be sent into pe fier.  
fore of her fruytis ze thule knowe  
he. **N**ot ech mā p sepe to me lord  
lord. thal entre into pe kingdom  
of heuenes / but he pat doy pe wil-  
le of my fadir p is in heuenes. thal  
entre into pe kingdom of heue-  
nes / many thulen sepe to me i pat  
day. lord lord wher i be han not pro-  
fecied in pi name. / & han cast out de-  
uels in pi name. / & han don many  
stunes in pi name. / & pane i thal  
knowleche to hem p. / i knew zoi  
neue / departe away fro me. / & pat  
worden wickednesse / p fore ech mā  
p heeryr pes my wordis & doy he.  
thal be mand lyk to a wyle man  
p hap bildid his hous on a stoon. / & reyn  
cam doun. / & floodis came. / & wyndis  
blewe. / & rusthed into pat hous. / &  
it felde not doun / for it was foundid  
on a stoon / and eueri mā pat hee-  
ryr pes my wordis & doy he. not.  
is lyk to amā fool. pat hap bildid  
his hous on granel. / & reyn cam  
doun. / & floodis came. / & wyndis ble-  
we. / & pei hurled into pat hous.  
/ & it felde doun. / & pe fallig doun p of  
was greet. / & it was mand. whie

he hadde endid pes wordis. / & cu-  
panyes wouzdide on his tethig. / for  
he tauyte hem. as amā hauryge po-  
wer. / & not as pe scribis of hem  
& farisees. **V** // **vi**  
**A**zlope whie he hadde  
comu doun fro pe hyl. ma-  
ny cupanyes folowiden hi. / & so  
a leprous mā cam. / & worshyde hi  
& seide / lord if p wolt. pou maist  
make me clene. / & he heeld forp  
pe hond. / & touchide hy & seide. / i wole.  
be pou maad clene. / & anon pe lepre  
of hy was clenid. / & he seide to hi.  
la sepe to no mā. but go. i thewe  
pe to prentis. / & offe  
pat zite pat moyses comādit i  
to witnesig to he. **S**opeh whie  
he hadde entrid into cafarman. cen-  
turio neyede to hi. pyge hy & ser-  
ge. lord my chyl hy in pe hous. hyl  
on pe palese. / & is yuel turnetid  
& he seide to hi. / i thal come. / & thal  
heele hi. / & centurio answere. / &  
seide to hi. lord i am not worthy. / &  
pou ent. vndir my roof. but con-  
ly seie pou bi word. / & my chyl thal  
al be heeld. for whi. / & i am oxdy-  
ned vndir power. / & hane knyztis  
vndir me. / & i seie to pis. go. / & he  
goy. / & to anov. come p. / & he comeyr  
& to my seruait do you pis yig. / &  
he doy. / sopeh he herte pes ygis  
& wouzdide & seide to me hyngge hi.  
treuly i seie to zoi. / i fond not go  
greet fer in thil. / sopeh i seie to  
zoi. / p manye thule come fro pe  
east & west. / & thulen sette wip a  
brahm & flac. / & iacob in pe bigdo  
of heuenes. / forlope pe lone of pe  
rewme thulen be cast out into  
vtinef. derkneslis. / & p thal be we-  
pyng. / & betyng. to gidre of teep.

and he seide to centurio. go. / & as p  
hast bilened. be it don to pee. / & pe ch-  
ild was heeld fro p. **A**nd wha-  
ne he hadde come into pe hous of  
petre. he ope his wyues modur hy-  
gyge & thakn wip feueris. / & he tou-  
chide hyr hond. / & pe feul sette hyr.  
/ & she roos & seruyde hem. / sopeh wha-  
ne pe euentyd was mand. / & pei brou-  
ten to hy manye hauryge deuels.  
and he caste out spyritys bi word. / &  
heelde alle hauryge yuele. / & it thul-  
de be fulfild. / & was seid bi iase pe  
profete seyyng. / he took out infirmy-  
tees. / & bar out sykneslis. **S**opeh  
he ope many cupanyes aboute hi.  
/ & bad his discipulis go ouer pe wat-  
er. / & o strike o mā of lare neyete. / &  
seide to hy. maist. / i thal sulwe pe  
whidur eue p thalt go. / & he seide  
to hym. for is handychis or boroyn.  
/ & byddis of pe epyr han nestis. but  
māns lone hap not wher he thal  
rette his heed. / sopeh anov of his  
discipulis seide to hi. lord suffre me  
to go first. / & brye my fadir. for lo-  
pe he seide to hy. sulwe pou me. / &  
lete deed me brye her deed me. / and  
whie i hy stryete into a lital ship.  
hile discipulis suete hy. / & lo a greet  
styg. was maad in pe see. / so pat  
pe lital ship was hylid wip watis.  
but he slepte. / & hile discipulis ca-  
me nyz to hym. / & reilide hy & seide.  
lord saue us. we peristhen. / & he  
seide to he. / what ben ze of lital fer-  
agast. / pane he roos & comādit  
to pe wyndis & pe see. / & a greet  
pelablenesse was mand. / forlope  
me wouzdide seyyge. / what mā  
man is he pis. for pe wyndis & pe  
see obersthen to hi. / and whie he  
hadde come ouer pe watir to pe







ma is worpi his mete / ito what  
euer citee or castel ze shulen en-  
tre: are ze whop ine is worpi. &  
per diueller ze til ze go out / forlo-  
pe ze entrige into an hous. gree-  
te or salute ze it & sepe. pees to  
his hous / & sopeh if vilke hous  
be worpi: zoure pees shal come  
on it / forsope if pat hous be not  
worpi: zoure pees shal turne a-  
zen to zoi / & who euer resseuer  
not zoi. ney heerip zoi. wardis.  
ze goynge fory fro hous or citee.  
fuyte awaye pe dult fro zoi. feet  
treuly / I sepe to zoi. it shal be mo-  
ze susteable to ye lond of me of  
sodom & gomoz. in ye day of iuge-  
ment: van to vilke citee. **To** I sen-  
de zoi as sheep in ye myddel of wol-  
ues / yf ze be ze war or wps bifoze  
as serpentis. & symple as doukis  
but be ze war of me / for pei shule  
take zoi in coucehs: & vei shulen  
bete zoi in her spyngis / & to me-  
ris or preledentis. & to kyngis ze sh-  
ulen be led for me: into witne shig  
to hem / & hepen men / but whane  
pei shulen bitake or bitrape zoi.  
nyle ze penke hois or what pig ze  
shulen speke / for it ben not ze pat  
speken: but ye spirit of zoi. fa-  
dir pat speky in zoi / sopeh pe ho-  
yr shal take pe hoys into deep: &  
pe fadir pe lone / & lones shulen  
ryle azens fadir & modir: & shu-  
len turmete hem bi deep: & ze sh-  
ulen be in hate to alle me for my  
name / forsope he pat shal diueller  
shille til into ye ende. shal be saaf  
sopeh whane pei shule pursue  
zoi in pis citee: fleze into andy /  
treuly / I sepe to zoi. ze shule not  
ende ye citees of yrael: til man

for it shal be zoi. to zoi in par-  
our. what ze shulen speke

done come / ye disciple is not a  
boue ye manir: ne ye seruait  
aboue his lord / it is ynore to ye  
disciple: pat he be as his mas-  
tir: & ye seruait as his lord / &  
pei han clepid ye hoseboudis ma-  
or ye fadir of meyne besebub.  
hou moche more his houshold me-  
ne / yf ze drede ze not hem / for  
no pig is keuerid or hid: pat  
shal not be shewid / & no yng  
is pryuy: pat shal not be wyl-  
pat yng pat I sepe to zoi in der-  
nellis. sepe ze in ye lize / and fide  
ze on housis pat pig: pat ze heer  
in ye eere / And nyle ze drede hem  
pat steen ye body: treuly pei mo-  
not sle ye soule / but rarere drede  
ze hym pat may lese bope soule &  
body into helle / wher twey sparo-  
wis ben not seeld for an halpeny.  
& oon of hem shal not falle on ye  
erpe wip oute zoi. fadir: forsope  
alle ye heeris of zoi. heed ben woi-  
brid / yf ze nyle ze drede: ze ben be-  
ter van many sparowis / yf ze  
euy man pat shal knowleche  
me bifoze me: & I shal knowleche  
hym bifoze my fadir pat is in he-  
nemes / sopeh he pat shal denye  
me bifoze me: & I shal denye hy  
bifoze my fadir which is in he-  
nemes / nyle ze deme pat I cam to se-  
de pees into erpe / I cam not to sen-  
te pees: but swerd / for I cam to  
departe a ma azens his fadir: &  
ye dougtr azens hy modir: & ye  
lones wif azens ye hoseboudis  
modir: & ye enemyes of amā: be  
his homely meyne. **He** pat louey  
fadir or modir more pa me: is not  
worpi of me / and he pat louey so-  
ne or dougtr ouer me is not wor-

pi of me / and he pat taky not his  
croul & shawer not me: is not wor-  
pi of me / he pat fyndy not his  
soule pat is tēporal lye: shal lee-  
se it / and he pat leelip his soule  
pat is lye for me: shal fynde it /  
he pat resseuer zoi: resseuer  
me / and he pat resseuer me: re-  
seuer hy pat sente me / he pat  
resseuer a profete in ye name  
of a profete: shal take kynde of  
a profete / and he pat resseuer a  
iust mā in ye name of a iust mā:  
shal take ye mete of a iust man /  
& who enzyuer drynke to oon of ye  
leeste. a cuppe of cold wat onhy.  
in ye name of a disciple: treuly  
I sepe to zoi. he shal not lese  
his meede. **And** it was don whane ihc  
hadde endid: he comaūdite  
to his twelue discipulis. & pathe  
fro penus for to techie & preche i ye  
aitres of hem / forsope whane ioh-  
in boondis hadde herd ye werkis  
of crist: he sente tweyne of his  
discipulis & sepe to hym art pou he  
pat art to comye: or we abiden  
anoyr: & ihc answere & sente  
to hem / go ze & telle azen to ioh-  
po yngis pat ze han herd & seyn  
blynde me seen. croked me wan-  
dren. mekels ben maad cleue. deef  
me heeren. deef me rylen azen.  
pore me ben takū to prechyng of  
ye gospel. or ben maad keperis  
of ye gospel / and he is blethid pat  
shal not be shandrid in me / sope-  
hy whane pei were gon anpey:  
ihc bigan for to sepe of ioh-  
to ye cūpanyes / what pig wente  
ze out into desert for to se: whe-  
a reed wairid wip ye wynd:

but what pig wente ze out for  
to se: / wher amā clopid wip  
sotte pigs: lo pei pat ben clopid  
wip sotte pigs: ben in housis of  
kyngis / but what pig wente ze  
out for to se: / wher a profete:  
he I sepe to I & more van a pro-  
fete / for pis is he of whom it  
is writū / lo I sente my aūgel  
bifoze vi face: pat shal make  
redy vi weye bifoze pee / treuly  
I sepe to zoi: & roos noo more van  
iohn baptist among ye children  
of wyme / but he pat is lesse i pe  
kingdom of heuenes: is more pa  
he / sopeh fro ye dānes of iohn bap-  
tist til now: ye kyngdom of heue-  
nes sufferi strengre or violence  
& violent me rānyshen it / for  
alle profetis & ye lāp til to iohn  
baptist pferieden / & if ze wole res-  
seuer: he is elye pat is to com-  
ge / he pat hap eeris of heerige:  
heere he / but to whom shal I  
gelle pis genaciou lych: it is  
lych to children sittige in chepi-  
ge: whiche cryen to her peeris  
& sepen / we han songū to zoi: & ze  
han not dālid / we han moremyd  
to zoi: & ze han not weplid / for ioh-  
cam. ney etige. ne drynke. & pei  
sepen. he hap a deuyl / ye lone of  
mā. cam etige & drynke: & pei  
seiden / lo amā deuouret or gloton.  
& drynker of wynn. & frend of pry-  
phicans & lyful me: & wysdom is  
iustified of her lones. **Whane** ihc  
bigan for to sepe repref to citees  
in whiche ful many vertues of  
hy weren don: for pei diden not  
penaunce / wo to pee corosaym.  
wo to pee bethsaida / for if ye  
tues pat ben don in zoi. hadde



be don in ture & sydon. su tyme pei  
hadde do penaunce in heere & aridh  
nepeles / seie to zoi. it shal be  
more softere. or lesse peyne. to ty  
re & sidon. in re day of dom pa to  
zoi. and pon casarnai. wher til  
into heuene von shalt be rerid  
up. / p' shalt go don til into hel  
le for if ye vertues. pat bend  
in pee. hadde be don in sodom. p  
amentin. rei shulden haue dwel  
lid til into vis day. nepeles / seie  
to zoi. for to pelond of sodom it  
shal be softere or lesse peyne in  
ye day of dom. pan to pee. / In  
vilke tyme ihc answeride & seyde  
/ I knowleche to pee fadir lord  
of heuene & erpe. for p' hast hid  
res pigis fro wyle men & war  
or slez me. & hast shewid hem  
to meke me. so fadir. forwhi. so  
it was pleshyge to fore pee. alle  
pigis ben zoiu to me of my fa  
dir. & no ma knew ye sone. no  
but ye fadir. ney ony ma knew  
ye fadir. no but ye sone. & to wh  
om ye sone wolde shewe. alle  
ze pat travele & ben chargid.  
come to me. & I shal refreulthe.  
or fulfille zoi. take ze my zok  
on zoi. & lerne ze of me for I am  
mylde & meek in herte. & ze shu  
len fynde reste to zoiu soulis.  
for my zok is swete & my charge

**I**n pat tyme ihc wente  
by cornes in ye sabot day.  
forlope hile distyphs hugrynge.  
bigimen to plucke eeris of corn  
& to ete. sovely farisees seynge.  
seiden to hym. lo pi distyphs doe  
pat yng pat is not leetful to he  
for to do in sabotis. and he seide

to hem. wher ze han not redd.  
what damp dite. whane he hu  
gride. & pei pat weren wy hy  
how he entride into ye hous of  
god. & eet loones of prolocion. wh  
che loones it was not leetful  
to hym to ete. ney to hem pat  
weren wy hy. no but to prestis  
aloone. or wher ze han not rad  
in ye lawe. for in sabotis. prestis  
in ye temple de foulen ye sabotis.  
& ze ben wy outh greet sy  
ne. / soveli / seie to zoi. for here  
is more pan ye temple. forlope if ze  
witten. what it is / I wole merce  
not sacrifice. ze shulden neuere  
haue condempud innocentis. for  
mans sone is lord. zhe of ye sa  
bot. and whne he passide fro pen.  
he cam into ye synagoge of hem.  
& lo ama haunge a drye hond. &  
pei aride hy & seiden. wher it is  
leetful to heele in ye sabot. pat rei  
shulde acule hym. soveli he seide  
to he. / who shal be ama of zoi. pat  
havo shewp. & if it falle down into  
a dich in ye sabotis. wher he shal  
not holde. & lyke it up. how mo  
che more is ama bette. pa a shew  
ep. / perfore it is leetful to do go  
od in ye sabotis. pane he seide to  
ye ma. / create for p' hond. &  
he strauzte for. & it was retho  
rid to heelp as petour. forlope  
farisees goynge out made a con  
cel azens hym. how rei shulden  
leete hym. soveli ihc wryge. we  
te away fro pen. and manye su  
weden hym. & he heelde hem alle  
and he comaunde to hem. pat rei  
shulden not make hym knowu.  
pat pat pig shulde be fulfild.  
pat was seid by I saye ye ptere

seynge. / lo my child whom I ha  
ue chosi. my derlyng in whom  
it har wel plesid to my soule. / I  
shal putte my spirit on hym.  
& he shal telle dom to hepe men.  
he shal not aryue ne crye. ney  
ony man shal hee. his boys in  
streetis. he shal not breke to gi  
de. a shakū rehed. & he shal  
not quenche smokige flex. til  
he caste out dom to victorie. & he  
yen me shulen hope in his na  
me. pane a blynd ma. & doub ha  
unge a deuyl. was bryngt to hy.  
& he heelde hym. so pat he spak  
/ & alle ciupanyes wondri  
den & seide. wher pis be ye sone  
of damp. / but ye farisees heer  
ge. seiden. he pis castip not out  
fendis. no but in bellebub pnce  
of fendis. soveli ihc wryge her  
pouztis. seide to hem. ech kyngdo  
departid azens it self. shal be  
delolatid. and ech atee or hous  
departid azens it self. shal not  
stonde. & if sathanas castip out  
sathanas. he is departid azens  
hi self. / pfore how shal his kyng  
dom stonde. & if I in bellebub  
caste out deuylis. in whom zoi  
re sones casten out. / pfore rei  
shulen be zoiu domelme. / forlop  
if I in ye spirit of god caste out fe  
dis. perfore ye kyngdom of god  
is come into zoi. epyr how may  
ony ma entere into ye hous. of  
a strong ma. & take away hile  
vells. no but first he bynde  
ye strong ma. & rane he shal  
raupthe his hous. / The pat is  
not wy me. is azens me. & he  
pat gaderip not to gidre wy

me. / saterip a brood. pfore I seie  
to zoi. al syne & blasfemye shal  
be forzoiu to me. but blasfemye  
of ye spirit. shal not be forzoiu.  
and who eu seip a word azens ma  
ma sone. it shal be forzoiu. &  
who eu seip a word azens ma  
ma sone. it shal be forzoiu to  
hym. forlope if ama shal seie a  
word azens ye hooly gost. it shal  
not be forzoiu to hym. ney I pis  
world ne in ye toyr. epyr make  
ze ye tre good & his fruyt good.  
epyr make ze ye tre yuel & his  
fruyt yuel. forlope a tre is kno  
we of ye fruyt. ze generacion  
of eddis. how monn ze speke  
goode pigis. whne ze ben yuele.  
for ye moun speky of ye greet  
plente of herte. a good ma bri  
gy forp goode pigis of good tre  
soun. and an yuel ma brigy forp  
yuele pigis of yuel tresoun. for  
lope I seie to zoi. forwhi. of epy  
ptel word pat me spoken. rei shu  
len zelle resou pof in ye day of dom.  
for of pi wordis von shalt be iusti  
fied. & of pi wordis von shalt be  
dampned. pane sūme of ye arbis  
& farisees. answeride to hym & sei  
den. ozant we wolen se a tokene  
of pee. which answerige. seide to  
hem. an yuel generacion & auontrel  
se. sekir a tokene. and a tokene  
shal not be zoiu to it. no but ye  
tokene of jonas ye profete. for  
as jonas was in ye wombe of a  
whal. pte dapes & pte nyztis. so  
mans sone shal be in ye herte  
of ye erpe. pte dapes & pte nyztis.  
ozen of nympne shulen ryse in  
dom wy pis generacion. & shule



condempne it: for ye didnen penaunce  
in ye prechig of jonas/ and so hec  
is moze pa jonas/ ye queene of re  
louy thal ryle in dom wy pis ge  
neracion & thal condempne it: for  
she cam fro ye eendis of ye erpe  
for to hec ye wysdom of salomō  
and lo hec is moze pan salomō  
forlope whāne an vncleue spyt  
hay gon out from anna: he gow bi  
dye placis. & sekyp rest & fyndy  
not/ pane he sey/ i thal turne a  
zen into myn hous: fro whēms i  
wente out/ and he comey & fyndy  
it/ voyde: cleud wy besines. &  
maad farr/ pane he gow & taky  
wy hym senene opey spytis  
worle pan hym self: & rei entre  
& dwellen pet/ and ye laste pigis  
of pat mā: ben maad worle pan  
ye former/ so it thal be & to pis  
worlde generacion/ 3it while he  
spak to ye cūpanyes of peple:  
lo his modur & his byperen doode  
wyoute forp sekige for to speke  
to hym/ sovely sū mā seide to hy  
lo pi modur & pi byperen stonden  
wyouten forp sekige pee/ and  
he answeryge to ye mā seynge  
to hym: seide/ who is my modur:  
& who ben my byperen: and he  
holdige forp his hond into hile  
discyplis: seide/ lo my modur &  
my byperen/ for who enere dony  
ye wille of my fadir/ pat is in he  
neues: he is my brof & sūt & modur  
I rat day ihc goyn **¶** **Em**  
ge out of ye hous: sat bysdis  
ye see/ and many cūpanyes of pe  
ple werē gadzid to hym: so pat  
he stynge up into aboot: sat/ &  
al pe cūpany stood in ye bynke

and he spak to hem many pigis  
in parablis seynge/ lo he pat lo  
wygede out to sorwe his seed/ &  
ye while he lowy: sūme seedis  
felde bihdis ye wepe/ & byddis of  
ye eyr camen: & eeten hem/ sove  
li opey seedis felden into stoon  
placis: where pei hadden not moche  
erpe/ & anoon pei sprūgen up: for  
pei hadden not tepnesse of erpe/ so  
veli whāne ye sūme was rili: pei  
swalide & brent for heete/ and  
for pei hadden not roote: reidry  
eden up/ forlope opey seedis felde  
amōg porwes: & porwes woren  
up & straghte hem/ but opey see  
dis felden into good lond: & zanen  
fruyt. sū an hūdrd fold. anōf  
ty fold. anōf yūtti fold/ he pat  
ceeris of heerig hec/ he and discy  
plis comyge nyz: seiden to hy/ whā  
spekt pou in parablis to hem/ whā  
ich answeryge seide to he/ for to  
it is zonu forto knowe ye prin  
tees of ye kyngdom of heuenes:  
but it is not zonu to hem/ for it  
shal be zonu to hym p/ hap: & he  
shal haue plente/ treuly if ama  
hay not: alid pat pig pat he hay  
shal be takē away fro hym/ per  
foze i speke to hem i parablis/ for  
pei seynge ten not/ & rei heerige  
heeren not: ne p/ vnderstonden:  
pat ye profetie of ihaie seynge  
be fulfilled in he/ wy heerig ze  
thulen hec/ & ze thulen not vnder  
stonde/ & ze seynge thule se:  
& ze thulen not se/ for ye heete  
of vis peple is greetly fattid:  
& pei herten grenouly wy eerē  
& pei han clod her yēn: lest sū  
tyme pei seen wy yēn: & wy

ceeris heeren. & vnderstonden i her  
to. & rei be comitid ey to gidre tur  
wyd & i heele hem/ forlope zoure  
yēn pat seen ben blestid: & zoure  
ceeris pat heeren/ forlope i seie tren  
pe to zou: for many pphetis & iust  
mē conceyde to se ye visis pat  
ze seen: & rei spen not/ and to hee  
re ye rymis pat ze heere: & rei her  
den not/ perfoze heere ze ye para  
ble of ye lowe/ & ch pat heerip ye  
word of reuine: & vnderstondy not:  
ye ryel spyt comey & ranyshy  
pat i is lowy in his herte: vis it is i  
lowy bihdis ye wepe/ soveli he pat  
is lowy on stoon lond: vis it is pat  
heerip ye word of god: & anōf wy  
lope taky it/ forlope he hay not ro  
ote in hym self: but he is tepozal.  
pat is it lasty no but al/ til tyme  
but whāne tribulaciōn & persecu  
ciōn is maad for ye word: anōf he  
is standid/ soveli he pat is lowy  
in porwes: is vis pat heerip ye wo  
rd: & ye bysynesse of vis world: &  
ye fallnesse of richellis straghty  
ye word: & it is maad wyoute fr  
uyt/ but he pat is lowy into go  
od lond: is vis pat heerip ye word  
& vnderstondy. & byngy forp  
fruyt/ and sovely sū maky an  
hūdrd fold. treuly anōf lūty  
fold. forlope anōf yūtti fold  
**¶** **Em** anōf parable ihc puttide forp  
to hem: & seide/ ye kyngdom of he  
neues is maad lych to ama pat  
sew good seed in his feeld/ forlope  
whāne men slepten: his enemy  
cam & sew aboue: daniel oz coc  
kil in ye myddil of whete: & we  
te away/ soveli whāne ye eerbe  
hadde growid & maad fruyt: pa  
ne ye cockis oz danielis apperi

den/ forlope ye seruāntis of ye ho  
sebonde man comyge nyz: seide to  
hym/ lord wher pou hatt not sowē  
good seed in yi feeld: wherof pfoze  
hay it daniel oz cockil: & he seide  
to he/ ye mā enemy hay do vis pig  
treuly ye seruāntis leyden to hi  
wolt pou we go: & gedere hem: &  
he seide/ nay/ lest p/ auenture ze ga  
dzyng danielis oz cockis: dānye  
up by ye roote to gidre wy he  
also ye whete/ suffre ze hem bove  
were til to ryppē corn: & in tyme of  
ryppē corn: i thal seye to reperi  
first gadre ze to gidre danielis oz  
cockis: and bynde hem to gidre i  
byndis oz smale bihdis/ for to  
be brent: but gadre ze whete into  
my berne/ anōf parable ihc put  
tide forp to hem: & seide/ ye kyng  
dom of heuenes is lyk to acorn  
of seneney: whā ama took &  
sew in his feeld: whā treuly is  
ye leste of alle seedis/ but whā  
ne it hay wore: it is ye mooste  
of alle wortis: & is maad a tree  
so p/ byddis of ye eyr comē & dwel  
len i bolis oz braunchis verof **¶**  
anōf parable ihc spak to hem/ ye  
kyngdom of heuenes is lyk to sou  
dow/ whā a womā took & hyde in  
ye meluris of mele: til it were  
al sounadow/ ihc spak alle pes  
pigs in parablis to ye cūpanyes  
of peple: & so he spak not to hem  
oute parablis: pat it thulde be  
fulfilled pat is seid by ye profete  
seynge/ i thal opyne my mouy  
in parablis: i thal telle out iud  
yis. fro making of ye world  
pane he leste ye cūpanyes: & he  
cam into an hous/ & hile discyplis  
came nyz to hym: & seide/ & pou



ne to us ye parable of dannels. or  
cockles of ye feeld which answere  
de & seide he rat sowyn good seed.  
is manys sone / sovel ye feeld. is  
ye world / but ye good seed. yes be  
sones of ye kyngdom / for sove dar  
nels or cockles. yes ben yuele so  
nes / but ye enemy pat sowyn hem.  
is ye fend / but ye ripe corn. is ye  
endig of ye world / sovel ye repe  
ris. ben angels / yfore as dannels  
ben gadrid to gidre & ben bent  
in fier. so it shal be in endyng  
of ye world / orams sone shal sen  
de his angels. & pei shulen gadre  
fro his reikme alle staudns. &  
hem pat don wickidnesse. & pei  
shulen sende he into ye chyme  
nepe of fper. ver shal be wepyn  
& betyng to gidre of teep. pane  
mit me shulen shyne as ye son  
ne. in ye reikme of her fadir. he  
pat har eeris of heeris. heer he  
¶ ye kyngdom of heuenes is lyk  
to tresour hid. in a feeld. which  
aman pat fyndit. hyndit. & foriope  
of it. he goit & siler alle rigis  
pat he har. & byer ylike feeld. est  
lones ye kyngdom of heuenes  
is lyk to aman marthait. sek  
ge goode margaritis / sovel wha  
ne he har fouce o precious marga  
rite. he wente & seide alle rigis p  
he hadde. & bouste it. est ye kyngd  
of heuenes is lyk to auct sent i  
to ye see. & gadryng of alle kyn  
de of fyllis. which me ledde out.  
whane it was fulfild. & pei sitti  
ge blydis ye bynke. chelide ye  
goode into her vessels. but pei sen  
ten out ye yuele. so it shal be i  
ye endyng of ye world. angels  
shulen gon out. & shulen depar

te yuele me. fro ye myddil of m  
men. & pei shulen sende hem to  
ye chymenepe of fper. ver shal  
be wepyng. & betyng to gidre  
of teep. han ze vndir stonde alle  
yes rigis. ver seyen to hym. he  
he seip to hem. ver fore every w  
ter. taut in ye kyngdom of heu  
nes is lyk to an hsebonde man.  
pat byngit forp of his tresour.  
newe rygis & elde. & it was don  
whane ihe hadde endid yes para  
blis. he passide fro pems. and he  
comynge into his amte. taut he  
in her synagogis. so pat pei won  
driden & leyden. wherof to hy ris  
wyldom & vertues. wher is  
not ris ye sone of a synp or car  
penter. wher his modir be not led  
marie. & hile brisen james & jol  
eph. & symon & judas. and his sil  
tris wher pei alle ben not at us.  
ver fore wherof to hym alle yes  
rigis. and so pei weren staudid  
in hy. forsove ihe seide to hem. appo  
fete is not wyoute worthip. no  
but in his owne citre. & in his  
owne hous. and he dide not per  
many vertues for ye vublene  
of hem. ¶m.

**I**n pat tyme eroude py  
ce of ye fourpe part. her  
de ye fame of ihu. & seide to his ch  
ildren. ris is john baptist. he har  
rili fro deed me. & ver fore & cu  
es worthyn in hym. for eroude  
heeld john. & boond hym & putti  
de hym into prilon. for erodias  
ye wyf of his brof. for john seide  
to hym. it is not leestul to pee.  
for to hane hyr. and he willige  
to sle hym dreedde ye peple. for  
pei hadden hym as a profete. for

sove in ye day of eroudis birpe.  
ye donstir of erodias dailide in  
ye myddil. & pleide to eroude. wh  
erfore wy an op he blyste forto  
zyne to hir. what ever yng. the  
hadde aerd of hym. & she bifore  
monethid or warned of hir modir.  
seide. zyne you to me hidur. pe  
heed of john baptist in a dynt.  
¶ ye kyng was sozeiful. but  
for ye oop. & for hem pat laten  
to gidre at ye mete. he coman  
dide to be zoun. and he sente. & bi  
heedide john. & pson. & his heed  
was bouzt in a dynt. & it was zo  
nii to ye wenche. & she bar it to hy  
modir. & his discipulis came nyz.  
& token his body. & buried it. &  
pei camen & tolden to ihu. & wha  
ne ihe hadde herd ris yng. he  
wente fro pems in a boot into  
desert place blydis. & whine ye  
cipanyes of peple hadde herd.  
pei folerwite hy. on her feet fro  
cites. & ihe goynge out syz a gr  
et cipanye & hadde reupe on  
hem. & heelite ye syke me of he  
sovel whane ye enentid was  
maad. hile discipulis came nyz to  
hym & seiden. ye place is desert.  
& ye our hyr now pallid. leue  
you ye cipanyes of peple. pat  
pei go into castels & bye metis  
to hem. forsove ihe seide to hem.  
pei han not nede to go. zyne ze  
to hem for to ete. pei answeride.  
we han not her. no but fyne loo  
nes & twey fyllis. which seide  
to hem. bynng ze hem hidur to  
me. And whane he hadde coman  
did ye cipanye forto sitte to  
mete on ye hep. he took fyne loo  
nes & twey fyllis. and he bihol

dige into heuene. blestide brak & zat  
to hile discipulis / sovel ye discipulis  
zaueu to ye cipanyes. and alle  
eeten & were fulfild. & rei toke  
ye rehfs of brok. & gobatis. twelf  
coffyns ful. forsove ye noubre of  
men etynge. was fyne yonland  
of me. out taku wyemen & lytle  
chldren. ¶ And anoo ihe compel  
lide ye discipulis. for to go up into  
aboot. & go bifore hym ou ye see.  
til he leste ye cipanyes. & whane  
ye cipany was left. he tryede al  
oone. into an hil for to prepe. sove  
ly whane ye enenye was maad.  
he was vere aloone. sovel ye bo  
ot in ye myddil of ye see. was pro  
wityp wawis. forsove ye wynd  
was contrarie to hem. but in ye  
fourpe wakig of ye nyz. he cam  
to hem walkig. aboue ye see. &  
pei seynge hym walkig. aboue  
ye see. weren disturblid seynge  
for it is a fantu. & for dzed pei cri  
eden. & anoo ihe spak to he. & sei  
de. hane ze trust. i am. nyle ze dze  
de. sovel petre answeryge. sei  
de. lord if you art. comande me  
for to come to pee. on ye watris.  
and he seide. come you. and petr  
goynge dou fro ye boot. walkide  
on ye watris. for to come to ihu.  
treuly he seynge a strong wynd.  
was a feerd. & whine he bigan for  
to be dzenchid. he cryete seynge.  
lord make me saaf. & anoo ihe  
holdige forp ye hond. taut he  
& seide to hi. you of lytil fery. wh  
hast p dourid. & whane he hadde  
tryed into ye boot. ye wynd cre  
side. sovel pei pat were in ye bo  
ot. camen & worthypede hy & sei  
den. verily. p art godis sone. ¶











me  
releynen; forsove who so clauden  
oon of pes finale pat bileuen i me.  
it spedw to hi. p<sup>r</sup> a mylie doon of  
allis. be hangid in his nethe. & be  
drencid into pe depnesse of pe see.  
so to pe world for clauden; for it  
is nede. pat clauden come. nere  
les wo to pilke man. by whom a  
clauden comen; forsove if ym hound  
or ym foot clauden; p<sup>r</sup> it is of  
caste a wey fro ym. it is bette  
to p<sup>r</sup> to entre to hys. feble eyn  
crokid. p<sup>r</sup> a hange tweyne hondis.  
or tweyne feet. to be sent into eu  
lastige fier. and if ym p<sup>r</sup> clau  
den; p<sup>r</sup> it is of caste a wey  
ey fro ym. it is bette to p<sup>r</sup> wip  
oon ym to entre into hys. pan ha  
nyge tweyne ym to be sent ito  
pe fyer of helle. se ze pat ze dispi  
se not oon of pes lytle. for i sepe  
to zoi. p<sup>r</sup> e angels of hem in heu  
nes. seen euermore pe face of my  
fadir pat is in heuenes. for man  
sone cam for to saue pat rig. p<sup>r</sup>  
perilthide. **W**hat semer to zoi.  
if per weren to su man an hi  
dnd itheep. & oon of hem hay er  
rid. wher he thal not leene nyne  
ty & nyne in hylis. & thal go for  
to seke pat p<sup>r</sup> erride. & if it fal  
le p<sup>r</sup> he fynde it. trenly i sepe to  
zoi. p<sup>r</sup> he thal haue ioye perone.  
more pan on nyne ty & nyne pat  
errete not. so it is not wille bifoze  
zoi. fadir p<sup>r</sup> is in heuenes. pat  
oon of pes lytle perilthide. **F**or  
sove if ym brof dory syne azens  
p<sup>r</sup>. go ym & reppone hym or  
synbhe by tlyre p<sup>r</sup> & hi aloone.  
if he heerw p<sup>r</sup>. ym haft wonen  
ym broper. trenly if he heerw p<sup>r</sup>  
not. take wip ym oon or tweyne.

**F**orach  
Fom.  
Veneri word stonde in pe mowp of  
tweyne or p<sup>r</sup> witneslis. p<sup>r</sup> if he  
heere not hem. sepe ym to pe ch  
che. forsove if he heere not pe ch  
rche. be he as an hepen & puppi  
can to p<sup>r</sup>. i sepe to zoi trenly.  
what ene rigis ze bynde on erpe.  
vo thulen be boude also in heue  
ne. and what ene rigis ze vubyn  
den on erpe. vo thulen be vubou  
de also in heuene. estidone i sepe  
to zoi. p<sup>r</sup> if tweyne of zoi cōlen  
ten on pe erpe. of eny rig. what  
ener pei aren. it thal be don to  
he. of my fadir pat is in heuenes.  
for wher tweyne or p<sup>r</sup> ben ge  
dnd in my name. vere i am i  
pe myddil of hem. pane petre  
compyge myz to hys. seide. lord how  
ofte thal my broper syne azens  
me. & i thal forzyne to hym. whe  
yur til leuene tymes. i sepe to  
hym. i sepe not to p<sup>r</sup> til leuene ti  
pis. but til leuenty lris leuen  
lris. **F**ore ze bigdom of heuene  
is liden to ania king. pat wolde  
putte resou wip his seruantes. &  
whane he bigan forto putte resou.  
oon pat onzte ten thousand talen  
tis. was brouzt to hi. trenly wha  
ne he hadde nouzt to zelle. his lord  
comandide hym to be seeld. & his  
wyf & his lones. & alle rigis pat  
he hadde. & to be payed. forsove  
pilke seruait fallige don. p<sup>r</sup>eride  
hy & seide. haue patience in me.  
& i thal zelde to p<sup>r</sup> alle rigis. so  
vely re lord hadde mercy of pat  
seruait. & leet hym or synbhe  
hi. & forzaf to hym re dette. tren  
ly pilke seruait zede out. & fō  
nd oon of his euene seruaitis.  
pat onzte hi an hundred pens. &

**F**orach  
Fif.  
he holdige hy. stranglede hym &  
seide. zelde pat p<sup>r</sup> ym ouer. & his  
euene seruait fallige don. p<sup>r</sup>er  
ede hi & seide. haue patience in me.  
& i thal quyte alle rigis to p<sup>r</sup>.  
forsove he wolde not. but wente  
seide hy into p<sup>r</sup>ow. til he payede  
al pe dette. lopeli his euene serua  
itis seynge pe rigis pat were don.  
greethly hadden loke. & rei came  
& telden to her lord. alle pe rigis  
pat were don. pane his lord clep  
de hi. & seide to hym. weyward  
seruait. i forzaf to p<sup>r</sup> al pe det  
te. for ym p<sup>r</sup>eridit me. p<sup>r</sup>fore  
wher it bihouede not also p<sup>r</sup>. to  
haue mercy on ym ene seruait.  
as & i hadde mercy on p<sup>r</sup>. and  
his lord was wop. & took hy to  
turneto wost. til he payde al pe  
dette. so i my fadir of heuene  
thal do to zoi. if ze forzyne not.  
eneri ma to his broper of zoi.

**A** hertis. **C. xiv.**  
**I**d it was don. whan  
ne i sepe hadde endid pes  
wordis. he passide fro galile &  
cam into re eendis of iudee on  
jordan. and many ciuantes su  
weten hym. & he heelde hem. p<sup>r</sup>  
and farilers came myz to hym. te  
prige hym & seynge. wher it be le  
etful to a man for to leue or for  
take his wyf for eay cause. which  
auilweride & seide to he. han not  
ze radd. for he p<sup>r</sup> made me at pe  
biggynng. made hem male & fe  
male. & he seide. for pis rig. ama  
thal leue fadir. & modir. & thal  
dene or drawe to his wyf. & rei  
thulen be tweyne in o fleilth. p<sup>r</sup>  
fore rei ben not now tweyne.  
but o fleilth. p<sup>r</sup>fore ama depar

te not pat rig. & god ioyne de or kint  
tede to gidze. rei sepe to hy. wht  
verfore comandide moyses to ym  
ne a lytal book of forzaf. & to  
leue of. & he seide to hem. for mo  
yses for pe hardnesse of zour her  
te. suffride zoi forzake zoi. wy  
ues. forsove at pe biggynng. it  
was not so. trenly i sepe to zoi.  
for who ene leuwy his wyf. no  
but for fornytioun. & weddyg. anoy.  
dory auouitrye. & he pat weddyg  
re forzaki wyf. dory auouitrye. hi  
se distyplis seien to hym. if ze cau  
se of ama wyf anoy is so. it spedw  
not to be weddyd. which seide to he.  
not alle me taken pis word. but  
to whiche it is zoiu. lopeli p<sup>r</sup> ben  
geldigis. whiche ben pus born of  
pe modris wombe. and per ben gel  
digis. p<sup>r</sup> be mand of me. & p<sup>r</sup> be gel  
dyngis. p<sup>r</sup> han geldid he silt for  
pe bigdom of heuenes. he p<sup>r</sup> may  
take. take he. **P**ane lytle chil  
dren were brouzt to hym. p<sup>r</sup> he th  
ulde putte hondis to hem & p<sup>r</sup>ere.  
and pe distyplis blamyde he. but  
he seide to hem. suffre ze p<sup>r</sup> lytle  
children come to me. & nyle ze  
forbede hem for to come to me. for  
of luche is pe bigdom of heuenes.  
& whane he hadde put to hondis.  
he wente fro p<sup>r</sup>ms. **A**nd lo oon  
compyge myz. seide to hi. goode ma  
tur. what good pig. thal i do. p<sup>r</sup>  
i haue enen lastige hyf. which sepe  
to hy. what axit p<sup>r</sup> me of good  
pyng. p<sup>r</sup> is o good god. forsove if  
yon wolt entir to hys. sepe pe coman  
demetis. he sepe to hy. whiche.  
trenly i sepe. yon thal not do  
malleyng. p<sup>r</sup> thal not do auou  
trie. p<sup>r</sup> thal not do pestre. p<sup>r</sup> thal







148  
115  
116  
117  
118  
119  
120  
121  
122  
123  
124  
125  
126  
127  
128  
129  
130  
131  
132  
133  
134  
135  
136  
137  
138  
139  
140  
141  
142  
143  
144  
145  
146  
147  
148  
149  
150  
151  
152  
153  
154  
155  
156  
157  
158  
159  
160  
161  
162  
163  
164  
165  
166  
167  
168  
169  
170  
171  
172  
173  
174  
175  
176  
177  
178  
179  
180  
181  
182  
183  
184  
185  
186  
187  
188  
189  
190  
191  
192  
193  
194  
195  
196  
197  
198  
199  
200  
201  
202  
203  
204  
205  
206  
207  
208  
209  
210  
211  
212  
213  
214  
215  
216  
217  
218  
219  
220  
221  
222  
223  
224  
225  
226  
227  
228  
229  
230  
231  
232  
233  
234  
235  
236  
237  
238  
239  
240  
241  
242  
243  
244  
245  
246  
247  
248  
249  
250  
251  
252  
253  
254  
255  
256  
257  
258  
259  
260  
261  
262  
263  
264  
265  
266  
267  
268  
269  
270  
271  
272  
273  
274  
275  
276  
277  
278  
279  
280  
281  
282  
283  
284  
285  
286  
287  
288  
289  
290  
291  
292  
293  
294  
295  
296  
297  
298  
299  
300  
301  
302  
303  
304  
305  
306  
307  
308  
309  
310  
311  
312  
313  
314  
315  
316  
317  
318  
319  
320  
321  
322  
323  
324  
325  
326  
327  
328  
329  
330  
331  
332  
333  
334  
335  
336  
337  
338  
339  
340  
341  
342  
343  
344  
345  
346  
347  
348  
349  
350  
351  
352  
353  
354  
355  
356  
357  
358  
359  
360  
361  
362  
363  
364  
365  
366  
367  
368  
369  
370  
371  
372  
373  
374  
375  
376  
377  
378  
379  
380  
381  
382  
383  
384  
385  
386  
387  
388  
389  
390  
391  
392  
393  
394  
395  
396  
397  
398  
399  
400  
401  
402  
403  
404  
405  
406  
407  
408  
409  
410  
411  
412  
413  
414  
415  
416  
417  
418  
419  
420  
421  
422  
423  
424  
425  
426  
427  
428  
429  
430  
431  
432  
433  
434  
435  
436  
437  
438  
439  
440  
441  
442  
443  
444  
445  
446  
447  
448  
449  
450  
451  
452  
453  
454  
455  
456  
457  
458  
459  
460  
461  
462  
463  
464  
465  
466  
467  
468  
469  
470  
471  
472  
473  
474  
475  
476  
477  
478  
479  
480  
481  
482  
483  
484  
485  
486  
487  
488  
489  
490  
491  
492  
493  
494  
495  
496  
497  
498  
499  
500  
501  
502  
503  
504  
505  
506  
507  
508  
509  
510  
511  
512  
513  
514  
515  
516  
517  
518  
519  
520  
521  
522  
523  
524  
525  
526  
527  
528  
529  
530  
531  
532  
533  
534  
535  
536  
537  
538  
539  
540  
541  
542  
543  
544  
545  
546  
547  
548  
549  
550  
551  
552  
553  
554  
555  
556  
557  
558  
559  
560  
561  
562  
563  
564  
565  
566  
567  
568  
569  
570  
571  
572  
573  
574  
575  
576  
577  
578  
579  
580  
581  
582  
583  
584  
585  
586  
587  
588  
589  
590  
591  
592  
593  
594  
595  
596  
597  
598  
599  
600  
601  
602  
603  
604  
605  
606  
607  
608  
609  
610  
611  
612  
613  
614  
615  
616  
617  
618  
619  
620  
621  
622  
623  
624  
625  
626  
627  
628  
629  
630  
631  
632  
633  
634  
635  
636  
637  
638  
639  
640  
641  
642  
643  
644  
645  
646  
647  
648  
649  
650  
651  
652  
653  
654  
655  
656  
657  
658  
659  
660  
661  
662  
663  
664  
665  
666  
667  
668  
669  
670  
671  
672  
673  
674  
675  
676  
677  
678  
679  
680  
681  
682  
683  
684  
685  
686  
687  
688  
689  
690  
691  
692  
693  
694  
695  
696  
697  
698  
699  
700  
701  
702  
703  
704  
705  
706  
707  
708  
709  
710  
711  
712  
713  
714  
715  
716  
717  
718  
719  
720  
721  
722  
723  
724  
725  
726  
727  
728  
729  
730  
731  
732  
733  
734  
735  
736  
737  
738  
739  
740  
741  
742  
743  
744  
745  
746  
747  
748  
749  
750  
751  
752  
753  
754  
755  
756  
757  
758  
759  
760  
761  
762  
763  
764  
765  
766  
767  
768  
769  
770  
771  
772  
773  
774  
775  
776  
777  
778  
779  
780  
781  
782  
783  
784  
785  
786  
787  
788  
789  
790  
791  
792  
793  
794  
795  
796  
797  
798  
799  
800  
801  
802  
803  
804  
805  
806  
807  
808  
809  
810  
811  
812  
813  
814  
815  
816  
817  
818  
819  
820  
821  
822  
823  
824  
825  
826  
827  
828  
829  
830  
831  
832  
833  
834  
835  
836  
837  
838  
839  
840  
841  
842  
843  
844  
845  
846  
847  
848  
849  
850  
851  
852  
853  
854  
855  
856  
857  
858  
859  
860  
861  
862  
863  
864  
865  
866  
867  
868  
869  
870  
871  
872  
873  
874  
875  
876  
877  
878  
879  
880  
881  
882  
883  
884  
885  
886  
887  
888  
889  
890  
891  
892  
893  
894  
895  
896  
897  
898  
899  
900  
901  
902  
903  
904  
905  
906  
907  
908  
909  
910  
911  
912  
913  
914  
915  
916  
917  
918  
919  
920  
921  
922  
923  
924  
925  
926  
927  
928  
929  
930  
931  
932  
933  
934  
935  
936  
937  
938  
939  
940  
941  
942  
943  
944  
945  
946  
947  
948  
949  
950  
951  
952  
953  
954  
955  
956  
957  
958  
959  
960  
961  
962  
963  
964  
965  
966  
967  
968  
969  
970  
971  
972  
973  
974  
975  
976  
977  
978  
979  
980  
981  
982  
983  
984  
985  
986  
987  
988  
989  
990  
991  
992  
993  
994  
995  
996  
997  
998  
999  
1000

o fuge tre bifidys pe wepe. cam to  
it. & foond no pig. per pue. no but  
leeny's oonly. and he seide to it. nefe  
fruyt come forp of yee. into wy  
oiten ende. & anon pe fygetre  
was dyed vp. & dylphs seige. wonden  
ten seynge. how anod it dore. loph the  
seide to hem. treuli. I seie to you.  
if ze shulen haue fey. & shulen  
not doute. not oonly ze shule do  
of re fygetre. but also if ze shu  
len seie to pis hyl. take asey yee.  
& caste yee into pe see. it shal be  
don. & alle yigis what eue ye bilee  
myge. shule are in preper. ze shu  
len take. And whne he cam to  
pe temple. pe pices of prestis. & el  
dre me of pe peple. came wy to  
hym tedhige & seide. In what po  
wer dolt pou pes yigis. & who  
zaf to yee pis power. the answere  
rige. seide to he. and I shal are you  
o word. which if ze shule seie to  
me. & I shal seie to you. In what po  
wer I do pes yigis. of whens we  
pe baptyon of john. of heuene. or  
of men. and pei pousten wy me  
he ilk seynge. if we shule seie  
of heuene. he shal seie to us. Whi  
fore bileue ze not to hy. Soreli  
if we shulen seie of me. we dre  
den pe cupany of peple. for alle  
hadde iohu as a piete. & pei an  
swerige to shu seiden. we wite  
not. And he seide to he. ney. I seie  
to you. in what power. I do pes  
yigis. Forlope what semey to  
you. Su ma hadde ewepe sonis.  
& he comyge wy to pe furthe. se  
de lone go for to worche pis day  
in my vynezerd. Soreli he answere  
ride & seide. I wite. forlope after  
ward he sturid by penance or for

ynkyg. wente. forlope he cam  
wy to petro. & seide on luf man.  
& he answere. & seide. lord. I go  
and he wente not. who of pe three  
ne dide pe sadys wille. & pei sepen  
to hym. pe furthe. the seip to he. treu  
li. I seie to you. for pynphans &  
hoons. shule go before you to pe  
kyngdo of god. forlope. John cam to  
you in pe weye of rytyshelle. & ze  
bileneten not to hym. but pynphans  
& hoons. bileneden to hy. Soreli. ze  
seynge. hadden not penance atur  
ward. & ze bileneden to hym. The  
re ze anoy parable. per was a hole  
bonde man. pat plantide a vynezerd.  
& heggide it aboute. & dalt a pynphour  
pne. & bilde a tour. & hynde it to  
erpetheris. & wente fer i pig  
mage. forlope whne pe tyme of  
fruytis neze. he sente his ser  
nautis to pe erpetheris. & pei  
shule take fruyt of it. and pe  
erpetheris token his sernautis.  
& boeten yeton. pei slowen anoy.  
and pei bonede anoy. effsone he  
sente ope sernautis. mo pan pe  
furthe. & in ilk maner pei dide to  
hem. forlope at pe laste he sente  
his lone to he. & seide. pei shule  
dred my lone. Soreli. pe erpeti  
heris seynge pe lone. seide. wy  
me hem lile. pis is pe eyr. come  
ze. slee we hym. & we shule haue  
his eritage. and pei token hym  
& castiden out of pe vynezerd. &  
slowen. perfore whne pe lord of  
pe vynezerd shal come. what shal  
he do to yllke erpetheris. & pei  
sepen to hym. he shal leese puele  
pe puel me. & he shal sette to hy  
re his vynezerd to ope erpethe  
ris. whiche shule zelde to hym

fruyt in her tymes. the seip to  
hem. raden ze neue in scriptu  
ris. pe stoon which. blders rep  
uede. pis is maad into pe heed of  
pe corner. of pe lord pis yng is  
maad. & it is merueplous before  
our yen. fore. I seie to you. & pe  
kyngdo of god shal be takn fro  
you. & shal be zoni to a folk. do  
ynge fruytis of it. & he pat shal  
falle on pis stoon. shal be brok in  
to gude. forlope on who it shal  
falle. it shal al to powne hy. &  
whne pe pices of prestis. & farise  
es hadden herd his parabis. pei  
knewen. & he seide of he. & pei sek  
ge to holde hy. dredde pe cupany  
of peple. for pei hadde hy as a piete.  
And the answere. **A**rig. seide est soone i pa  
rabis to hem. & seide. &  
septe pe kyngdom of heuene is  
maad lyk to a ma king. pat made  
weddigis to his lone. and he sente  
his sernautis for to clepe me bedu  
to pe weddigis. & pei wolde not  
come. effsone he sente ope ser  
nautis. & septe. seie ze to pe me bedu  
to pe seete. lo. I have maad redy  
my mete. my bolis & my volatils  
eyr. fatte beestis ben slayn. & alle  
yigis ben redy. come ze to pe wed  
digis. Soreli. pei dispiled. & pei we  
ten asey. anoy into his tou. for  
lope anoy to his marchandise. but  
pe ope heelden his sernautis. &  
sloze hem pynshnd wy cutek.  
forlope pe kyng. whne he hadde  
herd. was wro. & he sente his col  
tis. & he loste o. d. d. d. po man  
quelleris. & biente her citee. pue  
he septe to his sernautis. Soreli. pe  
weddigis ben redy. but pei pat



weren clepid to ye seeke. were not  
worpi. perfore go ze to ye out go  
yngis of weyes. & whiche enie ze  
shuleu fynde. clepe ze to ye wed  
digis. and his seruantis zede out  
ito weyes. & gadre to gidre all  
pat rei fouden goode & yuele. And  
ye weddigis of me sittige at mete  
weren fulfillid. forsope & ye king  
entride to se me sittige at mete.  
& he sy. per ama not dord wy byn  
de dord. & he seide to hi. friend how  
entridist pou hdiur. & haddist not  
bride dord. & he was donb. pane ye  
king seide to ye mymist. bynde ze  
his lshondis & feet. & seide ze hi  
into vernere derknessis. per shal  
be wepig. & betyng to gidre of  
toep. forsope many ben clepid. but  
fewe ben choli. **P**ane farilees.  
goynge awep tooken a coucil. p  
rei shulde take ihu in word. & rei  
sende to hy her discipulis wy erodi  
ans. p ben me of erondis. & seien  
manfur we wite p you art forfist.  
& you techist in treupe ye wepe of  
god. & you chargist not of ony ma  
for you biholdist not ye ploune of  
me. pfore seie to us. what it semei  
to pee. is it leessul p reute or tbut.  
be zoun to cesar. **p**e euyppour. epri  
napp. & forsope whane ihu hadde  
knowe ye wickidnesse of hem. he  
seide. pocritis what tepten ze me.  
shewe ze to me ye prente of ye mo  
ney. and rei byouste to hy a peny.  
& ihc seide to hem. whos is yis yma  
ge. & ye wiptig aboue. rei seien  
to hi. of cesar. pane he seide to he  
pfore zelde ze to cesar. po yigis pat  
ben celaris. & to go. po yigis pat  
ben of god. and rei heerige won  
dide. & rei lesten hi. & weten a

wey. **I**n pat day saducis pat  
seien p per is no ryfig aen. came  
nyz to hi. & aride hi. & seide. maist  
moyses seide. if ony ma is deed. not  
hangge a lone. pat his bropr. wed  
de his wyf. & reyle seed to his bropr.  
forsope seuenne brwen were at us  
and ye firste weddide awyff. & is  
deed. & he not hangge seed. lest  
his wyf to his bropr. also ye se  
cude & ye prude til to ye senep.  
forsope ye laste of alle. & ye woma  
is is deed. pfore in ye ryfig aen.  
whos wyf of ye seuenne shal she  
be. for alle hadden hyr. sovel ihc  
answerige seide to he. ze erren &  
ney ze knowe ye scripturis uoyr  
ye vertu of god. for in ye ryfig a  
zen. ney rei shule. ney shulen be  
weddid. but rei ben as ye angelis  
of god in heuene. sovel of ye ryfig  
aen of dede me. ze han not rad.  
p it is seid of ye lord seynge to you.  
I am god of Abrahim. & god of Isaac.  
& god of Jacob. he is not god of dede  
me. but of lynyge me. and ye  
cūpary of peple heerige. wonden  
den in his techig. **F**orsope farile  
es heerige. pat he hadde put silen  
ce to saducis. & came to gidre. &  
oon of he a techere of ye lawe. gei  
de ihc. & teptide hy. maist. whid  
is a greet mandemet in ye lawe. ihc  
seide to hy. p shalt loue yi lord god  
of al ym herte. & in al yi loule. & in  
al yi mynde. yis is ye firste & ye mo  
te mandemet. & for ye seide is  
lyk to yis. you shalt loue yi nege  
bore as yi self. in yis twey man  
metis. hangy al ye lawe & plete.  
**S**ovel whne ye farilees weren  
gednd to gidre. ihc aride he. & se  
de. what semei to you of et. whos

lone is he. rei seien to hi. of dany  
he seip to he. pfore how dany i spirit  
cleip hi lord. & seip. ye lord seide to  
my lord. litte ou my rythalf. til i  
putte ym enemys. a stool of yi feet.  
perfore if dany cleip hi lord. how  
is he his lone. & no ma myte answe  
re a word to hi. ney ony ma was  
hardy fro pat day. **S**oto are hy more.  
**A**me ihc spak. **S**o. **P**ane  
to ye cūparyes of peple.  
& to hile discipulis. & seide. ou  
ye chayer of moyses. scribis &  
farilees latten pfore kepe ze &  
do ze alle yigis. what enie yigis rei  
seien to you. but nyle ze do after  
her werkis. for rei seien & doe not.  
sovel ye bynde greuouse chargis  
& importable. & pat moyn not be  
born. & pntten on shuldys of me.  
but wy her frugur rei wole not  
moue hem. perfore rei doe alle her  
werkis. p rei be seyn of me. forsope  
rei alargen her filateries. p ben  
smole strouis. & magnyfie hem  
mes. sovel rei loue ye firste sit  
tyng. places in soperis. & ye first  
te chayeris in synagogis. & salu  
taciouis in chepig. & to be clepid  
of me maistris. but nyle ze be cle  
pid maistris. for oon is zoun maist  
forsope alle ze ben bypen. and ny  
le ze clepe to you a sadiron erpe.  
for oon is zounre sadir. pat is i he  
uenes. ney be ze clepid maistris.  
for oon is zoun maistr. et. he pat  
is ye more in you. shal be zoun  
mymist. forsope he pat hyer hi  
sulf. shal be mek. & he pat me  
hy hi sulf. shal be enhaufid. **S**o  
vel wo to you scribis & farilees  
pocritis. pat dolen ye kygdom  
of heuenes bfore me. for ze en

tren not. ney sustren me eneryge  
for to entri. **W**o to you scribis &  
farilees pocritis. pat ete ye hou  
lis of widows. & prepen bi long  
preier. for yis yig. ze shule take  
more dom. **W**o to you scribis &  
farilees pocris. pat cūpalleu ye  
see & ye lond. to make o prelate. p  
is comitid to you. ordre. & whane  
he is maad. ze maken hy a lone of  
helle double more pan ze be. **W**o  
to you blynde leders pat seien.  
who enie swerip bi ye tēple of god.  
no yig. is. sovel he pat swerip i  
ye gold of ye tēple. ony. **O**is deuo  
ze foolis & blynde. for what is more.  
ye gold. or ye tēple. pat hale wy  
ye gold. and who enie swerip i ye  
auter. no yig. is. but he pat swe  
rip i ye zifte. pat is on ye auter.  
on y. blynde me. for what is more.  
ye zifte. or ye auter. pat hale wy  
ye zifte. perfore he pat swerip i  
ye auter. swerip i it. & i alle yigis  
pat ben pon. and he pat swerip in  
ye temple. swerip i it. & in hy  
pat dwelly i ye tēple. & he pat swe  
rip in heuene. swerip in ye trone  
of god. & in hy pat sittip you. **W**o  
to you scribis & farilees pocris.  
pat tyen mynte. anete & comyn.  
& han lest po yigis. p ben greuou  
set. or of more charge of ye lawe.  
dom & mercy & fey. and it bihoste  
or nedide for to do res yigis. & not  
to leue po. blynde leders clatige  
a gnatte. but swolwige a camel.  
**W**o to you scribis & farilees pocri  
tis. pat maken dene pat yig. of  
ye cupe & plater. pat is wy onte  
for. forsope wy me ze ben fulle  
of raneyme & bndnesse. p bly  
de farile dene first. pat yig. of ye



cuppe & plater. pat is wip me: & i  
pat pig pat is wipontefoy. he ma  
ad cleue. **W**ho to zoiu stribus & fari  
lees ipocritis. pat ben lye to sepul  
cris maid white. **W**hiche wipoute  
foz semē fapre to me: loyely wip  
me pei ben fulle of boons of deede  
me & al filpe so & ze forsoye wipou  
tefay apperen iust to me: but wip  
me ze ben fulle of ipocrisie & wic  
kidnesse. **W**ho to zoiu stribus & fari  
lees ipocritis. pat bylden sepul  
cris of profetis. & maken fapre pe  
buriels of iust me. & seyen if we  
hadden be in pe dayes of our fadur.  
we shulde not hane be her felows  
in pe blood of pfectis. And so ze be  
in wituellig to zoiu silf: for ze be  
ye sones of hem pat slouen pfe  
tis & fulfille ze re mesur of zoiu  
fadris. ze serpentis frimtis or  
burioningis of eddis p'sleen  
her modris. **h**ow shule ze fle fro  
pe dom of helle. **r**efore loy lende  
to zoiu. pfectis & wyle me. & str  
bis or witeris. & of hem ze shyn  
len ele. & crucifie. & of he ze shule  
bete in zoiu synagogis. & shule  
purslike fro citee into citee: p'al  
pe iust blood come on zoiu. pat  
was shad out on pe erpe. fro pe  
blood of iust abel. til to pe blood  
of sacarie. ye loue of barachie.  
whom ze slouen bi tibre pe te  
ple & pe auter. **t**renly i seie to  
zoiu. alle yes pigis shule come  
on pis generacion. **T**erthm ter  
lm pat sleut pfectis. & doonest  
hem pat ben sent to yee: how ofte  
wolde i gadre to gidre in sones.  
as an hen gadre to gidre hir ch  
cons. vnder hir wyngis. & zoiu  
woldit not: lo zoiu. hous shal

be left to zoiu desert or forsakin  
forsoye i seye to zoiu. ze shynen  
not se me fro hemis fory: til ze  
seyen. bleid is he pat comez in  
re name of ye lord. **A**nd i shen  
out of  
re temple. & hile dylph  
to hi pe bildigis of pe temple. for  
soye he auiserige. seide to hem  
seen ze alle yes pigis. **t**renly i  
seye to zoiu. a stoon shal not be  
left her on a stoon: which shal  
not be destroyed. **s**oreh shane  
he sat on ye hil of olpucte. hile  
dylphs came nyz to hi puelly. &  
seide seye to us shane yes pigis  
shulen be: & what tokene of pi  
compg. & of endig of pe world.  
and i shen auiserige. seide to hem  
se ze p'no ma dillepue zoiu. for ma  
nye shulen come i my name &  
shule seie i am chr. & pei shule  
dillepue manye for ze shule hee  
re batels. & oppropous of batels.  
se ze p'ze be not disturblid. for it  
bihouer yes pigis for to be don.  
but not it is ye ende. **f**all shal  
ryle to gidre azens folk. & reuue  
azens reuue. & penitencis & hi  
gris & pe erpe monygis shulen  
be by plas. forsoye alle yes pi  
gis: ben bigynnyngis of forwas. pa  
ne rei shule butake zoiu ito eb  
lacion. & pei shulen ele zoiu. &  
ze shule be in hate to alle folkis  
for my name. and pane manye  
shulen be shandrid. & brraye  
to gidre or aq oru. & in hate ha  
ue to gidre. and many falle pfe  
tis shule ryle. & dillepue manye  
for wickidnesse shal be plente  
uous. ye charite of manye shal

wer gold forsoye he pat dwelle  
stable into pe ende. shal be saaf  
and pis gospel of kyngdo. shal be  
predid in al pe world. into wituell  
sing to alle folkis: & pane ye ende  
shal come. **p**foze whane ze shule  
seen ye abhominacion of dylph  
pat is seid of daniel ye pfecte. ston  
dige in pe hooly place. he pat redy  
vndir stonde. pane pei pat ben i ju  
dee. fle to pe mounteyns. and he pat  
is in ye hous roof. come not down  
to take ony pig of his hous. & he  
pat is in ye feeld. turne not azen  
to take his coote. forsoye mo to he  
pat be wip childe & nozthie in po  
dayes. **s**oreh prepe ze p' zoiu. fle  
fug. be not maid in wipir or laboth  
for p'ne shal be greet tribulacion.  
what man was not fro ye bigyn  
nyng of pe world til now. wep shal  
be maid. and no but po dayes had  
den be breiggid. al fleilth p'is man  
kynde. shule not be maid lat. but  
po dayes shule be maid shorte for  
ye chofii men. **p**ane if ony man  
shal seye to zoiu. lo her is crist or  
yer. nyle ze bileue. for falsie citis &  
falsie pfectis. shule ryle. & rei shu  
len zine grete tokenes & wondris.  
so p'also ye chofene be lad into erro.  
if it may be don. lo i hane bifore  
seid to zoiu. pfoze if rei shule seie  
to zoiu. lo he is in desert. nyle ze go  
out. lo in p'ny chaurbis or plas.  
nyle ze bileue. for as lest goy out  
fro ye eest. & appery til into pe west.  
so shal also ye comyg of uanis so  
ne. **W**her eue ye body shal be. also  
ye eghis shule be gadrid. **p**idur. **f**or  
soye anoon aft. ye tribulacion of po  
dayes. ye lone shal be maid terk. &  
ye mone shal not zine hre liz. and

terris shulen falle down fro heue  
ne. & pe vertues of heuenes shule  
be moued. and p'ne ye tokene of man  
lone shal apper in heuene. & pane  
alle kmredis or ly magis of erpe sh  
ule weple. and rei shule se manys  
lone comyge in pe dondis of heuene.  
wip moche vtu & magette. & he sh  
al lende his angels wip a trupe &  
greet vois. & rei shule gadre his  
chofene. fro soui coctis. fro pe hzel  
te pigis of heuenes til tecrines or  
endis of he. forsoye lerue ze pe pa  
rable of a figetre. **W**hiche his bow  
or branche is now tendre. & leuis  
ben byrigit. ze wite p'somer is  
nyz. so & ze shule ze shule se alle  
yes pigis. wite p'it is nyz in ye za  
tis. **t**renly i seye to zoiu. for pis  
generacion shal not passe. til alle  
pigis be don. **h**euene & erpe shule  
passe. but my wordis shule not  
passe. forsoye of yllke day & our. no  
ma woot. neyr angels of heuenes.  
no but ye fadir aloone. forsoye as  
it was in pe dayes of noe. so shal be  
also pe comyg of manys lone. for as  
in pe dayes bifore pe greet flood  
pei were etinge & dymkige. wed  
dige & talige to weddig. til into  
pat day. i which noe entride into  
ye ship. & rei fneiben not til pe  
greet flood cam & took alle me: so  
shal be ye comyg of manys lone.  
**p**ane tweyne shule be in a feeld. so  
shal be takn & anoy left. or forsakn.  
twey wipmen shulen be gryndige  
in o queerne. con shal be takn & pe  
top forsakn. tweyne in a bed. yeton  
shal be takn. & petop forsakn. **p**er  
fore wake ze. for ze wite not i what  
our zoiu. lord is to come. **s**oreh w  
te ze pat pig. for if ye hosebonde ma



Wite. in what our pe peef were to  
come: treuþ he shuld make. &  
suffre not his hous to be vndur-  
mynded. And þfore ȝe be redy: for  
in what our ȝe gessen not. manys  
sone is to come. ¶ Who gessit þou  
is a trewe seruant & prudent or  
war: whom his lord ordeynede on  
his meyne. þ he ȝine he mete in  
tyme: blestid is þat seruant: who  
his lord whane he shal come. shal  
fynde doynge so treuþ: ȝe sepe to  
ȝou. for on alle his goodis. he shal  
ordeyne hi forloþe if wilke þuel  
seruant sepe in his herte. my lord  
makip dwellig or taryng to co-  
me. & bigynner to synþe his eue  
seruantis. soþe if he ete & dryn-  
ke. wip dwilewe me: þe lord of  
wilke seruant. shal come in þe  
day in which he hopip not & in  
our pat he knowip not. & shal de-  
parte hi: & putte his part wip  
ypocritis: þe shal be wepyng.  
& betyg to gidre of teep. ¶ **W**ane þe kyngd of heu-  
nes shal be lyk to ten vn-  
gyns: whiche takige her  
laupis wente out. meetige þe  
spoule or husebonde & þe spouel  
le or wif forloþe fyne of he we-  
ren foolis: & fyne prudent: but  
þe fyne foolis tooken her laupis:  
& tooken not oþle wip he: forloþe  
þe prudent: tooken oþle in her wel-  
fels wip laupis forloþe whiche þe  
spoule or husebonde made dwellig.  
alle nappid & slepte soþe at myd-  
nygt. a cry was maid: lo þe spou-  
le comip. go ȝe out meetige wip  
hi: þane alle þe vngyns risen up:  
& ourned her laupis soþe þe  
foolis seiden to þe wyse ȝine ȝe

to us of ȝour oþle: for our laupis  
ben quenched ȝe prudent answere  
ide. seynge lest pamentur it shal  
fille not to us & to ȝou: go ȝe rye-  
re to me lillige. & þe ȝe to ȝou  
forloþe þe while þe we me forto  
þe: þe spoule cam: & þe pat we  
ren redy: entride wip hi to þe wed-  
digs: & þe ȝate was shut soþe  
at þe laste also þe oþe vngyns  
came seynge lord lord opyne  
to us: and he answere seide tre-  
uþ ȝe sepe to ȝou: ȝe knowe not  
ȝou: þe fore wake ȝe: for ȝe wi-  
ten not þe day ne þe our. ¶ So  
þe as ama goynge fer in pilg-  
mage: depite his seruantis: &  
bytook to he his goodis: and to  
he ȝaf fyne talentis or belantis  
forloþe to anor trewe. but to  
anor oon to ech after his owne  
vertu: & wente forþ anoon forlo-  
þe & he pat hadde take fyne tale-  
tis. wente forþ & wroute in he:  
ȝe wan oþe fyne also & he pat ta-  
ke trewe: wan oþe trewe: so  
þe he pat taku oon ȝede forþ &  
dalk into þe erpe: & hude þe mo-  
ney of his lord: but after moche  
tyme. þe lord of þe seruantis  
cam: & putte re sou wip he: &  
he pat hadde take fyne talentis  
cam: & brouste oþer fyne & sei-  
de lord ȝou bitokist to me fyne  
talentis or belantis: lo ȝe hane  
ouer getu oþer fyne: his lord  
seide to hi wel be ȝe gode seruant  
& seynful or trewe: for on fewe  
ȝis ȝou host be trewe: ȝe shal  
ordeyne þe on many pigis: en-  
tre ȝou into þe iope of pilod  
forloþe & he pat hadde take  
er talentis: cam & seide lord ȝe

bitokist to me trewe talentis: lo  
ȝe hane ouergetu oþe trewe hy  
lord seide to him wel be ȝou god  
seruant & trewe: for on fewe pi-  
gis ȝou host be trewe. ȝe shal or-  
deyne þe on many pigis: entre  
ȝou into þe iope of pilod forloþe  
& he pat hadde taku o talent: cam  
my & seide lord: ȝe woot ȝe art  
an hard ma: ȝou repit wher ȝou  
host not louse: & ȝou gadrit to  
gidre. wher ȝou host not louse a  
brood: and ȝe dedige wente. & hude  
in talent in þe erpe so ȝou host pat  
pat is in soþe his lord answere  
ge seide to hi: þuel seruant & sloth-  
wast ȝe ȝe reþe wher ȝe loþo  
not: & gadre to gidre wher ȝe  
adde not abrood: þe fore it biþote  
þe to take my money to change  
ris: & ȝe comþe shulde hane rel-  
seined forloþe pat pat is in in  
wher ȝe fore take ȝe awer fro hi  
þe talent: & ȝine ȝe to hi pat hap-  
ten talentis: for to every ma ha-  
uþge it shal be ȝou: & he shal  
hane pleite: forloþe fro hi pat  
hap not also pat pat he semeþ to  
hane: shal be taku awer of hi  
and caste ȝe out þe seruant vn-  
profitable: into vtmer derfel  
his: þe shal be wepyng: & be-  
tyng to gidre of teep. ¶ **F**orloþe  
whane manys sone shal come i  
his maite. & alle hile angelis  
wip hi: þane he shal sitte on þe  
sege of his maite: & alle folkis  
shulen be gadrid. bifore hi: & he  
shal departe hem asþyne. as a  
shepard departip schep fro ki-  
dis: and loþe he shal sette þe sh-  
cep on his rythalf: þe kidis for-  
sepe on þe lefthalf: þane þe ky-

shal sepe to he: pat shule be on  
his rythalf: come ȝe þe blestid of  
my fadir: weelde ȝe or take & posses-  
cion þe kyngdom maid redi to ȝou  
fro þe makig of þe world: for ȝe  
was hungry: & ȝe ȝane to me for to  
ete: and ȝe yrritid: & ȝe ȝane to me  
for to drynke: ȝe was herborles: &  
ȝe herborde me: nakid: & ȝe hiled  
me: & ȝe visitiden me: ȝe was  
in prilon: & ȝe came to me: þane  
mit me shule answere to hi: & shu-  
len sepe lord whane ȝe ȝen we þe  
hungry: & we fedde þe: þe yrritid: &  
we ȝane to þe drynke: whane for-  
loþe ȝe ȝen we þe herborles: & we  
herborde þe: or nakid: & we hile-  
den þe: or whiche ȝen we þe & ȝe  
or in prilon: & we came to þe: &  
he answere ȝe shal sepe to he: treu-  
þ ȝe sepe to ȝou: as longe as ȝe dide  
to oon of þe my leste byperen:  
ȝe diden to me: þane þe kyng shal  
sepe to hem: pat shule be on his  
lefthalf: departe fro me. & enlid  
into enlastige fier: which is maid  
redy to þe treuþ & his angelis: for  
ȝe hungry: & ȝe ȝane not to me for  
to ete: ȝe yrritid: & ȝe ȝane not to  
me for to drynke: ȝe was herbor-  
les: & ȝe herborde not me: nakid:  
& ȝe keueride not me: & ȝe in pr-  
lon: & ȝe visitide not me: þane þe  
shulen answere to hi: & shulen  
sepe lord whane ȝe ȝen we þe hu-  
grige: or yrritid: or herborles: or  
nakid: or & ȝe in prlon: & we ser-  
uete not to þe: þane he shal an-  
swer to hem: & shal sepe: treuþ  
ȝe sepe to ȝou: how longe ȝe diden  
not to oon of þe leste: neþer ȝe  
diden to me: and þe shule go i  
to enlastige turnet: forloþe þe



**A**ll me shule go to euil luge lye  
 id it was .xvi. .xvi.  
 don. whane ihc hadde en  
 did alle pes wordis: he sei  
 ce to hile dyluphis: ze witen y atar  
 ribey dayes. past shal be mad: i  
 manis sone shal be bitakn y he  
 be crucified: yane pe pnces of pre  
 tis. i pe eldre me of pe peple were  
 gadrid. into pe halle of pe pnce of  
 prestis. pat was leid capfas: i ma  
 den a concil. y per ihuden holde  
 ihu wip gyle i sle. loyeli pei seide  
 not in pe haldap: lest pamenture  
 uoyse were maid in pe peple: for  
 sope whie ihc was in betampe i  
 pe hous of symon lepronsle: also  
 ma haupge a box of alabastre of  
 prestious oymemet. cam miz to  
 hym. i shedde out ou pe heed of  
 hy reuige. loyeli pe dyluphis seige.  
 hadde dedepn. seige wher to vis lost.  
 for it myzte be seel for myche. i be  
 zoun to pore me. loyeli ihc witege.  
 seide to hem. what ben ze heuy or lo  
 ry to pe woma. for she har wro  
 ut in me a good werk: for whi ze  
 shulen enmore haue pore me w  
 zon: but ze shulen not algatis ha  
 ue me. for sope pis woman ledige  
 pis oymemet into my body: made  
 for to burie me. treuh i sepe to zon.  
 wher ene pis gospel shal be prechid  
 in al pe world: also pat pig pat pi  
 woman dide shal be leid into myde  
 of humpane oon of pe tielue pat  
 was leid judas daroth. wente for  
 to pe pnces of prestis i seide to  
 he. what wolen ze yue to me: i  
 i shal bitake hi to zon. i per odyer  
 ned to hy patti platis of siluer  
 and fro pat tyme he souzte coue  
 nablete. for to bitraye hym. for loy

in pe furste day of per floones. i  
 is. re seide of past. dyluphis came  
 to ihu. i seide. whet wolt you we  
 make redy to pee. for to ete past.  
 i ihc seide. go ze into pe citee to si  
 man. i sepe to hy. pe manstir seip  
 my tyme is nyz. at pee i make past  
 wip my dyluphis. and dyluphis dide.  
 as ihc comande to he. i per made  
 redy past. for sope whane euentid  
 was maid. he sat to re mete wip  
 his tielue dyluphis. and he seide  
 to hem etynge. treuh i seie to zon.  
 y oon of zon. shal bitraye me. and  
 per ful sozi bigimenne alle i spe  
 cial to seie. lord wher i am. i he  
 answerige seide. he pat puttir w  
 me. pe hond in pe plater. shal bi  
 trape me. for sope manis sone go  
 y. as it is writen. of hi. but wo to  
 pat ma. by who manis sone shal  
 be bitrayed. it were good to hym.  
 if pat ma hadde not be born. for so  
 pe judas pat bitrayede hi. anlike  
 rite seige. manstir wher i am.  
 ihu seide to hi. pon hast seide. i  
 sope while pei soupede. ihc took  
 breed. i bleide i brak. i zaf to hi  
 se dyluphis. i seide. take ze ete. pi  
 is my body. and he takege pe cup  
 pe. dide pantiqis. i zaf to he. i se  
 de. drynke ze alle herof. pis is my  
 blood of pe newe testamet. whi  
 ch shal be shad out for manye in  
 to remysion of synes. for sope i  
 seie to zon. i shal not drynke fro  
 pis tyme. of pis frucht of pe vyne.  
 til into pat day. whane i shal  
 drynke it newe wip zon. in pe  
 kigdom of my fadir. and whie  
 an ymque or hermyg was seide. pe  
 wenten out into pe mount of oly  
 uete. yane ihc seide to he. alle ze

shulen suffre standre in me. i  
 pis myt. for it is writen. i shal  
 empte pe sheparde. i pe sheep of  
 pe floe shulen be staterid. for sope  
 asar. pat i shal ryle aren. i shal go  
 bifore zon into galile. soyeli petre  
 answerige. seide to hi. pon alle shu  
 len be standrid in pee. i shal neie  
 be standrid. ihc seide to hi. truh i  
 sepe to pee. for in pis myt. bifore pe  
 cof. croise. pnes pon shalt denpe  
 me. petre seide to hy. i he pon it  
 shal biloue me to dye wip pee. i  
 shal not denpe pee. also i alle dyl  
 phis seide. yane ihc cam wip he.  
 into a town pat is seide iethseman.  
 i he seide to his dyluphis. litte ze he  
 re. pe while i go yidur. i preie. i  
 whie he hadde take petre. i twey  
 sones of sebede. he bigan for to  
 be heuy. i for in herte. yane he  
 seide to hem. my soule is soze whil.  
 til to pe deey. i nitepe ze or abide  
 ze here. i wake wip me. i he zete  
 for altil. i seide doln on his face.  
 preynge i seynge. my fadir. if  
 it is possible. passe pis cuppe. i  
 pallion fro me. neyeres not as i  
 wole. but as you wolt. and he cam  
 to hile dyluphis. i fond hem slepi  
 ge. i he seide to petre. so wher ze  
 myzte not. our wake wip me. i  
 ke ze i preie ze. i ze entr not to  
 teptacou. for sope pe spurt is re  
 di. but pe flesch is lyf. or vultable  
 est. pe seide tyme. he wente i pi  
 ede seynge. my fadir. if pis cuppe  
 may not passe. no but i drynke  
 it. i pi wille be don. and est soone  
 he cam. i fond hem slepige. for  
 her pzen were greuyd. i he leste  
 hem. i wente est soone. i preiede  
 pe yidur tyme pe same word. i

seide. yane he cam to his dyluphis.  
 i seide to hem. slepe ze now. i rel  
 te ze. lo pe our hap neyzed. i man  
 nis sone shal be takn. into pe hon  
 dis of syneris. ryle ze go we. lo  
 he pat shal take me. hap neyzed.  
 zit pe while he spak. lo judas oon  
 of pe tielue cam. i wip hi a greet  
 cup. i wip syerdis i bottis.  
 sent of pe pnces of prestis. i  
 of pe eldre me of pe peple. for so  
 pe he pat bitrayede hi. zaf to he  
 a tokene. i seide. who enere i sh  
 al kille. he it is. holde ze hym. i  
 anod he comynge miz to ihu. seide.  
 harl manstir. i he kille hi. i ihc  
 seide to hi. frend wher to art you  
 couni. yane pei came miz. i se  
 de. hondis on ihu. i heelde hy. and  
 lo oon of he pat were wip ihu.  
 holdige out pe hond. dreiz out  
 his swerd. and he tynprige pe ser  
 uant of pe pnce of prestis. i  
 tite of. his cere. yane ihc seide to  
 hi. turne pi swerd into his place.  
 for alle pat shule take swerd.  
 shule perulhe by swerd. wher  
 gelist you. i may not preie mi  
 fadir. i he shal yue to me now.  
 more pan tielue legiois of an  
 gelis. how yfoze shulen pe tynp  
 turis be. fulid. for so it bilouey  
 to be don. i in pat our. ihc seide to  
 pe cupangis of peple. as to a peef.  
 ze han gon out. wip syerdis i  
 bottis for to catche me. day by day  
 i sat at zon. i i tynpte i pe temple.  
 i ze heelde not me. for sope al pis  
 pig was don. i per tynptis of  
 pfectis shulen be fulid. yane  
 alle dyluphis fledde. i forlofen  
 hi. i per holdige ihu. leden hym  
 to capfas pnce of prestis. where



tribis & pe eldre me of pe peple  
 hadde comi to gldre / forlofe pe  
 tre sined hi a fer. til into pe hal  
 le of pe prince of prestis / and he  
 entruce wiþ þine. & sat wiþ pe  
 seruauitis. & þe schilde se þe en  
 de / forlofe pe þince of prestis &  
 al pe conseil longte fals witnes  
 sig. azens ihu. þ þe schilde take  
 hi to deap / and þe fowden not. wh  
 ane many fals witnessis hadde  
 come / treut at pe laste. the þe  
 fals witnessis. came & seide / vis  
 seide / I may distrope pe temple  
 of god. & aftu pe yndre day bilde  
 it wen / and pe þince of prestis ry  
 fige. seide to hi / answer ut þ no  
 ris to yo pigis. whiche þes wit  
 nessen azens þee. forlofe ihc w  
 stille / & pe þince of prestis seide to  
 hi / I cunowre þee by quik god.  
 þ þou seie to us if þ art cit re lo  
 ne of god / ihc seide to hi / þou hast  
 seid neþeles / I seie to þou. fro hen  
 mulfors & schile se manns loue  
 fittige at pe rythale of pe vtu  
 of god. & comþe in doudis of he  
 uene. þane pe þince of þstis. to  
 rente his doyis. & seide / he hay blas  
 femyd what it han we nede to wit  
 nessis. lo now & han herd blasse  
 mpe / what semer to þou. and þe  
 answerige seide / he is gilty of deap  
 þane þe speite into his face. & sim  
 tede hi wiþ buffatis / forlofe oþer  
 zane strok is wiþ pe palme of her  
 handis ito his face. & seide / þou cit  
 pfetie to us. who is he þat smot  
 þee. soþeli þetre sat wyrouten  
 i þe halle / & con handmaddu cam  
 ny. to hi. & seide / and þ þer wiþ  
 ihu of gahile / & he tempete bi fore  
 alle men. & seide / I woot not whi

þou seist / forþore wþāne he seide out  
 of þe zate: anor hand mæddū sƿ  
 hi: & seide to hē y were þei: & þis  
 was wip ihū of nasareth: & etlioo  
 ne he deuyede wip anor. for i knew  
 not þe mā: and after. ƿard almi-  
 þe ƿat stode comē wip: & seide to  
 petre / trenh i þ̄ art of hē / for bih  
 i þi speche: mak i þe oppm: þi  
 he bigan to warie & to libere: &  
 he knew not þe mā: & anoo þe cof  
 cren: and petre bypouhte on þe  
 word of ihu: þat he hadde led. bi  
 fore þe cof croune: vnes þ̄ alþ  
 denye me: & he seide out: & wepe  
 bitterly // C<sup>m</sup> xlvij.

**A**fore wþāne þe mozte  
 tyd was maid: alle þe p̄n-  
 ces of prestis. & eldre mē of þe pe-  
 ple. token counceil aȝens ihū. þ̄ þei  
 schulde take hi to deþ: & rei sette  
 hi boundū. & bitoke to pilat of pon-  
 te meȝr oȝ cheef iustice / rāne hi  
 das þat bitrayede hi. sƿ: þ̄ he w̄s  
 dāpn̄d: & he was led by penance  
 oȝ forþibing: & brouȝte aȝen þat  
 ti platis of siluer to re p̄nces of  
 prestis. & to þe eldre mē of þe peple  
 & seide / i haue sƿned. bitrayinge iust  
 blood: and þei seide: what to us / se þ̄  
 and wþāne he hadde cast aweiþ þe  
 platis of siluer in þe tēple: he wen-  
 te aweiþ: and goȝinge aweiþ he hau-  
 gite hi wip a snare / forþore þe p̄n-  
 ces of prestis. token þe platis of  
 siluer. & seide / it is not leedful to  
 seude hem ito þe treserie: for it is  
 þe p̄ns of blood / soþeli wþāne cou-  
 ceil was takē: þei bouȝte wip hē  
 þe feeld of a potter. into burying  
 of deed mē / for þis vis: þ̄ ilke feeld  
 is clepd achidēmach. þ̄ is afeold  
 of blood til into þis dāȝ. rāne þat

ying was fulfillid pat was seid  
 bi y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>phet<sup>e</sup> jeremie seyinge and  
 y<sup>e</sup>i token y<sup>e</sup>nti<sup>r</sup> pharis of siluer. y<sup>e</sup>  
 pris of anna p<sup>r</sup>esid. who y<sup>e</sup>i p<sup>r</sup>ei  
 seden of y<sup>e</sup> sones of y<sup>r</sup>ael. & y<sup>e</sup>i  
 zoue hem into a seeld of a potter.  
 as y<sup>e</sup> lord ordeynede to me/ so y<sup>e</sup>li  
 the stood before y<sup>e</sup> meyr or domes  
ma and y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>esid<sup>e</sup>te arde hi & sei  
 te art y<sup>e</sup>nt<sup>r</sup>ing of ier<sup>r</sup>us<sup>r</sup>. the sen  
 to hi/ you seist & whane he was ac  
 cused of y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ices of p<sup>r</sup>estis & eld<sup>r</sup>e  
 me of y<sup>e</sup> peple. he answeride no y<sup>r</sup>is  
 pane pilat sen to hi/ heerist y<sup>e</sup> not  
 how many w<sup>r</sup>ituenis y<sup>e</sup>i sepen a  
 zens y<sup>e</sup>e? & he answeride not to hi  
 to ony word. so y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>esident won  
 dide greetly/ forsove by a solepne  
 day. y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>esident was wout. for  
 to deliue to y<sup>e</sup> peple oon bond m<sup>n</sup>.  
 whom y<sup>e</sup>i wolte/ forsove he hadde  
 pane o famous ma bond m<sup>n</sup>. pat was  
 seid barabas/ y<sup>e</sup>fore pilat seide to  
 he gadrid to gadre who wole ze y<sup>e</sup>  
leeue or deliue to zou. wher barabas  
 or ihu pat is seid cit/ for he wilte.  
 y<sup>e</sup> by enye y<sup>e</sup>i b<sup>r</sup>ayeden hi/ forso  
 ve whane he sat for iustise. his w<sup>r</sup>it  
 sente to hi & seide/ no y<sup>r</sup>is to y<sup>e</sup>e. &  
 to pat iust ma/ for y<sup>e</sup> haue suffrid  
 y<sup>e</sup>s day many y<sup>r</sup>is for hi by a vi  
 sion or liueuene. forsove y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ices  
 of p<sup>r</sup>estis & y<sup>e</sup> eld<sup>r</sup>e me. tyfede or  
 coinceide to y<sup>e</sup> peplis. y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup>i shul  
 den are barabas but y<sup>e</sup>i shulden  
 lese ihu/ forsove y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ident answ<sup>r</sup>e  
 rige. seide to he who of y<sup>e</sup> tweyne  
 wolen ze to be leste or deliued to z<sup>e</sup>.  
 and y<sup>e</sup>i seide/ barabas pilat sen  
 to he/ what y<sup>e</sup>fore shal y<sup>e</sup> doo of ihu  
 pat is seid cit. alle sen be he cru  
 cified y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ident sen to he/ so y<sup>e</sup>li  
 what of y<sup>e</sup>uel hay he don? & y<sup>e</sup>i cry

eden more. seynge / be he crucified  
for sope pilat seynge. ⁊ he ⁊ fithide  
no pig. but ye more anoyse was  
muid. took watir ⁊ wauhtide ye hou  
dis bifoze ye peple ⁊ seide / I am i  
nocent or giteles of ye blood of y<sup>e</sup>  
milt ma. seze / and al ye peple an  
swerege. seide / his blood be on vs.  
⁊ on ou<sup>r</sup> sonces / y<sup>e</sup>ane he lette to he  
barabas. but he took to hem ihu  
doornyd. ⁊ he shulde be crucified  
**P**ane knyghts of ye priestes tak  
ge ihu in ye moot halle. gadrede  
to hi al ye cūpany of knyghts / and  
pei vndorloge hi. diden aboute hi  
a reed mantel / and pei foldge a  
crokne of porres putide on his  
heed. ⁊ a reed in his rythond / and  
pei kuelde bifoze hi. ⁊ pei doornede  
hi ⁊ seide / heyl kyng of ieris / ⁊  
pei lpetige on hi. tookē a reed. ⁊  
knyghte his heed / ⁊ aser y<sup>e</sup> pei had  
den doornyd hi. pei vndorpede hy  
of ye mantel. ⁊ pei cloride hi w<sup>y</sup>  
his cloris. ⁊ ledde hi. for to crucifie  
hy / sovel pei goynge out. souiden  
ama of breuen comynge frō atou.  
symon bi name / rei cōstareynede  
hy y<sup>e</sup> he shulde take his croll / ⁊ pei  
came into a place. pat is deyd gol  
gatha y<sup>e</sup> is ye place of caluare / ⁊  
rei zamen hi for to drynke w<sup>y</sup>n mod  
lid w<sup>y</sup> galle / ⁊ whāne he hadde tal  
tid. he wolde not drynke / sovel af  
tir y<sup>e</sup> rei hadden crucified hi. pei  
depar tide his cloris ⁊ sente lott /  
y<sup>e</sup> it shulde be fullfild. pat is seid  
bi ye pfete seynge / rei partiden  
to hem my cloris. ⁊ on my doy rei  
sente lott / and pei sitige kepte  
hi ⁊ rei putide on his heed. ye cau  
le of hi w<sup>y</sup>ntū yis is ihc of ualareth.  
kyng of ieris / y<sup>e</sup>ane twey penes



weren crucified wip hi. oon on pe rist  
half. & oon on pe lechalf. forsope  
me passige for. blissefuld hi. mo  
nyge her hedis & seynge. f. to  
pee pat distroyed pe temple of god.  
& in pe prydre day bildest it agen.  
saue pon ri. silt. if p. art pe lone  
of god. come down of pe cross. al  
so & pnces of prestis stornge w  
stribis & eldre me. seide. he made  
overt me silt. he may not make  
hi silt silt. if he is kig. of nrael.  
come he nows down fro pe cross.  
& we bilene to hi. he tristur i god.  
delphie he hi now if he wole. for he  
seide. for i am goddis lone. forso  
pe & pe penes pat were crucified  
wip hi. putte to hi wip reprof  
pe same pig. sovel fro pe lyte  
our. derkneillis were maid on al pe  
erpe. til to pe nymp our. & abou  
te pe nymp our. ihe criede wip gr  
eet. vois & seide. hely. hely. lamasa  
batany. p. is. my god. my god. whi  
hast pou forlake me. sovely hi me  
stoudige per. & heerige. seide. vis  
clepny hely. and amoon oon of he  
reynge. took & fillde a spouge  
wip vynegre. & puttide on a reede.  
& gaf to hi for to drynke. but ope  
seide. suffre pou. se we wher hely  
come delphynge hi. forsope ihe est  
soone cryge wip greet. vois. sen  
te out pe spurt. & lo pe veil of pe  
temple was lit. or to rent into t  
parties. fro pe hyeste til to down.  
and pe erpe was moued. & stoon  
were clef. & buriels were opened.  
& many bodies of seyntis pat slep  
ten. or weren deed. rylde agen. & pei  
goynge out of her buriels. after  
his resurrection. came into pe ho  
ly citee. & apperide to many. tren

ly centurio. & pei rat were wip  
hi. kepige ihi. whie pe monyng  
of pe erpe was seyn. & rovigis  
pat were don. pei dreed greetly  
seynge. verily vis was goddis  
lone. forsope p. were pere many  
wymen a fer. pat stonde ihi fro ga  
hile. & mynstride to hi. among whi  
che was mary magdalen. & marie pe  
modir of james & of joseph. & pe mo  
dir of sebedees lones. forsope whane  
pe evenyng was maid. p. came a ryde  
ma. fro armachia. by name joseph.  
& he was discipule of ihi. he wente to  
pilat. & arde pe body of ihi. p. ane  
pilat comandide pe body to be sold. u.  
and whane pe body was tak. u. joseph  
wylapide it in a cleue sentel. or iumen  
clor. & puttide it in his newe buriel  
pat he hadde he wip in a stoon. & he  
waleide a greet stoon to pe dore  
of pe buriel. & wente a wey. forsope  
mary magdalen. & anoy marie.  
weren per. sitinge agens pe sepulch.  
sovel on petour day. pat is after  
palt. evenyng. pe pnces of prestis  
& pe fariles came to gide to pilat.  
& seide. sir. we han myde p. sylke. &  
toun. or dylapour. seide. it lymge.  
after p. dapes. & shal ryle agen. p.  
foze comande pon pe sepulch. for  
to be kept. til into pe prydre day.  
lest perauetur. his discipulis come  
& stelen hi. & seyen to pe peple. he  
huy rishi fro deade me. & pe laste er  
roun. shal be moze. pa pe former.  
pilat wite to hem. ze han pe kepig  
goze. kepe ze as ze kimen. forsope  
pei goynge for. kepte or wardide pe  
sepulch. markige or selige pe stoon.  
**H**er keperis. **xxviii.**  
forsope in pe enyng of pe la  
bat. or haliday. pat shynge

b. in pe firste day of pe wote. mary  
magdalen cam. & anoyr marie.  
for to se pe sepulch. and lo p. was  
maid a greet erpe monyng. for pe  
angel of pe lord cam down fro he  
uene. & cam ny. & turnede awei  
pe stoon. & sat peron. sovel his lo  
kig was as leyt. & his cloris as  
snow. forsope for drede of hi. pe  
keperis were a ferd. & pei were  
maid as deed me. for pe angel an  
swerige seide to pe wymen. nyle  
ze drede. for i root p. ze seken ihi.  
pat was crucified. he is not her.  
for he roos. as he seide. come ze &  
se ze pe place. wher pe lord was  
put. and ze goynge lone. seie to  
hile discipulis. p. he huy rishi. & lo  
he shal go bifore zou. to gahle.  
pere ze shule se hi. lo. i. hane bifo  
ze seide to zou. and pei weten out  
soone fro pe buriels. wip drede &  
greet ioye. reynge for to telle to  
hile discipulis. and lo ihe mette he.  
& seide. hely. ze. forsope pei nezete  
& heelde his feet. & woulthpette  
hym. p. ane ihe seide to he. nyle ze  
drede. goze. telle ze to my briden.  
p. rei go in to gahle. per. rei shule  
se me. and whie pei hadde gon.  
lo sume of pe keperis came. to  
pe citee. & telde to pe pnces of pl  
tis. alle pigis pat were don. and  
pei gadrid to gide wip pe eldre  
men whie a conseil was tak. u.  
zauen to pe knytis plentuous  
monep. & seiden. seie ze p. his disti  
plis came by nygt. & han stole hi.  
while we slepten. and if vis be  
herd of pe prestet. or mistale. we  
shulen concele hi. & make zou sy  
ker. & whie pe monep was tak. u.  
pei dideu as pei were tangt. and

vis word is purphatid at pe ieris. **116.**  
til in to vis day. forsope entene  
discipulis weten in to gahle. to  
an hil. wher ihe hadde ordeyned  
to hem. and pei seynge hi. woulth  
peten. sovel sinne of hem dowte  
ten. & ihe comyge ny. spak to he  
& seide. al pouer in heuene & in er  
pe. is ioun to me. p. fore ze goynge  
teche alle folkis. cristenyge he in  
pe name of pe fadir. & pe lone. & of pe  
hooh. goft. techige he for to kepe  
alle pigis. what eue pigis. i hane  
comandid to zou. and lo. i. am wip  
zou. i alle dapes. til to pe endyng  
of pe world. **I here endy pe gospel**  
**of matheu. & bigynne pe plog of mark.**  
**M**ark pe ewangelist of god. &  
doun. & petris lone in bap  
tym. & in goddis word discipule. prest  
hood in nrael ledige. after flesch a  
dekene. he turned to pe fear of ct.  
wroot pe gospel in ytalie. shewige  
pon bope what he owide to his kyn  
rete. & to ct. forwhi pe bigynnyng  
of his pnciple. he ordeynunge i re  
vois of a prestis exlamaciou. ihe  
wip pe orde of dekens electioun. p.  
he pchige pe bifore ordeyned iohn  
sacharies lone. send out in vois  
of an angel. tellige not conly god  
dis lone maid man. but pe bodi of  
pe lord. p. is pe churche. to alle p  
gis by pe word of godis vois. qd.  
shulde shewe in pe bigynnyng of  
his prechig. of pe gospel. p. pe whi  
che vis redyng. shulde knowe to  
whom pe bigynnyng of flesch. i pe  
lord. & ihi comyge to pe habitade. pe  
flesch shulde knowe. & in hi silt pe  
word pat is ct. of pe vois iohn bap  
tist. p. in consolacioun. p. is i forme fa  
dre. he hadde loste. shulde fyde. ihe



soþe boþe he þe werk of þe fulfild  
gospel entrige. & fro þe baptym  
of þe lord. bigynnyng to þe god.  
ne tranelide not to seþe þe naty  
unte of flesch. þe whiche he hadde  
seþe in oþe lifore. but he expel  
fige þe expoliþion of al þe desert.  
hap sthe wro out þe fastig of uon  
bre. of þe noubre of fastig. þe tēp  
tacion of þe send þe cōgregaciō  
of beestis. & þe seruise of aingels.  
þe oðerþing us to vnderstode.  
alle pigis in sthort þeþnyng to  
gudre. neþ þe antente of pig. do.  
sthulde do aney. & in þe parþoxmyge  
sthulde not deuse. fulnesse of þe  
werk. forsoþe he is lew. to haue  
þe þat a wey his þombe. þe  
myte be had as vnþorþi to þe  
hood. but so myche myte elem  
on bifore oðerþned. acordige to  
þe feip. þe neþ so in þe werk of  
þe word. he sthulde leese þat ra  
þe he hadde dilemmed on þe  
þe of alexandre he was biþhop  
of isro by alle pigis werk of in  
tencion was to þe. þe to dil  
pose þe seþingis of þe gospel i þe  
silk. & þe disciplyne of laue to þe  
we i þe silk. & þe naty of god to  
þe knowe i þe flesch or i þe mādhood  
of þe lord. þe whiche pigis in us  
silk first it biþonyer to be reqeud.  
astward we wolen pigis sonst  
to be knowen. hanþge þe meede of  
erortacion. for he þe þe. & he þe  
moistþe þe þe. but he þe  
neþ entrees is god. **Here endy  
þe plog. & bigynnyng þe gospel.**

**U**þe bigynnyng. **C. p.**  
of þe gospel of ihu. **C.**  
þe son of god. as it is  
writen i sthaye þe plete.

lo i sende my aingel bifore þe face.  
þat sthal make ri weþe redy bi  
fore þe. þe vois of a cryere in  
desert. make þe redy þe weþe  
of þe lord. make þe his þe. **C.**  
ful. þe was in desert. bapti  
ge. & preþig þe baptym of þe  
uante into remissiō of synes. and  
al þe bittre of iudee wente out to  
hi. & alle me of ierlm. and þe  
ren baptid of hi in þe flood iord.  
& knolteche her synes. and þe  
was clodid wþ heers of camel. &  
a gurdil of skyn was aboute his  
dis. and he eet locustis & homp of þe  
wode. & preþig seþunge. & stronge  
þan i sthal come astur me. of isro  
i kuelige. am not wroþi for to  
do oþerþnyng þe face of his sthōn.  
i haue baptid þe in watir. forso  
þe he sthal baptise þe i þe hoþy goþ.  
**And it was don i þe dages. i þe cam**  
fro natiareth of galile. & was bap  
tid of john i iordan. and anon he  
stynge up of þe watir. & þe  
nes openþ. & þe spyrte comþge  
down as a culmer. & dwellege i hi.  
and a vois was maid fro heuene.  
þe art my son loued. in þe i haue  
pleid. and anon þe spyrte puttide  
out hi into desert. & he was i de  
sert. fourty dages. & fourty ny  
tis. & was tēptid of sathanas.  
and he was wþ beestis. & aingels  
myntre to hym. forsoþe astur  
þe john was takn. i þe cam ito gal  
le. preþig þe gospel of þe þing  
dom of god. & seþig. for þe tyme  
is fulfild. & þe kyngdom of god  
sthal come nyz. forþynke þe oþer  
þe penance. & bileue þe to þe gos  
pel. and he þe biþdis þe se  
of galile. & þe symon & andrew

the broþ. þe netre to þe see  
for þe were fustheris. and i þe  
te to hem. come þe astur me. i sth  
al make þe to be maid fustheris  
of me. and anon þe forþoken þe  
nens. & þe liue hi. & he seþe forþ  
fro þe mis alþyl. & þe james of  
sebede. & john his broþ. & hem in  
þe boot makige netre. & anon he  
deþte he. and þe lefren sebede  
her sadur in þe boot. wþ þe red  
seruantis. & þe liue hi. and  
þe entride into casarnan. & anon  
i þe tabotis he seþe into a synago  
ge. & taunte hem. and þe wond  
den on his techig. for he taunte  
he. as hanþge þe. & not as  
scribis. and in þe synagoge of he  
was ama in an vndene spyrte.  
& he criede seþunge. what to us  
to þe. i þe of natiareth. had þe  
come for to distre us. i wote. þat  
þe art þe hoþy of god. and i þe  
preþigte hi i seþe. were doib  
& go out of þe mād. and þe vndene  
goþ debreidige hi. & cryge wþ  
greet vois. wente out fro hi. and  
alle me wondide. so þe þe sonste  
to gudre amog hem seþunge. what  
is þe pig. what is þe neþe te  
chig. for in þe power he comandþ  
to vndene spyrtes. & þe obien  
to hym. and þe tale oþerþing of hi.  
wente forþe anon into al þe citre  
of galile. & anon þe goþunge out of  
þe synagoge. cam into þe hous of  
symon. & andrew. wþ james &  
john. loþe þe modir of symonis  
wþ. lay st in feueris. and anon  
þe seien to hy of hy. & he cam nyz  
& areide hy. wþ þe hond of hye  
was takn. and anon þe feuer  
leste hy. & she myntre to he

forsoþe wþ þe euenþ. was ma  
ad. wþ þe some wente down. þe  
bronte to hy alle hanþge yuele. &  
hanþge denelis. and al þe cite was  
gednd at þe zate. & he þe ma  
nþe þat were trauelid wþ dyle  
sons. & he castide out many denelis.  
& he astreide he not for to speke.  
for þe þe. and he ryþge ful  
eerly. seþe out. & wente into a desert  
place. & preþigte þe. & symon li  
wede hi. & þe liue wþ hi. & wþ  
þe hadde soude hi. þe seide to hi  
þe alle me seþe þe. and he seide to  
he. go we into þe netre to wnes  
& citres. þe. & preþigte allo þe. for to  
vis pig. i cam. and he preþigte i þe  
synagogs of he. & in galile. &  
castide out fendis. and a leþions  
mād cam to hi. & buldite & kuelide  
& seide. if þe wote. þe must de  
seme. forsoþe i þe hanþge mercy  
on hi. streyte out his hond. & i þe  
touchge hi. seide to hi. i wote. be  
þe maid clene. and wþ þe he had  
de seid þe. anon þe leþe partide  
a wey fro hi. & he was cleud. &  
ihu preþigte hi. & anon i þe par  
tide hi out. and i þe seide to hy. in  
se þe. seþe to no man. but go.  
stheue þe to þe þe of prestis.  
& offere for þe cleuþig. into witnes  
fig to he. þe pigis þat moyses had  
and he seþe out. & bigyn to preþe.  
& deþome oþerþing þe word. so  
þe nōt he myte not openþe go in  
to þe cite. but be wroþe forþe  
i desert places. & þe cam to gudre  
to hym. on alle sydis. **C. 11.**  
**A**d eft he entride into  
casarnan. astur eþte day  
es. and it was herd þat  
he was in an hous. & manye came



to gidre: so þe hous took not hem.  
neþr at þe zate: & he spak to hem  
aword: and þe came to hi. me þyn  
gynge amā syl in paleſie: which  
was born of foun: and whāne þei  
myſten not bynge hy to ihu: for  
þe cūpany of peple: þei made þe  
roof naked wher he was: & mak-  
ge opyn: þei ſente down þe bed: &  
which þe sylke mā in paleſie lay  
ſopeli whāne ihc hadde ſepn þe  
ſey of hem: he ſeide to þe sylke mā  
i paleſie: ſone þi ſynes ben forzo-  
un to þee: forþore þei weren  
ſinne of re ſtribis: ſittige & þen-  
kige in her hertis: what ſpek-  
he þus: he blaſtemeþ: who may  
forþyue ſynes: no but god aloone:  
and whine ihu hadde knowe þis  
þig: anon bi þe hooly god: for þei  
pouitē ſo wy þne hē ſelf: he ſep-  
to hem: what venken ze þes þin-  
gis i þow hertis: what is htere  
for to ſepe to þe sylke mā in paleſie:  
ſynes ben forzouni to þee: or for to  
ſepe rþle take þi bed & walke: ſore  
ly þat ze wite: þe māns ſone hay  
power in erpe to forþyue ſynes:  
he ſeide to þe sylk mā in paleſie: þi  
ſepe to þee rþle up: take þi bed:  
& go into þi hous: and anon he  
roos up: & whāne þe bed was ta-  
ken up: he wente bi fore alle men:  
ſo þalle me wondren & hono-  
rede god & ſeide: for we ſpen uen  
ſo. And he wente out eft ſone  
to þe ſee: & al þe cūpany of peple  
cam to hi: & he tauhte hē: and whā-  
ne he paſſide: & he ſpē ſepn of alþer:  
ſittige at þe tollbope: & he ſeide to  
him: ſnabe me: and he roos: & ſu-  
bede hi: & it was don whāne he  
ſat at þe mete i þis hous: many

pupplians & ſyful mē: ſenten to  
gidre at þe mete wy þi ihu: & hile  
diſtuplis: for þe were manye þat  
folwidē hi: and ſtribis & farise-  
es ſeynge þe cet wy þi pupplians  
& ſyful mē: ſeide to hile diſtuplis:  
whi þow maſtir etip & dypnkeþ  
wy þi pupplians & ſynnes: whine  
þis þig herd: ihc ſeide to hē: hool-  
me han no nede to a leche: but þei  
þat han þuele: for i cam not forto  
clepe miſt mē: but ſynnes. And  
diſtuplis of iohā & þe farisees we-  
ren faſtige: & þei comē & ſepē to  
hi: whi diſtuplis of iohā & of farisees  
faſten: but þi diſtuplis faſte nor:  
& ihc ſeide to hē: wher þe ſones of  
weddigis moũn faſte: as longe  
as þe ſpoule is wy þem: as long-  
tyme as þei han þe ſpoule wy hē:  
þei moũn not faſte: forþore dāves  
ſihulen come whine þe ſpoule ſhal  
be takn awei fro hē: & þāne þei  
ſihulen faſte in þo dāves: no man  
ſelwy a pacche of rube or newe dōp-  
to an old dōp: ellis he taky awei  
þe newe ſupplemet or pacche fro þe  
elde: & a more bryt is maid: and  
no mā leudy newe wyñ: into elde  
botels or wyñeſſels: ellis þe wyñ  
ſhal berſte þe wyñeſſels: & þe wyñ  
ſhal be held out: & þe wyñ veſſels  
ſihul peritche: but newe wyñ ſhal  
be ſent into newe wyñ veſſels: &  
it was don eftþones whine  
þe lord walkide i þe ſabatib  
bi þe cornes: & hile diſtuplis  
biſtumen to paſſeforþ & þluc-  
ke eerns of corn: ſoph þe fa-  
riſees ſeiden lo whi þi diſ-  
tuplis i ſabatib þat þe is not  
leefia: & he ſeide to hē: vaden  
ze uenie what dāuy dide: whi

ne he hadde uede: and he hūgride &  
þei þat weren wy þi ihu: how he we-  
te into þe hous of god: vndir abiath-  
ar þnce of preſbis: & cet loones of  
poſitiou: whiche it was not leef  
ful to ete: no but to preſbis aloone:  
and he ſaf to hē þat weren wy þi ihu:  
& he ſeide to hē: þe ſabatib is maid  
for mā: & not auid for þe ſabatib: þe  
fore māns ſone is lord alld of þe  
ſabatib. **Chap. m.**  
**A**nd he entride eft ſoone  
into þe ſynagoge: & þei  
was amon haupge a drye hond: &  
þei aſpide hē: if he heelde in þe ſa-  
botib: for to acūſe hē: and he ſeide  
to þe mā haupge a drye hond: rþle  
into þe myddel: & he ſep to hē: is it  
leefful to do wel in þe ſabotib: whe-  
þer þu ſele: & for to make a ſoule ſaf:  
wher to leeſe: & þei werē ſille: &  
he biholdige hem aboute wy þi  
þe haupge ſoure on þe blyndneſſe  
of her herte: ſep to þe man: hold  
forþ þi hond: and he heeld forþ:  
& his hond was reſtord to hi: ſore  
þi farisees goþnge out: anon ma-  
den coucil wy þe erodians azen  
hi: how þei ſihul leeſe hi: for ſo  
þe ihc wy þi diſtuplis wente to  
þe ſee: and myche cūpany fro ga-  
lile & iudee ſinbede hi: & fro je-  
rlm & fro þourne: & fro byzondis  
jordan: and þei þat weren aboute  
twe & ſydon a greet multitudine:  
heerige þe þigis þat he dide: came  
to hē: and ihc ſeide to hile diſtuplis:  
þe lital boot ſihul ſerne hē for  
þe cūpany of peple: leſt þei oppreſ-  
ſide hi: for he heelde manye: ſop  
þei ſelden faſte to hē: to touche  
hi: forþore how manye enie hadde  
ſonis or wouidig & vndene ſpiri-

tis: whine þei ſpen hē ſelē down  
to hi: & criede ſeyrige: þon art þe ſo-  
ne of god: & greetly he mananſite  
hē: þe ſihul not make hē opp-  
reſſid. And he aþynge into  
an hū clepide to hi: whi he wolde  
& þei came to hi: and he made þe  
werē twelue wy þi: & þe ſihul  
ſende hem for to preche: and he ſaf  
to hem power to heele ſylneſſis &  
to caſte out fendis: & to ſpymoit:  
he putide name: petre: and he cle-  
pide james of ſebete: & john þe bro-  
þer of james: & he putide to hi na-  
mes boenarges: þe ſones of þi  
dypnig: & he clepide andrew & filip:  
& bartilmeu & mathew: & thomas  
& james alſey & tadde & ſimon ca-  
nane: & judas ſtarnoth: þat betray-  
ede hē: & þei comē to an hors: &  
þe cūpany of peple cam to gidre  
eft ſoone: ſo þe miſte not ete  
neþ breed: & whine his kynes mē  
hadde herd: þei weren out for to  
holde hi: for þei ſeide: þe is turned  
into woodneſſe: and þe ſtribis þat  
camē down fro ierlm: ſeide: for he  
hay belieub: & for in þe þnce of de-  
uelis: he caſty out fendis: & he cle-  
pide hem to gidre: & he ſeide to hē  
in parabis: how may ſathanas  
caſte out ſathanas: & if a rewme  
be departid azen it ſelf: wilke rew-  
me may not ſtonde: and if an hors  
be diſparþoſid on it ſelf: wilke  
hous may not ſtonde: & if ſathanas  
hay ruſid azen hi ſelf: he is diſpar-  
þoſid. & he ſhal not now ſtonde:  
but hay an ende: no mā gon into  
a ſtrong mānſ hous may take a  
weþ his wellis: no but he bynde  
firſt þe ſtrong mā: & þāne he ſhal  
dypnerly rān the his hous: treuh



148  
I seie to you for alle spines & blaſſe-  
mies. by which ye han blaſſemed.  
thile be forzoun to ye ſones of me  
ſoreli he pat blaſſemer aens pe  
hooly goſt. hay not remiſſion in  
to wynten ende. but he ſhal be  
gilty of euylſtiffe treſpas for ye  
ſeide he hay an vndene ſpirit

**A**nd his modir & briden come &  
yei ſtoundige wyponite for. ſente  
to hi. & clepde hi. & a ciupany ſat  
aboute hi. and yei ſeien to hi. lo  
yei modir & yei briden wyponite for.  
ſeben pec. & he anſwerige to hem.  
ſeide. who is my modir & my briden  
en. & he biholdige he aboute. pat  
ſaten i ye ciupas of hi. ſeide. lo my  
modir & my briden. for who pat  
dory ye wille of god. he is my bro-  
der. & my ſiſter & modir.

**A**nd eft iſu bigan to te-  
che at ye ſee. & moche  
ciupany of peple was ga-  
drid to him. ſo yei ſaynge to  
a boot. ſat in ye ſee. and al ye ci-  
pany of peple. was aboute ye  
ſee on ye lond. & he tauzde hem  
i parables. many pigis. and he ſei-  
de to hem in his tethig. heere ze. lo  
anua ſowpe geyt out for to ſowe  
& ye while he ſowpe. anoy ſeed  
felde aboute ye weye. & briddis  
of heuene eyr of ye eyr came &  
eeten it. forſope anoye felde don  
on ſtony places. wher it hadde  
not moche erpe. & anoy it a prong  
up. for it hadde not depneſſe of er-  
pe. & while ye ſone roos up. it  
wele wide for heete. & it dreyde up.  
for it hadde not roote. and anoy  
felde down to yornes. & yornes  
ſtreyde up. & ſtreyde it. & it ſaf  
not fruyt. and anoy felde dellen

into good lond. & ze fruyt ſtreyde  
up & weyunge. & con brouste pat  
to ſould. & con ſtreyde. & con an  
hynd ſould. and he ſeide he pat  
hay ceis of heere. heet. **A**nd  
while he was ſinguler. & he hi ſaf-  
po theue p. weren wy hy an  
ten hi for to ex poyne ye parable.  
and he ſeide to he. to you it is ſoun  
for to knowe ye myſterie. & ye  
ure of ye kyngdo of god. ſoreli  
to hem pat ben wyponite for. al  
le pigis ben maad i parables. &  
yei ſeynge. ſe. & ſe not. & yei hee  
rige heet. & vnderſtonde not. ſet  
en ty me yei be conuertid. & ſpines  
be forzoun to he. and he ſeide to he  
wren not ze ye parable. & how  
ze thile knowe. alle parables.  
he pat ſowpe. ſorely anoye res  
ſoreli it ben pat ben aboute ye  
weye. wher ye word is ſown. &  
whane yei han herd. anoy comey  
ſathanas. & taky anoy ye word  
pat is ſown in her hertis. and al  
ſores ben pat ben ſown on a ſtony  
whiche whane yei han herd ye  
word. anoy yei taken it wy. ioye.  
& yei han not roote i he ſelf. but  
yei ben tēporal. yei laſtegeal  
tyne. aſtward while tribula  
cion rſp. & perſecucion for ye  
word. anoy yei ben ſtandid. &  
yei be ope pat be ſown in yornes.  
yei it ben pat heere ye word. &  
myſte of ye word. & diſſent of  
riches. & oyr charge of coney-  
ſe entrige ſtreyghy ye word. &  
it is maad wyponite fruyt. and  
yei it ben pat be ſown in good  
lond. whiche heere ye word. & ta-  
ken & maken fruyt. con pntifold.  
con ſtreyde. & con an hynd ſould

149  
he ſeide to he. ſe ze wher ze heere. **Mark**  
**A**nd he ſeide to he. wher a lathie  
come. & it be put vnder abed. & it  
not & it be put on a candilliche.  
forſope ye is no rig. ſid. pat ſhal  
not be maad oyr. ney oyr pig is  
pnt. which ſhal not come into  
apert. if oyr mā hay ceis of hee-  
rige. heet he. in what meſur. ze  
meten. it ſhal be meten to you. &  
be cat to you. for it ſhal be zoun  
to hi pat hay. & it ſhal be taky  
anoy fro hi pat hay not. allo pat  
pat he hay. **A**nd he ſeide. ſo ye  
kyngdom of god is. as if anua caſte  
ſeed into ye erpe. & he ſlepe. & it  
rſp. up. & day. & bynge for  
ſeed. & were faſte. ye while he wo-  
ot not. for ye erpe biſis oyrne  
woyghy. maky fruyt. firſt an  
erbe. & grene corn. aſtward  
anoye. aſtward ſul fruyt i ye  
er. and whane of it ſul. it hay  
broust for fruyt. anoy he ſen-  
dy a ſp. & hook. for rſp. corn  
comey. **A**nd he ſeide. to what  
pig. ſchulen we lathie ye kyngdo  
of god. or to what parable. thile  
we comparſoune it. as a corn  
of ſeney. which whane it is ſo-  
wū in ye erpe. is laſte pā alle ſee-  
dis pat be in erpe. & while it is  
ſown. it ſtrey up into a tree.  
& is maad more pan alle wortis  
or erbis. and it maky grete bran-  
chis. ſo ye briddis of heuene moyn  
diſelle vnder ye ſhadouye yerof.  
and i many ſuche parables he ſpalk  
to hem a word. as yei myſte heet.  
ſoreli he ſpalk not to he. wyponite  
parable. forſope he expoyne de  
to hiſe diſtuplis alle pigis on ſp. di-  
ſhous. or by he ſelf. and he ſeide  
to he in pat day. while euening

was maad. paſſe ye aſtward. &  
yei leuyge ye ciupany of peple.  
taken hi ſo. he was in a boot. &  
over bootis were wy hi. and a  
greet ſtorm of wynd was maad.  
& ſente wayis into ye boot. ſo ye  
ye boot was ful. & he was i ye hynd  
dy part of ye boot. & ſlepte on a  
pilewe. & yei reſpen hi. & ſepte to  
hi. maſter. perſepney it not to pee.  
for we perill. & he rſp. up.  
maſter. to ye wynd. & ſepte to  
ye ſee. be ſille. were donb. & ye wynd  
ceſſide. & greet peſibleſſe was  
maad. and he ſeide to he. what dreyde  
ze. not ze ze han ſep. & yei dreyde  
de wynd greet dreyde. & ſepte to ech  
oyr. who geſſit p. is pis. for ye  
wynd & ye ſee obeilthen to him.  
**A**nd yei camen. **Mark**  
**A**nd yei camen. **Mark**  
ouer ye wawe. & troublig  
of ye ſee. into ye citre of  
gerſeleis. and aſtward yei ſepte out  
of ye boot. anoy anua in an vnde-  
ne ſp. it ran out of burles to hi.  
which mā hadde an hons in graues.  
or burles. & ney wy chaynes. my  
te oyr mā bynde hi. for ofte tyme  
he was bound in ſtockis & chaynes  
hadde broke ye chaynes. & hadde  
broke ye ſtockis to ſmale gobatis.  
& no mā myſte daſte or make ta-  
me hi. and euynore myſt & day in  
burles & hylis. he was crynge  
& betryge hi ſelf wy ſtoones ſope  
h he ſeynge. iſt aſer. ran & wor-  
ſtreyde hi. & he crynge wy greet  
vois ſeide. what to me & to pee.  
you ihu ye ſone of god. heeſte. /  
coioure pee bi god. & you timente  
me not. forſope iſt ſeide to hi. p.  
vndene ſp. it go out fro ye mā  
& iſt aſer. hi. what name is to



ree: & he seip to hi a legioun is name  
to me for we ben manye. and he p  
ete ihu moche: & he schulde not put  
te hi out of pe kytrey: forsope per  
was pere aboute pe hil: a greet  
floc of hoggis lesewinge: & pe  
spiris priede ihu & seide: sende  
us into hoggis: & we entre ito  
he: and anon ihu graunte to he  
& pe vndene spiritis goynge out.  
entred into pe hoggis: and wy  
greet bre or haate pe floc was  
cast down into pe see. to tkepe  
pouland: & pei were strangid i pe  
see: sopli pei pat kepten he: fled  
den & tolden into pe citee & unto feel  
dis: and pei weten out for to se.  
what was don: & pei came to ihu.  
& pei spren hi pat was traueld of  
pe fend: sittige doped & of hool m  
de: & peidredde: and pei p spen how  
it was don to hi pat hadde a fend.  
& of pe hoggis: recelden to hem: &  
pei bigmen for to pzeie hi: & he  
schulde go awei fro her cootis: &  
whie he stude into aboot: he pat  
was traueld of pe deuel: bigan  
to pzeie hi: & he schulde be wy hi  
sopeli ihu resseyne hi not: but  
seide to hi: go pou ito pi hous to pi  
ne: & telle to hem how grete pigis  
pe lord hay don to pee: & hadde mer  
cy of pee: and he wente for: & by  
gan for to pzeie in decapoli: & is  
a kytrey of ten citees: how grete  
pigis ihu hadde don to hi: & alle me  
wondred. And whie ihu hadde  
stred ito pe boot: eftsoone ou ye  
see: myche ciupany of peple cam  
to gidre to hi: & was aboute pe lee  
& con of pe pucis of synagogis:  
by name jayrus: cam: & he seige  
him felle down at his feet: & pzei

ete hi moche & seide: for wy doun  
is in pe laste pigis: come pou put  
te pi hond on hi: & she be saaf  
& lyue: & he wente for wy him:  
& moche ciupany of peple fimbde  
hi: & oppreside hi: And a wōman  
pat was in pe flur of blood: twel  
ue yer: & hadde suffrid many pi  
gis: of ful many lechis: & hadde spe  
did alle hir pigis: & no pig pfitte.  
but more hadde worse: whie she  
hadde herd of ihu: cam i pe ciupa  
ny bihynde: & touchide his clop  
for she seide: for if i shal touche  
the his clop: i shal be saaf: & anon  
pe well of hir blood was dried up:  
& she felle in body: & she was hee  
lid of pe wounde or sykenes: and  
anon ihu knowe in hi self: & he  
tu pat was gon out of hi: turne  
de to pe ciupany & seide: who tou  
chide my clop: & ihu distupis  
seide to hi: pou seest pe ciupany pl  
lige pee: & seist who touchide me:  
& ihu lokte aboute for to se hi: pat  
hadde dou pis pig: forsope pe wōma  
dredige & qualige: witige & it was  
don in hir: cam & felle down at  
his feet: & seide to hi al treupe: forsope  
ihu seide to hi: doun: & pi fery: hay  
mand pee saaf: go in pees: & be pou  
hool of pi sykenesse: & while he sp  
ak: messangeris came to pe puce  
of a synagoge & seipen: for pi doun  
tur is deed: what traueld pou pe  
manfur ferper: forsope whie pe wō  
was herd pat was leid: ihu seide to pe  
prince of pe synagoge: uple pou dle  
de: couly bileue pou: and he resseyne  
de not ouy mā to lue hi: no but pete  
& james: & john pe brop of james:  
and pei comen ito pe hous of pe pu  
ce of pe synagoge: & he spz wofe:

& men wepige & wepige moche: &  
he seide pu: & seide to hem: what ben  
ze troublid & wepen: pe wende is  
not deed: but slepi: & pei stormede  
hi: forsope whie alle were cast out:  
he taky pe sadir & modir of pe wen  
che: & hemy were wy hi: and pei  
euten: wher pe wende lay: & he  
holdige pe hond of pe wende: seide  
to hi: tabita cumy: & is interpid  
or expounded: wende to pee i leie.  
rple pou: & anon pe wende roos &  
walkide: sopli she was of twelue ze  
er: and pei were abait by grette  
stoneyng: & he comaunde to hem  
greete: & no mā schulde wite it.  
& he comaunde to pzeie to hi for  
to ete: **¶** **C<sup>m</sup> .vi.**  
**A**nd ihu gon out fro pen:  
wente into his owne cite:  
& ihu distupis folewde hi: & whie  
pe saboth was maid: ihu bigan for  
to teche in a synagoge: and manye  
heerige wondred in his techig: &  
seiden: of wherms to pis: alle yes  
pigis: & what is pe wisdom pat  
is zoni to hi: & anche vertues whi  
che ben maid by his hondis: wher  
pis is not a sympp or carpenter:  
pe lone of marie: pe brop of james  
& of joseph: & of judas & of symon:  
wher his listis be not here wy  
us: & pei weren aland in hi: &  
ihu seide to he: & a profete is not w  
onte honour: no but i his owne  
citey: & in his kyn: & in his holis:  
and he myzte not make per ouy  
vertu: no but helide a fewe syke  
me: whie pe hondis were put to  
& he wondred for pe vnbeleue of  
he: and he wente aboute castela  
i euyron: & tanze: & he clepide to  
syde twelue: & bigan for to sen

de hem by twelue: & zaf to he po  
wer on vndene spiritis: & coman  
dite he: & pei schulde not take ouy  
pig: in pe wepe: no but aerd conhy:  
not a strupe: not bzeed: ney money  
in yegardil: but shod wy sandali  
es: & ben oppm aboue: and & pei ihu  
den not be clopid wy twey cootis:  
& he seide to he: vshidur: en ze shu  
len entre into an hous: dwelle ze  
pere: til ze gon out fro yems: and  
who eue ihu not resseyne ne hee  
ze zoi: ze goynge out fro yems: sha  
le awei pe pondre fro zoi: feet:  
into witnesing to he: & pei goynge  
out: pzeiden: & men schulden do  
peruance: & pei castide out many fe  
dis: & anoynde wy oyle many fe  
ke me: & pei were heeled: & kyng  
eroude herde: for his name was  
maid oppm: & he seide: & john bap  
tist hay rili: zen fro deede men:  
& perfore wenes wozchen i hi: sope  
h ope seide: & it is hely: but opere  
seiden: & it is a pphete as con of pfe  
tis: & whie pis pig was herd: erou  
de seide: pis john who i haue bihee  
did: hay rili: zen fro deede me: for  
pille eroude sente: & heeld john:  
& boond hi ito ploi for erodias pe  
wyf of filip his brop: for he hadde  
wedid hi: for john seide to eroude:  
it is not leestil to pee: for to haue pe  
wyf of pi broper: erodias forsope  
lepde aspies to hi: & wolde sle him  
& myzte not: sopeli eroude dredde  
john: & knew hi a uist mā & hooly  
& kepte hi: and eroude herde hi: &  
he dide many pigis: & gladly herde  
hi: & whie a couenable day hadde  
falle: eroude i his burpe day made  
a soup to pe paces & tribunes: & to  
pe fute or grette of galile: &



whiche pe dougter of pilbe erodias had  
de entrid & daniel & pleid to eroud  
& also to me sittege at pe mete: pe  
king seide to pe wenche are y of  
me what pon wolt: & y shal yue to  
tee and he swoor to hir for whiche  
euer pon shalt are: y shal yue to  
pee: pouz it be pe half of my king  
dom: which whane she hadde gon  
out: seide to hir modur what shal  
al y are: & she seide pe heed of joh  
baptist: and whane she hadde etrid  
auoon my haste to pe king: she  
aride seynge: y wole y auoo pon  
yue to me i adith: pe heed of iohn  
baptist: & pe king was son for pe  
cop: & for me sittege to gide at pe  
mete: he wolde not make hir son  
but whane amasqueller was sent:  
he comaunde pe heed of iohn bap  
tist for to be bzouzt in adith: & he  
bihedite hi in pe prison: & bzouzte  
his heed in adith: & zaf it to pe  
wenche: & pe wenche zaf to hir mo  
dur: and whiche yis pig was herd:  
hise disciphs came: & toke his bo  
di: & putte it i abriel. And a  
posthis comyge to gidre to ihu: &  
telde to hi alle pigis y pei hadden  
don & taut: & he seide to he/ come  
ze bizon silt: to a desert place: &  
reste ze alatil for y weren manye  
pat came & wente aze: & pei hadde  
not spate for to ete: & pei frysunge  
ito a boot: wente to a desert pla  
ce: by he silt: & pei spen he goynge  
awey: & manye kneibe: and pei  
sven on feet fro alle citees: & ru  
nen to gidre pidur & came bifoze  
he/ and he goynge out: shz moche  
cūpany: & hadde mercy on he/ for  
pei were as sheep: not hanysge  
a shepate: & he bigan for to tede

hem: manye pigis: & whane moche  
our was maid nois: hise disciphs  
came nyz seynge: yis place is de  
sert: & nois pe our har passid: see  
ne he: y pei goynge into pe nete  
toisnes & vilagis: bpe to he me  
tis whiche pei shulen ete/ and he  
anliverige seide to he/ yue ze to  
hem for to ete: & pei seiden to him  
go we & bpe we loones wy two  
hyndred pens: & we shule yue to  
hem for to ete/ and he seir to he/ how  
manye loones han ze/ go ze & se: &  
whiche pei hadde knowen: pei seide  
fyue & two fyllhis: and he comaū  
dite to he: y pei shulde make alle  
me sitte to mete bi cūpanyes on  
grene hey/ and pei laten dou bi p  
ties: bi hyndridis & fiftyes: & whiche  
he hadde take pe fyue loones & two  
fyllhis: he biheel into heuene: &  
bleide & braf loones: & zaf to hi  
se disciphs: y pei shulden putte  
bifore he/ and he departde away  
fyllhis to alle: & alle eete & were  
fyllhid: and pei token pe relis  
of brobi metis: tiwelue cōffyns ful  
& of pe fyllhis: loyeli pei pat eete:  
weren fyne ponland of me/ and  
auoo he cōfresyede hise disciphs  
for to fnye ito a boot: y pei shulde  
palle bifore hi over pe see to bet  
loyda: pe while he leste pe peple:  
& whiche he hadde lest hem: he wete  
into an hyl for to prey: & whiche ou  
nyg was: pe boot was in pe mid  
del of see: & he aloone in pe lond: &  
he shz he trauehyge & rowyge  
for pe wynd was cōtrarie to he/  
and aboute pe four pe walpyng  
of pe nyzt: he wandryge on pe see  
cam to hem: & wolde passe he/ & as  
pei spen hy wandryge on pe see:

pei gemde for to be a fanti: & criete  
for alle syen hi: & pei were distur  
bid: and auoo he spak wy he: & sei  
de to he/ tryste ze: y am: nyle ze dze  
te: & he cam vp to he into pe boot: &  
pe wynd ceeide: & pei wondride moze  
wy yne hem/ for pei vnderstode not  
of pe loones/ for her herte was blyu  
did: & whiche pei hadden passid ouer  
pe see: pei came ito pe lond of gena  
sareth: & sette to londe: & whiche pei  
hadde gon out of pe boot: auoo pei  
kneiben hy/ and pei reynge poyz  
al pe cūtrei: bigimen to bet aboute  
& beddis he pat hadde hem yuele: whe  
re pei herde hi be/ and whidur eue  
he entrid ito vilagis & into toisnes  
or into citees: pei puttiden epe me  
in streets/ and preyed hy: y pei sh  
ulden touche nameli pe hēme of his  
clor: & how manye euer tonchden  
hi: were maid saaf. **¶ C. vii.**  
**A**nd farisees & sūme of pe  
scribis comyge fro ierlm:  
come to gidre to hi: & whiche  
pei hadde seyn sūme of hise disciphs  
ete bread wy comyne hondis: pe  
is not wayshū: pei blamede for  
sope farisees & alle ieruz: eten  
not: no but pei waulde ofce her  
hondis: holdyge pe tradiciois of  
faritis of eldre me/ and pei tur  
nyge azen fro dypig: eten not:  
no but pei be wauldū: & manye  
oper pigis be: pat ben takū to  
hem for to kepe wauldhygis of cup  
pis & of watir vessels: & of ves  
sels of bras & of beddis: & farisee  
& scribis: aride hi & seide: wsh go  
en not y disciphs: azen pe tra  
dicioū of eldre me: but wy comy  
ne hondis pei ete bread: and he  
anliverige: seide to hem: Hare

pfeciede wel of you spocis: as it  
is writū: yis peple worshippe me  
wy lippis: forlope her herte is  
fer fro me/ in veyn treish pei  
worshippe me: & teden doctrynes  
& heestis of me/ for ze forlathge  
pe maūdemēt of god: holden pe tra  
diciois of me: wauldhygis of watir  
vessels & of cuppis: & manye oper pigis  
like to yele ze doen: & he seide to he/  
wel ze han maid pe maūdemēt of  
god voyde: y ze kepe your tradici  
on/ for moyses seide/ worshippe y i fa  
dur & y i modur/ and he pat curay fa  
dur or modur: dze by deap/ but ze les  
en/ if amā sepe to fadir or modur:  
corban: y is what en zafce is of me:  
it shal profite to yee/ and ou: ze list  
fren not hi do ony pig: to fadir or  
modur: & ze breken pe word of god  
bi zour tradiciō: pat ze ha zomū: &  
ze doe manye luche pigis: & he cōfso  
ne depige pe cūpany of peple: sei  
de to hem/ ze alle heere me & vnder  
stonde/ no pig is wyponit mā pat  
entry into hi: pat may defoule  
hi/ but yo pigis pat come forp of a  
man: yo it ben pat defoule amā  
if ony mā haue eerns of heerig:  
heere he. And whiche he hadde en  
trid into an hous fro pe cūpany of  
peple: hise disciphs aride hi pe pa  
rable: & he seide to hem/ so & ze be  
wyppudent or wauldhyge/ vndersto  
de ze not y al pig wyponit forp en  
trige into amā: may not defoule  
hyū: for it hap not entrid ito his  
herte: but ito pe wombe: & byne  
pe it goy out: purgige alle me  
tis/ loyly he seide/ for pe pigis pat  
goe out of amā: yo defoule amā  
for fro wy iue: of pe herte of  
me come forp yuele poyntis: and is



tries. fornicaciōis. mālepingis. pec-  
tis. auarices. or oū hard leping of goodi.  
vndidnessis. gile vndidness. puel pue-  
blaffenmes. pde. folp. alle pde puehis.  
comē forp fro wipine. & defoule amā  
**A**nd ihs riste fro pēms wente ito  
pe endis of tyre & sidon. & he zede ito  
an hous. & wolde no mā write & he my-  
te not be hid for a wōman anon as  
she herde of hi. which wōmans do-  
myr hadde an vncleue spirit. enēde  
& fel down at his feet. & opeh pe wō-  
mā was hepe of pe generaciō of  
srofence. and she preiede hi. p he  
wolde caste out a deuēl fro hir dou-  
tir. which seide to hir. suffre p. p. ye  
sones be fulfild frst. it is not go-  
od to take pe breed of sones. & zye  
to hōdis. and she answereide & sei-  
de to hi. p. is lord. forwhi lytle whel-  
pis eten vndir pe boord. of pe crū-  
mes of childre. and ihs seide to hir.  
go p. for p. is word. pe fend wente  
out of p. donz. and whāne she  
hadde gon ito hir hous. she fond pe  
wenche liggige on pe bed. & pe de-  
uel gon out fro hir. **A**nd estloo-  
ne. ihs goyng out fro pe endis or  
coofis of tyre. cam purz sidon to pe  
see of galile. bi alre pe nyddil  
of pe endis of decapoleos. and pei  
leden to hi a deef mā & dōub. & prei-  
eden hi p. he putte to hi pe hond. &  
he takige hi asydis fro pe cūpany  
putte his fongris ito his eeris.  
& he spetige. touche his tūge. and  
he biholdige ito henene. lowide w-  
me & seide. effeta. p. is. be p. openy.  
& anon hile eeris werē openy. &  
pe boond of his tūge was vnboū-  
dū. & he spak ruzth. & he comādi-  
de to hem. p. pei shuldē sepe to no  
mā. forlope hon moche he comādi-

dide to hē. so myche more. pei pch-  
de more. & by so myche more pei w-  
dide seyinge. he dide welalle pigis.  
& he made deef mē to heef. & dōub  
men for to speke. // = **viij.** //  
**A**nd podanes est whie myche cūpa-  
ny of peple was wip ihs. & hadde  
not what pei shuldē ete. whie hi  
seid to hē. i. haue reupe on pe cūpa-  
ny of peple. for lo. now pe p. dde  
day. pei susteyne or abiden me. &  
han not what pei shulen ete. and  
if i. leene hē fastige into her hong.  
pei shulen faile in pe weye. for lime  
of hē camē fro fer. and hile dūtyphs  
answeride to hi. wherof shal amā  
more fille hē wip loones her. & whi-  
durnelle. & he arde hē. hōw many  
loones han ze. whiche seide. & uene.  
and he comādi. pe cūpany to lute  
down on pe erpe. and he takige seue-  
ne loones. & dōyng p. ankigis. biak  
& zaf to hile dūtyphs. p. pei shulen  
putte forp. & pei seide forp to pe cū-  
pany. and pei hadde a fenne finale  
fūthys. & he bleide hē. & comādi-  
de for to be put forp. & pei eete & we-  
re fulfild. and pei token up pat-  
pat tette of relics. or smale gobatis.  
seuene leepis forlope pei pat eeten.  
werē as foure poulant of mē. & he  
tette hem. **A**nd anon he seyinge  
into aboot wip hile dūtyphs. cam  
to pe partis of dalmanp. tha. and  
farilees wente out. & bigunen to  
dispute wip hy. & arde a tokene  
of hi fro henene. & tēptide hi. and  
he lowyng wip ine in spū. & sei-  
de. what sekyp p. genaciō. a to-  
kene. treuli. i. seie to zōn. a tokene  
shal not be zōni to p. genaciō.  
and he leenyge hē. wente up ete

toone into a boot. & wente ouer pe  
see. & pei forate to take breed. &  
pei hadde not wip hē no bit o loof  
in pe boot. & he comādi. to hem  
& seide. se ze & bey war. of pe son-  
dōbz. of farilees & of pe sonidōbz.  
of eroude. & pei pouzten. oon to ano-  
p. seyinge. for we han not loones.  
and whie p. is was knowm.  
ihs seide to hē. what penke ze. for  
ze han not loones. & ze knowē  
not. ne vndir stonde. & ze han zōn  
& herte blūnd. ze han yge. p. en.  
seuē not. & ze han yge eeris. hee  
re not. ne ze han mynde. whie  
i. biak fūne loones. into fūne pou-  
lant. and hōw many coffins ful  
of brokū mete ze token up. pei  
seien to hi. & uelue. whie & seuenē  
loones ito four. poulant of men.  
hōw many leepis of brokū mete  
ze tookē up. & pei seien to hi. seue-  
ne. & he seide to hē. hōw vndir ston-  
de ze not zit. **A**nd pei women  
to bethsaide. & pei brigen to hi  
abhad mā. & pei preiede hi. p. he  
shuldē touche hi. and whie pe  
hōnd of pe blūnd mā was takm.  
he ladde hi out of pe firete. & spet-  
te ito his yzen. whie his hōndis  
werē put to. & he arde hi. if he  
sp. omy pig. & he biholdige seide.  
i. se me as trees walkige. afur-  
ward of eldōnes. he putte hōndis  
on hile yzen. & he bigan for to se.  
& he was restord. so p. he h. cle-  
reli alle pigis. & he sente hi into  
his hous. & seide. go into p. hous.  
and if pou goist into pe firete.  
seie to no mā. **A**nd ihs entride  
& hile dūtyphs. into pe castels of  
celarie of philp. & in pe weye  
he arde hile dūtyphs. & seide to

hē. whō seyen mē me forto be. whi-  
che answereide to hi. & seide. & uē  
men seyen. John baptist. ope seie  
hē. forlope ope seien as oon of  
pe profetis. p. ane he seip to hem.  
but whō seyen ze me for to be. pe-  
tre answereide. seide to hi. p. art  
est. & he preteyde hē. p. pei shul-  
de not sepe of hi to omy mā. & he  
bigan for to teche hem. p. it biho-  
uey māns lone to suffre many  
p. is. & to be reprovēd of eldre  
mē. & of pe hueste p. is. & strabis.  
& to be slapn. & afur p. dāyes  
for to ryle azen. & he spak pleyh  
pe word. and petre takige hīm.  
bigan for to blame hy. & seide. lord  
be p. merciful to pee. for p. is shal  
not be. which turnede & sp. hile  
dūtyphs. & manafide to petr. &  
seide. go afur me sachanas. for p.  
saueit not p. pigis pat ben of  
god. but p. pigis pat be of mē.  
**A**nd whāne pe cūpany of peple  
was clepid to gidre wip hile dū-  
typhs. he seide to hē. & omy mā  
wole come afur me. deme he  
hi gill. & take he his cros. & fūke  
he me. for he pat wole make sat  
his soule p. is his lif. shal leele  
it. forlope he p. teclip his soule p.  
is his lif. for me & pe gospel. shal  
make it sat. for what p. fittit it to  
amā. if he w. ne al pe world. & do pei  
ryng to his soule. or what cham-  
ging shal amā zye. for his soule.  
forlope who p. shal knowleche me  
& my wordis. in p. genaciō. anon  
trellē & synerelle. also māns lo-  
ne shal knowleche hi. whie he  
shal come i. pe glorie of his fadir.  
wip hile angels. and he seide to hē.  
treuli. i. seie to zōn. for p. be sum



me of me stondege her. whiche shu  
len not taste depe: til ye seuen pe  
reine of god cominge in vertu  
**A**d after this / *11<sup>m</sup> . 11<sup>m</sup> .*  
dayes: he took pett &  
james & john and ledde  
hem bi he self aloone into an hyl:  
& he was tiffignid bi fore hem  
and his doris were maid shyny  
ge & white ful myche as snow:  
and whiche man doris a fulle  
re or walker of dore may not ma  
ke whyt on erpe: and helie wy  
moyses apperide to he: & rei we  
re spekege wy ihu: & pett an  
swerige: seide to ihu: maister  
it is good: us for to be her: &  
make we her pre tabernacles:  
oon to pee: oon to moyses. & oon  
to helie: for he wiste not what  
he shulde seye: for rei were a  
gaft bi drede: and p was maid  
a cloude shadenige he: & a vois  
cam of ye cloude & seide: pis is  
my moost dere wyse sone: heet  
ze hym: & anoon rei biheldige  
aboute syde no more ony man:  
no but ihu coun wy he: & wha  
ne re came don fro ye hyl: he  
comandide he: p rei shulde not  
telle to ony ma. po pigis p rei  
hadde seyn: no but whie manys  
sone hay risi azen fro deede me  
and re heelden ye word. at hem  
sulf. sekige what shulde be:  
whane he hay risi azen fro de  
de me: & rei arde hi: & seiden  
what yf ore seuen farisees & scri  
for it bihouep helie for to first  
which answrige. seide to hem  
whie helie comey: he shal first  
restore alle pigis: And how it  
is writi on mans sone: p he

come

suffr many pigis: & be dispind  
but i seie to you. for also helie is  
comi: & rei dide to hi. what eue  
pigis rei wolde. as it is writi  
of hi: & he cominge to hile dila  
phis: he a greet cupany abou  
te hem & his dispinge wy he  
was a stoned. & rei drede and rei  
reynige greet hi: & he arde hem  
what dispinge ze among you: &  
oon of ye cupany answrige: se  
de: maister: i hane brougt to pee.  
my sone: hennige a doub spirt:  
which wher ever he taket hym:  
hynch hi down: & he tropp o  
vomey & betry to gide wy teep:  
& weyry dre: and i seide to pi dila  
phis p rei shulde caste hi out: and  
pei myte not: which answrige  
to hem seide: a p generacion out  
of bileue: how longe shal i be  
at you: bryge ze hym to me: & rei  
brougte hym: & whie he hadde hi  
hym: anoon ye spirt troublde  
hi: and he cast down ito ye erpe:  
was walewid fro pise: and he de  
ide his fadir: how moche of tyme  
it is: lyf pis pig: feld to hi: & he  
seide: fro chldhod: & ofte he hay  
put hi boye into fier: & into wat:  
p he shulde leese hi: but if p ma  
ist ony pig: helpe us: & hane  
ch on us: sopeh ihu seide to hym:  
if you manit bileue: alle pigis  
ben possible to ama bileunge: &  
anoon ye fadir of ye chld cryge  
wy teeris: seide: lord: i bileue:  
helpe you my vnbeleuefulne  
and whie ihu hadde seyn pe cu  
pany of peple reynige to gide:  
he manafide re vnclene spirt:  
& seide to hi: you deef & doubt

rit: i comande pee. go out fro hy.  
& entre no more into hy: and he cri  
unge & moche to breidige hy: were  
out fro hi: & he was maid as deed:  
so p manye seide: p he was deed for  
sove ihu holdige his hond: lifte hy  
up & he roos: & whie he hadde en  
trid into an hous: hile dila  
aride hi primely: whi myte not  
we caste hi out: and he seide to  
hem: pis kinde. in no pig: may go  
out: no but i preier & fastig: &  
pei zeden fro yemus: & weten for  
into galile: & he wolde no ma wite  
forsove he tauyte hile dila  
seide to he: for mans sone shal  
be betrayed into ye hondis of me:  
& rei shulen sle hi: and he slayn:  
shal ryle azen on ye yude day  
& rei knewe not ye word: & dred  
den for to are hi: and rei came  
to cafarman: which whie rei  
were in ye hous: aride he: whi  
treidde rei ye weye: & rei were  
fille: sopeh rei dispinge amog  
he in ye weye: who of he shulde  
be more: and he sittige clepde  
ye twelue: & seide to he: if ony  
ma wole be ye furte amog you:  
he shal be ye laste of alle: & ye m  
istre of alle: and he takige a  
chld. ordeynede hi in ye middel  
of hem: whi whie he hadde bidp  
pid: he seide to he: who eue rel  
ceyney con of such chldre in my  
name: he resteyney me: & who  
eue resteyney me: he resteyney  
not me aloone. but hi pat sente  
me: john answrige to hi: & seide:  
orant we syen si oon castige  
out feudis in yi name: which  
suey not vs: & we han for bod  
hi: sopeh ihu seide: nyle ze forbe

de hi: for no ma is pat dorey & tu  
i my name: & may loone speke  
puele of me: he pat is not azen  
us: is for vs: sopeh who eue  
shal yue drinke to you a cuppe  
of cold watr: i my name: for ze  
ben of chr: treuli i seie to you.  
he shal not leese his meede: and  
who eue shal slandre oon of pes  
lytle bileunge i me: it is good  
more to hi p amilue stoon of al  
his: were don aboute his necke  
& he were cast ito ye see: & if pi  
hond slandre pee: kate it a wey:  
it is bette to pee. feble to entre  
ito lpf: p a haunge tweyne hon  
dis: & go ito helle. into fier pat ne  
nere shal be quenched: wher ye  
worm of hem drey not: & ye fier  
is not quenched: and if pi foot sl  
andre pee: kate it of: it is bette  
to pee for to entre crokid ito eu  
lastige lpf: pan haunge tweyn feet  
to be sent ito helle of fier pat ne  
nef: shal be quenched: wher ye  
worm of he drey not: & ye fier  
is not quenched: p if ym ye slan  
dre pee: caste it out: it is bette  
to pee. for to entre gogil pyed i  
to ye reuine of god: pan haunge  
tweyne yzen for to be sent into  
helle of fier: wher ye worm of  
hem drey not: & ye fier is not  
quenched: **A**d sove eueri man  
shal be sakid or mand sanery  
wy fier: & eueri slay sacrifice  
shal be saneryd wy salt: salt is  
good pig: p if salt be on sanery:  
in what pig: shule ze make it  
sanery: hane ze salt i you: & hane  
ye pees amog you. *11<sup>m</sup> . 11<sup>m</sup> .*  
**A**d ihu rufige vp fro pe  
me: cam ito ye endis of



hude ouer jordan & cefloones pe  
cipanyes of peple came to gidre  
to hi and as he was wout: ceflo  
ne he tauhte he & farilees comp  
ge upz: axiden hi wher it be leef  
ful to a mā: for to leene or forla  
ke his wif: & pei teptiden hym  
and he anſwerige: ſeide to hem  
what comāndite moſes to you: wh  
iche ſeide moſes aſſide to wry  
te a libel of forſake: & to forſake  
to whiche ihe anſwerige: ſeide for  
ye hardueſſe of zoni herte: moſes  
wroot to you pis comāndemēt for  
ſore fro ye bigynnyng of creature:  
god made he male & female & he  
ſeide for pis yng a mā ſhal leene  
his fadir & modir: & ſhal cleue to  
his wif: & pei ſhulen be tweyne  
in o fleſch & ſo uolpey be not twey  
ne: but o fleſch & ſore pat yng  
pat god wipnede to gidre: no man  
may departe. And cefloone in  
ye hous: hile diſtuplis axide hym  
of ye ſame pig: & he ſeide to hem  
who eue leenev his wif & wedd  
anoy: he dory auoutrie on hyr: &  
if ye wif leenev hyr holobonde &  
be wedd to anoy mā: ſhe dory  
auoutrie. And pei broute to hi  
lytle children: & he ſhulde touche  
he ſorev pe diſtuplis metenide  
to me byngyge: whiche whāne  
ihe hadde ſeyn: he bar heupe & ſei  
de to he: anſwerige ze lytle childre for  
to come to me: & forbete ze hem  
not for of enche is ye kyngdo of  
god treuli & ſepe to zoni who eue  
ſhal not reſepne ye kyngdo of god  
as a lital chld: he ſhal not entre  
into it: and he bidupige hem: &  
puttuge hondis on he: bleſſide hem  
& whne ihe was gon out i pe weie:

o mā vengye before: knelide before  
hi: & pteide hi & ſeide: goode man  
what ſhal y do: & y reſepne eu  
laſtuge iſt: forſore ihe ſeide to hi  
what leit you me good: & noon is go  
od: no but o god aloune: & y knowe  
pe comāndemētis do y noon anoy  
trie: ſle not: ſtele not: ſepe not falſe  
witneſſig: do no fraude: worſhippe  
pi fadir & pi modir: and he anſwe  
rige ſeide to hi: maſter: y haue kept  
alle pes pigis: fro my zongye: for  
ihe biheeld hi: & louede hi: & he ſeide  
to hi: o pig ſanlyp to pee go you ſill  
you what eue pigis you haſt:  
& zyne to poze me: & you ſhalt ha  
ue treſour in heuene: & come: ſue y  
me: whiche maſter ſoxful in pe word:  
wente away moxynge: for he hadde  
many poſſeſſionis: and ihe bihol  
dige aboute: ſeide to hile diſtuplis  
how hard pei pat han richelſis: ſh  
ulen entre into ye kyngdo of god  
forſore ye diſtuplis were aſtonyſed  
i his wordis: & ihe cefloone anſwe  
rige: ſeide to he: ze lytle ſones how  
hard pig it is: me criſtuge in ry  
chelſis for to entre into ye ky  
ngdo of god: it is lyter: or eher a  
camel for to paſſe porw anedlis  
yze: & a ryche mā for to entre to  
ye kyngdo of god: whiche wonda  
re moze ſepige at he ſilf: & who  
may be maad ſax: & ihe biholde  
he ſeide: auentis me it is impoſſi  
ble: but not auentis god: for alle  
pigis ben poſſible auentis god: &  
pete bigan for to ſepe to hi: lo we  
han leſt alle pigis: & han ſued pee  
ihe anſwerige ſeide: treuli y ſeide  
to you: y is no mā pat leenev hous  
or bynpen or ſiltris: or fadir: or mo  
dir: or ſones or feeldis for me: &

for ye goſpel: whiche ſhal not take  
an hyndrid ſold ſo moche: now i pis  
tyme honſis: & byſpen & ſiltris: &  
modris & ſones & feeldis: wy pſetu  
cionis: & i pe world to comige eue  
laſtuge iſt: forſore manpe ſhulde  
be ye firſte: ye ſeide: & ye  
laſte: ye firſte. Forſore pei we  
re in ye wepe ſayngye to ierlm:  
& ihe wente before hem: & pei won  
drude & ſoleryuge dreedde: and eſt  
ſone ihi takige twelve bigan to  
ſeie to he what pigis were to co  
me to hy: for lo we ſayen to ierlm:  
& māns ſone ſhal be betrayed to  
ye pynces of preſtis & to ſtribis  
& to ye eldres me: & pei ſhulde day  
ne hy bideep: & pei ſhulen bide  
hi to heve men: & pei ſhulde ſorne  
hi: & biſpete hi: & bete hi: and pei  
ſhulde ſle hi: & in ye rynde day he  
ſhal riſe azen. And james & j  
sebedes ſones: come nyz to hym  
& ſeyn: maſter we wolen: & wh  
eue we axen: y do to us: & he ſeide  
to he: what wole ze y do to you:  
& pei ſeide: zyne to us: y we ſitte  
peton at pi rythalf: & peton at pi  
leſt in pigloze: forſore ihe ſeide  
to he: ze wnt not what ze ſhulde  
axen: moxen ze dypke ye crippe  
whiche y dypke: or be wantum  
wy ye baptym: i whiche y am bap  
tiſid: & pei ſeide to hi: we moxen  
ſorev ihe ſeide to hem: treuli ze  
ſhulde dypke ye crippe pat y dā  
ke: & ze ſhulde be wantum wy ye  
baptym: in whiche y am baptiſid: but  
for to ſitte at my rythalf or leſt  
half: it is not myn to zyne to you  
but to whiche it is maad redp: &  
ye ten heerige: bigynnen to hane  
idignacion of james & john ſore

h ihe clepde he: & ſeide to he: ze  
wnt y pei pat ſemē or ben ſem to  
hane pynhood on ſoltris: ben ſoltris  
of he: & ye pnces of he: han porber  
of hem: forſore it is not ſo in you  
but who eue wole be maad moze:  
ſhal be zoni mynſtre: & who eue  
wole be ye firſte in you: ſhal be  
ſernant of alle: forſpyn & māns  
ſone cam not: y it ſhulde be my  
nſtrid to hi: but y he ſhulde  
mynſtre: & zyne his iſt redp  
cion or menbyng for manpe: &  
pei come to ierico: & whne he zede  
forw fro ierico: & hile diſtuplis: & a  
ful moche cipany of peple: ye ſone of  
tyney bartymens blind: ſat bi ſy  
dis ye weye & boggyde: whiche whā  
ne he hadde herd y it is ihe of na  
ſareth: he bigan to crye & ſeie  
ihi ye ſone of damp: hane mercy  
on me: and manpe pteenyde hy:  
y he ſhulde be ſalle: & he criede  
myche moze: & hā ye ſone of damp:  
hane mercy on me: and ihe ſton  
dige comāndite: for to be clepid  
and pei clepe pe blind mā: & ſeide  
to hi: be you of bette herte: & ſeide  
op: he clepy pee: whiche caſtude  
a wey his cloy: & ſk upide & cam  
to hym: & ihe anſwerige: ſeide to  
hy: what wolt y y ſhal do to y:  
forſore ye blind mā ſeide to hy:  
maſter: y ſe: ſorev ihe ſeide to  
hi: go you: y ſeyn hyr maad pee  
ſax: & anon he ſyz: & ſaxede hi  
in ye weye. **Chap. xii.**  
**A**d whne ihe cam nyz to  
ierlm: & to betanye to pe  
moit of olynes: he ſendip twey  
of hile diſtuplis: & ſey to hem go  
ze into ye caſtel: pat is azens you  
and anon ze entrige ydur: ihi



len fynde a colt tyed. on which noo  
of me sat 3t. vnbrynde ze & brygger  
hī and if ony mā shal seie ony  
pig to you what doen ze. seie ze  
p he is nedful to ye lord. & a noo  
he shal leene hī hīdure. & pei go  
ynge forp. fōnden a colt bound  
bifore ye zate wyoute forp i pe  
meeting of twey weyes. & pei  
vnbouiden hī & lūme of me fto  
dige yer. seiden to hē. what doen  
ze vnbryndige ye colt. & pei seide  
to hē. as ihc comāndide hē. and  
pei lesten it to hē. & pei bryngten  
ye colt to ihc. & pei putide on hī  
her clooyis. & ihc sat on hī. forsoy  
manpe streitwīde her clooyis i ye  
weye. sopeh ope me ftride boke  
or bryndis fro trees. & streitwīde  
i ye weye. and pei yat wente bi  
fore. & yat liden. cede serynge  
ofāna. blestid is he yat comey  
in ye name of ye lord. blestid be  
ye kyngdō of oure fadir daup.  
yat comey ofāna. in hysse rin  
gis. & he entde ito ierlm. into ye  
tēple. & whne alle me were ley  
aboute. whne ye our was nou  
eueryng. he wente out to betanpe  
wy elueh. and anoy day whne  
h wete out of betanpe. he hūgri  
de. & whne he hadde seyn a fige  
tre a fer. hangge leenis. he ca  
if happi he shulde fynde ony pig  
p yne. and whne he cam to it. he  
fond no pig out takū leenis. for  
it was not tyme of figis. & ihc  
answerige. seide to it. now no mo  
ze. wyoute ende. ony mā ete fr  
int of pee. & hīse dyluphs herden.  
& pei comē to ierlm. & whne he had  
de entrid into ye tēple. he bigan  
for to caste out. me sillige & by

ynge in ye tēple. & he turnede rep  
to dou ye boordis of charygis. & ye chary  
of me sillige cilluens. and he suffer  
de not p ony mā shulde be. a ver  
sal purz ye tēple. & he tange hē &  
seide. wher it is not writū. p m  
hous shal. & be clepid ye hous  
of preier to alle folkis. but ze hā  
mand it. a dēne of peenys. & whne  
pis pig was herd. ye pnces of prest  
tis & scribis soukten how pei shul  
de leese hī. for pei dreedē hīm. for al  
ye cūpany of peple wondred on hys  
techig. & whne eueryng was maad.  
he wente out of ye cite. & whne pei  
passide erly. pei ozen ye fige tree  
mand drie. fro ye rootis. & pete ha  
uyge myde. seide to hī. manstr lo ye  
fige tre who pou cursidist. hap dri  
ed up. & ihc answerige. seide to hem  
hane ze ye seip of god. treuh. i seie  
to you. p who ete seip to pis hū. be  
pou takū & send ito ye soe. & domy  
not in hys herte but bilene. p whne  
eue he shal seie shal be don. it shal  
be mand to hī. pfore. i seie to you. al  
le pigis. what euere pigis ze prei  
ynge shule are. bilene ze p ze shu  
len take. & pei shule come to you. &  
whne ze shule stonde for to prepe.  
forpue ze if ze han ony pig azen ony  
man. p & you. fadir. yat is in heue  
nes. forpue to you you. hūes. p  
if ze forpue not. nep you. fadir.  
yat is in heuenes. shal forpue to  
you you. hūes. And est soone pei  
comē to ierlm. and whne he walkide  
i ye tēple. pe hysse prestis & scribis  
& eldre me comē nyz to hī. & seye to  
hī. i what pouer doist p. res pigis.  
or who zaf to pee pis pouer. p you  
do res pigis. forsoye ihc answerige  
seide to hē. & i shal are you o word.

& answer ze to me. & i shal seie to  
you i what pouer. i do res pigis. whne  
p. was ye bapty of iohū of heuene  
or of me. answer ze to me. & pei po  
uyte wy hē silt. seynge. if we sey  
en of heuene. he shal seie to us.  
whn pfore bilene ze not to hī. if we  
seyn of me. we dreedē ye peple. for  
alle me hadde iohū. for he was ve  
rih a ptece. & pei answerige. seie  
to ihc. we witen neuie. and ihc an  
swerige. seip to hē. nep. i seie to  
i what pouer. i do res pigis.  
And ihc bigan. **E**nd ihc bigan  
to speke to hē in parabis.  
a mā plantide a vyne zerd.  
& putide a boune it an hegge. & dalt  
a lake. & buldide a tour. & hūde it to  
erpetheris. & wente forp i pilgri  
mage. and sente to ye erpetheris.  
i tyme a seruait. p he shulde rel  
seyne of ye erpetheris. of ye frunt  
of ye vynezerd. whiche toke hīm  
& beeten. & leste hī. vopde. and est  
soone he sente to hē anoy seruait.  
& pei woudide hī in ye heed. & po  
uythide wy chidgis or reppouy  
gis. & est soone he sente anoy. &  
pei slowe hī. & ope mo. betige lū  
me. but sleynge ope. pfore 3t he  
hangge o lone moost dereworpe.  
sente also hī ye laste to hē. & seide.  
for bi hap pei shule reuerete my  
lone. forsoye ye cenaitis seiden  
to gidre. pis is ye epr. come ze tle  
we hī. & ye heritage shal be ourū.  
& pei takige hī. & lēde. & castiden  
out wyoute ye vynezerd. pfore  
what shal ye lord of ye vynezerd  
do. he shal come & leste ye cenai  
tis. & zyne ye vynezerd to ope. nyz  
ze han not rad pis seip. pe fto  
whiche ye bideris han dyluphs.

pis is maad into ye heed of ye cor  
ner. pis pig is maad of ye lord.  
& is wondurful bifore our pzen.  
and pei soukten forto holde hīm.  
& pei dreedē ye cūpany of peple.  
for pei knewe. p to hē he seide pis  
parable. and pei lesten hī. & pei  
wentē a way. & pei seide to hī. lū  
me of ye farisees & erodians. for  
to take hī in word. whiche comy  
ge seyn to hī. manstr we witen  
p you art sopfast. & rekest not  
of ony mā. for nep you seest ito  
face of mā. but you techist ye we  
pe of god i treupe. is it leestful p.  
& but be you to cesar. or we shu  
le not zyne. whiche writige her p.  
up falsnesse. seide to hē. what rep  
ten ze me. bryge ze to me a peny  
p. i se. and pei bryngte to hī. & he  
seide to to hem. whos is pis pma  
ge. & pei writig. pei seyn to hīm.  
cesaris. forsoye & ihc answerige.  
seide to hem. ver fore zelde ze to ce  
sar. po pigis yat ben of cesar. & to  
god. po pigis yat ben of god. & pei  
wondriden on hī. And saducis yat  
seyn no resurrection to be. camē  
to hīm. & azide hī. & seiden. manst  
moyses wroot to us. p if ye broya  
of a mā wet deed. & leste a wyf.  
& leste not lones. hys brop take hī  
wyf. & reyle up seed to hys bropr.  
pfore seuenē brypen were. & ye fir  
ste took a wyf. & is deed. & leste no  
seed. & ye secūde took hū. & he is  
deed. & nep pis leste seed. & ye ynd  
de also. & in hys mā seuenē tookē  
hū. & leste not seed. and pe wom  
mā ye laste of alle is deed. pfore  
i ye resurrection. whne pei shule  
ryse aze. whos wyf of res shal  
she be. for seuenē hadde hū to







thule not passe / trenli of pat day  
or our. no mā woot neþ angelb i  
hevene. neþ pe lone: no but pe so-  
ne / no but pe fadir / se ze. wake ze  
þ þie ze / for ze wite not. whine ty  
me is / for as a mā which gow fer  
i pulgimage. leste his his hous: þ zaf  
to hile seruaitis power of eny we  
rk / a comānde to pe porter. þ he  
wake / þ fore wake ze / for ze wite  
not whine pe lord of pe hous comeþ.  
in pe euentid or i mpidmgt. or cocke  
trougg. or morewgg. lest whine  
he shal come sudden: he fynde zon  
slepige / forlope pat þ i sepe to þ.  
i sepe to alle wake ze. Forke . xiii.  
**I**fore þe þe fere of  
perf loones þ is woutē  
soudoun: was after twey  
dayes / and pe hyste þas i a his  
soutē: how þe shulde holde hi w  
gile & sle / soþeli þe leide / not in  
pe fere day / lest þe pūetir / noþe  
were maid i pe peple / & whine he  
was at betanþe in pe hous of sy  
mond leprous. & reide: and mā  
cam haugge a box of alabastre of  
precious oþnemet þikenard / &  
whine pe box of alabastre was bro  
ken. she heelde out on his heed / forlo  
pe þ were sume berige / on þorpi  
or heuyl: wip ine hom luf & seyn  
ge / wher to is þis loss of oþnemet  
maid. for þis oþnemet mygte ha  
ue be sold / more þā þe hūdrd pes.  
þ be zoni to poze me / & þe groþ  
neden or gūatide azens hū / soþli  
ihc leide / suffre ze hū / what be  
ze heuy to hū / she hay wrongt  
good werk i me / for eimozze ze  
thule hane poze me wip zon / &  
whine ze wolen. ze mou do wel  
to hem / forlope ze thulen not en

more hane me / she dite pat pat  
she hadde / she bfore cam forto a  
noþte my body into þwigg / tren  
li i seie to zon. wher eue þis gol  
pel shal be þchid i al pe world: &  
pat þ þis wōman hay don shal  
be told i mpid of hū. And iuda  
stariot oon of pe te twelue. wen  
te to pe hyste prestis. þ he shul  
de baraye hi to hē / whiche hee rige  
lopede: & bihste hē to þe hū mo  
neþ / & he souzte how he shulde bi  
traye hū couenably / and pe fiste  
day of perf loones. whine þe offi  
den þas: þe discipulis seþen to hū  
whidur wolt þ we gon & make  
redy to þe: þron ete þas: & he  
sendid tweþne of hile discipulis: &  
seþ to hē / go ze ito pe citee: & aua  
berige a galon of watir. shal mee  
te zon. haue ze hi / & whidur eue he  
entir: seie ze to pe lord of pe hous.  
þ þe manir seþ / wher is my ful  
fillig or eting place. wher i shal  
ete þas wip my discipulis: & he shal  
shewe to zon a greet souþing pla  
ce strewid: & þere make ze redy  
to us / hile discipulis wente for:  
& came into pe citee. & founde as he  
hadde leide to hē: & þe made redy  
þas / soþeli whine euentid was mid:  
he cam wip tweþne / & whine þe  
saten at pe mete & eeten: ihc leide  
trenli i seie to zon: þoon of zon pat  
etir wip me shal baraye me / and  
þe bigmen forto be fori & to seie  
to þe. eþ bi hūm hile / wher þe. whidur  
leide to hem / oon of tweþne: pat þe  
tip pe hond wip me in pe plate: &  
soþeli māns lone goþ: as it is  
writi of hū / but wo to pat man  
bi whom māns lone shal be bi  
trayed / it were good to hū: if þe

mā hadde not be born / & while þe  
eeten: ihc took breed. & blestide &  
brak. & zaf to hē & seþe / take ze  
þis is my body: & whine þe cuppe  
was takē: he dite graces & zaf  
to hē / & alle driken þof / and he  
leide to hem / þis is my blood of  
pe newe testamēt: whiche shal  
be shed out for manþe / trenli  
i seie to zon. for now i shal not  
drinke of þis fruyt of wyne.  
til into pat day whine i shal dr  
ke it newe in pe rewine of god:  
& whine þe wyne or herwgg wa  
seid: þe wente out ito pe hū of  
olyues: & ihc leide to hē / alle ze shū  
len be standrid i me in þis nyzt:  
for it is writi / i shal smyte pe  
shepharde: & þe sheep of pe flor  
shulen be dispersid / but after  
þ i shal ryle agen: i shal go bifo  
ze zon ito galile / forlope þe le  
de to hū / þon alle thule be stan  
drid: but not þ / & ihc leide to hū  
trenli i seie to þe. þ to day bfore  
þ þe for in þis nyzt tweþes þine  
vois: þies þ astat denþe me /  
and he spak more / þon it bihoue  
me to dpe to gidre wip þe: i sh  
al not denþe þe / soþeli in hū ma  
ner: & alle leide / & þe come into  
a place: to whom þe name is geþ  
seman: & he leide to hile discipulis  
litte ze her: þe while i þe þe / &  
he took petre & james & john w  
hi: & bigan for to drede & to be a  
noped: & he leide to hē / my soule  
is sorowful til to pe dpe / smiteþ  
ne ze or abide ze her: wake ze w  
me / & whine he hadde gon forþ a  
lil: he felde don on pe erpe & þe  
ete / þ if it mygte be. þe hūm shul  
de passe fro hū / & he leide / abba

fadir: alle þigis ben possible to  
þe: þe oner fro me þis cuppe  
but not þat / wole: but þat þ  
þon wolt be don / and he cam.  
& fond hem slepige / & he leide  
to petre / symon slepit þon.  
myzt þon not wake wip me  
oon om: wake ze & þe ze: þ  
ze entre not ito tēptaciou / for  
lope þe spirit is redy: but þe  
flesch is syk / and eftsoone he  
gornge. þeide. seþnge þe sa  
me word / and he turned agen  
eftsoone: fond hem slepige / for  
her þen were grened: & þe þe  
wen not what þe shulde an  
sibere to hū / and he cam þe þid  
de tyme: & leide to hem / slepe  
ze now & reide ze / it suffisþ þe  
om is comi: lo māns lone sh  
al be bitrayed into pe hondis of  
synful men / ryle ze: go we / lo  
he pat shal bitraye me: is my  
And 3it þe while he spak: ju  
das stariot oon of pe twelue cam  
& wip hūm moche cupanþ wip  
siberdis & stanes: sent fro þe  
hyste prestis & scribis. & fro  
pe eldre me / forlope þis traitō  
hadde zoni to hū a tokene: se  
þnge / whom euer i shal kille:  
he it is / holde ze hūm: & lede ze  
warli / & whine he cam: and on  
he comyge to hū leide / manir /  
and he killede hū / & þe leide hon  
dis on hū: & heelden hū / soþeli oō  
of me stondige aboute. drow  
out a siberd. & smoot þe seruait  
of þe hyste preest. & killede of  
his eere / & ihc answerege: leide  
to hem / as to a þeef ze han gon  
out wip siberdis & stanes: for  
to take me / day bi day i was



at 3ou & tanste in ye temple: & ze  
heelde not me / but y<sup>e</sup> scriptu  
ris be fulfilled / y<sup>e</sup> alle hile dis  
ciples forsaige hi: fledden / sope  
h<sup>i</sup> s<sup>i</sup>n zong man clopid w<sup>i</sup>p h<sup>i</sup>nen  
clop on ye bare: swede h<sup>i</sup>m: &  
pei heelde hi / and wh<sup>i</sup>ne ye h<sup>i</sup>nen  
clop was forsaig<sup>n</sup>: he flez nabid  
anwey fro he / and pei ledde ihu  
to ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste preest: & alle ye pre  
tis & scribis & eldre me: camen  
to gidre / forsope petre suete hi  
after til to w<sup>i</sup>p yue: into ye halle  
of ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste preest: and he sat  
w<sup>i</sup>p ye mynist<sup>r</sup>s: & warmyde  
h<sup>i</sup>m at ye fier: forsope ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste  
preestis & al ye coucil: souzten  
w<sup>i</sup>btuellig azens ihu: y<sup>e</sup> pei shul  
den 3yue hi to ye deep: ney<sup>r</sup> pei  
fou<sup>n</sup>ten / for manye seiden fals wit  
nessig azens h<sup>i</sup>m: & ye witnessig  
weren not couenable: & s<sup>i</sup>me ry  
sig<sup>e</sup> baren fals witnessig azens  
h<sup>i</sup>m & seide: for we han herd h<sup>i</sup>m  
seynge / y<sup>e</sup> shal vudo yis temple  
maad w<sup>i</sup>p hondis: & after ye yud  
de day / y<sup>e</sup> shal bilde anoper not maad  
w<sup>i</sup>p hondis: & ye witnessig of he  
was not couenable: & ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste  
preest rilyge up into ye midel:  
aride ihu & seide / answerist y<sup>e</sup> not  
ony pig to po pigs: yat be p<sup>r</sup>it  
azens yee of yele: sopeh he was  
fille: & answeride no pig: eftloo  
ne ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste preest: aride h<sup>i</sup>: &  
seide to hi / art y<sup>e</sup> crist ye sone of  
blessid god: sopeh ihu seide to hi  
/ am / and ze shulen se manys so  
ne sittige on ye rythalf of ye  
tu of god: & comyge i clondis  
of heuene / forsope ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste pr  
eest to rente his cloys & seide  
what 3it desuren we witnessigis:

ze han herd blasfemye: what se  
mey to 3ou: whiche also cōdē  
neden hi: for to be gilti of de<sup>r</sup>  
& s<sup>i</sup>me bigūnen for to bi spete  
hi & to hyde his face: & s<sup>i</sup>me hi  
w<sup>i</sup>p bofatis: & seie to hi / fete  
you: and ye mynist<sup>r</sup>s beete hi w<sup>i</sup>  
strokis or buffatis: & wh<sup>i</sup>le pe  
tre was in ye halle bynepe: oon  
of ye hand maydens of ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste  
preest cam / and whāne she had  
de seyn petre warmyge hi: she  
biholdige hi seide / & you we<sup>r</sup>e ig  
ihu of nazareth: and he denye  
seynge / ney / y<sup>e</sup> boot: ney / y<sup>e</sup> kuo  
we: what you seist: & he wente  
w<sup>i</sup>outfor byfore ye halle: & aoo  
pe cok creib / eftlooone forsope wh<sup>i</sup>e  
anop hand mayde hadde seyn hi:  
she bigan for to sepe to me non  
dige aboute: y<sup>e</sup> yis is of he: &  
he eftlooone denye: & after al  
til eftlooone pei pat stode n<sup>i</sup>: sei  
de to petre / verily you art of hem:  
for wh<sup>i</sup> & you art of galile: sopeh  
he bigan to curse & swere: for y<sup>e</sup>  
knowe not yis mā wh<sup>i</sup> ze sepen  
and anoon eftlooones ye cok creib  
& petre byonyte on ye word yat  
he hadde seid to hi: byfore ye cok  
crose twyes: ynes you shalt de  
nye me: & he bigan for to wepe.

**A**d anoou in / **C. 16.**  
ye moztetyle ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste  
preestis makige coucil w<sup>i</sup>  
ye eldre me & scribis & al ye cou  
cil: bounden ihu & ledde & broo  
ken to pilat: & pilat aride h<sup>i</sup>m  
art y<sup>e</sup> king of ierwis: and ihu  
answerige: seide to hi / you seist  
& ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste preestis aculide h<sup>i</sup>m  
in many pigs: pilat forsope eft  
looone aride hi & seide / answerist

you not ony pig: seest you in  
how many pigs: pei aculiden y<sup>e</sup>  
forsope y<sup>e</sup> more answereide no  
pig: so y<sup>e</sup> pilat w<sup>i</sup>ndide / forsope  
bi ye fette day he was wont to  
leue to he of me bound: whom  
euer pei aride / forsope oon was  
yat was seid barabas: yat was  
bound w<sup>i</sup>p me of dissencioū: yat  
hadde don m<sup>a</sup>llauztre i seducioū:  
y<sup>e</sup> is debate i citee: and wh<sup>i</sup>le ye  
ciupany hadde stizet: he bigan for  
to preie: as he euermore dide to he  
sopeh pilat answeride to he & sei  
de / wolen ze / leue to 3ou ye eig  
of ierwis: for he wiste: y<sup>e</sup> ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste  
preestis hadde tak<sup>n</sup> hi by enye: for  
sope ye biishopis stude pe ciupa  
ny of peple: y<sup>e</sup> more he shulde  
leue to he barabas / forsope eftloo  
ne pilat answerige: seide to hem  
what y<sup>e</sup>fore wolen ze: y<sup>e</sup> shal do to  
ye eig of ierwis: and pei eftlooone  
crieden / crucifie hi: or p<sup>r</sup>it hi on  
ye cross: forsope pilat seide to hem  
sopeh what of yuel hay he don:  
and pei cryede more / crucifie hi:  
sopeh pilat willige for to do y<sup>e</sup>now:  
to ye peple: leste to hem barabas  
& brook to hem ihu betū w<sup>i</sup>p no  
gis: y<sup>e</sup> he shulde be crucified: for  
sope knyztis ledde hi w<sup>i</sup>p me: i  
to ye porche of ye moothalle: and  
pei clepde to gidre al ye ciupany  
of knyztis: & dopyde hi w<sup>i</sup>p purp  
& pei foldige a croune of yoznes:  
puttde on hi: and pei bigūnen  
for to grette hi: & seiden / heil y<sup>e</sup>  
king of ierwis: & pei han smyte  
his heed w<sup>i</sup>p a reede: & bi spatten  
hi: and pei knelige: w<sup>i</sup>orthyete  
hi & after y<sup>e</sup> pei hadde rorned hi:  
pei vudopyde hi fro sp<sup>r</sup>ur: & do

viden hi w<sup>i</sup>p hile cloys: & ledde  
out h<sup>i</sup>m: to ~~shulde~~ crucifie  
hi: and pei compellide amā yat  
passide ye weye: yat cam fro ye  
toū symoud of hyrenen ye fad<sup>r</sup>  
of alalandre & of ruse to ber his  
cross: and pei ledde hi into a place  
golgatha: y<sup>e</sup> is to seie ye place of cal  
nerie: & reizenen to hi to drynke w<sup>i</sup>  
meddled w<sup>i</sup>p myrr<sup>e</sup>: & he took not: &  
ye pei crucified hi: ad departiden  
his cloys & kessen lott on po who  
shulde take what: and it was pe  
yudde our: & pei crucified hi: & pe  
tytle of his case was writū: kyng  
of ierwis: & pei crucifien w<sup>i</sup>p h<sup>i</sup>m:  
abey penes: oon at ye rythalf: &  
oon at his lefthalf: and ye scriptur  
was fulfilled yat seip: & he is ordey  
ned w<sup>i</sup>p wickid me: and as pei  
passide forp: pei blasfemyde h<sup>i</sup>m:  
mouyge her heedis: & seynge / wape  
you yat distriet ye temple of god:  
& in yre dapes: bildist it agen: come a  
down fro ye cross: & make y<sup>e</sup> self  
sark: also ye h<sup>i</sup>zeste preestis: domy  
den hi ech to op<sup>r</sup> w<sup>i</sup>p ye scribis  
& seide: he made ope men sark: he  
may not saue hi self: est eig of  
yrael come doū now fro ye cross:  
y<sup>e</sup> we seen: & bileue: and pei yat  
werē crucified w<sup>i</sup>p hi: dispiledē  
hi: & whāne ye fyte our was come:  
derknessis weren maad on al ye er  
pe: til unto ye nymp<sup>e</sup> our: and in  
ye nymp<sup>e</sup> our ihc criede w<sup>i</sup>p a  
greet wops: & seide helop: helop:  
lamasabany: y<sup>e</sup> is to seie: my god:  
my god: wh<sup>i</sup> hast you forsaig<sup>n</sup> me:  
and s<sup>i</sup>me of me yat stode abou  
te: herten & seide / lo he clepy he  
we: & oon ran & fillde a spouige  
w<sup>i</sup>p ye vynegre & puttde it a







be fulfilled wip ye hooly gost. 3it  
of his modir wombe. & he shal co  
uerter many of ye children of y  
rael: to her lord god. & he shal go  
bifore hi in ye spirit & vertu of  
help. & he shal turne ye hertis  
of ye fadris i to ye sones. & men  
out of bilene: to ye prudence of  
milt me to make redi a parfyt  
peple to ye lord. And zacarie sei  
de to ye angel wherof shal y whi  
te pis: for i am old: & my wyf har  
go fer in hir dapes. and ye angel  
answeride & seide to hi: for i am  
gabriel. pat stonde myz bifore  
god: & i am sent to pee. to speke  
& to eningelise to pee. pelse ym  
gis. and lo pon shalt be donbe &  
pon shalt not moue speke til i  
to ye day in which pelse pigis sh  
ulen be don: for pon hast not bile  
ned to my wordis. whiche shule  
be fulfilled in her tyme. and ye  
peple was abidige zacari: & pei  
wondred p he tariede in ye temple.  
and he zede out & myzte not speke  
to hem: & pei knewen p he hadde  
seyn a vision in ye temple. & he  
bekende to hem & he diuellite ful  
le doub. And it was don whne  
ye dapes of his office were fulfil  
id: he wente into his hous. and  
after pes dapes Elizabeth his  
wyf conceyede: & hydde hir fyue  
monepis & seide: for lo ye lord dite  
to me. in ye dapes in whiche he  
biheeld to take away my reprof  
a mog me. But i ye fyfte monepe  
ye angel gabriel was sent fro god:  
into a cite of galile. whos name  
was nazareth. to a mayde wed  
did to a ma. whos name was jo  
seph. of ye hous of damp. & ye na

me of ye mayden was marie. &  
ye angel entride to hir: & seide  
heil ful of grace ye lord be wip y.  
blessid be pon amog wyemen. and  
whane she hadde herd she was  
troublid in his word. & pouzte wh  
maner salitacion pis was. & ye  
angel seide to hir: ne drede not y  
marie: for y hast found grace a  
nentis god. lo pon shalt conceyue  
in wombe. & shalt ber a sone: &  
pon shalt clepe his name ihu. pis  
shal be greet: & he shal be clepid  
ye sone of ye hyeste. and ye lord  
god shal zyne to hi. ye seete of da  
my his fadir: & he shal regne in  
ye hous of jacob wyouten ende.  
and of his rewme: shal be noon  
ende. & marie seide to ye angel on  
what man shal pis pig be don:  
for i knowe not man. & ye an  
gel answeride & seide to hir: ye hoo  
ly gost shal come fro aboue ito  
pee: & ye vtu of ye hyeste shal  
on shadonbe pee. & ye foz y hooly pig  
pat shal be born of pee. shal be  
clepid ye sone of god. & lo Chza  
beth y colyn: & she also hap con  
ceyued a sone in hir eelde: & pis  
monepe is ye fyfte to hir y is  
clepid bareyn. for eury word sh  
al not be impossible anentis god.  
and marie seide: lo ye handmay  
de of ye lord. be it don to me aff  
y word. and ye angel departide  
fro hir. And marie roos up i  
yo dapes & wente wip haste ito  
ye mountaynes ito a cite of ju  
dee. & she entride into ye hous  
of zacarie: & grette Elizabeth.  
& it was don as Elizabeth her  
de ye salitacion of marie: ye  
jong child in hir wombe gladdde

and Elizabeth was fulfilled wip  
ye hooly gost: & criede wip a greet  
vois & seyde: blessid be pon am  
ong wyemen: & blessid be ye fr  
uit of y wombe. & wherof is w  
pig to me: y ye modir of my  
lord come to me. for lo as ye vois  
of y salitacion was maid i my  
eeris: ye zonge child gladdde m  
iope in my wombe. & blessid be  
pon pat hast bilened: for pilke pi  
gis pat ben seid of ye lord to pee  
shulen be parfyth don. & marie  
seide: o y sone magnifie ye lord  
& my spirit har gladdid. in god  
my heelp: for he har biholdn ye  
mekenesse of his handmayden.  
for lo of pis: alle generacionis sh  
len seie pat i am blessid. for he  
pat is myz har don to me gre  
te pignis: & his name is hooly. &  
his mercy is fro kynrede into  
kynredis: to me pat dreden hym.  
he made myz in his arm: he sta  
terde proude me wip ye pouzt  
of his herte. he sette don myz  
men fro seete: & enhauncide me  
me. he har fulfilled hugri me w  
goodis: & he har lest ryche men  
voyde. he haunge myz of his m  
cy: took yrael his chld. as he har  
spokn to our fadris: to abrahm  
& to his seed into worldis. and ma  
rie diuellite wip hir as it were  
ye monepis: & turnete azen ito  
hir hous. but ye tyme of berige  
chld was fulfilled to elizabeth.  
& she bar a sone. & ye nezeborns &  
colyns of hir herde. y ye lord had  
de magnified his merci wip hir.  
& pei palkide hi. and it was don  
in ye ezter day pei came to cu  
cilde ye chld: & pei clepid hi

zacarie in ye name of his fadir.  
and his modir answeride & seide  
nay: but he shal be clepid john.  
& pei seiden to hir: for no ma is i  
y kynrede. y is clepid yis name.  
& ye bekenede to his fadir: what  
he wolde y he wet. clepid. & he ar  
ynge a poyntel: wroot leyunge.  
john is his name. & alle me won  
drile. & anon his moir was o  
penyd. and his tuge: & he spak.  
& blesside god. & drede was maid  
on alle her nezeborns: & alle pes  
wordis were pynphillid on alle  
ye mounteyns of judee. & alle men  
pat herten pntiden in her herte.  
& seiden what man chld shal yis  
be: for ye hond of ye lord was  
wip hi. and zacarie his fadir  
was fulfilled wip ye hooly gost:  
& profeciede & seide: blessid be ye  
lord god of yrael: for he har vili  
ted & maid redencion of his peple.  
and he har rerid to us an horn of  
heelp: in ye hous of damp. his ch  
ld. as he spak by ye moir of his  
hooly profetis: pat were fro ye  
world. heelp fro our enemyes:  
& fro ye hond of alle me pat hati  
den us. to do mercy wip our fads:  
& to hane myz of his hooly testa  
ment. ye greet oop pat he subooz to  
abrahm our fadir: to zyne hi sile  
to us. pat we wyoute drete delyn  
ed fro ye hond of our enemyes.  
serue to hi. in hoolynesse & ryt wal  
nesse bifore hym. in alle our da  
yes. and pon chld shalt be clepid  
ye pfete of ye hyeste: for pon sh  
alt go bifore ye face of ye lord to  
make redy his weyes. to zyne sci  
ence of heelp to his peple. into  
remysion of her fyue. & yd



by pe mwardnesse of pe merca of  
oure god: in pe which he luygyn  
ge vp fro anhy. hay wylted vs  
to yme lye to hem pat litte in derc  
neis: & in thadone of depe to  
dresse our feet: into pe weye  
of pees: & pe childe weride: and  
was confortid in spirit: & was  
in desert placis. til to pe day of  
his thewbyg to yrael. **C. 11.**

**A**nd it was don in yod day  
es a maudemet wente  
out fro pe empero: pat  
al pe world shulde be distrined  
his firste distring was maad  
of crym justice of surye: & alle  
me wenten to make pfeccion:  
eth into his owne cite: & joleph  
wente up fro galile fro pe cite  
nazareth. into judee into a ci  
te of dany pat is clepid bethle  
em. for pat he was of pe hous &  
of pe meyne of dany: pat he sh  
ulte knowleche wy marie his  
wyf pat weddid to hy & was gre  
et wy childe: & it was don while  
pei weren yet: pe dayes weren  
fullfillid y she shulde bere childe  
and she bair hyr firste born sone  
& wlapide hy in clopis: & leyde  
hy in a crache. for y was no pla  
ce to hy in no chaubir. **¶** And th  
cepherdis were in pe same cil  
tre. wakyge & keppege pe waach  
of pe nygt on her flot: & lo pe an  
gel of pe lord stood bihydis hem:  
& pe clerenesse of god shynete  
aboute hem. & pei dreden wy  
greet drete: & pe angel seide to  
he: nyle ze drete: for lo y preche  
to you. a greet ioye. pat shal be  
to al peple: for a samyoun is  
born of pe to day to you. y is &

pe lord in pe cite of dany. and  
yis is a tokene to you: ze shu  
len fynde among childe wlapid  
clopis: & leyde in a crache: & lide  
ly per was maad wy pe angel a  
militude of heuenly knyghtod: he  
rynge god & sepyge glorie be in  
pe hysse pigis to god: & in erpe  
pees be to me of good wille: & it  
was don. as pe angelis passiden  
a wey fro hem in to heuene: pe she  
pardis spaken to gudre & seiden  
go we ouer to bethlem: & se we  
yis word pat is maad. which pe lord  
hay maad & thewid to us: & pei  
hrynge came: & fouden marie  
& joleph: & pe zong childe leide in a  
crache: & pei sepyge knewen of  
pe word pat was seide to he of pe  
childe: and alle me pat herde won  
dren: & of pes pigis y weren  
seide to hem of pe shepardis: but  
marie kepte alle pes wordis:  
berynge to gudre in hyr herte:  
& pe shepardis turneden agen  
gloryfynge & herynge god in  
alle pigis y pei hadden herd &  
seyn: as it was seide to hem. **¶**  
ast y pe exte dayes were eu  
did. y pe childe shulde be curcil  
did: his name was clepid ihu:  
which was clepid of pe angel:  
bifore y he was cōseyned in wom  
be. **¶** And ast y pe dayes of pe  
purgacion of marie weren  
fullfillid ast moyses lawe: pei  
tooken hy into ierlm to offre hy  
to pe lord. As it is writen in pe  
lawe of pe lord: for euery male  
kynte openge pe wombe: sh  
al be clepid holy to pe lord: &  
y pei shulen zyne an offring:  
ast y it is seide in pe lawe of pe

lord. a peyre of turturis. or twey  
culle briddis: and lo amas was  
in ierlm. whos name was syme  
on: & yis ma was nist & vertu  
ous. & abood pe confort of yrael:  
& pe holy gost was in hy: & he  
hadde takn an answere of pe ho  
ly gost. y he shulde not se depe:  
but he luy first pe cft of pe  
lord: & he cam in spirit to pe te  
ple: and whie his fadir & modir  
ledde pe childe ihu to do astir pe  
custom of pe lawe for hy: he took  
hy into his armes. & he bleside  
god & seide: lord now you leenest  
y seruauit: ast y word i pees  
for my yzen han seyn ym heethe  
which you hast maad redy: hy  
fore pe face of alle pepis: lye  
to pe thewbyg of heren me: &  
glorie of y peple yrael: & his fa  
dir & his modir weren wonda  
re. on pes pigis y were seide of  
hy: & symeon bleside he: & seide  
to marie his modir: lo yis is sett  
into pe fallig: don & into pe ry  
lyg: agen of many me i yrael:  
& into a tokene to who it shal  
be agenseid: & slyerd shal pass  
yuz ym oibne soule: y pe pouz  
tis be thewid of many hertis: &  
ana was a pfetelle re donytr of  
samuel of pe lynage of aser: and  
she hadde gon fory in many dayes:  
& hadde luyed wy hyr hotebonte:  
seuen zee fro hyr maytchod: &  
yis was a widowe: to four dore  
zee & four: & she departide not  
fro pe teple: but seruete to god  
myt & day. in fastigis & preie  
ris: & yis cam upon he in pilke  
our: & knowlechte to pe lord &  
spak of hy to alle y abide pe re

depcion of yrael: & as pei hadde  
ful don alle pigis. astir pe lawe  
of pe lord: pei turnede agen to  
galile. into her cite nazareth: &  
pe childe was & was confortid sit  
of wysdom: & pe grace of god was  
in hy: & his fadir & modir wenten  
ech zee into ierlm: in pe solepne  
day of pass: & whie ihu was twel  
ue zee old: pei wente up to ierlm.  
astir pe custo of pe feeste day: &  
whie pe dayes were don pei tur  
nete agen. & pe childe abood i ierlm.  
& his fadir & modir knewe it not:  
for pei geslige pat he hadde be  
in pe felonship came a dayes  
unnepe & souzen hy among his  
cophys & his knowleche: and wha  
ne pei fouden hy not: pei turnede  
agen to ierlm. & souzen hy: & it bi  
fel y astir pe yride day: pei fon  
den hy in pe teple: sitige in pe  
myddil of pe doctours. heerige  
hem & arynge he: & alle me pat  
herden hym: wondred on pe pru  
dence & pe answeris of hym: and  
pei hyen & wondred: & his modir  
seide to hy: sone what hast you do  
to us yus: lo y fadir & y souzpye:  
han souz pee: & he seide to hem:  
what is it y ze souzte me: wiste  
ze not y in po pigis. pat ben of  
my fadir: it bihouer me to be:  
and pei vnderstode not pe word:  
which he spak to he: & he cam don  
wy hem. & cam to nazareth: &  
was suget to he: and his modir  
kept to gudre alle pese wordis.  
& bair hem in hyr herte: & ihu pfi  
tode in wysdo. age. & grace: ane  
tis god & me. **C. 12.**  
**I**n pe fyftenpe zee of  
pe empre. of tyberie



ye empour. whine pilat of poince  
gouverneide judee. & eroude was  
prynce of galile. & filip his bro  
pir was prynce of iurie & of  
pe citre of tracon. & blande was  
pnce of abilyn vnder pe pnces  
of prettis anas & cayfas. ye wo  
rd of pe lord was maid on john pe  
sone of lacarie in desert. & he cam  
into al pe citre of jordan. and  
prechide baptym of penance i  
to remysion of synes as it  
is writu in pe booke of pe wordi  
of ihaie pe profete. ye vois of  
a crier in desert. make ze redy  
pe weye of pe lord. make ze his  
papis ryt. ech valey shal be  
fulfillid. & euery hil & lytill hil  
shal be maid low. and shewid  
pignis shule be into drethid pignis.  
& shap pe pignis in to pleyn wey  
es. & euery flesch shal se pe heel  
pe of god. perfore he seide to pe  
peple which wente out to be bap  
tylid of hym. kyndlyngis of ed  
dus. who shewide to zou. to  
fle fro pe wyappe to conyng.  
perfore do ze worpi fruytis of  
penance. & bigyne ze not to seye.  
we han a fadir abraham. for i lye  
to zou. & god is myty to reyle of  
pes stoues pe lones of abraham.  
& now an ax is lett to pe roote  
of pe tre. and pfore euery tre  
pat maky no good fruyt shal  
be kut don. & shal be cast into  
pe fier. and ye peple aride hym.  
& leiden. what pame shule we do.  
he answereide. & seide to hem. he  
pat hay tibeey cootis. yne to hi  
pat hay noo. & he pat hay metis.  
do in hyl maner. & pyppicans ca  
me to be baptid. & pei leiden

to hi. maist what shule we do.  
and he seide to hem. do ze no pig  
more pan y. pat is ordeyned to  
zou. and fruytis aride hym. & le  
iden. what shulen also we do. &  
he seide to hem. synpte ze wrong  
fully no ma. ney make fall ca  
lenge. & be ze apayed wip zou  
soudis. **W**hine al pe peple ges  
side. & alle me pouste in her her  
tis of john. lest pame tur he we  
re cit. john answereide & seide  
to alle me. i baptise zou wip  
but stronger pa. i shal come af  
tur me. of who i am not worpi to  
vshynte pe lace of his shoon. he  
shal baptise zou in pe hooki gost  
& fier. whos wynewyng tool in  
his hond. & he shal purge his floz  
of corn. & shal gedre pe whete i  
to his berue. but pe thastis he  
shal brene. wip fier vnquench  
able. & many opir pignis also he  
apal & prechide to pe peple. **B**ut  
eroude thetrark. whine he was  
blamyd of iohn for erodias pe  
wyf of his brop. & for alle pe vi  
nels pat eroudeide. encreside  
pis ouer alle. & shytte iohn i pson.  
& it was don whane al pe peple  
was baptid. & whine ihu was  
baptid & preide. heuene was  
openyd. & pe hooki gost cam don  
in bodily lykenesse. as a doube on  
hi. & a vois was maid fro heuene.  
you art my dere wyge sone. in  
ree it hay plesid to me. & ihu hi  
self was bigynnyng as of yit  
ty zeer. pat he was gesid pe so  
ne of ioseph. which was of hely.  
which was of matath. which was  
of leuy. which was of melch. &  
was of janne. pat was of ioseph.

pat was of matath. & was of a  
mos. & was of naum. & was of  
hely. & was of nagge. & was of  
matath. & was of matath. & was  
of semei. & was of ioseph. & was  
of iuda. pat was of iohana. &  
was of reia. & was of sorobabel.  
& was of salatiel. & was of uery.  
& was of melch. & was of abdy.  
& was of colan. & was of ednadan.  
& was of her. pat was of ihu.  
& was of eleazar. & was of jori.  
& was of machath. & was of leuy.  
& was of symed. pat was of iuda.  
& was of ioseph. & was of jona.  
& was of ehachym. & was of melca.  
& was of mena. & was of mathatha.  
& was of nathan. & was of daup.  
& was of jelle. pat was of obeth.  
pat was of boz. & was of salimon.  
& was of nalon. & was of ammadab.  
& was of anan. pat was of elrom.  
& was of sares. pat was of iudas.  
& was of iacob. & was of ianc.  
& was of abraham. & was of rare.  
& was of nacor. & was of seruth.  
& was of agam. & was of phaleth.  
& was of heber. & was of sale.  
& was of haynan. & was of at-faray.  
& was of sem. pat was of noe.  
& was of lameth. & was of matu.  
sale. & was of enok. & was of jarech.  
& was of malahel. & was of caynan.  
& was of enos. & was of lech. pat  
was of adam. & was of god. **C. m.**  
**A**d ihu ful of pe hooki go  
st. turnede azen fro ior  
dan. and was led bi pe spi  
rit into desert. forty dayes. &  
was temptid of pe deuyl. & eet  
no pig in po dayes. & whine po  
dayes were endid. he higrice.  
& pe deuyl seide to hi. if you art

godis sone. seye to pis stoon. p  
it be maid bred. & the answereide  
to hy. it is writu. yama lyney  
not in breed aloone. but i eny  
word of god. And pe deuyl ladde  
hym to an hyl. & shewide to  
hym alle pe reuines of pe wor  
ld in amomet of tyme. & seide to  
hy. i shal yue to pee al pis po  
wer. & pe gloie of hem. for to me  
pei ben zoni. & to whom i wole.  
i yue he pfore if you falle down  
& worthipe bifore me. alle rui  
gis shulen be yue. & the answere  
ide. & seide to hy. it is writu. y  
shal worthipe pi lord god. & to  
hi aloone you shalt serue. & he  
lodde hy into ierlm. & sette hy on  
pe pynade of pe temple. & seide  
to hy. if you art goddis sone. sen  
de pi self fro heups dou. for it is  
writu. for he hay comaundid to  
his augels of pee. & rei kepe pee  
in alle pi weyes. and y rei shule  
take pee in hondis. lest perane  
tur. you lynte pi foot at a stoon.  
& the answereide & seide to hy. it  
is leid. you shalt not tepte pi  
lord god. & whine euery teptaci  
on was endid. pe fend wente a  
wey fro hy for a tyme. & the tur  
nede azen in pe vertu of pe spi  
rit into galile. & pe fame wente  
for of hy pur al pe citre. & he  
tauzte in pe synagogis of hem.  
& was magnified of alle me. &  
he cam to nazareth. wher he  
was nonidid. & entride after  
his custm in pe sabat day. ito a sy  
nagoge. & roos to rede. & pe booke  
of ihaie pe pfete was taku to  
hym. & as he turnyde pe booke. he  
fond a place where it was writu.



ye spirit of ye lord on me for  
which pig he anoyntide me. he  
sent me to preche to pore me  
to heele contrit me in herte. & to  
preche remission to psoneris. &  
syt to blynde me. & to deliuer  
hu me into remission. to preche pe  
zeer of ye lord plesant. & pe day of  
zelding azen. & whine he hadde clo  
sid ye book. he sat azen to ye my  
nistre. & sat and pe yren of alle  
me in pe synagoge. weren bihol  
dige into hy. & he bigan to sepe  
to he. for in pis day pis scriptur  
is fulfilled in zoure eeris. & alle  
me zane wituellig to hy. & won  
dren in pe wordis of grace. &  
came forp of his mouy. & pei sei  
den. wher yu pis is not ye sone  
of ioseph. & he seide to he. lopeli  
ze schulen sepe to me pis libuesse.  
leche heele pi self. pe farisees sei  
den to ihu. how grete pigis han  
we herd don in casarnai. do you  
also here in pi citre. & he seide. tr  
euly. I sepe to you. p no pfete is  
resseynd in his owne citre. & tren  
pe. I seie to you pat many wido  
wis were in pe dayes of elye pe  
pfete in israhel. whine heuene was  
clodid pe zeer & hys monepis.  
whine greet hugur was maid in  
al pe erpe. & to noon of hem was  
elye sent. but to sarepta of sy  
don to a widowe. & many meles  
were in yrael. vndrelyse pe  
pfete. & noon of he was denlid.  
but naman of syre. & alle i pe  
synagoge heerige res pigis.  
weren fullid wry wryppe. & pe  
rile up & drone hy out wryponte  
pe citee. & leden hy to pe top of  
pe hil on which her citee was

buldid. to caste hi dou. but the pas  
side & wente ym. & pe myddel of  
hem. And cam don into casar  
nai a citre of galile. & pei he  
tanze he in sabatis. & pei were  
a stouped in his teching. for his  
word was in power. and in per  
synagoge was a man hange  
an vndene fend. & he crede wry  
greet vois. & seide. suffre what  
to us & to pee ihu of nazareth.  
art p comm to leese us. & i know  
leche. & you art pe hooly of god.  
& the blameide hi & seide. were do  
ub. & go out fro hi. & whine pe fed  
hadde cast hi forp into pe myddel.  
he wente away fro hi. & he noy  
ede hym no pig. & drede was maid  
in alle me. & pei spaken to gidre  
& seide. what is pis word for i po  
wer & vertu he comandit to m  
clene spiritis. & pei goen out.  
& pe fame was puyplid of hi.  
into ech place of pe citre. & the  
roos up fro pe synagoge. & en  
tride into pe hous of symonit.  
& pe modir of symonitis wif.  
was holdu wry grete feueris.  
& pei ppetede hi for hyr. & the stood  
ouer hyr. & comandise to pe fei.  
& it leste hyr. & anoo she roos  
up & seruede he. & whine pe tu  
ne wente don. alle p hadde sylle  
me wry dynerle langours lede  
hem to hi. & he sette his hondis  
on ech hy he self. & heelde hem.  
& sendis wente out fro manye.  
& cryede & septe. for you art pe  
sone of god. & he blameide & suf  
fride hem not to speke. for pei  
wiste hy he was cit. and whine  
pe day was come. he zede out &  
wente into a desert place. & pe

pepl. souzte hy. & pei came to hy.  
& pei heelden hy. & he schilde not  
go away fro hem. to which he  
he seide. for allo to opur citees. it  
bihoney me to preche pe kingdo  
of god. for perfore i am sent. &  
he prechide in pe synagogs of  
all it. Galile. & v.  
**A** was don whane pe pe  
ple came faste to ihu.  
to heere pe word of god. he stood  
bydis pe pool of genareth. &  
syz two bootis stoude bydis pe  
pool. and pe fyllheris were gon  
don. & waitcheden her nettis.  
& he wente up into a boot  
pat was symonidis. & ppete  
de hy to lede it algetel fro pe lond.  
& he sat & tanze pe peple out  
of pe boot. & as he ceeside to spe  
ke. he seide to symonit. seide you  
into depe. & slake zour nettis  
to take fyllth. & symonit answe  
ride & seide to hy. comandour. we  
tranelide al pe nyzt. & token no  
pig. but in pi word. I schal lepe  
out pe nett. & whine pei hadden  
do pis pig. pei clouiden to gidre  
a greet mltitude of fyllthes. &  
her net was brok. & pei beke  
myde to felowis pat were in an  
opur boot. & pei schulden come &  
helpe hem. & pei came & fillide  
bope bootis. so p pei weren al  
most drenchid. & whane symonit  
petre hyz pis pig. he seide dou  
to. & p. pe knees of ihu & seide.  
lord. go fro me. for i am a  
synful ma. for he was on ech  
syde a stouped. & alle p were  
wry hy in pe takyng of fyllth.  
which pei token. sopeh i lyt  
man james & john pe sones

of zebede. pat were felawis of  
symonit petre. and the seide to  
symonit. myle you drede. now  
fro pis tyme p schalt take men.  
& whine pe bootis weren ledd up  
to pe lond. pei leste alle pigis. &  
pei sueden hy. And it was don.  
whine he was in oon of pe citees.  
lo ama ful of lepre. & seynge ihu  
felte dou on his face. & ppetede  
hi & seide. lord if you wolt. you  
maist make me clene. & the he  
eld forp his hond & touchide him.  
& seide. i wolt. be you maid clene.  
and anoo ye lepre passide a wey  
fro hym. & the comandise to hy.  
p the schilde sepe to no ma. but  
go ahenze p pee to a preet. and  
offre for pi clensig. as moyses  
bad into waneellig to he. & pe  
word walkide aboute pe moze  
of hym. & moche peple came to  
gidre. to heere. & to be heeld of  
her spfneellis. & he wente to de  
sert. & ppetede. & it was don in  
oon of pe dayes. he sat & tanze.  
& p weren farisees sittige & doc  
tours of ye lawe. pat came of  
ech castel of galile & of Jude & of  
ierlm. & pe vertu of ye lord was.  
to heele sylle me. & lo me bare  
in a bed ama pat was sylle i pe  
pallie. & pei souzte to ber hy.  
yn. & sette bifore hy. & pei fon  
den not in what partie pei sch  
ulden bere hy yn. for pe peple.  
wente on pe roof. & by pe stlat  
tis pei lecten hi don wry pe bed.  
to pe myddel bifore ihu. & whine  
ihu syz pe ferr of he. he seide.  
ma. pi synes ben forzoun to  
pee. & pe scribis & farisees bi  
gauen to peuke. & seynge



who is þis pat spekeþ clafte  
myes. who may forþyne synes.  
but god aloone. & as the knet  
re pouztis of hem. he answere  
de & seide to hem. what venken  
ze yuele pigis i zome hertis.  
what is lyter to seye. synes be  
forzoun to pee. or to seye ryle  
up & walke. but þe wite þ  
mans lone hay power i erpe  
to forþyne synes. he seide to  
pe syl man in paleste. i seie  
to pee ryle up. take y bed &  
go into ym hous. & anon he ro  
os up bfore he & toke ye bed in  
whych he lag. & wente into his  
hous. & magnified god. & greet  
wondur toke alle. & rei magni  
fied god. & rei weren fulfilled  
wy greet drede. & seide for we  
han seyn merueilous pigis to  
day. And after pes pigis is  
wente out & sȳ a puppican le  
up by name. sittige at ye tol bo  
re. & he seide to hi. sue you me  
& whie he hadde leit alle pigis.  
he roos up & luede hy. & leup ma  
de to hi a greet feeite in his ho  
i per was a greet cūpany of  
puppicans & of oþe pat were  
wy he. sittige at ye mete. &  
farilees & ye strabis of he gr  
uachide. & leiden to hile dylpys  
whi eten ze & dȳnken wy pup  
picans & sȳful mē. & the an  
swerde & seide to hem. yei pat  
ben hoole han no nete to a leche.  
but rei pat ben sȳke. for y cam  
not to clepe wist mē. but sȳful  
mē to penaunce. & rei leiden to hi  
whi ye dylpys of jon faste of  
te & maken prieris also & of fa  
rilees. but yme eten & dȳnke

to whiche he seide wher ze moun  
make ye sones of re spouse to  
faste. while re spouse is wy he  
but dānes shulen come whane  
re spouse shal be take a wey fro  
hem. & pane rei shulen faste i po  
dānes. & he seide to hem also. alle  
nelle for no mā takeþ a pese fro  
a newe clop. & puttyt it into an  
old cloping. ellis bope he breky  
pe newe. & pe pese of re newe a  
cordy not to re elde. and no mā  
puttyt newe wynt into olde botels  
ellis ye newe wynt shal breke pe  
botels. & ye wynt shal be wēd  
ed out. & ye botetels shu wēd  
len perillhe. but newe wynt  
owip to be putt into newe bo  
tels. & bope ben kept. & no man  
dȳnke ye elde. wole a nō newe  
for he ley pe elde is pe better.  
**A**nd it was do. **A**nd it was do.  
in pe recorde of re labot  
whie he passide by re cor  
nes. hile dylpys pluckiden eers  
of corn. & rei frotyge wy her hondis.  
eten. and sinne of re farilees.  
seide to hem. what doen ze pat y is  
not leestful in pe labotis. & the an  
swerde & seide to hem. ze han wot  
redd what damp dide. whie he  
hūgride. & rei f weren wy hy  
how he entride into ye hous of  
god & took loones of pposicion &  
eet. & zaf to hem y were wy hy  
whiche loones it was not leestful  
to ete. but oonly to pzel. & he  
seide to he. for man. & nis  
lone is lord. zhe of ye laboth & it  
was don i anoy laboth. & he ent  
de into a synagoge & taunte &  
amā was rei. & his rythond  
was dȳpe. & ye strabis & farilees

alpete hi. if he wolde heele hym  
in pe laboth. pat rei shulde fynde  
cause wherof rei shulde acuse  
hy. & he wite re pouztis of he. &  
he seide to ye man pat hadde adȳpe  
hond. ryle up & stonde i to ye myd  
del. & he roos. & stood. & the seide  
to hem. i are you if it is leestful to  
do wel in ye sabot or yuele. to  
make a soule lant. or to leete. &  
whie he hadde biholde alle mē a  
boute. he seide to ye mā. hold forþ  
ym hond. & he heeld forþ. & his ho  
nd was restord to heeþe. & rei  
were fulfilled wy mūwilsdom.  
& spaken to gidre. what rei shul  
den do of thi. **A**nd it was don  
i yodānes. he wente out to an  
hil. to prier. & he was al myt  
dwellige in ye prier of god. &  
whie ye day was come. he clepi  
de hile dylpys. & chees twelue of  
hem whiche he clepide also apost  
hs. symond who he clepide petr.  
& andren his broyr. james & jo.  
philip & bartholomew. matthe  
& thonis. james alsey & symonit  
y is clepid zelotes. judas of ja  
mes. & judas itariot y was tray  
tour. and the cam don fro ye hil  
wy hem & stood i a feeldy place.  
& ye cūpany of hile dylpys &  
a greet multitude of peple of al  
judē & ierlm. & of ye see coastis  
& of tyre & sydon. & camē to hee  
re hi. & to be heeld of her sȳkel  
hs. & rei pat were trane lid of  
vncleue spiritis. were heeld.  
and alle peple souzte to touche  
hi. for vertu wente out of hym  
& heelde alle. & whie hile pzen  
were cast up into hile dylpys.  
he seide bleid be ze poze men.

for ye kyngdom of god is zour.  
bleid be ze y now hūgre. for ze  
shulen be fulfilled. bleid be ze  
pat now wepe. for ze shule leze.  
ze shulen be bleid. whie men  
shulen hate you. & departe you  
awey. & putte shendhip to you.  
& caste out your name as yuel  
for mans lone. hope ze i pat day  
& be ze glad. for lo your mede is  
moche in heuene. for after yese  
pigis. ye fadris of hem dide to  
pzetis nepeles wo to you ryche  
mē. pat han your confort. wo  
to you y ben fulfilled. for ze shu  
len hūgre. wo to you y now len  
en. for ze shulen mozne & wepe.  
wo to you whie alle mē shule  
blesse you. after pes pigis ye fa  
drys of hem diden to pzetis.  
**B**ut i seie to you y heere lone ze  
your enemies. do ze wel to hem  
y hatide you. blesse ze mē y canse  
you. prepeze for mē y defanie you.  
& to hy pat smyt y pee on o cheke.  
shewe also ye toþ. & fro hy y tak y  
awey fro pee a clop. wile y for  
bete ye cote. and yue to ech pat  
smyt y. & if amā tak y away  
ye pigis pat ben yme. are you  
not azen. and as ze wolen pat  
men do to you. do ze also to hem  
in lyk maner. & if ze louen hem  
pat louen you. what pank is to  
you. for sȳful mē louē mē pat  
louē he. & if ze doen wel to he y.  
doen wel to you. what grace is  
to you. sȳful mē doen yis ying.  
& if ze leenen to he of whiche ze  
hopen to take azen. what pank  
is to you. for sȳful mē leenen  
to sȳful mē. to take azen as wo  
che nepeles lone ze your enemye.



do ze wel. And leene ze hopige  
no yng. pof. & zom mede ſhal  
be moche. & ze ſchulden be re ſoue  
of pe herte. for he is benygne  
on vnkynde me & yuel me. **¶** For  
be ze merciful. as zom fadir is  
merciful. nple ze denie. & ze ſchu  
len not be demp. nple ze cōdepne.  
Ze ſchulē not be cōdepned. for yue ze.  
it ſhal be forzoni to zom. & yue ze.  
it ſhal be zom to. & yue ſchulē zine to  
zom. & bohi a good meſin. & wel ſilid.  
Ze ſhal to gidre & ouer flowige  
for bi pe ſame meſin. bi which  
ze meten. it ſhal be meten azen to  
zom. & he ſeide to hem a herteſſe.  
Whep pe blynde may lede pe bly  
de. ne fallen pei not bope into pe  
dyche. a diſciple is not a boue pe  
maſtir. but ech ſhal be par ſyt.  
if he be as his maſtir. **¶** And what  
ſeet pou in pi broperis yze a mot.  
but pou biholdiſt not a beem. pat  
is in pi owne yze. or how maſtir  
pou ſeie to pi brop. broper ouſt.  
Ze ſhal caſte out pe mot of pi yze.  
Ze pou biholdiſt not a beem in pi  
owne yze. **¶** Iocrite. firſt take  
out pe beem of pi owne yze. &  
pāne pou ſhalt ſe to take pe mot  
of pi broperis yze. **¶** It is not a  
good tre. y mak yuele fruytis  
nef an yuel tre. rat mak y go  
ode fruytis. for euery tre. is  
knowi of his fruyt. & men ga  
dere not ſpygus of pornes. ney  
men gaderē a grape of a boult  
of herte. a good mā. of pe good  
treſour of his herte byngy  
forp goode ygis. & an yuel mā  
man. of pe yuel treſour byn  
gey forp yuel ygis. for of pe  
plente of pe herte. pe mouy ſpe

ky. **¶** And what clepen ze me lord.  
lord. & doen not vo ygis. rat  
ſepe. ech pat come to me. & hee  
rep my wordis. & doy hem. **¶**  
ſhal ſche we to zom to whom he  
is lyk. he is lyk to aman y blyde  
en hous. rat diggete depe. & lette  
pe fudamēt on a ſtoon. & whie  
greet flood was mand. & whie  
was him thid to y hous. & it miz  
te not moue it. for it was ſol  
did on a ſad ſtoon. but he pat  
heeryp & doy not. is lyk to a  
man blyde his hous on erpe  
wyoute fudamēt. into which  
pe flood was hurld. & a noon it  
felle don. & pe fallig don of pat  
hous. was mand greet. **¶** **A**  
And whie he hadde fulſil  
id alle his wordis into  
re eers of pe peple. he  
entride into caſarū. but a ſer  
uant of a centurien. pat was  
precious to hym. was ſpē. & dra  
wyngē to pe depe. & whie he  
hadde herd of ihu. he ſente to  
hym. & eelde men of ierū. &  
preiede hi. rat he wolde come.  
heele his ſeruant. & whie pei  
cāmen to ihu. pei preiede hym  
biſy. & ſeide to hi. for he is wor  
pi y pou graite to hy. & yis yig.  
for he louey oure folk. & he blyde  
to us a ſynagoge. & whie wen  
te wy hem. & whie he was not  
fer fro pe hous. & centurie ſen  
te to hy. frendis & ſeide. lord. nple  
pou be tranelid. for i am not  
worpi. y pou entre vnder my  
roof. for which yig. & y deme  
de not my ſelf worpi. y i come  
to pee. but ſeie pou bi word. &  
my child ſhal be heeld. for i am

ama ordeyned vnder power. &  
hane i miztis vnder me. & i ſeie  
to yis go. & he goy. & to a noy  
come. & he come. & to my ſeruant  
do yis yig. & he doy. & whie yis  
yig was herd. iſt wondride. &  
ſeide to pe peple ſyngē hi. & treu  
li. i ſeie to zom. ney. in yrael. i  
ſoud lo greet fey. & yei pat we  
re ſent. turneten azen home. &  
ſouden pe ſeruant hool. which  
was ſpē. **¶** And it was don aſt  
ward. iſt wente into a cite. pat  
is clepid nāim. & hiſe diſcypis &  
ful greet peple wēten wy hy.  
& whie he cam miz to pe zate of  
pe cite. lo pe ſone of a woman  
pat hadde no mo children. was  
born out deid. & yis was a wido  
we. & moche peple of pe cite wy  
hy. & whie pe lord ihu hadde ſeyn  
hy. he hadde reuyē on hy. & ſeide  
to hy. nple pou wepe. & he cam  
miz. & touchide pe beel. & yei pat  
baren. ſtoode. & he ſeide. zonge  
mā. i ſeie to pee. ryſe vp. & he  
pat was deid. ſaſt vp azen. &  
bigan to ſpeke. & he ſaſt hy to hi.  
modir. And diede took alle men.  
& yei magnified god. & ſeiden.  
for a greet profete is riſi amog  
us. & for god hay viſited his po  
peple. & yis word wente out of  
hy into al iudee. & into al pe ci  
tre aboute. **¶** And John diſc  
pys tolde hy. of alle yis ygis.  
& John clepide tweyne of hiſe  
diſcypis. & ſente he to ihu. & hie  
art pou he pat is to come. or a  
biden we anop. & whie pe me  
cam to hi. yei ſeiden. John bap  
tiſt ſente us to pee. & ſeide. art  
pou he pat is to come. or we

abyden anop. **¶** And in pat our he  
heelde many me of her ſpē. neſ  
ſis & wondis. & yuel ſpūritis. & he  
ſaſt ſiz to many blynde me. & iſt  
anſweride. & ſeide to hem. go ze  
azen. & telle ze to John. vo ygis  
pat ze han herd. & ſeyn. blynde me  
ſeen. crokid me goen. meſelis be  
mand deſe. deet men heere. deete  
me ryſen azen. poze me ben ta  
bi to prechig of pe goſpel. & he  
pat ſhal not be ſtandrid in me.  
is bleſſid. & whie pe meſſangers  
of John. weren go forp. he bigā  
to ſeie of John to pe peple. what  
wente ze out into deſert to ſe.  
a reede wand wy pe wynd. but  
what wente ze out to ſe. aman  
clepid wy ſofte cloris. lo yei p  
ben in pzeious clor. & in deſpces.  
be in kyngis houſis. but what  
wente ze out to ſe. a pſete. & he  
ſeie to zom. & more vā apſete.  
yis is he of whom it is writi. lo  
i ſente my aigel biſore pi face.  
which ſhal make pi weye redy  
biſore pee. certis. i ſeie to zom.  
per is no mā more pſete amog  
children of iſyrie. & an is John.  
but he y is leſſe in pe kyngdom  
of heuenes. is more van he.  
**¶** And alle pe peple heerige. & pūp  
plicans pat hadde be baptiſid  
wy pe baptym of John. iuſtifi  
eden god. but pe farilees. & pe  
wyſe me of pe lawe. rat were  
not baptiſid of hi. diſpileden pe  
coūcel of god. azen he ſiſt. & pe  
lord ſeide. pſore to who ſhal i  
ſepe me of yis generacion. lyt.  
to whom ben yei lyk. yei ben  
lyt to children ſittige in chepig.  
& ſpekinge to gidre. & ſeyge.



We han songu to you wip pypis.  
 & ze han not dālid we han mard  
 moxyng. & ze han not wept for  
 John baptist cam nes etyng  
 breed ne drynkige wip. & ze seie  
 he has a fend māns sone cam  
 etyng & drynkige. & ze seien  
 lo amā deuour. & drynkige wip  
 a frend of puplicans & of syn  
 ful me. & wipdom is iustified  
 of her sones. **B**ut oon of pe far  
 sees preiete ihu. & he shulde ete  
 wip hym. and he entride into pe  
 hous of pe farisee. & sat at pe me  
 te. & lo a synful wōmā y was i pe  
 citee. as she knew y ihu sat at  
 pe mete. in pe hous of pe farisee.  
 she brougte an alabastr box of  
 oymemet. & she stood bysnde bi  
 hys feet. & bigan to mouthe  
 hys feet wip teeris. & wipete  
 wip pe heeris of hir heed. & kiste  
 hys feet. & anoyntide wip oym  
 met. & pe farisee seyngre pat had  
 de deyd hi. seide wip yne hym  
 silt seyngre. if pis were affete.  
 he shulde wite. who & what ma  
 ner wōmā it wer. pat touchy  
 hi. for she is a synful wōmā. &  
 she answereide & seyde to hi. sym  
 onit. I haue silt pig to seie to pee.  
 & he seide. manstir seie pou. & he  
 answereide. wip detours we  
 ren to oo lenet. & oon ouste sy  
 ne hūdris pens. & pe of fyftē.  
 but whne pei hadde not wher  
 of pei shulde zelte. he for zaf to  
 bope. who ysne louey hi moxe.  
 symonit answereide & seide. I gel  
 se pat he. to whom he forzaf mo  
 ze. & he answereide to hi. y ha  
 deuyd ryzth. & he turnede to pe  
 wōmā & seide to symonit seest

ron pis wōmā. I entride into pi  
 hous. pou zaf no watu to my  
 feet. but pis has moynd my fe  
 et wip teeris. & wipid wip hir  
 heeris. pou haft not zoinu to me  
 a colle. but pis lypen she entri  
 de ceelide not to kille my feet.  
 pou anoyntide not myn heed  
 wip oyle. but pis anoyntide my  
 feet wip oymemet. for pe which  
 pig I seie to pee. many synes be  
 forzoinu to hir. for she has loued  
 moche. & to who is lelle forzoinu.  
 he louey lesse. & she seide to hi.  
 y synes ben forzoinu to pee. &  
 pei pat saten to gidre at pe mete.  
 biginen to seie wip yne he silt.  
 who is pis pat forzoiner synes.  
 but he seide to pe wōmā. y ferp  
 hap mard pee silt. go y in pees.  
**A**nd it was do. **A**fterward. & ihu made  
 a nouney bi citees & cal  
 tels. prechige & euangelizinge  
 pe rewme of god. & twelue wip  
 hi. & sū wimen pat weren hee  
 lid of wicid spiritis & synellis.  
 marie y is clepid mardelei of  
 whom seuenne deuels werten  
 out. & Joone pe wyf of chule pe  
 pcurato of eroude. & susāne  
 many ope. y mymāntē to hi  
 of her rycheellis. & whne myche  
 peple was come to gidre. & me  
 hūden to hi fro pe citees. he se  
 de bi a symilitude. He pat souy  
 zede out to sorbe his seed. & wip  
 he souy. sū fel bi sydis pe weie.  
 & was defoulid. & briddis of pe  
 eyr eeten it. and opir fel on a  
 stoon. & it sprong up & dreyde.  
 for it hadde not moitūre. and  
 opir fel amōg pynes. & pe por

nes sprungen up to gidre. & strā  
 ghde it. and opir fel into good er  
 pe. & it is sprōg up. & made an  
 hūdris fold fruyt. he seide pes  
 rygis & cryede he pat ceeris of  
 heerfng heer. he but hile dil  
 ciplis axeden hi. wat was pis  
 parable was. & he seide to hem.  
 to zoin it is grautid to knowe  
 pe pryncipe of pe kyngdom of  
 god. but to opere me in para  
 blis. y pei seyngre se not. and  
 pei heerige vndir stonde not.  
 & pis is pe parable. pe seed is  
 godis word. & pei pat ben bly  
 dis pe weye. be pes pat hee  
 ren. and afterward pe fend comey  
 & takir away pe word fro per her  
 te. lest pei bileunge be mard sa  
 af. but pei pat fel on a stoon. be  
 pes y whne pei han herd. relley  
 uen pe word wip ioye. & pes han  
 not rootis. for at a tyme pei bile  
 uen. & in tyme of tēptacion pei  
 goen away. but pat y fel among  
 pynes. ben pes pat herde. & of bi  
 synelles & richellis & ludis of hys  
 pei goen for. & ben strāghd. & byn  
 gen for no fruyt. but pat pat fel  
 into good erpe. ben pes pat in a good  
 herte & best heere pe word & holde.  
 & byngen for fruyt in pacience.  
**N**o man lytney a lanterne. & hi  
 lep it wip a uel. or puttyt it on  
 dur a bed. but on a candellstake. y  
 me pat entren se lyt. for y is no  
 pryncip. which shal not be ope  
 nyd. neyr hid. which shal  
 not be knowu. & come ito opyn

perfore se ze how ze heeren. for it  
 shal be zoinu to hym y har. & who  
 eney pat har not. als pat pat he  
 wener y he haue. shal be taku a  
 wey fro hym. & his modir & brisen  
 came to hym. & pe myxten not co  
 me to hy for pe peple. & it was treld  
 to hym. y modir & y brisen ston  
 den wipoute for. willige to se pee.  
 and he answereide & seide to he. my  
 modir & my briser ben yese. pat  
 heeren pe word of god & doen it.  
 And it was don in oon of pe daies.  
 he wente up into aboot & hile disti  
 phis. & he seide to hem. passe we on  
 pe see. and pei wente up. & while  
 pei roweden. he slepte. and a tem  
 pest of wynd cam donkn into pe wa  
 tur. & pei weren drym hidur & pi  
 dur wip waves & weren i pel. &  
 pei came ny. & releden hi & seide.  
 comāduir we perillhen. & he roos  
 & blāmyde pe wynd & pe tempest  
 of pe watu. & it ceelide. & pefible  
 te was mard. & he seide to hem. whe  
 re is zoin ferp. which dreyngre  
 wondred. & seide to gidre. who gel  
 list pou is pis. for he comāduy to  
 wydis & to pe see. & pei obeyen  
 to hym. & pei rowiden to pe kūtūre  
 of gerasen. pat is azens galile.  
 and whne he wente out to pe lond.  
 aman ran to hi pat hadde a deuēl  
 long tyme. & he was not dlopid  
 wip dlop. neyr diuēlde in hous.  
 but i sepulchris. pis whne he syz  
 ihu. fel don bifore hy. & he cryngre  
 wip a greet vois. seyde. what to  
 me & to pee. ihu ye sone of dāte.  
 god. y bileche pee y pou timentē  
 not me. for he comāduide pe vn  
 deue spirit. y he shulde go out  
 fro pe man. for he took hi ofte ty



mes and he was bound wip charynes & kept in stocks & whine pe bondis weren broken. he was lad of deuels into desert and hit aride hi & seide. What name is to pee? & he seide a legion for many deuels weren entrid into hi. And pei ppyeden hi. p he shulde not comande he. p pei shulden go into helle. And p was a floc of many swyn. lesenige man hi. & pei ppeiden hi. p he shulde suffre hem entrid into he. & he suffride hem & so pe deuels menten out fro pe man. & entiden into pe swyn. & wip a bure pe floc wente heedlige into pe pool. & was drenchid. & whine pe herdis sauen pis pig don. pei flossen & teelden into pe citee & i to pe towne. and pei zeden out to se pat pig. pat was don & pei camen to ihu. & pei fouden pe man sittige clopid. fro who pe fendis wente out. & in hool mynde at his feet. & pei dzedden. and pei p syzen toolde to he. how he was mad hool of pe legion. & al pe multitude of pe citee of gerasen priede hi. p he shulde go fro he. for pei were holdu wip greet drede. he wente up into a boot & turnede agen. & pe ma of who pe deuels were gon out. priede hi. p he shulde be wip hi. ihu leste hym & seide. go a zen into pin hous. & telle how grete rigns god hay don to pee. & he wente purjal pe citee. & priede how grete rigns ihu hadde don to hi. **A**nd it was don whine ihu was gon agen. pe peple ressepye de hym. for alle were abydyge hi. and lo ama to who pe name was iairus. & he was prince of a synagoge. & he fel down at pe feet

of ihu. & priede hi. pat he shulde entre into his hous. for he hadde but odourtur almost of twelf yer. eeld. & she was deed. & it bifel. pe while he wente. he was prugun of pe peple. & a woman. p hadde a flux of blood twelf yer. & had de spendid al hir catel in lechis. & she myzte not be curid of ony. & she cam wip byhynde. & touchide pe hemme of his cloy. and amoo pe flux of hir blood cesside. & ihu seide. who is p touchide me? & whine alle me denyede. pett seide. & pei p were wip hi. comandou pe peple pristen & dilefen pee. & p seist who touchide me? & ihu seide. su ma hay touchid me. for p ver tu zede out of me. & pe woma sege p it was not hid fro hi. cam tremliche & fel down at his feet. & for what cause she hadde touchid hi. she thewde bifore al pe peple. & how amoo she was heeld. & he seide to hir. donzter pi fery hay mad pee laf. go pou i pers. & it whi le he spak. a ma cam to pe pnce of pe synagoge. & seide to hi. pi donzter is deed. nyle pon tranele pe manstir. & whine pis word was herd. ihu answeride to pe fadir of pe damysel. nyle p drede. but bi leue pou onely. & she shal be laf. and whine he cam to pe hous. he suffride no ma to entre wip hi. but pett. & john & james & pe fadir & pe modur of pe damysel. & alle wepten & bwepten hir. & he seide. nyle ze wepe. for pe damysel is not deed. but slepy. & pei dozmede hi. & wisten p she was deed. but he heeld hir hond & cry

ete & seide. damysel ryse vp. and hir spirit turnede agen. & she roos anon. & he comande to zyne to hir. to ete. & hir fadir & modur wondride greetly. & he comandi de hem pat pei shulde not sepe to ony. pat pig. pat was don. **A**nd whine pe twelue apol chis were depid to gidre. ihu zaf to he. wten. & powe on alle deuels. & pat pei shulden heele syknessis. and he sente hem for to priede pe kyngdom of god. & to heele syke me. & he seide to hem. no pig take ze in pe weye neyr zerd ne shpe. ney breed ne money. & ney haue ze two cotis. & into what hous p ze entren. dwelle ze yere. & go ze not fro ren. & who enie ressepye not zou. go ze out of pat citee. & shake ze pe poudre of zou feet. to witnesse on he. & pei zeden for. & wenten aboute bi castels priedge & heelge euy wher. and eroude tetrark. herde alle pigis pat were don of hi. & he douted for pat it was leid of su meu. p. john was rise fro deap. & of su me. p. elve hadde aperid. but of ope. p. don of pe elte pfectis was risu. and eroude seide. i haue biheedid john. & who is pig. of who i heere suche p. sis. & he souzte to se hi. and pe apoths turnede agen. & telden to hi alle pigis pat pei hadde don. and he took he. & wente bihydis into a desert place. p. is bethsai da. & whine pe peple fueltse pis. pei solewiden hi. & he ressepyede he. & spak to he of pe kyngdom of god. and he heeld he. pat hadde ne de of cure. & pe day bigan to

bove don. and pe twelue came & seiden to hi. seue pe peple. p. pei go & turne into castels & tow nes pat ben aboute. p. pei fynde mete. for we ben her in a desert place. & he seide to he. zyne ze to he to ete. and pei seiden. per ben not to us. mo ran fyue loones. & twey fyllis. but panetur. p. we go & bye metis. to alle peple. and pe me were almost fyue pouland. & he seide to hile discipulis. make ze hem litte to mete. by ciupany es a. fifty to gidre. & pei due so. & pei made alle me litte to mete. and whine he hadde take pe fyue loones & twey fyllis. he biheed into heuene. & blestide hem & brak. & whide to hile discipulis. pat pei shulde sette forp bifore pe ciupanyes. & alle me eeten. & were fulfilled. & pat pat leste to he of broken metis was taku up. twelue costys. and it was don whine he was aloone. p. inge. hile discipulis were wip hym. & he aride hem & seide. who sepen pe peple pat i am. & pei answeriden & seiden. john baptist. ope seien. elye. & ope seien. o pfecte of pe former is risu. & he seide to he. but who sepe ze p. i am. symonid pett. answeride. & seide. pe cat of god. and he blampge hem. comande pat pei shulde seie to no ma. & seide. pes pigis. for it bihouey man. sone. to suffre many pigis. & to be repued of pe eldre me. & of pe pnces of prestis. & of whis. & to be slayn. & pe pridd day to ryse a zen. & he seide to alle. p. ony wole come after me. denye he hy self. & take he his croll euy day. & lu ue he me. for he pat wole make

p. is he yonland. yon lante. ope hildid. curti. dact and. nre



his hof laf: ſhal leeſe it: and he v  
leeth his hof: for me ſhal make it  
ſat: and what pfitit it to a man  
if he weyne al pe world: & leeſe hi ſilf:  
& do peyrig of hi ſilf: for who ſo  
ſhamer me & my wordis: mānis  
ſone ſhal ſhame hi whiche he co  
mey in his mageſte & of pe ſadris  
& of pe hooly angelis. **A**nd I ſeie  
to you verli ꝑ ben ſime ſtondige  
her: whiche ſhulen not taſte deer:  
til rei ſeen pe reueme of god: & it  
was don after pes wordis. almeſt  
erte dapes: & he took petr & james  
& john: & he aſcende into an hil: to  
prieie: & while he prieie: pe lye  
nelle of his cheſt was chaungid: &  
his cloþig was whiſt ſhynig: & lo  
twey men ſpaken wꝑ hi: & moyleſ  
& elye weren ſeyn i maieſte: & rei  
ſayen his gong out: which he ſh  
ilde fulſille in ierlm: & petr & rei  
pat were wꝑ hi: weren heuy of  
ſleep: and rei wakige ſayen his  
maieſte: & pe twey mē ꝑ ſode wꝑ  
hi: & it was don whāne rei departi  
den fro him: petr ſeide to ihu: co  
maundir it is good: ꝑ we be here  
& make we her: ꝑe tabernaculis  
oon to pee & oon to moyleſ: & oon to  
elye: & he wiſte not: what he ſhul  
de ſeie: but while he ſpak pes ꝑi  
gis: a cloude was maid: & ouſtha  
deuide he: & rei dzedden: whāne  
rei entride into pe cloude: & a vois  
was maid out of pe cloude: & ſeide  
pis is my dereworpe ſone: heere  
ze hy: & while pe vois was maid:  
ihu was ſolidū aloone: & rei we  
ren ſtille: & to no mā ſeiden i po dai  
es out of po ꝑigis: ꝑ rei hadden  
ſeyn: but it was don i pe day ſi  
þunge: whāne rei came dou of pe

hil: moche peple mette hem: & lo a  
mā of pe cupany: cryede & ſeide  
maſtur: ꝑ bileche pee: bihold my ſo  
ne: for I haue no mo: & lo a ſpirit  
takep hi: & ſudenly he crye & hur  
tlyp down: & todawꝑ hi wꝑ ſa  
me: & vnepe he gow away alto  
dradynge hi: and ꝑ prieie n  
dultiphs: ꝑ rei ſhulden caſte hy  
out: & rei myſte not: & iſc anſwe  
ride: & ſeide to hem: Al vneſtful  
geſhaciou & wepward: how longe  
ſhal ꝑ be at you: & ſuffre you: ꝑ  
ge hdir ꝑ ſone: and whāne he cam  
my: pe denel hurthide hi down: & to  
brayde hi: and iſc blamede pe vn  
clene ſpirit: & heelde pe child: &  
zeldide hi to his ſadri: & alle men  
wondred greetly in pe greetneſſe  
of god: and whiche alle mē wondri  
den in alle yigis pat he dide: he ſeide  
to hile dultiphs: putte ze yelk wꝑ  
dis in your hertis: for it is to co  
me ꝑ mānis ſone be betrayed to  
pe hondis of mē: & rei knewe not  
pis word: & it was hid biſore he:  
pat rei feelide it not: and rei dzed  
den to are hi: pis word. **A**nd a ꝑ  
nt entride into hem: iſho of he  
ſhulde be gretteſt: and ihu ſeige  
pe pouztis of pe herte of he: took  
a child & ſettide hi biſides hi: & ſeide  
to hem: who eue reſſeyney pis  
child in my name: reſſeyney me:  
& who eue reſſeyney me: reſſey  
ney hi ꝑ ſente me: for he pat is  
leeſt amog you alle: is pe gretteſt:  
and john anſweride & ſeide: coman  
dour: we ſyzen amā caſtice out  
ſendis in ꝑi name: & we han for  
bodū hy: for he ſuey not pee wꝑ  
vs: & iſc ſeide to hi: myle ze forbe  
de: for he ꝑ is not azens vs: is

for us: and it was don whiche pe day  
es of his takig vꝑ weren fulfil  
lid: he ſettide faſte his face to go to  
ierlm: & ſente meſſangeris biſore  
his ſit: and rei zeden & entride into  
a citee of ſamaritans: to make  
redy to hi: & rei reſſeynede not  
hi: for pe face was of hi: goringe  
into ierlm: & whāne james & john  
hile dultiphs ſyzen: rei ſeide: lord  
wolt ꝑon pat we ſeyen ꝑ fier come  
down fro heuene: & waſte hem:  
and he turnede: & blamede hem & ſeide  
ze witen not whos ſpiritis ze ben  
for mānis ſone cam not to leeſe mē  
mō ſoulis: but to ſaue: & rei wete  
into anoy caſtel. **A**nd it was don  
whiche rei walſiden in pe weye: amā  
ſeide to hi: ꝑ ſhal ſue pee: whidur  
eue you go: & iſc ſeide to hi: for is  
han demes: & buddis of pe eyr han  
neſtis: but mānis ſone hap not whe  
re he reſte his heed: and he ſeide  
to anoyer: ſue ꝑon me: and he ſeide  
lord ſuffre me firſt to go: & burie my  
ſadri: & iſc ſeide to hi: ſuffre ꝑ deade  
mē burie her deade mē: but go ꝑon &  
telle pe kingdom of god: and anoy  
ſeide: lord ꝑ ſhal ſue pee: but fi  
rſt ſuffre me to leeſe al ꝑigis: ꝑ be  
at hoom: & iſc ſeide to hi: no man  
pat pntirp his hond to pe plou: &  
biholdige backward: is able to pe  
reueme of god. **C. x. i.**  
**A**nd after pes ꝑigis: pe lo  
rd ihu ordeynede alſo orn  
ſenenty & tweyne: & ſente he bi twey  
ne & tweyne biſore his face: into  
euery cite & place whidur he wꝑ  
to come: & he ſeide to hem: ꝑ is mo  
che ryꝑe corn: & fewe werkmen:  
ꝑ fore prieie ze pe lord of pe ryꝑe  
corn: pat he ſente werkmen into

his ryꝑe corn: go ze lo ꝑ ſente you: as  
lambien among wolues: ꝑ fore myle  
ze be: a ſadyl ney ſipe: ney ſhoon:  
& grete ze no mā bi pe weie: into whi  
hous ze entre firſt ſeie ze: ꝑees to  
pis hous: & if a ſone of ꝑees be ꝑe:  
you: ꝑees ſhal reſte ouhi: but if  
noon: it ſhal turne agen to you: &  
diuelle ze in pe ſame hous: etige  
& dꝑnkige ꝑo ꝑigis ꝑ ben at hem:  
for a werkman is worꝑi his hyr: my  
le ze paſſe from hous into hous: & i  
to what euer citee ze entren: & rei  
reſſeynen you: ete ze ꝑo ꝑigis ꝑ ben  
ſett to you: & heele ze pe ſyke men  
pat ben in pat citee: & ſeie ze to he  
pe kingdom of god ſhal neye into  
you: into what citee ze entre: & rei  
reſſeynen you not: go ze out to pe  
ſtreets of it: & ſeie ze: we wyppen  
of azens you pe pollder pat deny  
de to us of your cite: nepeles wite  
ze pis ꝑig: ꝑ we reueme of god ſh  
al come wꝑ: ꝑ ſeie to you: ꝑ to ſodo  
it ſhal be eſſe: ran to pat citee  
in pat day. **A**nd to pee coropſam  
to pee betſayda: for if in tyre &  
ſidon pe vertues hadde be don: whi  
che han be don i you: hi tyme rei  
wolden ha ſete in hayr: & aythies  
& haue don penance: nepeles to ty  
re & ſidon it ſhal be eſſe: in pe  
dome: ran to you: & you caſarnai  
art enhauid til to heuene: ꝑ ſhalt  
be dꝑenchid til into helle: he pat  
heerip you: heerip me: & he pat  
diſpiliꝑ you: diſpiliꝑ me: & he pat  
diſpiliꝑ me: diſpiliꝑ hi pat ſente  
me. **A**nd pe twey & ſenenty diſti  
phis: turnede agen wꝑ ryꝑe: & ſeide  
den: lord alſo denelis ben ſuget to  
us in ꝑi name: & he ſeide to hem:  
ꝑ ſanz ſathanas fallige down fro



heuen as leyt: & lo I haue zoni to  
you pouer to trede on serpentis  
& scorpionis. & ou al ye veru of re  
enemp: & no pig shal anoye you  
ne reles nple ze ioye in vis ping  
pat spiritis beu sngit to you: but  
ioye ze p' zoni' names beu witiu  
in heuenes. In yllke our he gla  
dide in ye hooly goft: & seide: I Eru  
wleche to ree fadir: lord of heuene  
& of erpe: for you haft hid res pin  
gis fro wyle me & prudent: & haft  
theuid he to finale children: zhe  
fadir: for lo it pleside bifore pee  
alle pigis beu zoni to me of my  
fadir: & no ma woot who is pe lo  
ne: but ye fadir: & who is ye fadir:  
but pe lone: & to whom ye lone wo  
le thewe: and he turnete to hile  
discipulis & seide: blefid ben ye p' zoni:  
pat seen yo pigis pat ze seen: for  
I seie to you pat many p' fectis &  
pigis wolden haue seyn yo pigis  
pat ze seen: & pei hzen not: & hee  
re yo pigis pat ze heere: & pei her  
den not: & lo awys ma of pe lathe  
roos up: teptunge hi & seynge  
mandir: what pig shal I do to  
haue eulastige lyf: & he seide to  
hi: what is witiu in ye lawe: how  
redit you: he answeride & seide:  
you shalt lone vi lord god of al  
vi herte: & of al vi soule: & of all  
vi strengpis & of al vi mynde: &  
vi nezeboze as vi self: & ihe seide  
to hi: you haft answerid ruzly: do  
vis pig: & you shalt lyne: but he  
wllge to iustifie hi self: seide to  
ihc: and who is my nezeboze: &  
ihc byheeld & seide: A man cam dou  
fro ierlm into ierico: & fel amog  
reues: & pei robbiden hi: & wound  
den hi & wenten away: & lefren

pe man half alyue: & it bifel pat a  
preeft cam dou re same weye: & pat  
side forz whine he hadde seyn hym  
allo a deue whine he was blydis  
ye place: & laus hi: passide forz: but  
a samarita goynge re wey: cam  
bilidis hi: & he syz: hy: & hadde ren  
re on hy: & cam to hi & boond to gi  
dre his woundis: & hilde vi oyle &  
wijn: & seide hi on his beest: & lette  
into an ostrepe: & dide re cur of hym  
and anoy day he brouzte forz rube  
pans: & zaf to re osteler: & seide: ha  
ue re cur of hi: & what eue p' shalt  
zyne ou: I shal zelde to pee: whane  
I come azen: who of res ye semer  
to pee: was nezeboze to hym pat  
fel amog re fis: & he seide: he p' dide  
mercy into hi: & ihe seide to hy: go  
you & do p' on lyk maner: & it was  
don while rei wenten: he entride  
ito a castel: & awoma martha bi na  
me: resleyuede hi into hir hous: &  
to pis was a sifter: marie by name  
which also sat by iudis re feet of  
pe lord: & herde his word: but mar  
tha bishede aboute re ofte scripse:  
& she stood & lepde: lord tak it: you  
no kepe: pat my hitir hay left me  
aloone to serue: p'fore seie you to  
hir: pat she helpe me: & re lord  
answeride: & seide to hir: martha  
martha you art bish: & art trou  
blid aboute ful many pigis: but  
o pig is necessarie: mary hay cho  
si pe beste part: which shal not  
be take away fro hir: **C. xi.**  
**A**nd it was don whine he  
was preyuge in a place:  
as he crechide: con of his  
discipulis seide to hi: lord teche us  
to prey: as iohn tauyte hile disci  
plis: & he seide to hem: whine ze p' zoni:

seie ze: fadir: halewid be vi name  
vi figdom come to: zyne to us to  
day: our echedapes breed: & forzyne  
to us our hines: as we forzyuen  
to ech ma pat oibry to us: & lede  
us not into teptaciou: and he sei  
de to hem: who of you shal haue a  
frend: & shal go to hi at mydnyzt:  
& shal seie to hi: frend leene to  
me p'ze loones: for my frend comez  
to me fro re weye: & I haue not  
what I shal sette bifore hi: & he  
wypineforz answer: & seie: nple  
you be heuy to me: pe doze is now  
shatt: & my children ben wip me i  
bed: I may not ryle & zyne to pee:  
and if he shal dwelle stille knoc  
kige: I seie to you: youz he shal  
not ryle & zyne to hy for pat p' he  
is his frend: nezeles for his coti  
muel arpyg: he shal ryle & zyne to  
hy: as mane as he hay uede to: &  
I seie to you: are ze: & it shal be  
zoni to you: seke ze: & ze shulen  
fynde: knocke ze: & it shal be ope  
nyd to you: for ech pat arpy: taky  
& he pat sekpy: fyndy: & to ama  
pat knocky: it shal be openyd:  
p'fore who of you arpy his fadir  
breed: wher he shal zyne hi a  
stoon: or if he arpy fuzly: wher  
he shal zyne hi a serpent for re  
fuzly: or if he arpy an ey: wher  
he shal reche hi a scorpion: per  
fore if ze whine ze ben puel: & i  
nen zyne gode zifis to you: chil  
dren: how moche more zoni fa  
dir of heuene: shal zyne agood  
spyt to me pat arpy hi: **C. xii.**  
**I**hu was castige out a fend: & he  
was doute: & whine he hadde cast  
out re fend: re doute ma spak:  
& pe peple wondide: & sinne of

hem seide: in bellebub pnce of deu  
lis: he casty out deuclis: & ope  
teptunge: aride of hi a tokene fro  
heuene: & as he laus re pouztis  
of hem: he seide to hem: eny reis  
me departid azens it self: shal  
be desolat: & an hous shal falle  
on a hous: & if sathanas be depar  
tid azens hi self: how shal his reis  
me stonde: for ze seien pat I cal  
te out fendis in bellebub: & if  
I in bellebub caste out fendis:  
in whom caste out zoure sonis:  
p'fore rei shulen be zoni: domel  
me: but if I caste out fendis i  
pe kyngm of god: rane re reis  
me of god: is comit among you:  
**Whine a strong armed ma be**  
pyp his hous: alle pigis p' he wel  
dyt ben in pees: but if a strongm  
pan he come upon hi: & oucome  
hi: he shal take away al his ar  
mer: in which he trustide: & shal  
deele abrood his robbries: he pat  
is not wip me: is azens me: & he  
pat gedry not wip me to gydre:  
natry a brood: whine an vndene  
spyt goy out of ama: he wan  
dry by dre places: & sekpy restre  
& he fyndige not: seip: I shal tur  
ne azen ito myn hous: fro wha  
nes I cam out: & whine he comez:  
he fyndy hit denlid wip behyms:  
& hantre arayed: rane he goy &  
takyp wip hi seiene ope spyt  
tis werse pan hi self: & pei en  
tren & dwellen per: & pe laste pi  
gis of pat man: ben magd wor  
le pan pe formere **C. xiii.**  
**A**nd it was  
don whine he hadde seid res pin  
gis: awoman of pe cupany re  
ride hir: vois & seide to hi: blefid  
be ye wombe pat bar pee: and



blestid be ye teetis pat y' haft sotij  
he seide/ but zhe blestid be yei y'  
heere re word of god & kepen it  
**A**nd whine ye peple riinen to  
gidre: he bigan to seie/ vis gen  
acion is a weyward genacion/  
it setip a tokene/ & a tokene sh  
al not be zomū to it: but ye toke  
ne of jonas pe pfete/ for as jonas  
was a tokene to mē of ny mine:  
so māns lone shal be to vis ge  
neracion/ ye queene of ye souy sh  
al ryle in dom wyf mē of vis gen  
acion: & shal concepne hem/ for  
she cam fro pe endis of ye erpe:  
for to heet ye wysdom of salomō/  
& lo her is a gretter pan salomō  
men of ny mine shule ryle i doom  
wyf vis genacion: & shule concep  
ne it/ for pei diden penaunce i pe  
prechig of jonas/ and lo her is a  
gretter pan jonas. **N**o mā ten  
dyt alantne: & putip in hidis ney  
vondir a boyshel/ but on a candil  
sticke. y' rei pat goen yn. se lizt  
ye lanterne of y' body: is ym yre  
if ym yre be symple: al y' body  
shal be lizt/ but if it be weyward.  
al y' body shal be derkful/ pfore  
se you: lest pe lizt pat is m pee  
be derknessis/ pfore if al y' body  
be brizt. & haue no part of derk  
nessis: it shal be al brizt/ & as a  
lanterne of briztnesse. it shal y  
ue lizt to pee/ & whine he spak: a  
farile preiede hi y' he shulde etc  
wyf hi/ & he entride & lant to ye  
mete/ & ye farile bigan to seie  
gellige wyf yne hi self: why  
he was not wauddhi bi fore me  
te/ & ye lord seide to hi/ now ze fa  
rilees deulen pat pat is wypon  
tefory of ye cuppe & ye plater:

but pat pig y' is wyf yne of zom  
is ful of raurne & wickidnesse/  
foolis. Wher he pat made pat y'  
is wyponde foz: made not also y'  
pat is wyf yne: nepeles pat y'  
is ouerpluysh yne ze almes:  
& lo alle pigis ben dene to zom/  
**B**ut wo to zom farilees pat ti  
pen myte & rube & ech er be:  
& leueu dom & ye charite of god  
for it bihofte to do vele pigis: &  
not leueu po/ wo to zom farilees  
pat louen ye furste chaperis i sy  
nagogis: & salutations i chepis/  
wo to zom y' ben as sepulchris/ & be  
not seyn: & men walkige aboue  
& witen not/ but oon of ye wyle  
mē of ye lawe answerte: & seide  
to hi/ wantt pou seyrige res pigis:  
also to vs doist dylp: & he seide/  
also wo to zom wyle mē of lawe/  
for ze chargen mē wyf byr pyns  
whiche pei mou not ber: & ze  
zom self. wyf zom o fyingur ton  
chen not ye heuynessis/ wo to zom  
pat bylden touhis of pfetis/ &  
zom fadris slouken he tren  
ly ze wituellen: y' ze consleten to  
ye werkis of zomre fadris/ for  
pei sloude he: but ze bylden her  
sepulchris/ yerfore ye wysdom of  
god seide/ y' shal seide to hem p  
fetis & aposthis: & of hem rei sh  
ulen sle & purfalle/ pat ye blo  
od of alle pfetis y' was shed fro  
pe makig of ye world: be sougt  
of vis genacion/ fro ye blood  
of ye mist abel. to ye blood of la  
charie: y' was slain bi tbyrre  
anter & ye hous/ so y' seie to zom  
it shal be sougt of vis genacion/  
wo to zom wyle men of ye lawe:  
for ze han takū asey ye keye

of kyming/ & ze zom self entriden  
not: & ze han forbedū hem y' entce/  
and whane he seide res pigis to he  
ye farilees & wyle mē of lawe. bi  
gimen grenoussly to zenshonde:  
& stoppe his mony of many pigis.  
shyringe hi/ and sekynge to take  
en pig of his mony: to acuse hi/  
**A**nd whine moche. **C.** **W.**  
peple ffood abouye. so y'  
pei treete ech on oyr: he  
bigan to seie to hile diltupis/ be ze  
war of ye soun dows of ye farile  
es: y' is pocryse/ for no pig is  
hild: y' shal not be thewid/ ney  
hid: pat shal not be wit/ for whi  
yo pigis pat ze han leid in derknes  
sis: shule be leid in lizt/ & pat pat  
ze han spokū in eer in couchis: sh  
al be prechid in roofes/ and y' seie  
to zom my frendis/ be ze not a feerd  
of hem pat sleen ye body: & astur  
res pigis han no more what pei  
shulen do/ but y' shal thewe to  
zom: who ze shulen drede/ drede ze  
hi. pat astur he hay slain/ he hay  
powber to seide into helle/ & so y'  
seie to zom: drede ze hi/ wher fine  
sparonis ben not seld for tbyrre  
halpens: & oon of hem is not i for  
zetynge bifoze god/ but also alle  
ye heeris of zomr heed: ben nou  
bud/ pfore wyle ze drede: ze ben  
of more prys pan many sparonis/  
treuly y' seie to zom ech mā pat  
knowlechy me bifoze mē: māns  
lone shal knowleche hi bifoze pe  
aungelis of god/ but he y' demper  
me bifoze mē: shal be demped bifoze  
ye aungelis of god/ and ech y' seip  
arwod azens māns lone: it shal  
be forzomū to hi/ but it shal not  
be forzomū to hym: pat blaffemey

azens ye hooly gost. **A**nd whine  
pei leden zom into synagogis: & to  
maetistratis & potentatis: wyle ze  
be bish hous or what ze shule an  
swer: or what ze shule seie/ for ye  
hooly gost shal teche zom in pat  
our: what it bihouey zom to seie/  
and oon of ye peple seide to hym/  
maetistr seie to my broper y' he  
deparde wyf me ye eritage/ &  
he seide to hi: man who ordynete  
me a domelma or a departer on  
zom: & he seide to he/ se ze & be war  
of al conetile/ for ye lizt of aman  
is not in ye abundaunce of yo pigis.  
whiche he weldip/ and he tolde to he.  
a licnesse & seide/ ye feeld of a ry  
che man. bronzte foz plenteuoule  
fruytis: & he pouzte wyf yne hi  
self. & seide/ what shal y' do for y'  
haue not whidur/ y' shal gadre my fruy  
tis/ & he seip vis pig: y' shal do/  
y' shal proue dou my bernis: &  
y' shal make gretter/ and yidur  
y' shal gadre alle pigis y' growe  
to me & my goodis/ & y' shal seie  
to my soule/ soule pou haft many  
goodis kept into ful many zeeris/  
rette y' ete drynke. & make feeste/  
and god seide to hi/ fool in vis myt  
pei shulen take y' lizt fro pee/ &  
whos shulen po pigis be: pat y'  
haft arayed/ so is he pat treson  
ryp to hi self: & is not riche in god/  
& he seide to hile diltupis/ pfore y'  
seie to zom: wyle ze be bish to zom  
lizt: what ze shule etc/ ney to zoe  
body: wyf what ze shule be clopid/  
ye lizt is more pan mete: & ye body  
more pa clopig/ biholde ze cronis:  
for pei lounen not ney repen/ to  
whiche is no celer ne berne: &  
god sedip he/ hous moche moze ze



ben of more pris pan pei: & who  
of zoi byenkyng: may putte  
to co cubite to his stature: yfore  
if ze moyn not pat pat is leest.  
What ben ze bys of opy pigis:  
biholde ze pe lyses of pe feeld how  
pei weren/pei trauelē not ney  
spynen: & i seie to zoi: y neyr  
salomō in al his glorie was clo  
pid as oon of yse/ And if god do  
py pus pe hey pat to day is in  
pe feeld. & to morowe is cast into  
an ouen: how myche more zoi  
of lytil fey: & nyle ze seke. Whē  
ze shulen ete oz what ze shulen  
drynke: & nyle ze be reid an hy  
for folkis of pe world: seken alle  
pese pigis: & zoi: fadir woot. y  
ze neten alle pese pigis nepeles  
seke ze first pe kyngdom of god: &  
alle pes pigis shulen be cast to  
zoi. **N**yle ze litel floc drede/ for  
it pletide to zoi: fadir: to zine  
a kyngdom/ selle ze po pigis pat  
ze han i possession: & zine almes  
& make ze to zoi sacheis pat wer  
en not olde. trelour pat fadir not  
in heuenes whidur a yeeft neyep  
not: neyr monye destruyep/  
for wher is y trelour: pei ym  
herte shal be. **W**e zoi: leendis  
gud aboue: & lantnes brenyge  
in zoi: hōdis: & be ze lyk to men  
pat abyden her lord: whāne he  
shal turne agen fro pe weddi  
gis/ pat whne he shal come &  
knocke: anoon pei opyne to hy/  
blelid be po seruantis: y whne  
pe lord shal come. he shal fynde  
wakige/ treily/ i seye to zoi.  
y he shal gude hy self: & make  
hem sitte to mete: & he shal  
go & serue hē/ and if he come i

pe secūde wakig: & if he come i  
pe yndde wakig: & fynde so: po  
seruantis ben blelid: & wite ze  
pis pig: for if an hōsebōnde mā  
wite i what oin pe yeeft wote  
come: soyei he shulde wake &  
not snuffe his hous to be myned  
and be ze redy: for in what oin  
ze gessen not. māns lone shal  
come: & peti: seide to hi lord se  
est y pis parable to vs: oz to alle:  
and pe lord seide: who gessit you  
is a treise dispender: & a pryncē:  
whom pe lord hay ordeyned on his  
meyne to zine hem i tyme: mesu  
re of whete: blelid is pat serua  
nt: pat pe lord whne he come  
shal fynde so doynge/ verily/ i  
seye to zoi. y on alle pigis y he  
weeldy: he shal ordeyne hy: y  
if pat seruaunt seye in his herte:  
my lord tarrey to come: & bigyn  
ne to smyte chyliden & handma  
dens: & ete & drynke & be fillid  
ouer mesur/ pe lord of pat ser  
uaunt shal come in pe day pat he  
hayp not: & pe oin pat he  
woot not/ And shal departe hi:  
& putte his part wyf vnsery  
ful mē. **B**ut yilke seruaunt pat  
knew pe wille of his lord: & ma  
de not hi redy: & dide not asur  
his wille: shal be betū wyf ma  
ny betigis/ but he pat knew not  
& dide woxpi pigis of strobis: sh  
al be betū wyf fense/ for to ech  
mā to who moche is zoi: mo  
che shal be azid of hi/ and pei  
shulen aye more of hi: to who  
pei betoken moche/ i cam to se  
te fier into erpe: & what wote  
i: but y it be kyndlyd/ and i  
haue to be baptyd wyf a bapty

and how am i constreyned: til  
pat it be pat fytly don. **W**eene  
ze y i cam to zine pees ito erpe/  
nay i seye to zoi: but departig/  
for fro pis tyme. y shule be fy  
ne departid i oon hous/ yre shu  
len be departid azens tibeine:  
& tibeine shule be deptyd azens  
yre/ yre fadir azens pe lone: &  
pe lone azens yre fadir/ yre modur  
azens yre dougter: & yre dougter a  
zens yre modur/ yre hōsebōndis  
modur azens yre lones wyf: & yre  
lones wyf: azens hir hōsebōndis  
modur/ and he seide also to pe pe  
ple/ whne ze seen a cloude ryfti  
ge fro pe sūme goynge don: a  
noon ze seyen reyn comep. & so it  
is don/ and whne ze seen pe son  
blowige: ze seyen pat heete sh  
al be: & it is don/ **J**ocritis ze  
kūnen proue pe face of heuene  
& of erpe: but how pene ze not  
pis tyme/ but what: & of zoi  
sill ze demen not pat pat is nist  
but whne you goist wyf ym ad  
uerlarie in pe weye to pe pnce:  
do bynnele to be deliyed fro  
hi/ lest perauētū he take  
yee to pe domelina: & yre dōuier  
mā bitake yee to amantū ful at  
er & yre maistūful atter seide  
yee into pson/ i seie to yee you  
shalt not go fro yē: til you  
selde yre latte feris. **|| C ||**

**A**d gū men were pre  
sent i pat tyme: pat teel  
den to hi of pe galilees:  
whos blood pilat mygide wyf pe  
sacrificas of hem/ and he answe  
ride & seide to hē/ weene ze yre se  
me of galile were spueris more  
pan alle galilees: for yre snuffi

den suchē pigis: i seie to nay/ alle  
ze shulen peristhe in lyk maner:  
but ze haue penance: & as po er  
tetene: on whiche ye tour in sy  
loa fel don & slote hē: gessen ze  
for yre were detouris more pan  
alle mē pat dibellen i ierlm: i  
seie to zoi nay/ but allo ze alle shu  
len peristhe: if ze doe not penan  
ce: & he seide pis liknesse/ aman  
hadde a fige tre plantid in his  
vyne zerd: & he cam sebigē fruyt  
in it & fond noon/ and he seide to  
ye tiber/ of pe vyne zerd lo yre zee  
ris be swē: i coom sekende fruyt  
i pis fige tre: & y fynde noon/ y  
fore kute it don/ wher to occupie  
it yre erpe: & he answeyge: seide  
to hi/ lord snuffe it allo pis zee:  
ye whne i delue abourte it: & i  
shal dūge it/ if it shal make fruyt  
yt/ if nay/ in tyme comyge you  
shalt kute it don/ & he was techi  
ge in her synagoge in pe sabotis  
shid lo anōman y hadde a spūit  
of sylnele exetene zeeis: &  
was arofid: & ney ony mā my  
te loke wyward/ whom whne he  
hadde seyn: he clepide to hi: & sei  
de to hir/ woman you art deli  
ed of y sylnele: & he seide on  
hir his hondis: & anoon she stood  
uprit: & glorified god: & yre p  
ce of pe synagoge answeyde ha  
myge dedeyn for he hadde heehd  
in yre saboth: & he seide to ye peple/  
y ben fire dapes: in whiche it bi  
honey to worche/ y fore come ze  
in pese: & be ze heehd: & not i ye  
day of saboth/ but ye lord answe  
ride to hi & seide/ **J**ocrite wher  
ech of zoi vntrey not in ye sa  
both: his oze oz alle fro ye craache:



grieting of teep. whine ze shal be  
abraham i i linc & iacob. & alle pe  
pfetis in pe kyngdom of god. & zou  
to be putt out. & pei shule come  
fro pe east & west & fro pe noy  
& soup. & shulen sitte at pe mete  
in pe rewme of god. & lo pei pat  
werē pe furste. ben pe laste. & pei  
pat werē pe laste. ben pe furste  
In pat day summe of farisees ca  
mē ny. & seiden to hi go out & go  
out i go fro hēms. for eroude wo  
le sle pee. and he seide to hem go  
ze & sepe ze to pat for lo i caste  
out fendis. & i make paritry hee  
pis. to day & to morwe. & ye vud  
de day i am eendid. nepeles it bi  
honey me to day & to morwe &  
ye day p<sup>r</sup> sunkep. to walke. for it  
fallip not a pfete to perillhe out  
of ierlm ierlm ierlm pat sleest  
pfetis. & adouest hem p<sup>r</sup> be sent  
to pee. how ofte wolde i gadze  
to gadze yi lones. as a byd gadzy  
his nest vndir feperis. & you wol  
dust not. lo your hous shal be left  
to zou. desert. & i seie to zou p<sup>r</sup> ze  
shulen not se me. til it come  
whine ze shulen krie. blestid  
is he pat comep i pe name of pe  
lord. **C<sup>m</sup> ¶ m<sup>j</sup> //**  
**A**nd it was don whine he  
hadte entrid ito pe hous  
of a prync of farisees. in pe sa  
both to ete breed. pei aspieten hi  
and lo amau spk in pe drapespe.  
was bifoze h<sup>j</sup>. And ihc answeri  
ge spak to pe wyle mē of lawe  
& to pe farisees & seide. wher #  
it is leefful to heele in pe sabbath.  
& pei heelden pees. & ihc took &  
heehde hi. & leet hi go. & he an  
sweride to hē & seide. whos alle

or ore of you shal falle into a  
 pitte. & he shal not auoo drinke  
 hi out in ye day of saboth. & yei  
 myste not answer to hi to pes  
 vgis. **H**e seide also a parable  
 to men bedu to a feeite. & biheeld  
 how yei chesyn ye firste sittig  
 placis. & seide to hem. whane y  
 art bedu to bydalis. sitte not  
 at ye mete in ye firste place.  
 lest pauernture a wozyer. yam  
 you be bedu of hi. and lest he co  
 me y clepide pee & hi. & seie to pee.  
 zyne place to yis. & yane you sh  
 alt bigyne wy sthaue. to holte  
 ye loweste place. but whine you  
 art bedu to a feeite. go & litte dou  
 in ye laste place. y whine he comep  
 yat bad pee to ye feeite. he seje  
 to pee friend come hyet. yane wor  
 shup shal be to pee bfore me y  
 sitten at ye mete. for ech y enhaui  
 cy hi. shal be lowid. & he y meky  
 hym. shal be hyed. **A**nd he sei  
 de to hi. yat hadde bedu hi to ye feel  
 te. whine you makist a mete or a  
 souper. nyle you clepe y frendis.  
 neyr y brwen. ney cosyns. ney  
 nereboris. ne riche me. lest pauer  
 tur yei bidde pee azen to ye feeite.  
 & it be zoldu azen to pee. but wha  
 ne you makist a feeite. depe po  
 ze men. seble. crokid. & blynde. &  
 you shalt be blessid. for yei han  
 not whet of. to zelde pee. for it sh  
 al be zoldu to pee. in ye rixing  
 azen of nust me. & whine oon of  
 hem yat saten to gidre at ye me  
 te hadde herd pes vgis. he seide  
 to hi. blessid is he y shal ete bred  
 in ye reuyme of god. & he seide to  
 hi. A ma made a greet souper.  
 & clepide manje. & he sente his

seruaunt in ye our of souy. to seie  
 to me þat were bedu to ye seeste.  
 þat þei shulden come for nou alle  
 pigis ben redy and alle bigūnen  
 to gidre to extulde hem / ye firste  
 seide. / I haue bouzt a toln. & /  
 haue nede to go out & se it / þat þe  
 pee. haue me extulid / & yetopir  
 seide / I haue bouzt fyne zokkis  
 of orū. & / go to þat he / þat þe  
 pee. haue me extulid / & anopir  
 seide / I haue wedd a wyf. & þat  
 foze þat may not come / & ye seruaunt  
 turnede azen. & tolde þes pigis to  
 his lord / þat ye hole bonde man  
 was wro. & seide to his seruaunt  
 go out sibbe into ye grete stre-  
 tis & finale streitis of ye citee. &  
 bryngge yn hydir poze me & feble.  
 blynde & crokid / & ye seruaunt seide  
 lord it is don as þou hast coman-  
 did. & 3it þat is a wyde place. and  
 ye lord seide to ye seruaunt / go out  
 into weyes & heggis. & constrey-  
 ne me to entir. þat my hous be  
 fulfild / for / I seye to þou. þat noon  
 of þo men þat ben depid. shal  
 taste my laper / and moche peple  
 wente wyþ hy / & he turnede & sei-  
 de to he / if ony man comey to me  
 & haty not his fadur & modir &  
 wyf & lones. & brysen & sustris.  
 & 3it his owne hys. he may not be  
 my dysciple / and he þat bery not  
 his cros. & comey after me. may  
 not be my dysciple. / For who of  
 þou willige to bylde a tour. wher  
 he fuft sette not. & fouceþ ye  
 spenlis þat ben nedeful. if he haue  
 to parfourme. lest after þat he hay  
 lett ye fundament. & mow not þat  
 fourme. alle þat seen bigyne  
 to stozne hi & seye for þis mā biga-



to bilde: & myzte not make an  
ende: or what kyng yat wole  
go to do a batelle agens anopn  
kyng. wher he sittir not first  
& biwenkyr. if he may wry ten  
poussend go agens hy. yat comey  
agen hi wry tibenety poussend.  
ellis 3it while he is aferr. he  
sendige a messanger. preier  
po rigis yat ben of pees. so y  
fore ech of you yat forlaky not  
alle rigis yat he hay. may not  
be my dystuple. **S**alt is god. but  
if salt vanyshe. in what pig  
shal it be sauerid. ney i erpe.  
ney in dughille it is profita  
ble. but it shal be cast out. he  
yat hay peris of heerig heer he  
**A**ld purph. **C. 26.**  
cans & synful me we  
ren neyunge to hym.  
to heer hi. & ye farlees & tri  
bis gruchide. seyrnge. for ris  
relleynep synful me. & ety  
wry hem. and he spak to he vis  
parable & seide. what ma of you  
yat hay an hūdrū theep. & if  
he hay lost oon of hem. wher  
he leuey not nynty & nyne i  
desert. & goy to it yat perulthi  
de. til he fynde it. & whne he  
hay fouden it. he ioyep & leip it  
on his shuldrys. and he comey  
hoom & clepy to gidre hile fre  
dis & negebons & leip to hem.  
be ze glade wry me. for i haue  
foude my theep. yat hadde pe  
rillid. & i seie to you. so ioye  
shal be in heuene on o synful mā  
doynge penance. more ran on  
nynty & nyne nide yat han no  
uede to penance. or what wo  
mā hanngge ten belaitis. & if

she hay lost o belait. wher she  
teendip not a lanterne. & tur  
ney uplodon ye hous. & sek  
diligently til yat she fynde it.  
and whne she hay foudū. she  
clepy to gidre frendis & nege  
bons. & seip. be ze glade wry  
me. for i haue foude ye belait.  
yat i hadde lost. so i seie to you.  
ioye shal be bifoze anigelis of  
god. on o synful mā doynge  
penance. **S**hal he seide and  
hadde tibeney sones. ye zonger  
of he seide to ye fadir. fadir.  
zyne me ye porcion of catel  
yat fallir to me. & he departide  
to he ye catel. & not aferr mā  
ny dapes. whne alle rigis we  
ren gedud to gidre. ye zonger  
sone wente fory in pilgryma  
ge ito a ferr kūttrē. and pere  
he wastid hile goodis. in hyn  
ge lecherously. and aferr yat  
yat he hadde endid alle rigis. a  
strong hūgr was maad i yat  
cūttrē. & he bigan to haue nede.  
& he wente & drow hym to oon  
of ye citeleynes of yat cūttrē.  
and he sente hi into his towne.  
to fede swyn. & he coneytde to  
fille his wombe of ye coddis  
yat ye hoggis eeten. & no mā  
zaf to hi. & he tuede agen into  
hi self. & seip. how many hūdrū  
me in my fadis hous han plen  
te of loones. & i perulthe he  
poris hūgr. i shal ryle up  
& go to my fadir. & i shal seie  
to hi. fadir. i haue syned ito  
heuene & bifoze pee. & now i  
am not wory to be depid y  
sone. make me as oon of ym  
hūdrū me. & he roos up & ran

to his fadir. & whne he was y  
aferr. his fadir sez hi. & was  
furd by mercy. and he ran &  
fel on his necke. & kyside hym.  
and ye sone seide to hi. fadir. i  
haue syned into heuene & bifoze  
ye. & now i am not wory to  
be depid y sone. and ye fadir  
seide to his seruantis. swyre bri  
ge ze fory ye furre stoole. & clo  
ye ze hym. & zyne ze a rig i his  
hond. & shoon on his feet. and  
brynge ze a fat calf & slee ze.  
& ete we & make we feest. for  
yis my sone was deed. & hay ly  
ued agen. he perulthide. & is  
foudū. & alle men biginen  
to ete. but his eldre sone was  
in ye feeld. & whne he cam &  
negete to ye hous. he herde a  
symfoupe & a croude. & he de  
pide oon of ye seruantis. & as  
ide what pes rigis were. & he  
seide to hy. y broyr is commi.  
& y fadir slaw a fat calf. for  
he relleynede hi saf. & he was  
wory. & wolde not come yu.  
perfore his fadir zede out. &  
bigan to preie hi. & he answere  
ride to his fadir & seide. lo so  
many zenis i serue pee. & i  
neide brak y comandemēt. &  
you neuere zane to me a kide.  
yat i wry my frendis shulde  
haue etū. but aferr yat yis y  
sone yat hay deuourid his sub  
staunce wry hoozis cam. y  
slapn to hym a fat calf. & he  
seide to hi. sone y art ouermo  
re wry me. & alle my rigis be  
yme. but it bishofte to make fe  
este & to haue ioye. for yis y  
broyr was deed. & lyuede agen.

he perulthide & is foudū. **C. 27.**  
**H**e seide also to hile disti  
phis. yer was a ryche  
mā yat hadde a baylyf.  
and yis was defamed to hi. as  
he hadde wastid his goodis. & he  
depide hym & seide to hy. what  
heer. i yis ryg of pee. & zelde  
refeunge of y baylie. for you  
myzt not now be baylyf. & ye  
baylyf seide wry yne hy self. wlt  
shal i do. for my lord taky ansey  
fro me ye baylie. & dehe may i  
not. i shame to bege. i woot  
what i shal do. yat whne i  
am remoued fro ye baylie. yei  
relleynue me into her hous. yer  
fore whne alle ye dettouris of  
his lord were clepid to gidre.  
he seide to ye furre. how moche  
owist you to my lord. & and he  
seide. an hūdrū barels of oyle.  
& he seide to hi. take y caucion.  
& sette sone & wryt tyste. af  
terward he seide to anopn. &  
how moche owist you. & which  
answereid an hūdrū corps of  
whete. & he seide to hym. take  
y lettris. & wryt foure stoze.  
& ye lord prelede ye baylyf of wh  
fidneile. for he hadde don prudēt  
ly. for ye sones of yis world. ben  
more prudent in her genaciū.  
yan ye sones of lyst. & i seie to  
you. make ze to you frendis of  
ye richelle of wickidneile. yat  
whne ze shulen fayle. yei rel  
seynue you into euilastige taber  
nadis. he p. is trewe in ye leeste  
pis. is trewe also in ye moze.  
& he yat is wickid i a lytel ryg.  
is wickid also in ye moze. perfore  
if ze were not trewe in ye wic



**T**hik.

£500

**Wink**

26



it: that quene it / but / I seie to  
you / in pat myt tveyne shulen  
be in o bed / oon that be takn: &  
petos forlakn / tveyn wmen sh  
ulen be gryndige to gidre / peton  
that be takn: & petos forlakn  
tveyne in afield: peton that be  
takn: & petos left / pei answeren  
& sepen to hy / wher lord which  
seide to hem / wher ever ye body  
shal be: ydur shulen be gadrid  
to gidre also ye eghis // **C. xviij.**  
**A**nd he seide also to hem  
a parable / y it bihouer  
to preve evermore: & not  
fale: & seide / yer was a fige in  
a tree: pat dzedde not god: ney  
shamede of me / and a widowe  
was in pat citee: & she cam to  
hy / & seide / venge me of my ad  
versarie / and he wolde not long  
tyme / but aftre pes yis he seide  
my yne hy silt / yong / y dzedde not  
god: & shame not of man: nepe  
les for pis widowe is heyn to me.  
I that venge hy / lest at ye laste  
she comyge condempne me / & ye  
ye lord seide / heere is what ye  
domesna of wikkidnesse seip: &  
wher god shal not do vengance  
of pis chosne cringe to hy myt  
& day: & that haue patience in  
hem / sopehy / I seie to you: for loo  
ne he shal do vengance of hem.  
**A**peles gessit you pat manes  
sone comyge shal fynde fery in  
erpe: & he seide also to su men  
pat tristede in hem silt as pei we  
ren rystful: & dispiseden ope: pis  
parable seipge / tveyne me wen  
ten up into ye temple: to preve  
peton a farisee: & petos a pup  
pican / & ye farise stood & preiede

by hi silt yele yis & seide / god  
I do yankigis to yee: for I am not  
as ope men / raneynomris: & out  
anovtrers: as also ye puppi  
can / I faste tveyn in ye wote:  
I yne tyres of alle yis y I ha  
ve in possellion / and ye puppican  
stood a fer: & wolte ney reyle his  
yren to hevene / but smoot his  
brest: & seide / god be merciful to  
me synet: treuly / I seie to you:  
pis jete down into his hous: & was  
nustified fro ye ope / for ech pat en  
hailhy hy: that be mad loibz: & he  
pat meky hy: that be enhaillid  
**A**nd pei brounten to hy yonge  
children: pat he shulde touche  
hem / and whine ye dultplis say  
en pis yis: yei blawede he / but  
hy clepde to gidre he & seide / out  
fre ye childre to come to me: &  
nyle ye forbete hem / for of of su  
che is ye kygdom of hevenes: treu  
ly / I seie to you: who eie shal not  
take ye & yngdom of god as a ch  
ild: he shal not ent into it / and  
a pnce aride hy & seide / gode man  
tu in what yung doynge: that  
I weelde euellastynge lye: & hy  
seide to hy / what leist you me go  
od / no man is good but god also  
ne / you knowit ye commande men  
tis / you shalt not sle: you shalt  
not do lecherie: you shalt not do  
yeste: you shalt not lepe fall wit  
nessing: wozthipe y fadir: & y  
modir / which seide / I haue kept  
alle pes yis fro my yongye: &  
whine pis yung was herd hy lei  
de to hy: at o yung failep to yee  
selle you alle yingis pat y haft  
& yne to poze me: & you shalt  
haue tre souer in hevene & come

& have y mo / whine pes yis  
weren herd: he was sorweful:  
for he was ful ryche / and hy se  
yngge hy maad sozn: seide / how  
hard pei pat han money: shule  
entre into ye kygdom of god: for  
it is lyter a camel to passe yunz  
a needhis yre: yon a ryche man  
to entre into ye kygdom of god:  
& pei y herden pes yis: seiden  
who may be maad saaf: & he lei  
de to hem / yo yingis pat ben in  
possible anentis me: ben possi  
ble anentis god: but petre sei  
de / lo we han lef alle yis: &  
han suered yee / and he seide to hy  
treuly / seye to you / y is no ma  
pat shal forlake hous or fadir  
& modir: or byren or wyf or chil  
dren or feoldis for ye reynme of  
god: & that not resleyne many  
mo yis in pis tyme: & in ye wo  
rd to comyngge euellastynge lye  
**A**nd hy toot his tvehne disciples  
& seide to he / lo we goen up to  
ierhu: & alle yis shule be en  
did pat ben wntu by ye profe  
tis of manns sone / for he shal  
be bitrayed to heven me: & he  
shal be storned & stourgid & bi  
spat / and aftir pat yei han sto  
gid: yei shulen sle hy: & ye prid  
de day he shal ryle asen: & yei  
vndurstoden no yis of yese: &  
pis word was hid fro hem: & yei  
vndurstoden not yo yis pat  
weren leid / but it was don wha  
ne hy cam myt to ierico: a blind  
man sat bysidis ye weye & beg  
gide: & whine he herde ye peple  
passige: he aride what pis was  
and pei seiden to hy: pat hyt of  
nazareth pathide: & he cryede &

seide / ihu ye sone of danny: haue  
mercy on me / and pei pat wen  
ten bifore blawiden hym: pat  
he shulde be stille / but he crye  
de moche ye more / yon sone of da  
ny: haue mercy on me / and hyt  
stood & comaundide hy to be brount  
forp to hy / and whine he cam myt:  
he aride hym & seide / what wolte  
you pat / I shal do to yee: & he lei  
de lord pat / I se / and hy seide to hy  
bihoold: y fery hay maad ye saaf  
and anoon he sayz: & suede hym  
& magnifiede god / and al ye pe  
ple as it sayz: & at herying to god  
**A**nd hyt tyme // **C. xix.**  
**A**nd asen & walkide to jeru  
co / and lo ama sache bi  
name: & pis was a pnce of pup  
picanis: & he was ryche: & he louz  
te to se ihu who he was: & he myt  
te not for ye peple: for he was ly  
til in statut: & he ran bifore & sty  
ede into a eycomoun tre: to se hy:  
for he was to passe fro yems / and  
hyt biheeld up whine he cam to pe  
place: & sayz hym & seide to hy / lache  
haafte yee & come don: for to day  
I moot dwelle in yin hous: & he  
hyngge cam don: & wyge resley  
uede hy: & whine alle men sayen:  
ye gruchiden seipge: for he hadde  
turned to a synful man / but sache  
stood & seide to ye lord / lo lord / y  
ne ye half of my good to poze me  
and if I haue ony yis defraudid  
ony man: I zelde foure so moche  
hyt lery to hy: for to day heetre  
is maad to pis hous: for pat he is  
abrahams sone / for manns sone  
cam to seke & make saaf: pat yis  
pat perithide / whine yei herde  
pes yingis he addide & seide a pa



U. rable for pat he was myz ierlm.  
f. for peigesside p' anoon pe kmg  
dom of god shulde be shewid/ per  
foze he seide/ a worpi mā wente  
into aser cūtre/ to take to hym  
a kngdom f. to turne azen/ and  
whne his ten seruāntis weren  
clepid/ he zaf to hem ten besai-  
tis. f. seide to hem/ chaffar/ ze/ til  
i come/ but his cite seynes hatide  
hy/ f. leuten a messanger after  
hym. f. seiden/ we wolen not pat  
he regne on vs/ and it was dou/ he  
turnede azen/ whne he hadde ta-  
ke pe kngdom/ and he comāndide  
his seruāntis to be clepid/ to whi-  
che he hadde zyne money/ to wi-  
te how moche ech hadde wīme  
by chaffarig/ f. ye furste cam f. sei-  
de/ lord/ pi besait hap wīme ten  
besaitis/ he seide to hy/ wel be p'  
good seruānt/ for in lytel pig' p'  
hast be trewe/ pou shalt be ha-  
myge power on ten citees/ f. pe  
topur cam f. seide/ lord/ pi besait  
hap maid fyue besaitis/ f. to pis  
he seide/ f. be pou on fyue citees/  
f. pe prude cam f. seide/ lord/ lo pi  
besait p' f. hadde putt ap in a li-  
darie/ for f. dradde pee/ for pou  
art a sterne mā/ p' takist anwey.  
pat pat pou settidest not/ f. pou  
repist pat pat pou hast not so  
wī/ he seip to hy/ wickid seruānt  
of pi moip/ i deme pee/ wistist  
pou p' f. am a sterne mā/ takige  
anwey pat pig' pat f. settide not/  
f. repige v' ring/ pat f. seip not/  
and whn hast pou not zomū my  
money to pe boord/ f. i comyge  
shulde haue axid it wip/ whuris/  
f. he seide to men stondige myz/  
take ze anwey fro hy/ pe besait:

Th. xix. f. zyne ze to hym pat hap ten be-  
saitis/ f. rei seiden to hym/ lord  
he hap ten besaitis/ f. rei seiden  
to hy/ lord/ he hap ten besaitis/  
and f. seie to zomū/ to ech mā f. hap  
it shal be zomū/ f. he shal encre-  
se/ but fro hy pat hap not/ also  
pat pig' pat he hap shal be takist  
of hy/ nepeles bynge ze hīdū  
po myne enemys pat wolden  
not pat f. regnede on hem. f. sle  
ze bifore me/ and whne pes pi-  
gis weren seide/ he wente bifore  
f. zede up to ierlm/ and it was  
don whāne ihe cam myz to bechsa-  
ge f. betanye at pe moit pat is  
clepid of olyuete/ he sente hīle rīw  
dylupis f. seide/ go ze into pe castel/  
pat is azens zomū/ into whid/ as ze  
entren ze shulen fynde a colt of  
a alle tyed/ on whid/ neise man  
sat/ vntye ze hy/ f. bynge ze  
to me/ f. if ony mā are zomū whi-  
ze vntye/ yus ze shulen seie to  
hy/ for pe lord desiret his werk/ f. rei  
pat weren sent/ wente forp/ and  
fonden as he seide to he/ a colt don-  
dige/ and whne rei vntyeden pe  
colt/ pe lordis of it seide to he/ whi-  
vntye ze ye colt/ f. rei seiden/ for  
pe lord hap nede to hym/ f. rei led-  
den it to hy/ and rei castige her  
clopis on pe colt/ f. setten ihi on  
hy/ f. whāne he wente/ rei stre-  
widen her clopis in pe weye/ f.  
whne he cam myz to pe comyge  
doul of pe moit of olyuete/ alle  
pe peple pat cam don brymen  
to ioye f. to herie god wip greet  
vois/ on alle pe wertes pat rei  
hadden seyn/ f. seide/ blesid be ye  
kyng/ f. comey in ye name of pe  
lord/ pees in heuene/ f. gloze in

Th. xix. f. hize pigis/ f. summe of pe farile-  
es of pe peple/ seiden to hym/  
mantr/ blame pi dylupis/ f.  
he seide to hem/ i seie to zomū/ for  
if pes ben alle/ doones shule  
crye/ and whne he neyede/ he  
seip pe citee/ f. wepte on it/ f. sei-  
de/ for if pou haddist knowe/ p'  
shuldist wepe also/ for in pis  
day pe yngis ben in pees to pee/  
but now rei ben hīd fro pi yzen  
but dayes shulen come in pee/  
f. yne enemys shulen enyrow  
ne pee wip a pale/ f. rei shulen  
go aboute pee/ f. make pe streit  
on alle sidis/ f. caste pee don to pe  
erpe/ f. pi sones pat ben in pee/  
and rei shulen not leene in pee.  
a soon on a soon/ for pou hast  
not knowū pe tyme of pi visita-  
cion/ and he entride into pe tem-  
ple/ f. bigan to caste out men  
sellunge veryne f. bynge f. seide  
to hem/ it is writū/ pat my hous  
is an hous of preyer/ but ze han  
mad it a den of peues/ f. he was  
techyge euī day in pe temple/ f.  
pe pnces of prestis f. pe scribis  
f. pe pnces of pe peple/ souzte to  
leese hy/ f. rei fouden not what  
rei shulden do to hym/ for al pe  
peple was occupied f. herde hym/  
f. it was **Th. xix.**  
don i oon of pe dayes whne  
he tange pe peple i pe tēple/ f.  
prechide pe gospel/ pe pnces of  
prestis f. scribis camen to gidre  
wip pe eldze me/ f. rei seiden to hy  
seie to us in what power p' doist  
pes pigis/ or who is he pat zaf to  
pee pis power/ f. ihe answerde  
f. seide to hem/ f. i shal are zomū  
oo word/ answere ze me to was

Th. xix. f. ye baptym of john/ of heuene/  
or of men/ f. rei pouzten wip ine  
hem silt/ seipnge/ for if we seip  
en of heuene/ he shal seie/ why  
pāne tyleneuē ze not to hy/ and  
if we seipen of me/ al pe peple sh-  
al stoune vs/ for rei ben certeyn/  
p' john is a pfete/ f. rei answeri-  
den p' rei kneten not/ of whē  
it was/ f. ihe seide to he/ ney/ i seie  
to zomū/ in what power/ i do pes  
pigis/ and he bigan to seie to pe  
peple/ pis parable/ amā plaitide  
a/ yne zerd/ f. hyrde it to tileris.  
f. he was in pilgrymage long ty-  
me/ and in pe tyme of gadrig/ of  
grapis/ he sente a seruānt to pe  
tileris/ pat rei shulden zyne  
to hym of pe fruyt of pe vyne  
zerd/ whiche beeten hy/ f. leete hy  
go/ voute/ and he pouzte zit to sen-  
de anoy seruānt/ f. rei beete pis  
f. turnetiden hy soore f. leete hy  
go/ and he pouzte zit to sende/ pe  
prude/ f. hy also rei woudide f. cal-  
tūe hy out/ and pe lord of pe vy-  
ne zerd seide/ what shal i do/ f.  
shal sende my dereworpe lone/  
perauetur/ whne rei seen hy/ rei  
shulen dze/ and whne pe tilie-  
ris fren hy/ rei pouzte wip yne  
he silt/ f. seiden/ pis is pe erp/ sle-  
we hy/ pat pe erritige be oure/  
f. rei castide hy out of pe vynerd/  
f. killede hy/ whi/ shal pāne pe lord  
of pe vynerd do to hem/ he shal  
come f. diltre pes tileris/ f. zyn-  
ne pe vynerd to ope/ and whne  
pis pig' was herd/ rei seide to hy/  
god forbete/ but he biheld he/ f.  
seide/ what pāne is pis pat is  
writū/ pe soon whid/ me bildige  
repuede/ pis is mand ito pe heed



of re corner / ech þæt ſchal falle ðæt  
ſoon: ſchal be to byþlid / but on  
whom it ſchal falle: it ſchal alto  
breke hym / & þe þinces of preſtis  
& tribis ſouȝten to leſe on hym  
hondis in þat our: & þei dreed  
þe peple / for þei keneþen: þæt to  
hem he ſeide þis liſeneſſe: & þei al  
þyeden & ſenten aſpiciſis: þæt  
feyneþe hem miſt: þæt þei ſhul  
den take hi in word: & bitake hi  
to þe power of þe þince: & to þe  
power of þe miſte: & þei aſide  
hym & ſeiden: maſtir we wite  
þæt riȝtly þou ſeist & techiſt: & þæt  
takist not þe þſone of mā: but  
þou techiſt in trewe þe weye  
of god: is it leſſful to us: to ȝiue  
tribut to þe empour or nap: & þæt  
he biheeld þe diſſent of hem: and  
ſeide to he: what tēpten ze me:  
ſhewe ze to me a þenȝ: whos  
mage & ſup̄ſcripcion haȝ it: þei  
anſweriden & ſeide to hi: þe emp  
ouris: & he ſeide to he: zelle ze þe  
fore to þe empour: þo þigis þat  
ben þe empouris: & þo þigis þat  
be of god: to god: & þei miȝte not  
reþroue his word: biſore þe pe  
ple: and þei wondred in his an  
wer: & heelden þees: ſūme of  
þe ſaduceſ þæt denyeden þe aȝen  
ryſing fro deſp to līf: camen &  
ariden hi & ſeide: maſtir moſes  
wroot to us: if þe broȝ of ouȝ  
mā haue a wyf & be deed: & he wā  
wpon ten eþres: þæt his broȝ ſhul  
take his wyf: & reple ſeed to his  
broȝer: & ſo þei were ſenene bi  
þeren: þe firſte took a wyf: & is  
deed: wpon ten eþres: & þe broȝ  
ſynge took hir: & he is deed w  
outē ſone: & þe þride took hir

allo & alle ſenene: & leſten not  
ſeed: but ben deed: & þe laſte of  
alle þe wōman is deed: þæt fore  
þe ryſing aȝen: whos wyf of  
hem ſchal ſhe be: for ſenene had  
den hir to wyf: and he ſeide to  
hem: ſones of þis world wedde:  
& ben ȝoum to weddigis: but þei  
þæt ſhul be had wōm of þat  
world & of þe ryſing aȝen fro deſp  
neȝr: ben weddid neȝr wedde  
wynes: neȝ ſhul moue die  
more for þei ben enene wȝ an  
gels: & ben þe ſones of god: bi  
þen þei be ſones of riſing: aȝe  
fro deſp: & þæt deede men ryſen  
aȝen: allo moſes ſheweþe biſy  
dis þe boȝly: as he ſey þe lord  
god of abrahaȝ: & god of iſaac:  
& god of iacob: & god is not of  
deed me: but of līving me: for  
alle me līuen to hi: and ſūme  
of tribis anſwerige: ſeiden: maſ  
tir þou haſt wel ſeid: & þei durſte  
no more aȝe hi onȝ þig: but he  
ſeide to hem: how ſeyen me cā  
to be þe ſone of danny: & danny  
hi ſilf ſey in þe booke of pſalme:  
þe lord ſeide to my lord: ſitte þou  
on my riȝt half: til þæt þæt þæt  
þyȝne enemyes a ſtool of þi fe  
et: & þæt fore danny cleȝp hi lord:  
& how is he his ſone: & in heering  
of al þe peple: he ſeide to hiſe  
diſciþles: be ze war of tribis þæt  
wolen wandre in ſtocks: & loue  
ſaluacionis in cheȝping: & þe  
firſte chaȝeris i ſynagogis: &  
þe firſte ſittig: þatis in feſtis:  
þæt denoure þe houſis of widoȝis:  
& feȝne long þreȝing: þe ſhul  
take þe more dāpnacion:  
**A**nd he biheeld

& ſez þe ryche me þæt caſtlen  
her ȝifis into þe treſerie: but  
he ſez allo a lytel þore widoȝe  
caſtinge riȝe ferygis: & he  
ſeide: treuli þæt ſeȝe to ȝou þæt  
þore widoȝe: keſte more þan  
alle me: for why alle yeſe of þig  
þæt was plenteuous to hem: keſ  
ten into þe ȝifis of god: but þis  
widoȝe of þæt þig þæt ſhulde  
to hi: keſte al hi lyf: þæt  
ſhe hadde: and whye ſū me ſeide  
of þe temple: þæt was a þarehō  
wȝ goode ſtoones & ȝifis: he ſeide:  
þes þigis þat ze ſeen: dāȝes ſhul  
come in whiche a ſoon ſchal not  
be leſt on a ſtoon: whiche ſchal not  
be diſturbid: and þei ariden hi &  
ſeide: comāndour whye ſhulen  
þes þigis be: & what took he ſchal  
be whye þei ſhul bigȝne to be  
don: & he ſeide: ſe ze þæt ze be not  
diſſeruiid: for manȝe ſhul come  
in my name: ſeyge for þæt am: &  
þe tȝime ſchal neȝe: þæt fore nȝle ze  
go aȝer hem: and whye ze ſhul  
len heet: batelis & aȝines wȝ þæt  
neȝ nȝle ze be aȝerd: it bihouȝ  
firſt þes þigis to be don: but not  
ȝit anoon is an ende: þane he ſe  
ide to hem: folk ſchal rȝle aȝens folk:  
& reȝime aȝens reȝime: grete  
monȝis of erpe ſhulen be bi  
þlaces: & peſtilencas & hȝiris:  
& dēdis fro heuene: & grete to  
kenes ſhulen be: but biſore alle  
þes þigis: þei ſhulen ſette her  
hondis on ȝou: & ſhulen þæt we  
bitake into ſynagogis & kepi  
gis: dāȝyȝge to þigis: & to  
miſtis for my name: but it ſchal  
falle to ȝou into wirtuelliȝ: þæt fore  
þæt ze in ȝoum heȝtis: not to þe

ke biſore: how ze ſhulen anſwere  
for þæt ſchal ȝiue to ȝou monȝ &  
wiſdom: to whiche alle ȝoum ad  
uerſaries ſhulen not moue a  
ȝenſtonde: & aȝen ſeȝe: & ze ſhul  
be takē of ſadur & modur & biȝen  
& colȝis & frendis: & biȝ deȝ þei  
ſhul tūmote of ȝou: & ze ſhul  
be in hate to alle me: for my name:  
and an heer of ȝoum heet: ſchal not  
þerūthe in ȝoum: þatience ze ſhul  
le weelde ȝoum ſoulis: but whye  
ze ſhulen ſe ierlīm be eȝyrowned  
wȝ an oſt: þane wite ze þæt þe de  
ſolacion of it ſchal neȝe: þane þei  
þæt ben in iudee: fle to þe moūteȝ  
and þei þæt ben in þe myddil of it:  
go aȝer: and þei þæt ben i þe kȝi  
treis: entre not into it: for þeſe  
ben dāȝes of vȝiāce: þæt alle þi  
gis þat ben wȝtū: be fulfilled:  
& wō to hem þæt ben wȝ childe:  
& noȝlhen in þo dāȝes: for a gre  
et diſeſe ſchal be on þe erpe: and  
wȝapȝe to þis peple: & þei ſhul  
falle bi þe ſharpneſſe of ſwērd:  
& þei ſhulen be lad þloneris to al  
le folkis: & ierlīm ſchal be deſonlid  
of heȝen me: til þe tȝimes of na  
cionis be fulfilled: & and tokenes  
ſhulen be in þe aȝine & þe monȝ  
& in þe ſterre: & iȝer þe ouleȝȝ  
of folkis for confuſion of ſoun of  
þe ſee & of floodis: for me ſhul  
were dȝe for dȝe & abyȝyȝg:  
þæt ſhul come to al þe world:  
for vertues of heueneſ ſhulen  
be moued: and þane þei ſhul ſe  
māns ſone comȝge in a clowde:  
wȝ greet power & maieſte: &  
whye þes þigis bigȝnen to be  
maid: biholde ze & reple ze ȝoum  
heedis: for ȝoum redeȝpcion neȝeȝ



**A**nd ye haþe **Thy** **C. xiiij.**  
day of yerf looues yat is  
leid þatke nezete: ⁊ ye pñ  
ces of prestis ⁊ ye stribus souzten  
hon þei schullen sle ihu but þei  
dredde þe peple and sathanas  
entride into iudas: yat was de  
pid starioth con coun of ye twel  
ue and he wente ⁊ spak wip þe  
pñces of prestis ⁊ wip þe maiet  
tratis: how he schulde bitraye  
hi to hem and þei iopeden ⁊ ma  
den couenant: to zyne hym mo  
ney ⁊ he bihyzte and he souzte  
oportunyte: to bitraye hi wip  
outen peple but þe dayes of yerf  
looues camen. in whiche it was

he hadde take ye cuppe: he dide  
 graciſ & ſeide: take ye & departe  
 ze amog̃ zou: for i ſeie to zou y  
 i ſhal not drynke of ye kynde of  
 yis vyne: til ye reioyne of god co  
 me: and whine he hadde take breed:  
 he dide yank yis & brak & ſaf to hē.  
 & ſepte yis is my body: yat ſhal  
 be yow for zou do ze yis yig̃ in  
 myte of me: he took alſo ye cuppe:  
 afur yat he hadde ſoupid: & ſeide  
 yis cuppe is ye newe teſtament  
 in my blood: yat ſhal be ſhed for  
 zou: nepeles lo ye hond of hi yat  
 betraye me: is wy me a ye ta  
 ble: & manys ſone goy: afur y it  
 is determyned: nepeles wo to

dele as wheete / but / y haue preied  
 for yee: yat y fery faile not / and  
 yon su tyne comitid: conferme  
 y brysen / which leide to hē / lord  
 y am redy to go. into pson & in  
 to deap way yee / and he leide / y seie  
 to yee petre. ye tok sthal not Fro  
 we to day: til you yues forlake y  
 you knowist me **¶** And he leide  
 to hem / whie / y sente you wypon  
 ten sachel. & strupe & schoon: wher  
 om yig faillde to you: / & yei leide  
 no yig / perfore he leide to hē / but  
 now he yat hay a sachel: take also  
 & a strupe / and he yat hay noon: tel  
 le his wote & bigge a liverd / for y  
 seye to you yat it bihoney & yig

le he spak: to a cupany / and he y<sup>t</sup>  
 was clepid judas oon of ye twel  
 ue: wente bi fore he / and he cam  
 to ihu: to kille hym / & ihc seide to  
 hym: judas betrayest thou mannis  
 sone wy a coll: and yet yat were  
 aboute hi & open yat y<sup>t</sup> was to co  
 me: seiden to hym / lord wher we  
 smyten wy sward: & oon of he  
 smoot ye seruaut of ye pnce of  
 prestis: & bitide of his ryt eere /  
 but ihc answereide & seide / suffre  
 ze til hidur: and whye he hadde tou  
 chid his eere: he heelde hi & ihc  
 seide to he yat came to hy: ye p<sup>n</sup>  
 ces of prestis & magistratis of ye  
 temple & eldre men / as to a peef



3e han gon out wip swerdis & sta  
 nes. whiche / I was wip you eche day  
 in ye temple. 3e streysten not out  
 hondis into me / but pis is your  
 our & ye power of derfulnes / and  
 yei tooken hy & ledde i to ye hous of  
 ye prync of prestis. & petre suede  
 hi a fer / and whiche a fer was hy  
 delid in ye myddel of ye greet howe.  
 & yei saten aboute. petre was i  
 ye myddel of hem / whom whiche a  
 danyel hadde seyn hym sittige at  
 ye hys & hadde biholden hy. she sei  
 de / & pis was wip hym / and he de  
 nyede hym. & seide / woman / I kow  
 we hi not / and afur a litel. anof  
 man sp; hy & seide / & you art of he  
 but petre seide / a man / I am not  
 and whiche a space was maid as  
 of an our. anofir affermyde &  
 seide / truly pis was wip hy / for  
 also he is of galile / & petre seide  
 man / I noot what you seist / and  
 anon 3it while he spak ye cok  
 creis / and ye lord turnede azen.  
 & biheeld petre / & petre hadde my  
 de on ye word of ihu as he hadde  
 seid for bifore pat ye for browe.  
 yues you that denye me / & pe  
 tre zete out. & wepte bitterly / &  
 ye me pat heelden hym. stornede  
 hi & smyten hym / and yei blind  
 felden hym. & smyten his face /  
 & ariden hi. & seiden / arete you  
 crist to us. who is he pat smoot  
 pee. / also yei blasfemyge seiden  
 azen hym many oye yigis / and  
 as ye day was come. ye eldre  
 me of ye peple. & ye prynces of  
 prestis. & ye sribis came to gi  
 dre. & ledde hi into her couceil &  
 seiden / if you art crist. seie to us  
 and he seide to hem / if I seie to

301. ze schyden not bilene to me  
 & if I are. ze schyden not answere  
 to me. ney ze schyden despyse me  
 but after yis tyme. manys sone  
 shal be sitte on ye rithhalf of  
 ye vertu of god/ perfore alle sei-  
 den/ pñne art you ye sone of god?  
 And he seide/ ze seien par I am/ &  
 pei seiden/ What zit desire we wit  
 nellig. for we yus self. han heyd  
 of his moey. **C. xxiij.**  
**A**nd al pe unlitte of  
 hem arisen & ledde hy to  
 pylat/ And pei bigynnen to accuse  
 hym. & seiden/ we han founden yis.  
 curmyge uplodou our folk. And  
 forbedige tributis to be yowu to  
 ye emporur. & seynge y hy self  
 is crist & kyng. & pilat aside hy & sei-  
 de/ art you kyng of ierwis. & he  
 answeride & seide/ yon seist/ And  
 pilat seide to ye princes of prestis.  
 & to ye peple/ I fynde no ying of  
 cause in yis man. & pei worde stre-  
 get. & seiden/ he moneye pe peple.  
 techge yinz al/ Judee bigynnege  
 fro gahle til hidur/ And pilat  
 heerige gahle. & aside if he wer  
 aman of gahle. & whne he knew  
 y he was of ye power of eron-  
 de. he sente hy to eronde. which  
 was at ierhu in yodages/ And  
 whne eronde sayz thi. he ioyede  
 ful moche/ for long tyme he co-  
 uerite to se hy/ for he herd ma-  
 ny yigis of hy. & hapite to se hi  
 tokene to be do of hy/ And he as-  
 ide hym i many wordis. & he an-  
 sweride no yig to hy/ and ye pn-  
 ces of prestis & ye scribis stoden.  
 stedfastly accusige hym/ but e-  
 ronde wy his coft dispoude hym.  
 & stowde hy & clopde wy a whit

clou. & sente hym azen to pilat/  
and eroude & pilat were wand  
frowd fro yat day/ for bifore pei we  
ren enemyes to gidre/ & pilat cle  
ue to gidre ye pñces of pñdis.  
& ye maiestratys of ye peple: &  
seide to hem/ ze han brougt to me  
pis mā: as tynge aweiþ ye pe  
ple/ & lo / arynge bifore you: ffor  
de no cause in pis man: of yes pñ  
gis. in whiche ze accusen hy. neþ  
eroude/ for he has sent hi azen to  
us: & lo no pñg worpi of deþ is  
don to hi/ and ffore / I shal ame  
de hym & deliueren hy/ but he wol  
te nede deliue to hem oon bi ye fæl  
te day/ and al ye peple criote to  
gidre & seide/ do hi aweiþ: & deliue  
to us barabas which was sent  
into pñou: for disturblig maad  
in ye citee & for mansleþg/ and  
estlone pilat spak to hem: & wol  
de deliue ihu/ & pei vndurtriēd  
& seiden/ crucifie crucifie hi/ & pe  
pudre tyme he seide to hem/ for  
what pñel has pis don: / I fynde  
no cause of deþ in hi/ ffore / I shal  
chastise hi: & / I shal deliue/ and  
pei cōtymeden wygreete voy  
ces: arynge yat he shulde be cru  
cified/ & ye voices of hem woren  
stronge/ and pilat demede her  
arynge to be don/ and he deliuede  
to hem. hi yat for walleþng &  
seducion was sent into pñoum.  
Whom pei ariden but he hittook  
ihu to her wille/ and whine pei  
ledden hym: pei toke amā hym of oure  
men conynge fro ye tou/ & pei ley  
den ou hym ye cross. to bere af  
tir ihu/ and per shakete hy mo  
che peple. & wy men yat weple  
den & by mozneden hy/ & ihc tan:

nete to hem. & seide/ dourys of ie  
 rlm nyle se wepe on me. but we  
 pe ze on you self & on your lones/  
 for lo dayes shulen come. i whi  
 che it shal be seyd/ blessed be ba  
 reyn wymen. & wombis y<sup>e</sup> han  
 not born children. & ye treccis y<sup>e</sup>  
 han not youn souke/ y<sup>e</sup>ane pei shu  
 len bigyne to sepe to moirteyns.  
 falle ze doui on us/ and to smale  
 hillis. keue ze us/ for if in a gre  
 ne tre pei doen pes yris. what  
 shal be don in a drye. allo opei  
 rwey wiche me were led wy  
 hy. to be slayn/ and after yat pei  
 camen to a place yat is clepid  
 of caluarie. pere y<sup>e</sup> crucifiede  
 hi and ye reues/ oon on ye rize  
 half. & yeto<sup>r</sup> on ye left half/ but  
 ihs seide/ fadur forz yme he. for pei  
 witen not what pei doen. & pei  
 departide his clois & kessen lot  
 tis/ & ye peple stood abydige/ &  
 ye pncis scornede hi wy<sup>e</sup> he. &  
 seiden/ oye men he made saaf. ma  
 ke he hi self saaf. if yis be et pe  
 chofine of god/ and ye kypzris neye  
 den & scorneden hym. & yf redde to hi  
 vynegre. & seiden/ if you art kyng  
 of ieris. make yee laf/ and ye  
 hysp<sup>e</sup>rcion was writu ouer hi.  
 wy greek lettris. & of latyn. & of  
 ebreu. yis is pe kyng of ieris/ &  
 oon of pes reues yat hangiden/  
 blassemyden hi & seide/ if you art  
 et make yiself saaf & vs/ but ye  
 to<sup>r</sup> answerige blawide hi & seide/  
 ney pou drest god. y<sup>e</sup> art i pe  
 same dapnacion/ and treuli we  
 mistly. for we han relleyued wor  
 pi yris to werkis. but yis dide  
 no yis of ymel/ & he seide to ihu/  
 lord haue myd of me. whane



þou comest to þi kyngdome & ihc sei-  
de to hy / treuly / & seie to þee: þis  
day þou shalt be wyþ me i para-  
dis / and it was almost þe herte  
our: & derkness were maid in  
al þe erpe into þe nyghte our / &  
þe lyme was madder: & þe veil  
of þe temple was to rent a tyme  
and ihc cunge wyþ greet vois:  
seide / fadir into þi hondis: / þi  
take my spirit: & he seynge þes  
þingis 3af up þe gost: & þe centu-  
rien seynge þat þis þat was  
don: glorified god & seide: verily  
þis man was iust / and al þe peple  
of þe þat weren þere to gidre at  
þis spectacle: & þeyen þe þingis þat  
weren don: lymteden her brestis  
& turneden azen / but alle his knowe  
stoden afer: & wyne þat suede  
hy fro galile: seynge þes þingis  
& lo aman joleph bi name of ar-  
mathe a citee of judee: þat was  
a decurion: a good man & a iust /  
þis man consentide not to þe coun-  
cil & to þe dedis of hem: & he a  
bood þe kyngdom of god / þis ioseph  
cam to pilat: & aride þe body of ihc  
& took it don & wylapide it in a cle-  
ne linnen cloþ: & leyde hi in a gra-  
ue heilw: in which not zit ony man  
hadde be leid / & þe day was þe ewy  
of þe halidag: & þe saboth bigan  
to lhyne / & þe wyemen lymnge þat  
camen wyþ hi fro galile: 3eyen þe  
grau: & how his body was leyd /  
& þei turneden azen & maden re-  
dy swete smellige spices & ornue-  
mentis / but i þe saboth þei restide  
afor þe comādemēt. **¶**

**B**ut in oday of þe wote ful  
eerly þei came to þe gra-  
ue: & broukten swete smel-

lige spices: þat þei hadden araied  
and þei founden þe stoon turned a  
way fro þe graue: and þei zeden  
þi & founden not þe body of þe  
lord ihc / and it was don þe while  
þei weren a stomped in þougt  
of þis þing: lo twey men stoden  
biþdis hem i alhyngre cloþ / and  
whie þei dreedden: & boweden her  
semlant into þe erpe: þei seide  
to hem / what seken ze hy þat  
lyney wyþ teede me: he is not  
her: but is risen / haue ze mynde  
how he spak to 3ou: whie he  
was zit in galile: & seide / for it  
bihoey mann: lone to be bryn-  
tū into þe hondis of offhil me  
& to be crucified: & þe þridde day  
to rylse azen / & þei byougt on  
his wordis / & þei zeden azen fro  
þe graue: & tolden alle þes þingis  
to þe enleuene & to alle opere /  
þere was mary malkelen & jo-  
ne & marie of james & opere  
wyne þat weren wyþ he: þat  
seiden to aposthis þes þingis / and  
þes wordis were seyn before he  
as madnesse: & þei bileuede not  
to he / but petre roos up & ran  
to þe graue / & he bowde down  
& 3af þe linnen cloþis lymnge al  
oone / & he wente by hi self: &  
driȝt on þat þat was don / & 3id  
lo twyne of hem wenten i þat day  
into a castel: þat was fro ierlm  
þe space of sixty furlongis / bi  
name emanis / & þei spāben to  
gidre of alle þes þingis þat hadde  
biſalle / & it was don þe while þei  
talkeden & lymte by hem self: &  
hi self newete & wete wyþ he / but  
her 3eu were holdū þat þei knewen  
hym not / & he seide to hem

what ben þes wordis þat ze speke  
to gidre wandrynge: & ze ben  
lozlyful: & don whos name was  
cleofas: answeride & seide / þou  
þi self art a pilgrym i ierlm  
& hast þou not knowū what þi  
gis ben don in it in þese dayes:  
to whom he seide / what þingis:  
& þei seide to hi / of ihc of nāſareth  
þat was anna pfete myȝti in  
work & word: bifoze god & al þe  
peple / and how þe herte preth  
of oure pntes broken hy into  
dāpnaciōn of deþ: & crucified  
hi / but we hoped þat he shulde  
haue azenboust isrl: & now on  
alle þes þingis: þe þridde day is  
to day: þat þese þingis were don  
but allo summe wyemen of ou-  
ris maden us asceid: whiche  
bifoze day weren at þe graue  
and whie his body was not fou-  
dū: þei camen & seiden / þat þei  
3en also alyt of angelis: whiche  
seyen þat he lyney / and summe  
of ouren weten to þe graue: &  
þei founden so: as þe wyemen sei-  
den: but þei founden not hi / and  
he seide to he a foolis & slowe of  
herte: to bilene in alle þingis þat  
þe pfetis han spokū / wher it bi-  
hoſte not eit to suffre þes þingis:  
& so to entre into his glorie: & he  
bigan at moyses & at alle þe pro-  
fetis declaride to hem in alle scrip-  
turis / & iberē of hi / & þei camen  
wyþ þe castel: whidur þei wente: &  
hemade cūtenaūce þat he wolde  
go ferþere / & þei constreyndeden  
hi & seiden / dwelle wyþ us for it  
dratwy to myȝt: & þe day is now  
donū down / and he entride wyþ  
he / & it was don while he sat at

þe mete wyþ hem: he took bread  
& blessed & brak & took to he: &  
þe 3en of hem weren openyd:  
& þei knewen hi / and he vānyf  
stide fro her 3en: & þei seiden to  
gidre / wher our herte was not  
brenyge in vs: while he spak  
to us in þe weye: & openyde to  
us scripturis: & þei risen up i þe  
same our: & wente azen to ie-  
rlm: & founden þe enleuene gedrid  
to gidre: & hem þat were wyþ he:  
seynge þat þe lord is risen veri-  
ly: & apperide to symon: & þei  
tolden what þingis were don in  
þe weye: & how þei knewen hi  
in brenyng of bread. **¶** And þe  
while þei spāken þes þingis: ihc  
stod in þe myddil of hem & sei-  
de to hem / pees to 3ou / i am: my  
le ze drede: but þei weren afray-  
ed & agast: & gesliden he to se:  
a spirit: & he seide to hem / what  
ben ze troublid: & þouȝtis come  
up into 3oure hertis: / se ze my  
hondis & my feet: for i my self  
am / feele ze & se ze: for a spirit  
hay not flesh & boones: as  
ze seen þat i haue: & whie he  
hadde leid þis þing: he atheride  
hondis & feet to hem: & zit whi-  
le þei bileueden not: & wonden  
den for ioye: he seide / han ze her  
ony þing þat shal be etū: & þei  
pfunden hi a part of a falyth ros-  
tid: & an hony combe: & whie  
he hadde etū bifoze he: he took  
þat þat leste & 3af to hem: &  
seide to he / þes ben þe wordis  
þat i spak to 3ou: whie i was  
zit wyþ 3ou / for it is nede þat alle  
þingis be fulfilled: þat ben wri-  
tū i þe lawe of moyses & in þe



fetis. & in psalmis of me. pame  
he openide to hem. Writ. v. pei  
shulden vnderstonde scriptu  
ris. & he seide to hem. for þus it  
is writen. & þus it bihoofe cū  
to suffer. & ryle æren fro deep  
in þe yndre day. & penaunce &  
remysion of synes to be pre  
chid in his name to alle folcis.  
bigynnyng at ierlm. & þe ben  
witnessis of þes þingis. & i. shal  
sende þe bihest of my fadir in  
to 3ou. but sitte ze in þe citee.  
til þat ze be cloyid wip bñ fro  
an hys. & he ledde hem forþ ito  
betanpe. & whē his hondis  
weren list up. he bleiside hem.  
and it was don þe while he  
bleiside hem. he departide fro  
hem. & was born into heuene.  
and þei worlthypide & wente  
æren into ierlm wip greet ioye.  
& weren ener more i þe tēple  
herpyng & bleisige god. **He  
re endy þe gospel of hys  
& bigynnyng þe plog on þe e  
gospel of john.**

**T**his is john þe euange  
list don of þe discipulis of þe lord.  
þe which is a vrgyn chosū of  
god. whom god clepide from þe  
spolis. whē he wolde be wed  
did. and double witness of vñ  
gynnyng is 3ouū to hym i þe gos  
pel. in þis þat he is seid lōned  
of god bifoze oþe discipulis. and  
god hongyng in þe cross. but  
his modir in þe þing to hi. þat  
a vrgyn shulde kepe a vrgyn.  
þis john i þe gospel bigynnyng al  
oone þe werk of vncorruptible  
word. & witness þat þe kyn  
dely lone of god is maad man.

and þe hys was not takn of  
derknessis. & he shewy þe fir  
ste myracle. which god dide at  
þe weddigis. to shewe wher  
þe lord is preied to þe feede.  
þe wyn of þe weddigis omy  
to fayle. v. whē elde þingis he  
changid. alle newe þingis þat  
ben ordeyned of fadir. appere. jo  
hn wroot þis gospel in aspe. ac  
tu. þat he hadde writen þe apo  
calyps in þe yle of pathmos. ne  
reles he wroot þe gospel. after  
alle þe gospeleris. þat alle an  
vncorruptible ende by a vrgyn  
in þe apocalyps. to hy. to who  
an vncorruptible bigynnyng is  
3ouū in genesis in þe bigynnyng  
of hooly scriptur. for cū lew i þe  
apocalyps. i am þe bigynnyng &  
þe ende. and þis john is he. þat  
knew. v. þe day of his departyng  
was comū. & he clepide to gide  
hys discipulis in effe. & shew  
de cū. in many þingis of my  
racle. & zete don into adolū  
place of his buryng. & whē he  
hadde maad preper. he was put  
to his fadris. & was moche wy  
oute sorwe of deyr. how moche  
he is founden cleue fro corrupcion  
of fleish. **Jerom in his plog o  
john. lew al þis & now bigynnyng  
þe gospel.**

**T**he bigynnyng was  
þe word & þe word was  
at god. and god was  
þe word. þis was in  
þe bigynnyng at god. alle þingis we  
re maad by hi. & wipoute hi was  
maad no þing. þat þis þat was ma  
ad in hy was lyf. & þe lyf was þe  
lyt of me. and þe lyt shyny in

derknessis. & derknessis cōprehēdi  
den not it. 3man was sent fro god.  
to whom þe name was john. þis  
man cam fro witnessig. þat he  
shulde bere witnessig of þe lyt.  
þat alle me shulden bileue bi hy.  
he was not þe lyt. but þat he  
shulde bere witnessig of þe lyt.  
þe was a very lyt. which lynch  
ech mā þat comy into þis world.  
he was in þe world. & þe world  
was maad by hym. & þe world knew  
not hi. he cam fro his owne þingis.  
& hys respynded hy not. but  
how manye euer respynded.  
hy. he zaf to hem power. to be maad  
þe sones of god to hem. v. biledē  
in his name. þe which not of blo  
dis neyr of þe wille of fleish.  
neyr of þe wille of mā. but be born  
of god. & þe word was maad mā.  
& dwelide among us. & we han  
seyn þe glorie of hy. as þe glorie  
of þe don bigetū lone of þe fadir.  
ful of grace & of treuþe. **John  
beryp witnessig of hy. & cryer  
& lew þis is whom i seide. he  
shal come after me. is maad bi  
foze me. for he was to foze me.  
& of þe pleute of hy. we alle han  
take. & grace for grace. for þe la  
we was 3ouū by moyses. but gra  
ce & treuþe is maad bi hy. cū.  
no man sez eise god. no but þe  
oon bigetū lone þat is in þe bo  
li of þe fadir. he hay told out.  
3hid þis is þe witnessig of john.  
whē he was senten fro ierlm. &  
tis & defenes to hym. v. þei shul  
den are hym. who art þou. he  
knowlechte & demyde not. and  
he knowlechte. for i am not  
cris. & þei ariden hi. what pame.**

art þou eise. and he seide. i am not  
art. i. a pfece. & he answeride. nay.  
þerfore þei seiden to hi. who art  
þou. þat we 3yne an answer to  
þes þat senten us. what seist þ.  
of þis. he seide. i am a vois  
of a cryer in desert. dēle ze þe  
weye of þe lord. as i saye þe pfe  
te seide. and þei þat were sent.  
weren of þe farisees. & þei aride  
hi. & seide to hi. what pame bapti  
list þou. if þou art not cū. neyr  
eise. neyr a pfece. John answeride  
to hem. & seide. i baptise in watir.  
but in þe myddil of 3ou hay stonde  
oon. þat ze knowen not. he it is  
p. shal come after me. þat was ma  
ad bifoze me. of who i am not wor  
pi to lose þe þing of his shoo.  
þese þingis weren don in betanpe  
byzonde jordan. wher. john was  
baptisige. **3houy day john hys  
shu comyng to hym. & he seide. lo  
þe lomb of of god. lo þe þat doy a  
wey þe synes of þe world. þis is he  
þat i seide of. after me comen is  
aman. which was maad bifoze me  
for he was rayer þa. i. and i knew  
hi not. but þat he be shewid i shil.  
þfore i cam baptisige in watir.  
and john bar witnessig. & seide.  
v. i saye þe spirit comyng don as  
a culuer fro heuene. & dwelide on  
hy. & i knew hi not. but he þat sente  
me. to baptise in watir. seide to me.  
on whom þou seest þe spirit comy  
ge don. & dwelige on hi. þis is he  
þat baptis in þe hooly gost. and  
i saye & bar witnessig. v. þis is  
þe lone of god. **3houy day john  
stood. & tweyne of hys discipulis.  
and he biheold shu walkyge & lew  
lo þe lomb of god. and tweye dil****



cuplis herden hym spekege: & sole  
widen ihu and ihu turnete & syz he  
sawge hi. & sey to hem what seke  
ze: and sei den to hi rabi. y is  
to seye maister: wher dwellest þu?  
& he sey to hem come ze & se and  
pei came & syen wher he dwelle  
de: & dwelten wyþ hi pat day: & it  
was as ye tempe our and andren  
ye broþ of symon petre was cou  
of ye tweyne pat herde of john:  
& hadden synked hi y is foond furst  
his broþr symon: & he seide to hi  
we han foude melias: y is to seie  
et: and he ledde hi to ihu: & ihu bi  
heeld hi: & seide you art symon  
ye sone of iohana: you shalt be  
clepid cefas y is to seie pete: &  
on ye moxwe he wolde go out in  
to galile: & he foond filip and he  
sey to hi one you me filip was  
of bethsaida ye citee of andrew  
& of petre filip foond nathanael:  
& seide to hi we han foude ihu  
ye sone of joseph of nazareth:  
whom moyses wroot in ye lawe  
& pteis: & nathanael seide to hi  
of nazareth may si good yig be  
filip seide to hi come & se ihu hyz  
nathanael comyge to hi: and  
seide to hi lo verily a man of ihu:  
in who is no gyle nathanael sei  
de to hym wher of hast you kno  
wii me: ihu answeride: & seide  
to hy bifoze y filip clepide pee  
whne you wer vnder ye fyge tre:  
y syz pee nathanael answeride  
to hi: & seide rabi you art ye  
sone of god: you art kyng of isrl:  
ihu answeride & seide to hi for y  
seide to pee: y syz pee vnder ye  
fyge tre: you bileuest: y shalt  
se moze you pes yigis and he

seide to hem treuli treuli y seie  
to you ze shule se heuene openid:  
& ye angelis of god: & syngge up  
& comyge don on mans sone:  
**A**nd ye radde: **Chap. ij.**  
day weddigis weren  
maad in ye came of gal  
lee: & ye modir of ihu was per  
and ihu was clepid & hile disti  
plis to ye weddigis: & whne wy  
faulde: ye modir of ihu seide to hi  
pei han not wyne and ihu sey to  
hyr what to me & to pee woma:  
my our cam not zit: his modir  
sey to ye mynistris: what ene  
yig he seye to you: do ze: & yere  
weren sett fyre stoonen canes  
astur ye densig of ye ieris: hol  
dige ech tweyne emr ye mette  
tis: & ihu sey to he fille ze ye pot  
tis wy wat: & pei fillede he up  
to ye moyn: & ihu seide to hem  
drawe ze now bere ze to ye ar  
chitric: And pei bareu: & whne  
ye architricyn lunde taid ye wat  
maad wyne: & wiste not werof it  
was: but ye mynistris witten  
pat dzowen ye watir ye archi  
tricyn clepy ye sponse & sey to  
hi ech man settir first good wy:  
& whne me ben fulfild: pane pat  
pat is worse: but you hast kept  
ye good wyne into yis tyme ihu  
dide yis ye bigynnyng of signes  
in ye came of galile: & thenwede  
his glorie and hile distyplis bile  
ueden hi astur pes yigis he cam  
don to capharna: & his modir &  
hile brufen & hile distyplis: & pei  
dwelthen yere not many daies:  
and ye pass of ieris was ny:  
& ihu wente up to yerlm and  
he foond in ye temple men sil

lige oru & sheep & culueris: &  
changeris sitige and whne he  
hadde maad as it wer a bouge  
of suale cordis: he droof out alle  
of ye temple: & oru & sheep: &  
he shodde ye money of change  
ris: & turnete xplidon ye booz  
dis and he seide to hem pat sel  
den culueris take away fro hen  
nis pes yigis: & nyle ze make  
ye hous of my fadir: an hous  
of marchandise: & hile distyplis  
hadden mynde for it was writu:  
ye feruet loue of ym hous hap  
eti me: & fozre ye ieris answe  
ride & seiden to hyr what took  
ne shewist you to us: y you  
doist pes yigis: ihu answeride  
& seide to he vnde ze yis temple:  
& in yre dayes y shal reile it:  
fzore ye ieris seiden to hy: i four  
ty & fyre zeeer yis temple was  
bildid: & shalt y in yre dayes rei  
le it: but he seide of ye temple  
of his body: fzore whne he was  
rili fro deyr: hile distyplis had  
den mynde: y he seide pes yigis  
of his body: & rei bileueden to ye  
scriptur: & to ye word pat ihu  
seide and whne ihu was at ie  
rlm in pass i ye feeste day: ma  
ny bileueden in his name: se  
yuge his signes pat he dide but  
ihu trowide not hi self to hem  
for he knew alle me: & foz it wes  
not nede to hi: y ony ma shulde  
bet witnessig: for he wiste whi  
was in man: **Chap. iij.**  
**A**nd yer was aman of  
ye farisees: nicodeme  
by name a pnce of ye ieris: &  
he cam to ihu by nyte & seide to hi  
rabi we witten pat you art co

mun fro god maister: for no ma  
may do pes signes pat y doist:  
but god be wyþ hi ihu answeride:  
& seide to hi treuli treuli y seie  
to pee: but ana be born azen: he  
may not se ye figdom of god:  
nycode me seide to hy how may  
ana be born: ihu whne he is  
eld: wher he may entre azen i  
to his modus wombe: & be born  
azen: ihu answeride treuli treu  
li y seie to pee: but ana be born a  
zen of watir & of ye hoody gost: he  
may not entre into ye figdom of  
god: pat pat is born of ye fleshy  
is fleshy and pat pat is born of  
ye spirit: is spirit: wondze y uot:  
for y seide to pee: it bihouep you  
to be born azen: & ye spirit bre  
py wher he wole: & you heerit  
his vois: but you woost not fro  
whems he comep: ne whidur he  
goi: so is ech man pat is born of  
ye spirit: nycode me answeride  
& seide to hy how monu yele yigis  
be don: ihu answeride: & seide to hi  
you art a maister i isrl: & kno  
wist not pes yigis: treuli treu  
li y seie to pee: for we speken pat  
pat we witten: & we witnessen y  
pat we han seyn: & ze taken not  
our witnessig: if y hane seid to  
you erpely yigis: & ze bileue not:  
how if y seie to you heuenty yigis  
shulen ze bileue: & no ma stizey  
into heuene: but he pat cam don  
fro heuene: mans sone pat is i  
heuene and as moyses areide  
a serpent i desert: so it bihouep  
mans sone to be reild: y ech ma  
pat bileuep in hi perilt he not:  
but hane euelsaige hi: for god  
lonede so ye world: y he zaf his



don bigetū sone / p'ech mā pat bile  
nep in hī perit he not: but haue  
euerlastige līf / for god sente not  
his sone into ye world: p' he iuge  
ye world: but pat ye world be sa  
ued by hī / he pat bileuey in hym  
is not demyd / but he pat bileuey  
not: is now demed: for he bileuey  
not in ye name of ye don bigetū  
sone of god / & p'is is ye doom / for  
hī cam ito ye world: & men lo  
ueten more derkuelis vā hīz  
for her werkis were p'uele / for  
ech man pat doy p'uele hāy re  
līz / and he comey not to ye līz  
pat hīle werkis be not reprovēd  
but he pat doy treupe: comey  
to ye līz: p' hīle werkis be sthe  
wid: pat pei bē don i god. **A**lle  
pes pigis ihe cam to hīle dīstīp  
into ye lond of Judee: & p' he  
dīvellīd wīp hem & baptīd  
& John was baptīd i mennon  
bi hydīs salīm: for many wat  
weren yere: & pei camē & were  
baptīd / and John was not zīt  
sent ito p'lon. **F**ore a questi  
on was maid of Johnīs dīstīp  
wīp ye ierīs of ye purīfīcā  
on / and pei camē to John: & sei  
den to hī / māst: he pat was w  
pee bizonde Jordan to whom p'  
hast born witneſſig: lo he bap  
tīley & alle mē comen to hī / John  
anſwerīde: & seide / amā māy  
not take ony pig: but it be zo  
mī to hī fro heuene: & ze zōu sūt  
berē witneſſig: to me: p' i sey  
de / i am not cīt: but p' i am lēt  
bīfore hī / he pat hāy a wīf: is  
ye holebōnde / but ye frēnd of ye  
spoule: p' stōndīz & heerīz hī:  
ioyey wīp ioye for ye vois of ye

spoule / p'fore in pīs pig: my ioye  
is fulfilled: it bīhōney hī to were:  
but me to be maid lalle / he pat  
cam fro aboue: is aboue alle  
he pat is of ye erpe: speky of ye  
erpe / he pat comey fro heuene:  
is a bōne alle / and he witneſſig  
pat pig: pat he hāy seyn & herd: &  
no man takīz hīs witneſſig: but  
he pat takīz hīs witneſſig: hāy  
confermed pat god is forfast  
but he wīhom god hāy sent: spe  
ky ye wordis of god / for not to  
me līn: god zīney ye spīrit / ye  
fadr lōney ye sone: & he hāy zo  
mī alle pigis in hīs hond / he pat  
bileuey in ye sone: hāy euerlastī  
ge līf / but he pat is vībīleful  
to ye sone: shal not se euerlastīge  
līf: but ye wīppe of god dīuel  
ley in hym. **C** **U**  
Therefore as ihū krys  
pat ye farīsees herde: p'  
ihū makē & baptīz modīstīp  
van John: pōiz ihe baptīdē not:  
but hīle dīstīpīs: he lēte Judee  
& wente azen ito galīle: & bīhof  
te hī to passe by samarie: p'fore  
ihū cam into a citee of samarie:  
pat is seid sicar: bīhydīs ye place  
pat Jacob zaf to Josep hīs sone:  
& ye welle of Jacob was yer: &  
ihū was wery of ye iourney: &  
sat pīs vpon ye welle: & ye oū  
was as it wer ye līpte: & a wō  
mā cam fro samarie: to drinke  
watur: & ihū sey to hī / zīney me  
drīnk: & hīle dīstīpīs weren  
gon into ye citee: to bīe mete  
p'fore pīlle wōman of samarie  
sey to hī / how pou whīe p' art  
a ier: arīst of me drīnk: pat  
am a wōmā of samarie: for

newis vīdē not to dele wīp sama  
ritans: ihe anſwerīde: & seide to  
hī / if pou wīstst ye zīste of god:  
& who he is pat sey to pee zīney  
me drīnk: pou parauētū: wōl  
dīst haue arīd of hī: & he shūld  
haue zōmī to pee: quīp: watur  
ye wōman sey to hī / sū: p' hast  
not wherīne to drinke: & ye put  
is deep: wherof pāne hast pou  
quīp: watur: and wher p' art  
grett van oū: fadr Jacob: pat  
zaf to us ye putt: & he drīnk  
of: & hīle sones & hīle beettīs  
ihū anſwerīde & seide to hī / ech  
mā pat drīnkīz of pīs watur:  
shal pīrte eke sōne: but he p'  
drīnkīz of ye watur: pat / shal  
zīney hī: shal not pīrte wīpon  
ten ende: but ye watur p' / shal  
zīney hī: shal be maid in hym  
a welle of watur spīngīge vpon  
into euerlastīge līf: ye wōman  
sey to hī / sū: zīney me pīs wat  
pat / p' art not: ney come hī  
dīn: to drinke: ihe sey to hī / go  
depe pī holebōnde: & come hīdīn  
ye wōman anſwerīde: & seide  
/ i hāue noon holebōnde: ihe sey  
to hī / pou seīdīst wel: p' i hāue  
noon holebōnde: for pou hast had  
fīne holebōndīs: & he pat pou  
hast: is not pīn holebōnde: pīs  
pīg pou seīdīst sōpely: ye wō  
man sey to hī / lord / i se: p' pou  
art a pfete / oūre fadrīs woz  
shīpēde in pīs hīl: & ze seyen  
at ierlīn is a place: wher it  
bīhōney to wozshīpe: ihe sey  
to hī / wōman bileue pou to  
me: for ye oū: shal come: whā  
ne ney in pīs hīl: ney i ierlīn: ze  
shūlen wozshīpe ye fadr: & ze

wozshīpē pat ze knōwen not:  
we wozshīpen pat pat we kno  
wen: for heelre is of ye ierīs:  
but ye tīme is comē & now it  
is: whāne trewe wozshīpers  
shūlen wozshīpe ye fadr: i spī  
rit & treupe: for also ye fadr: se  
ky sūchje: pat wozshīpē hym  
god is a spīrit: & it bīhōney hē  
pat wozshīpen hī: to wozshī  
pe in spīrit & treupe: ye wōman  
sey to hī / i woot pat melhas  
is comū: p' is seīd crīst: p'fore  
whāne he comey: he shal telle us  
alle pigīs: ihe sey to hī / i am  
he pat speky wīp p' & anoon hīle  
dīstīpīs camē: & wondrīden p'  
he spak wīp ye wōman: nepeles  
no mā seide: to hī what sekīst  
pou: or what spekyt pou wīp hī:  
p'fore ye wōman lēte hī watur  
pot: & wente into ye citee & seide  
to po mē: come ze & se ze aman  
pat seide to me alle pigīs: pat  
/ i hāue don: wher he be cīt: and  
yei wenten out of ye citee: & ca  
men to hī / iū ye meene whīle  
hīle dīstīpīs pīeīden hī & seide  
māstīr ete: but he seide to hem  
/ i hāue mete to ete: pat ze kno  
wen not: p'fore dīstīpīs seiden  
to gadre: wher ony mā hāue bz  
onst hī mete to ete: ihe sey to  
hem / my mete is: p' i do ye wīlle  
of hī pat sente me: p' i parfour  
me ye werk of hī: wher ze seye  
not: p' zīt four: moneys ben:  
& rīppe corn comey: lo / i seie to  
zōn: hītey vpon zōm: īzen & se ze  
ye feeldīs: for now pei ben wīp  
te to repe: & he pat repīp: tā  
ky hīre: & gadīp frīpt into  
euerlastīge līf: pat bore he pat



sony & he pat repy: hane ioye  
to gidre in pis pig is pe word  
trewe. for anoyr is pat souy.  
f. anoyr pat repy: f sente zoi to  
repe. pat pat ze han not trane  
hd: & ze han entrid into her tra  
ueho. and of pat citee many  
samaritanus bileden in hy.  
for pe word of pe wōman pat  
bar witneſſig. f he seide to me  
alle pigis pat i hane done. f  
foze whie samaritanus came  
to hi: pei prieden hi to diuelli  
pere. and he diuelli pere twey  
dayes. f manpe mo bileden  
for his word: f seide to pe wō  
man. f now not for pi speche  
we bileden. for we han herd  
f we witen. f pis is verily pe  
saiyoir of pe world. and af  
ter twe dayes he wente out  
fro pennis & wente into galile  
f he bar witneſſig. f a pfete  
in his owne citee hay noon ho  
nom. f foze whie he cam into ga  
lile. me of galile resseueden hi.  
whie pei hadden seyn alle pigis  
pat he hadde don i ierlm i pe feet  
te day. for alle pei hadde come to  
pe feette day. f foze he cam eft  
soone into pe cane of galile.  
where he made pe watir wyn.  
f. had a lital pig was. whos so  
ne was hy: at castarnan. whie  
pis hadde herd f ihu shulde come  
fro iudee into galilee. he wete  
to hi & priede hi. f he shulde  
come don. f heele his sone. for  
he bigan to dye. f foze ihu seide  
to hi. but ze se tokenes f gre  
te woundis. ze bileden not. pe  
lital pig seyn to hi. lord come  
don. bifore p my sone dye. ihu

seyn to hi. go. in sone hyer. pe  
ma bileden to pe word pat ihu  
seide to hi. f he wente. f now  
whane he cam don. pe seruan  
tis camen azens hy. f telden  
to hi f seiden. f his sone hyer.  
and he aride of he pe our. f wh  
ich he was amendid. f pei seide  
to hy. for zister day in pe senep  
our. pe feuer sette hy. f foze pe  
fadir knewe pat vilke our. f wh  
in which ihu seide to hi. in sone  
hyer. f he bileden. f al his how  
ihu dide eft pis secide tokene.  
whie he cam fro iudee into galile.  
f. far yes pmi. f. v. f.

**A**gis p was a feette day  
of ierlm. f ihu wente  
up to ierlm. f in ierlm is a wa  
shig place pat in ebrew is na  
med bethsaida. f hay fyne por  
chis in pise lay a greet miltitu  
de of sike me. blynde crokid  
dye. abidige pe moung of pe  
watir. for pe angel of pe lord  
cam don certeyne tymes into  
pe watir. f pe watir was mo  
ued. and he pat first cam down  
into pe cisterne aft pe moung  
of pe watir. was maid hool of  
what eu sike nelle he was hol  
du. f amā was pere hange  
exte f pratty zeer in his syf uel  
se. f whie ihu hadde seyn hy  
luggige f hadde knowu f he had  
de moche tyme. he seyn to hy.  
wolt you be maid hool. f pe syf  
ma answerte to hi. lord i ha  
ue no mā f whie pe watir is  
moued. to putte me into pe sil  
terne. for pe while i come. an  
oy god don bifore me. ihu seyn  
to hy. rise up. take pi bed f go.

and andou pe mā was maid ho  
ol. f took vp his bed f wente for  
and it was sabat. in pat day. f  
foze pe ierlm seide to hi. pat was  
maid hool. it is sabat. it is not  
leettul to pee. to take away pi  
bed. he answerte to he. he pat  
made me hool. seide to me. take  
pi bed f go. f foze pei aride hy.  
what mā is pat. pat seide to p.  
take vp pi bed f go. but he pat  
was maid hool. wite not who  
it was. and ihu boude a wey f  
pe peple pat was sett in pe pla  
ce. after ward ihu foud hi in pe  
temple. f seide to hy. lo pou art  
maid hool. now nyle pou do syn  
ne. lest ony woyle pig. bifalle to  
pee. vilke mā wente f telde to pe  
ierlm. f it was ihu f made hy hool.  
f foze pe ierlm pursuete ihu.  
for he dide pis pig in pe sabat.  
f ihu answerte to he. my fadir  
worchip til now. f i worche  
perfore pe ierlm souzte more  
to sle hi. for not oonly he brak  
pe sabat. but he seide pat god was  
his fadir. f made hy euene to  
god. f foze ihu answerte. f seide  
to hem. treuly treuly i sepe to  
zoi. pe sone may not of hy sylf  
do ony pig. but pat pig. f he le  
cy pe fadir doynge. for what  
euer pigis he doy. pe sone doy  
in lyk maner. po pigis. for pe fa  
dir louey pe sone. f ihu wip to hi  
alle pigis pat he doy. and he sh  
al shewe to hym greter werki  
pan pe se. f ze wondren. for as  
pe fadir reisy deed me f quye  
ney. so pe sone sheney who he  
wolt. for ney pe fadir. ingey o  
my man. but hay zoi in ech doin

to pe sone. f alle me honoum. pe  
sone. as pei honoure pe fadir.  
he pat honourey not pe sone.  
honourey not pe fadir. pat seide  
hi. trenli trenli. f seide to zoi. pat  
he pat heery my word f bileden  
to hi. pat sente me. hay euell  
ge lyf. and he comey not into dom.  
but passy fro deer into lyf. tren  
li. trenli. f seide to zoi. for pe our  
comey f now it is. whie deede  
me shulen heer. pe vois of god  
dis sone. f pei pat heere. shule  
hye. for as pe fadir hay lyf in  
hy self. so he zaf. to pe sone. to ha  
ue lyf in hy self. he zaf to hi. polker.  
to make dom. for he is māns so  
ne. nyle ze wondre pis. for pe our  
comey. in which alle me pat be  
in briels. shule heer. pe vois  
of godis sone. f pei pat hando  
goode pigis. shulen go into a  
zen ryfing of lyf. but pei pat han  
don ryel pigis. into azen ryfing  
of dom. f may no pig do of my  
self. but as i heer. i deme. f my  
dom is nylt. for i seke not my  
wille. but pe wille of pe fadir. f  
sente me. f i bere witneſſig  
of my self. my witneſſig is not  
trewe. anoyr is pat berry wit  
neſſig of me. f i woot pat his  
witneſſig is trewe. pat he berry  
of me. ze senten to iohu. f he  
bar witneſſig to trewe. but i  
take not witneſſig of mā. but  
i sepe yes pigis. pat ze be laif.  
he was a bwaterne brenyng. f  
shynge. but ze wolt not gla  
den at an our in his lizt. but i  
haue more witneſſig pan iohu.  
for pe werkis pat my fadir zaf  
to me. to parfourme he. vilke



werkis pat / do. beren witneslig  
of me. pat ye fadir sente me / &  
ye fadir pat sente me. he bar  
witneslig of me. ney ze herden  
euer his vois. ney ze syzen his  
liknesse. & ze han not his word  
dibellig in zoun. for ze bileneu  
not to hi whom he sente / seke ze  
scripturis. in ye which ze gesel  
sen to haue enlastige lyf. & ro  
it ben pat beren witneslig of  
me. & ze wolen not come to me.  
pat ze haue lyf. / take not cle  
renesse of me. but / haue kno  
wun zoun. ze han not ye loue of  
god in zoun. / I cam in ye name of  
my fadir. & ze tooken not me.  
if anoy come in his owne name.  
ze shulde resseyue hi. / how moou  
ze bileneu pat resseyue glorie ech  
of opyn. & ze seken not ye glorie  
pat is of god aloone. / nyle ze gesel  
se p. / I am to accuse zoun anentis  
ye fadir. it is moyses pat accu  
syt zoun. in who ze hope. for if ze  
bileneu to moyses. panetun ze  
shulden bileneu also to me. for he  
wzoot of me. but if ze bileneu not  
to his letris. how shulde ze bi  
leneu to my wordis. // **C. vi.**

**A**far pes pigis ihc wen  
te ouer ye see of galile.  
pat is tiberias. & a gre  
et mknude siwede hi. for per  
syzen ye tokenes p. he dide on  
hem pat were syke. pfoze ihc  
wente into an hyl. & sat per. wip  
hile distyphs. & ye pass was ful  
nyz. a feeste day of ye ieris.  
pfoze wane ihc hadde list vp his  
pyen. & hadde seyn pat a greet  
mknude cam to hi. he seyn to  
filip. wherof shulen we bye

loones. p. pes me etc. / but he sei  
de pis pig. teptige hi. for he w  
te what he was to do. filip an  
sweride to hi. ye loones of rike  
shuld pens. shulen not to he.  
p. ech man take a litil what / soon  
of hile distyphs. and zoun ye bo  
pir of symon petre. sey to hi.  
a chyl is here pat hay fyne bar  
ly loones. & twey fishis. but  
what ben pesle among so manye.  
pfoze ihc sey. make hem sitte to  
ye mete. & pwas moche hey in  
ye place. and so men saten to  
ye mete as fyne poulend in nou  
bre. and ihc took fyne loones.  
& whie he hadde do panktis.  
he departide to me pat saten  
to ye mete. & also of ye fishis.  
as moche as per wolden. & whie  
per weren fillid. he seide to hile  
distyphs. gaderen ze ye relis pat  
ben lest. p. per peristhe not. & p  
per gaderide. & filliden twelf. of  
fyns of relise of ye fyne barly  
loones. & twey fishis. pat lete  
to hem pat hadde etu. pfoze ye  
me whie ye hadden seyn ye sig  
ne pat he hadde don. seide. for p  
is verily ye pfete pat is to co  
me in to ye world. and whie ihc  
hadde knowun. p. per were to co  
me to take hi. & make hi pig.  
he flez aloone eft into an hyl. &  
whie euentyd was comu. hile  
distyphs wente dou to ye see. &  
per wente vp into a boot. & per  
came ou ye see to casarnan. &  
derknessis weren mand p. ane.  
& ihc was not come to he. & for  
a greet wynd blew. ye see roos  
vp. pfoze whane per hadden ro  
wid as fyne. & twenty finlon

gis oz patty. per seyn ihc walki  
ge on ye see. & to be nyz ye boot.  
and per dreed. & he seide to hem.  
I am. nyle ze drede. pfoze per  
wolde take hi to ye boot. & anoy  
ye boot was at ye lond. to which  
per wenten. **C. vii.** On petop day ye  
peple p. stood ou ye see. p. p  
was noon opir boot. ye but con  
and pat ihc entride not wip hi  
se distyphs into ye boot. but hi  
se distyphs aloone wente. but  
oper bootis came fro tiberias.  
bifidis ye place wher per hadde  
etu breed. & diden panktis to  
god. pfoze whie ye peple hadde  
seyn. p. ihc was not per. ne p  
hile distyphs. per wenten vp in  
to bootis. & came to casarnan  
sefige ihc. and whie per hadde  
fondu hi ouer ye see. per seiden  
to hi. rabby how come pou hidur.  
ihc answeride to hem. & seide. treu  
li treuli. / seide to zoun. ze seke me  
not for ze syzen ye myrakis. but  
for ze eten of loones. & were fil  
led. worche not mete pat per u  
chip. but pat dwellyn into euil  
tuge lyf. which mete manys lone  
shal zune to zoun. for god ye fadir  
hay markid hi. pfoze per seide  
to hi. what shulen we do. p. we  
worche ye werkis of god. / ihc an  
sweride. & seide to he. pis is ye werk  
of god. p. ze bileneu to hi. who he  
seute. pfoze per seide to hi. what  
tokene p. ane doust pou. pat we  
seen. & bileneu to pee. / what worchit  
pou. ou. fadris eeten manys in  
desert. as it is writu. he zaf to  
hem breed. fro heuene to ete. p  
foze ihc sey to he. treuli treuli  
/ seye to zoun. moyses zaf zoun not

breed fro heuene. but my fadir  
zyney zoun very breed fro heuene.  
for it is very breed pat comey  
dou fro heuene. & zune lyf to ye  
world. pfoze per seiden to him. lord  
p. ane zune us pis breed. & ihc seide  
to he. / I am breed of lyf. he pat  
comey to me. shal not hugre.  
he pat bileneu in me. shal neue  
p. lyf. but / seide to zoun. ze han  
seyn me. & ze bileneu not. **C. viii.**  
ymg pat ye fadir zyney to me.  
shal come to me. & / shal not cal  
te hi out. pat comey to me. for /  
cam dou fro heuene. not p. / do  
my wille. but ye wille of hi pat  
seute me. & pis is ye wille of ye  
fadir pat sente me. pat al ymg  
p. ye fadir zaf me. / I lese nouzt  
of it. but azen reule it in ye laste  
day. & pis is ye wille of my fadir.  
pat sente me. p. ech ma pat seey ye  
sone. & bileneu in hi. haue euil  
tuge lyf. & / shal azen reule him  
in ye laste day. pfoze ieris gruc  
chide of hi. for he hadde leid. / I am  
breed pat cam dou fro heuene.  
& per seide. whie pis is not ihc. ye  
sone of ioseph. whos fadir. & mod  
re han knowun how p. ane sey pis.  
p. / I cam dou fro heuene. pfoze  
ihc answeride. & seide to hem. nyle  
ze grucche to gidze. **C. ix.** Do ma may  
come to me. but if p. fadir pat  
sente me drawe him. & / shal  
zen reple hi in ye laste day. it is  
writu in pfetis. and alle me shu  
len be able for to be tauzt of god.  
ech ma p. herte of ye fadir. & hay  
lerned. comey to me. not for any  
ma hay seyn ye fadir. but pis pat  
is of god hay seyn ye fadir. soreli  
lovely. / seye to zoun. he pat bileneu







see the good & cryed & seide / if  
any man purstip: come he to me  
& drynke / he pat bileren i me as  
ye scripture seip: floodis of quike  
water shulen flowe fro his wom-  
be / but he seide pis pig of ye spi-  
rit: who me pat bileren in hi  
shulen take / for ye spirit was  
not yet zorn: for he was not yet  
glorified / pfore of pat cupanwe  
whie pei hadden herd pes wor-  
dis of hi: pei seiden / pis is only  
a pfecte / ope seiden: pis is crist  
but liue leiden / wher et comen  
fro galilee: / wher ye scripture  
seip not: pat of ye seed of dauid  
& of ye castel of bethleem wher  
dauid was: et comen / pefore  
dilectioun was maad amog ye pe-  
ple for hi / for liue of hem wolde  
haue takn hi: but no ma sette  
hondis on hi / pfore ye mynistres  
came to bethsais & farisees: &  
pei seide to he / whi brouste ze not  
hi: / ye mynistres answereiden / ne  
ne man spak so: as pis ma spe-  
ke / pefore ye farisees answere-  
den to hem / wher ze ben dilectioun  
also: / wher oure of ye pures or of  
ye farisees: bileren in hi: but  
pis peple pat knowen not ye la-  
we: ben cursid / nydome seip to  
hem: he pat cam to hi by nyte: /  
was oon of hem / wher oure laue  
demer amon: but it haue first  
herd of hi: & knowe what he do-  
ip: / pei answereide: & seide to hi  
wher p art a ma of galilee also:  
seke p scripturis: & seip: p a pfecte  
reip not of galilee: & pei tueden  
azen: ech to his hous /

**B**ut he wete / **John**  
into ye mount of olyuete:

& eerly eft he cam into ye temple  
and al ye peple cam to hi: & he  
sat & taughte he / & scribis & fari-  
sees byrgen an woman takn ma-  
voutre: & pei sette hir in ye  
myddel: & seiden to hi / maist / pis  
woma is now takn in auoutre:  
& in ye laue moyses comandide  
us: to doone suche / pfore what  
seist thou: and pei seiden pis pig  
temprige hi: / & pei myzten ac-  
cuse hi: & he boudid hi self don  
& woot wy his figur in ye eere  
and whie pei abiden at ynge hi:  
he reilide hi self & seide to hem  
he of zorn pat is wyoute syne:  
first caste a stoon into hir: & eft  
he boudid hi self: & woot in ye  
eere / & pei heerige pes pigis we-  
ten awei: oon after anow: & pei  
biginen fro ye eldre me: & he  
diseite aloone: & ye woman ston-  
dige in ye myddel: & he reilide hi  
self: & seide to hi / woman wher  
ben pei pat acuseden pee: no  
ma hap dapned pee: she seide / no  
man lord: / he seide to hi / neyr  
i shal dapne pee / go pou & now  
asturward nyle p syne more: /  
fore eft he spak to hem & seide  
/ i am ye lizt of ye world / he pat  
suey me: walken not in derkelis:  
lis: but shal haue ye lizt of lye  
pfore ye farisees seide / pou beris  
witneslig of pi self: pi witneslig  
is not trewe / he answereide &  
seide to he / and if i bere witnes-  
lig of my self: my witneslig is  
trewe / for i woot fro whens  
i cam: & whidur i go: but ze w-  
te not fro whens i cam: ne whi-  
dur i go: for ze deme after ye fle-  
sch: but i deme no ma: & if i de-

me: my dom is trewe / for i am  
not aloone: but i & pe fadir pat  
seint me / and in zorn laue it  
is writu: / p ye witneslig of tiber  
me is trewe / i am pat bere wit-  
neslig of my self: & pe fadir  
pat seint me: beren witneslig  
of me / pfore pei seiden to hi / whe-  
re is pi fadir: / he answereide me  
pir ze konne me: ne ze knowe  
my fadir: / if ze knewe me: pa-  
uentur ze shulde knowe also  
my fadir: / he spak pes wordis  
in ye trelerie: techige in ye te-  
ple: & no ma wot hi: for his our  
cam not yet / pfore eft he seide  
to hem / lo i go & ze shulen seke  
me: & ze shulen dye in zorn: / hi  
ne / whidur i go: ze mowen not  
come / pfore ye ierwis seiden  
/ wher he shal sle hi self: for he  
seip: whidur i go: ze mowen not  
come: & he seide to he / ze ben of  
nyre: / i am of above: ze ben of  
pis world: / i am not of pis wor-  
ld: / pfore i seide to zorn: pat ze sh-  
ulen die i zorn: / syne / for if ze  
bileren not pat i am: ze shu-  
len die in zorn: syne / pfore pei  
seiden to hi / who art thou: / he  
seide to he / ye bigynig which  
also speke to zorn: / i haue many  
pigis to speke & to deme of zorn:  
but he pat seint me: is sofast:  
& i speke in ye world pes pigis  
pat i herde of hi: and pei knele  
not: / p he depit his fadir god: / p  
fore he seip to hem / whie ze han  
reliid mans sone: / rane ze shule  
knowe: / i am & of my self: i do  
no pig: but as my fadir taughte  
me: / i speke pes pigis / and he pat  
seint me: is wy me: & seint me

not aloone: for i do enmore po-  
pulis pat ben pleynge to hym  
whane he spak pes pigis: manye  
bileren in hi: / pfore he seide to pe-  
ierwis: pat bileren in hi: / if ze dis-  
ellen in my word: verily ze shule  
be my diluplis: & ze shulen knowe  
pe trewe: & pe trewe shal ma-  
ke zorn fre: / pfore ye ierwis answere-  
iden to hi / we ben ye seed of abra-  
ham: & we seruete nene to man  
hon seist pou: / ze shulde be fre:  
he answereide to he / trenh trenh  
i seie to zorn: ech ma pat douy syne:  
is seruait of syne: & ye seruait  
diseilip not in ye hous wyoute  
ende: but ye sone diseilip wyoute  
ende: / pfore if ye sone make zorn fre:  
verily ze shulen be fre: / i woot  
p ze ben abrahams sones: but ze  
seken to sle me: for my word ta-  
kep not in zorn: / i speke po pigis  
pat i leiz at my fadir: & ze doen  
po pigis: / p ze syzen at zorn: fad-  
er answereide & seiden to hi / abra-  
ham is our fadir: / he seip to hem  
if ze ben pe sones of abrahim: do  
ze ye werkis of abrahim: but now  
ze seken to sle me a ma: pat ha-  
ue spoke to zorn trewe pat i her-  
de of god / abrahim dide not pis  
pig: ze doen ye werkis of zorn  
fadir: / pfore pei seiden to hym  
we ben not born of fornicacioun:  
we han o fadir god: but he seip  
to hem / if god wer zorn: fadir: so  
peh ze shulden loue me: for i pal-  
ite fory of god: & cam / for weyr  
i cam of my self: but he seint me  
whi knowe ze not my speche:  
for ze mowen not heere my word  
ze ben of ye fadir: ye denel: & ze  
wolen do ye desiris of zorn: fadir:



he was a malleer fro re bigynnyng  
and he stood not in trewe: for tre  
we is not in hyr whiche he speketh  
a lesyng: he speketh of his owne  
for he is a lyer & fadir of it: but  
for he seide trewe: ze bileue not  
to me: who of you shal repreue  
me of synne: if I seie trewe: a  
whi bileuen ze not to me: he  
is of god: heer y pe wordis of  
god: perfore ze heeren not: for  
ze ben not of god: perfore pe ieris  
anherite & seiden: wher we seie  
not wel: y pon art a samaritā: &  
hast a denel: ihe anherite & sei  
de: y haue not a denel: but y ho  
noure my fadir: & ze han vno  
nourid me: for y seke not my  
glorie: yis he pat seketh & demer  
treuli treuli: seie to you: if ony  
man kepe my word: he shal not  
taste depe wyponne ende: perfor  
ye ieris seiden: now we han kuo  
wū: pat you hast a denel: abra  
ham is deed: & ye pletis: & you  
seist if ony man kepe my word:  
he shal not taste depe wyponne  
ende: wher you art gretter pā  
our fadir abraham: pat is deed:  
& ye pletis ben doed: whom ma  
keth you y silf: ihe anherite  
if y glorie my silf: my glorie  
is nouit: my fadir is pat glori  
fiep me: who ze sepen y he is you  
re god: & ze han not kuowū hyr  
but y haue kuowū hyr: & if y seie  
y kuowe hyr not: y shal be a ly  
ere lichy to you: but y kuowe hyr:  
& y kepe his word: abraham you  
fadir gladde to se my day: & he  
syx & iopete: yane pe ieris seide  
to hyr: you hast not yet fisyer:  
& hast you seyn abraham: perfore

he seide to he: treuli treuli: per  
for he seide to you: bifore y abraham sh  
ulde be: y am: perfore yei token  
proues to caste to hyr: but ihe had  
de hyr: & wente out of re temple:  
Id ihe passige: **A**nd ihe  
syx amā blund fro re bur  
ye: and hile dyluphis arid  
hyr: maistur what synede: yis mā  
oz his eldus: y he shulde be born  
blund: ihe anherite: nesh yis mā  
synede nesh his eldus: but y re  
wertis of god be shewid in hyr:  
it byhoney me to worche ye wer  
tis of hyr: pat seinte me: as louge  
as ye day is: ye myxt shal come:  
whiche no mā may worche: as louge as  
I am y re word: y am yelst of re word:  
whiche he hadde seid: pes pigis: he seide  
to ye erpe: & made depe of re spo  
tile: & anoyntide ye depe on his  
yzen: & seide to hyr: go & be pon wa  
ter in re watir of siloe: pat is  
to seie seint: yane he wente & wa  
shide: & cam seynge: and so nesh  
elous & yei pat hadde seyn hyr  
bifore: for he was a begger: seide  
wher yis is not he: pat sat & beg  
gide: ower me seiden y yis it is: ower  
me seide nay: but he is lyt hyr:  
but he seide: y am: y fore yei sei  
den to hyr: how ben ym yzen ope  
nyd: he anherite: yilke mā pat  
is seid ihe: made depe & anoyntide  
my yzen: & seide to me: go you to  
ye watir of siloe: & wanthe: &  
y wente & wanthe: & syx: and  
yei seide to hyr: wher is he: he sei  
de: y woot not: yei leden hyr: pat  
was blund to ye farisees: and it  
was sabat: whiche ihe made depe:  
& openyde hile yzen: est pe farise  
es ariden hyr: how he hadde seyn

and he seide to he: he seide to me  
depe on ye yzen: & y wanthe: &  
y se: y fore sume of ye farisees  
seiden: yis mā is not of god: pat  
kepy not ye sabat: ower men  
seiden: how may a syful man  
do pes signes: & ar yf was amōs  
hem: y fore yei seiden estloone to  
ye blund man: what seint you of  
hyr: pat openyde ym yzen: & he  
seide y he is a plete: perfore ye  
wis bileueden not of hyr: y he  
was blund & hadde seyn: til yei  
depiden his fadir: & modur: y had  
de seyn: & yei aride he: & seide: is  
yis zome sone: which ze seiden was  
born blund: how yane seep he now:  
his fadir & modur anheride to  
hem: & seide: we wite y yis is  
our sone: & y he was born blund:  
but how he seep now: we witen  
net: oz who opynede his yze: we  
witen nere: are ze hyr: he hay age:  
speke he hyr silf: his fadir & mo  
dur seiden pes pigis: for yei dzed  
den ye ieris: for yane ye ieris  
hadten collynd: y if ony mā kuo  
wlechte hyr et: he shulde be  
don out of re synagoge: y fore his  
fadir & modur seiden: y he hay a  
ge: are ze hyr: y fore estloone yei  
depiden ye mā: pat was blund:  
& seiden to hyr: yne you glorie  
to god: we witen y yis mā is a  
synere: yane he seide: if he is a  
synere: y woot net: o pig: y woot  
y whiche: y was blund: now y se  
perfore yei seiden to hyr: what dide  
he to pee: how openyde he ym  
yzen: he anheride to hyr: y sei  
de to you now: & ze herde: what  
wolen ze estloone heet: wher  
ze wolen be maid hile dyluphis:

y fore yei curide hyr & seide: be y  
his dyluple: we ben dyluphis of  
moyses: we wite y god spak to  
moyses: but we kuowen not yis  
of whems he is: yilke mā anher  
ride & seide to hem: for ym yis is a  
wonderful pig: y ze witen not  
of whems he is: & he hay openyde  
myne yzen: and we wite y god  
heer y not syful me: but if ony  
mā is worshipper of god: & do y  
his wille: he heer y hyr: fro re n  
world it is not herd: y ony mā  
openyde ye yzen of a blund born  
mā: but yis wer of god: he myz  
te not do ony pig: yei anheride:  
& seiden to hyr: you art al born in  
synes: & techit you us: & yei  
putten hyr out: ihe herde y yei had  
den put hyr out: & whane he hadde  
fonde hyr: he seide to hyr: bileuest y  
in pe sone of god: he anheride  
& seide: lord who is he: y y bileue  
in hyr: & ihe seide to hyr: and you  
hast seyn hyr: & he it is: pat speketh  
my pee: & he seide: lord y bileue:  
& he fel don & worshipide hyr:  
y fore ihe seide to hyr: y cam ito yis  
world into don: y yei pat seen  
not: se: and yei pat seen be maid  
blund: & sume of ye farisees her  
den pat were wy hyr: & yei seide  
to hyr: wher we ben blunde: ihe  
seide to he: if ze were blunde: ze  
shulde not haue synne: but now  
ze seye y we seen: zome synne  
dwellhyr stille: **A**nd ihe  
seide: yei treuli: y seie to y:  
he pat comen not i bipe  
dore into pe foold of sheep: but  
shep by anoy wepe: is a nyxt re  
ef & a day peef: but he pat en  
try bi pe dore: is ye sheparde



of ye sheep to vis ye power openy:  
 & ye sheep heere his vois: & he  
 clepþ his owne sheep by name.  
 & ledy hem out: & whie he hay  
 don out his owne sheep. he goy  
 bifore hem & ye sheep suen hym.  
 for þei knowen his vois: but þei  
 suen not an ahen. but fleen fro  
 hi: for þei han not knowe þe vois  
 of aheus: ihe seide to hem þis pro  
 uerbe: but þei knewen not: whi  
 he spak to hem: þe seide ihe seide to  
 he eftsoone: treuh treuh: i seye  
 to you: þe am þe doze of þe shee  
 p: as manye as han come: we  
 ren nyzt peenes & day peenes: but  
 ye sheep herden not he: i am  
 þe doze of ony mā shal entre by  
 me: he shal be saued: & he shal  
 go yn & shal go out: & he shal syn  
 de lese þis: anyzt þeef comy not:  
 but þe shee. sle. & lede: & i cam  
 y þei hane lyf: & hane more ple  
 renouly. **I** am a good shepar  
 de: a good sheparde: þiney his  
 lyf for his sheep: but an hyrd  
 hyne & þat is not ye sheparde.  
 whos ben not ye sheep his ony  
 ne: seep a wolf comyge. & he  
 leuey ye sheep & fleep: for he  
 is an hyrd hyne. & it þe teyney  
 not to hi of ye sheep: i am a go  
 od sheparde: & i knowe my shee  
 p: & my sheep knowen me: as  
 ye fadir hay knowen me: i knowe  
 ye fadir: & i putte my lyf  
 for my sheep: i hane ower: & i  
 eep þat ben not of þis folde: &  
 it bihoney me to bryge hem to  
 gader. & þei shulen heer my  
 vois: & it shal be maad o foold.  
 & o sheparde: þe foz ye fadir  
 louey me: for i putte my lyf.

þe wolf rany  
 shep. & dyspar  
 pley ye sheep  
 & þe hyrd hyne  
 fleep.

pat eftsoone i take it: no mā  
 taky it fro me: but i putte it  
 of my self: i hane power to put  
 te it: & i hane power to take  
 it azen: vis maide met: i hane  
 taky of my fadir. **I** am  
 cion was maad a mong þe  
 wis: for þes wordis: & manye of  
 he seiden: he hay a deuyl & mad  
 dy: what heereu ze hy: ower: me  
 seiden: þes wordis ben not of a  
 man þat hay a feend: wher þe  
 deuyl may opene þe yzen of  
 de me. **I** am þe fadir of þe  
 halewys of þe temple: iheru  
 maad in ierlm: & it was iheru  
 & ihe walkide in þe temple: i þe  
 porche of salomo: þe foz þe ierlm  
 camen aboute hym: & seiden to  
 hy: how longe taky þou a wey  
 oure soule: if þou art crist:  
 seie þou to us openly: ihe an  
 swerde to hem: i speke to you  
 & ze bilenen not: ye ierlm þat  
 i do in þe name of my fadir: be  
 ren witnessig of me: but ze bi  
 lenen not: for ze ben not of my  
 sheep: my sheep heere my vois:  
 & i knowe hem: & þei swaen  
 me: and i yme to he cristliche  
 lyf: & þei shulen not perithe  
 wyrtten ende: & noon shal ra  
 nythe he fro my hond: þat þis  
 þat my fadir: & to me: is more  
 þa alle ygis: & no mā may ra  
 nythe fro my fadris hond: i  
 & ye fadir ben con: þe ierlm  
 tooken up stons: to stoon hi:  
 ihe answerde to he: i hane the  
 wid to you many gode werkis  
 of my fadir: for which werke  
 of hem stoon ze me: þe ierlm  
 answerde to hi: we stoon þe

not of good werk: but blasse  
 mye: and for you syn þat  
 aman: maky vi self god: ihe  
 answerde to he: wher it is not  
 writen in zoure lawe: þe seide  
 ze ben goddis: if he seide þe  
 werke goddis: to whiche þe wo  
 rd of god was maad: & septe  
 may not be vndon: ylle þe  
 fadir hay halewid & hay set to þe  
 worlde: seye þe þou blasse me  
 for i seide i am godis sone:  
 if i do not þe werkis of my fadir:  
 nyle ze bileue to me: but if i do  
 þe werkis: þe wolen not bileue to me:  
 bileue ze to þe werkis: þe knowe  
 & bileue: i þe fadir is i me & i  
 in þe fadir: þe foz þei souze to  
 take hi: & he wente out of her ho  
 dis: and he wente eftsoone ouer  
 iordan: into þat place wher iohu  
 was first baptisge: & he dreke  
 þe: & manye camen to hi & lei  
 den: for iohu dide no myracle:  
 & alle ygis what enie iohu seide  
 of þis: werke soye: & manye bi  
 leueden in hy. **C. xxi.**  
**A**d þer was a syn mā  
 lalarus of betanys: of þe  
 castel of marye & martha hile  
 sistris: & it was marie which  
 anoynted þe lord wyth oyneuet.  
 & wypte his feet wyth hir heeris:  
 whos broþr lalarus was syn: &  
 foz hile sistris senten to hi: &  
 seiden: lord lo he who þou louest:  
 is hile: & ihe herde & seide to hem:  
 vis hileuelle is not to þe deye:  
 but for þe glorie of god: þe man  
 was lone be glorified by hi: & ihe  
 louede martha: & hir suster ma  
 rye & lalarus: þe foz whie ihe  
 herde þe: he was syn: þane he

drellde in þe same place twey  
 dayes: & aftr þes ygis: he lei  
 de to hile distyphs: go we eft in  
 to iudee: þe distyphs seyen to hi:  
 maistur now þe ierlm souren  
 foz to stoon þe: & eft goyt þe  
 yidm: ihe answerde: wher þe  
 ben not aheue onis of þe day:  
 if ony mā wandre in þe day: he  
 hyt not: for he seep þe list of  
 þis worlde: but if he wandre i þe  
 nyzt: he stombly: foz list is not  
 in hi: & he sey þes ygis: and af  
 tr þes ygis he sey to hem: la  
 larius oure frend slepy: but  
 i go to reule hy fro sleep: þe foz  
 hile distyphs seide: lord if he sle  
 py: he shal be sauf: but ihe had  
 de seide of his deye: but þe gelli  
 den þe seide of slepy: of sleep  
 rane þe foz ihe seide to hem opp  
 ly: lalarus is deed: & i hane ioye  
 for you: þat ze bileue: for i was  
 not þe: but go we to hi: þe foz  
 thonis þat is seide didm: seide  
 to enie distyphs: go we also:  
 & we ower wy hy: & go ihe cam:  
 & fond hi hange rane foure  
 dayes in þe graue: & berhanpe  
 was bishpis ierlm as it were  
 fiftene hir longis: & maye of  
 þe ierlm camen to marye &  
 martha: to confort hem of  
 her broþr: þe foz as martha her  
 de þat ihe cam: she ran to hy  
 but marie sat at home: þe foz  
 martha seide to ihe: lord if you  
 haddist be here: my broþr had  
 de not be deed: but now i moot:  
 þat what enie ygis þou shalt  
 are of god: god shal yme to þe  
 ihe seip to hir: þe broþr shal ryle  
 azen: martha seip to hi: i moot



þæt he ſhal riſe azen in þe arysing  
 azen in þe laſte day. ihe ſey to hir  
 I am azen riſing & lyf. he þat  
 bileueþ in me. zhe þouȝ he be deed.  
 he ſhal lyue. & ech þat lyueþ & bi  
 leueþ in me. ſhal not dye wip  
 outen ende. bileueſt þou þis þing  
 ſhe ſey to hi. he lord. I haue bile  
 ued þæt þou art cit þe ſone of þe  
 lyuynge god. þat haſt come into  
 þis worlð. and whiſe ſhe hadde  
 ſeid þis þing. ſhe wente & clep  
 de marie hir ſiſtir in clyence &  
 ſeide. þe maſtir comeþ & clep  
 þe. ſhe aſ the herde aroos and  
 & cam to hi. & ihe cam not ȝit in  
 to þe caſtel. but he was ȝit in þat  
 place. where martha hadde com  
 in azen hi. þæt he ſey to ihe. þæt  
 weren wip hir in þe hous & cou  
 forȝiden hir. whiſe þe ſpen ma  
 rye þæt ſhe roos liſpe & wente  
 out. þe ſiſbeden hir & ſeiden. for  
 ſhe goy to þe graue. to wepe  
 þe. but whiſe marie was come  
 wher. ihe was. ſhe ſeynge hym  
 ſelde don to hiſe feet & ſeide to hi  
 lord if þou haſdſt be her. my  
 broþr hadde not be deed. & þæt  
 whiſe ihu ſay hir wepynge. & þe  
 wiſe wepynge þat weren wip hir.  
 he made noȝle in ſpirit. & troubl  
 de hi ſelf & ſeide. wher haȝe leid  
 hi. þe ſeyen to hi. lord come & ſe. &  
 ihe wepte. þæt he ſey to ihe. ſeiden  
 lo how he louede hi. & ſiſme of he  
 ſeiden. wher þis man þat open  
 de þe þen of þe box. blind ma  
 nyȝte not make þæt þis ſhulde  
 not die. þæt he ſey to ihe. eſt makige  
 noȝle in hi ſelf. cam to þe gra  
 ue. & þe was a deue. & a ſoon  
 was leid þæt he ſey. take

ze awei þe ſoon. martha þe ſi  
 ter of hi þat was deed. ſey to hi  
 lord he ſpynkeþ now. for he haȝ  
 leye ſon. dayes. ihe ſey to hir  
 haue. I not ſeid to þe. þæt he  
 bileueſt þou ſhalt ſe þe glorie of  
 god. þæt he ſey to ihe. ſeiden  
 on. & ihe liſte vp hiſe þen. & ſeide  
 fadir. I do þanþiȝis to þe. for  
 þou haſt herd me. & I write þæt  
 eimozee hee riſt me. but for þe  
 peple þat ſtondyþ aboute. I ſeide.  
 þat þe bileue þæt þou haſt ſent  
 me. whiſe he hadde ſeid þe þi  
 giſ. he criede wip a greet vois  
 laſarus come þou forþ. & anon  
 he þat was deed. cam out. þou  
 du þe hondis & feet wip bondis.  
 & hiſe face bounden wip a ſudare.  
 & ihe ſey to hem. vnbynde ze hi.  
 & enſtre ze hi to go forþ. þæt he  
 manye of þe ieiſis þat came  
 to marie & martha. & ſpen  
 what þiȝis ihu diȝe. bileueden  
 in hi. but ſiſme of he wenten  
 to þe farilees. & ſeide to he. what  
 þiȝis ihe hadde don. þæt he ſey to  
 hi. þe farilees gadre a cou  
 cil azen ihu & ſeiden. what do we.  
 for þis maȝon many myracis.  
 if we leue hi þis. alle me ſhulen  
 bileue in hi. and romayus ſhulen  
 come & ſhulen take ouȝ place.  
 onre folk. but oon of hem cayſas  
 by name. whiſe he was biſhop of  
 þat zeer. ſeide to he. ze witte noȝ  
 ne reiken. þæt he ſpedy to þou þo  
 ma dye for þe peple. & þæt he ſey to  
 þe. þe not. but he ſeide. not þe  
 þiȝis of hi ſelf. but whiſe he was  
 biſhop of þat zeer. he pſeide. þæt  
 ihu was to dye for þe folk. & not on  
 ly for þe folk. but þat he ſhulde

gadre ito oon þe ſoues of god. þat  
 weren ſaterid. þæt he ſey to þat day  
 þe riſten. for to ſle hi. þe for  
 ihe walkide not þane openly among  
 þe ieiſis. but he wente into a citei  
 biſdis deſert. into a citei þat is  
 ſeid eſſen. & þe he dwellede wip hi  
 ſe diſciþlis. and þe paſt of þe ieiſis  
 was up. & manye of þe citrei  
 wenten up to ierlm biſore þe paſt  
 to halewe hem ſelf. þæt he ſey to  
 ten ihu. & ſpoken to gadre ſtondyge  
 in þe teple. what geilen ze. for he  
 comen not to þe feſte day. for þe  
 biſhop & farilees hadde ȝoum a  
 maſſemet. þæt he ſey to ma. knowe  
 wher he is. & he ſeide. þæt he ta  
 ke hym. **C. 27. 4.**

**¶** Berfore ihe biſore ſure day  
 es of paſt cam to betanþe  
 wher laſarus hadde be deed. whiſe  
 ihe reſide. & þe made to hi a loup  
 þe. & martha wipynſtride to hi.  
 & laſarus was oon of men þat ſa  
 tenat þe mete wip hi. þæt he ma  
 rie took a poind of oynemet of  
 trewe narde preçious. & anoyu  
 tide þe feet of ihu. & wipte hiſe  
 feet wip hir heeris. & þe hous was  
 fulfillid of þe ſanour of þe oyne  
 met. þæt he ſeide. iudas ſtarioth oon of  
 hiſe diſciþlis. þat was to biſtre  
 hi. ſeide. whiſe is not þis oynemet  
 ſeld for þe hūdȝid þen. & is ȝoum  
 to nedȝ me. but he ſeide þis þiȝ.  
 not for it þe teȝnede to hi of ne  
 dy me. but for he was a peef. &  
 he hadde þe purſis & þe þe þe þe  
 þat weren ſent. þæt he ſeide.  
 ſuffre ze hir. þæt he ſey to þe day of  
 my buriȝng. ſhe ſeide. þat for  
 ze ſhulen eimozee haue poze  
 me wip ȝou. but ze ſhulde not

eimozee haue me. þæt he ſey moche  
 peple of ieiſis knew. þæt he was  
 þe. & þe came not oonly for  
 ihu. but to ſe laſarus. whom  
 he hadde reſid fro deap. but þe  
 þen of þe preçis þen to ſle  
 laſarus. for manye of þe ieiſis  
 wente awei for hi. & bileueden  
 in ihu. but on þe moȝe. a mo  
 che peple þat cam to gadre to þe  
 feſte day. whiſe þe hadde herd  
 þæt he cam to ierlm. taken brau  
 chis of palmes & came forþ azen  
 hi. & cryeden. oſana. bleſid is þe  
 kiȝ of iſrl. þat comen in þe na  
 me of þe lord. and ihe ſond aȝong  
 alle. & ſat on hym aſ it is writu  
 þe douȝtir of ſponȝyle þou dze  
 de. lo þi kiȝ. comen. ſittige on an  
 alle ſole. hiſe diſciþlis knewen  
 not firſt þe þiȝis. but whiſe  
 ihe was gloriſied. þane þe had  
 den myȝe. for þe þiȝis were wri  
 tu of hi. & þe þiȝis þe diȝe to  
 hi. þæt he ſey to þe peple. bar witneſ  
 ſing. þat was wip hi. whiſe he  
 clepde laſarus fro þe graue. &  
 reſide hi fro deap. and þe for  
 þe peple cam & mette wip hym.  
 for þe herde þæt he hadde don þis  
 ſigne. þe for þe farilees ſeide  
 to he ſelf. ze ſeen þæt we pſaten no  
 þiȝ. lo al þe worlð wente aſtir hi.  
 and þe were ſiſme þe þe me.  
 of hem þat hadden come up to  
 worlthipe in þe feſte day. & þe  
 ie camen to ſiſap. þat was of  
 beſſayda of galile. & þe ieden  
 hi & ſeiden. ſiſme we wole ſe ihu.  
 filip comen & ſey to andrew. eſt  
 andrew & filip ſeiden to ihu. and  
 ihe anſwerde to he & ſeide. þe  
 our comen þæt maȝis ſone be da



rified. **T**reuli. I seie to you. but  
 a corn of wheete falle into ye  
 erpe & be deed: it dwelleth alone  
 but if it be deed: it bynggeth mo  
 che fruyt. he pat louey his luf  
 shal lese it: & he pat haty his  
 luf in vis world: kep it into  
 euilathge. **H**e. I fomy ma serue  
 me: sue he me: & wher I am:  
 pere my mynstrer shal be: if  
 omy ma serue me: my fadir shal  
 al worshipe hi. now my soule  
 is troublid: & what shal I seie:  
 fadir saue me fro vis our: but  
 perfore I cam ito vis our: fadir  
 clarifie y name: and a vois  
 cam fro heuene & seide: & I ha  
 ue clarified: & eft I shal clarifie:  
 y fore ye peple pat stood & herde:  
 seide y puidur was maid oyer  
 me seiden an angel spak to hi:  
 ihc answeride & seide: vis vois  
 cam not for me: but for you.

f.

**N**ow is ye dom of ye world: now  
 ye pnce of vis world: shal be ca  
 st out: and if I shal be euhan  
 tid fro ye erpe: I shal drawe  
 alle pigis to my self: & he seide y  
 pig: signyfye by what depe he  
 was to dye: & ye peple answeri  
 de to hi: we han herd of ye lawe.  
 y crist dwelleth wipouten ende:  
 & hou seist you: it bihouey mam  
 sone to be a rerid: who is vis  
 mams sone: & pane ihc seip to  
 hem: zit altil lzt is in you: wal  
 ke ye ye while ze han lzt: y derk  
 nellis caue ze not: he pat wan  
 dny in derk nellis: woot net: whi  
 dur he gony: while ze han lzt: bi  
 leue ze in lzt: y ze be ye childre  
 of lzt: ihc spak res pigis: & we  
 te & hude hi fro hem: & whane he

hadde don so many myracles bifo  
 ze he: rei bileuede not in hi: pat  
 ye word of slaye ye pfete schil  
 de be fulfild: which he seide: lord  
 who bileuede to oure heerig: &  
 to who is ye arm of ye lord ihc  
 wid: y fore rei mynstrer not bileue  
 foreft slaye seide: he hap blindid  
 her ysen: & he hap maid hard ye  
 herte of hem: y rei se not wip  
 yse: & vnderstonde wip herte: &  
 y rei be comitid: & heele hem: I  
 seide res pigis: whie he syz  
 ye glorie of hi: & spak of hi: nepe  
 les of ye pnces manye bileuede  
 in hi: but for ye farilees rei: no  
 wlechten not: y rei shulde not  
 be put out of ye synagoge: for  
 rei loueten ye glorie of me: more  
 ran ye glorie of god: & ihc cryede  
 & seide: he pat bileuey i me: bile  
 uey not i me: but in hi pat sen  
 te me: he pat seip me: seip him  
 pat sente me: I lzt cam ito ye  
 world: y ech pat bileuey i me:  
 dwelle not i derk nellis: and if  
 omy ma heerip my wordis: & he  
 pip hem: I deme hi not: for I cam  
 not y deme ye world: but pat  
 I make ye world luf: he pat dis  
 pilip me: & taky not my wordis:  
 hap hi pat shal iuge hi: yilke  
 word pat I haue spokn: shal  
 deme hi in ye laste day: for I  
 haue not spokn of my self: but  
 yilke fadir pat sente me: zaf to  
 me a mandemet: what I shal sae:  
 & what I shal speke: & I woot  
 y his mandemet is euilathge: he  
 y fore yo pigis: I speke as ye fa  
 der seide to me: so I speke:  
 I fore ye feeste. **E**re. **E**re. **E**re.  
 day of pass. ihc wryte

y his our is comi: y he palle fro  
 vis world to ye fadir: whie he had  
 de loued hile pat were in ye wo  
 rld: into ye ende he louede hem:  
 & whie ye soper was maid: wha  
 ne ye denel hadde putt pane ito  
 ye herte: y judas of symonit stari  
 oth shulde betraye hi: he wryte y  
 ye fadir: zaf alle pigis to hi into hi  
 hondis: & pat he wente out fro  
 god: & gony to god: he risy fro ye  
 souper & doy of his doyis: and  
 whane he hadde takn a lynen clop:  
 he gide hi: & affward he putte  
 war ito a basyn: & bigan to wailhe  
 ye discipulis feet: & to wippe wip  
 ye lynen clop: wip which he was  
 gird: & so he cam to symonit petre:  
 & petre seip to hi: lord wailthe y  
 my feet: ihc answeride: & seide  
 to hi: what I do pon wost not now:  
 but pon shalt wite affward:  
 petre seip to hi: pon shalt neide  
 wailthe my feet: ihc answeride  
 to hi: if I shal not wailthe pee:  
 pon shalt not haue part wip me:  
 symonit petre seip to hi: lord not  
 oonly my feet: but bope ye hou  
 dis & ye heed: ihc seide to hi: he  
 pat is wailthe hap no nede: but  
 pat he wailthe ye feet: but he is  
 al deue: & ze ben deue but not  
 alle: for he wite who was he pat  
 shulde betraye hi: y fore he seide  
 ze ben not alle deue: & so affwar  
 he hadde wailthe ye feet of hem:  
 he took his cloys: and whie he  
 was let to mete azen: eft he seide  
 to hem: ze witen what I haue  
 do to you: ze clepen me mant &  
 lord: & ze seipen wel: for I am: y  
 ze if I lord & maitur haue wailthe  
 zoure feet: & ze shulen wailthe

don anoyer is feet: for I haue zom elan  
 ple to you: y as I haue do to y: so do ze seipen  
 ly treuli: I seip to you: ye seruaut  
 is not gretter: ran his lord: ney  
 an apostle is gretter: ran he pat se  
 te hi: if ze wite res pigis: ze shi  
 len be blelid if ze doe hem: I seie  
 not of alle you: I woot whiche I ha  
 ue choli: but y ye scriptur be ful  
 fillid: he pat ety wip breed: shal  
 reyse his heele azen me: treuly  
 I seip to you bifoze it be don: y wha  
 ne it is don: ze bileue y I am: treu  
 li treuly I seie to you: he pat taky  
 who eue I shal seide: relleyney  
 me: & he pat relleyney me: relley  
 ney hi pat sente me: whie ihc  
 hadde seid res pigis: he was trou  
 blid i spirit & wrytesside & seide: tren  
 li treuli I seie to you: y oon of you  
 shal betraye me: y fore ye discipulis  
 lokiten to gidre: dountige of whom  
 he seide: and so oon of hile discipulis  
 was rettige in ye bolu of ihu: who  
 ihu louede: y fore symonit petre  
 bekeney to hi: & seip to hi: who  
 is it of whom he seip: and so wha  
 ne he hadde retid azen on ye brest  
 of ihu: he seip to hi: lord who is it:  
 ihc answeride: he it is to who I sh  
 al a recte a sop of breed: & whane  
 he hadde wete breed: he zaf to ju  
 das of symonit stari: wth: & affwar  
 ye moisel: pane sathanas entri  
 de into hi: and ihc seip to hi: pat  
 pig pat pon dunt: do pon siy pe  
 & noon of he pat lzt at ye mete  
 wite wher to he seide to hi: for lu  
 me geiliden for judas hadde pur  
 his: pat ihc hadde seid to hi: bie y  
 yo pigis pat ben nede ful to us:  
 to ye feeste day: or y he shulde y  
 ne eu pig to uedy men: y fore



whine he hadde takē yē moilē: he  
 wente out a noon. & it was nyȝt  
 and whine he was gon out: ihe  
 seide: now māns lōne is clarifi-  
 ed: & god is clarified in hi: if god  
 is clarified in hi: god shal clarifie  
 hi in hi self: & anon he shal cla-  
 rifie hi. **A**lyde lōnes ȝit a lēl: I  
 am wip ȝou: ze shulen seke me  
 & as I seide to yē ieris: whidur  
 I go ze moni not come: & ȝou I leie  
 now: I ȝpue to ȝou ane we mān  
 demēt: yat ze lōne to gidre: as I  
 lōnete ȝou: & yē ze lōne to gidre  
 in yis pīs alle men shule knowe.  
 yē ze ben my dylaplis: if ze han lo-  
 ne to gidre: symōnd petre seip  
 to hi: lord whidur goist ȝou: ihe  
 answeride: whidur I go: ȝou  
 maist not snibe me now: but yē  
 shalt snibe afurward: petre seip  
 to hi: whi may I not snibe yē now:  
 I shal putte my lyf for yē: ihe  
 answeride: yē shalt putte yē lyf  
 for me: treuh treuh I leie to yē.  
 yē cot shal not crouse: til ȝou  
 shalt denye me pries: and he seip  
 to hile dylaplis. **C. xiii.**  
**B** not ȝoune her te afra-  
 yed: ne drede it: ze bileue  
 in god: & bileue ze in me: i yē  
 hous of my fadir: ben manye  
 dwelligis: if ony pīs lade I had  
 de leid to ȝou: for I go to make  
 redy to ȝou a place: and if I go  
 & make redy to ȝou a place: eft  
 sone I come: & I shal take ȝou  
 to my self: yē wher I am: ze be  
 & whidur I go ze witen: & ze wi-  
 ten yē weye: & hous seip to hi:  
 lord: we wite not whidur yē goist:  
 & how moyn we wite yē weye:  
 ihe seip to hi: I am weye tremp

& lyf: no mā comeȝ to yē fadir:  
 but by me: if ze hadden knowe  
 me: soȝeli ze hadden knowe al  
 so my fadir: and afurward ze  
 shulen knowe hi: & ze han seip  
 hi: filip seip to hi: lord shewe to  
 us yē fadir: & it suffily to us  
 ihe seip to hi: so longe tyme I am  
 wip ȝou: & han ze not knowē me:  
 filip: he yat seip me: seip also yē  
 fadir: how seist ȝou: shewe to us  
 yē fadir: bileue ȝou not: yē I  
 am in yē fadir: & yē fadir is in  
 me: yē wordis yē I speke to ȝou:  
 I speke not of my self: but yē fadir  
 hi self dwelligē i me: dom yē wer-  
 kis: bileue ze not yē I am in yē fa-  
 dir: & yē fadir is in me: ellis: bi-  
 leue ze for yis werkis: treuh  
 treuh I seie to ȝou: if amā bile-  
 ueȝ i me: also he shal do yē wer-  
 kis: yē I do: and he shal do grette  
 werkis yā yē se: for I go to yē fa-  
 dir: & what eū pīs ze aȝen yē fa-  
 dir in my name: I shal do yis pīs:  
 yē yē fadir be glorified i yē lōne:  
 if ze aȝen ony pīs in my name: I  
 shal do it: if ze lōnen me: kepe  
 ze my comandementis: & I shal  
 pzeie yē fadir: & he shal ȝpue to  
 ȝou anōf confortour yē spirit  
 of tremp: to dwelle wip ȝou wip  
 outen ende: which spirit: yē word  
 may not take: for it seip hi not:  
 neȝer knowip hi: but ze shule  
 knowe hym: for he shal dwelle  
 wip ȝou: & he shal be in ȝou: I  
 shal not leue ȝou fadir le: I  
 shal come to ȝou: ȝit a lēl: & yē  
 world seip not now me: but ze  
 shulen se me: for I lyne: & yē sh-  
 ule lyne in yat day ze shule knowe  
 yē I am in my fadir: & ze in

me: & I in ȝou: he yat hay my com-  
 andementis & kepiȝ he: he it is  
 yat lōney me: & he yat lōney me:  
 shal be lōned of my fadir: & I shal  
 lōne hy: & I shal shewe to hi my  
 self: Judas seip to hi: not he of  
 starioth: lord what is don: yē ȝou  
 shalt shewe yis self to us: & not  
 to yē world: ihe answeride & leide  
 to hi: if ony mā lōney me: he sh-  
 al kepe my word: & my fadir sh-  
 al lōne hi: & we shulen come to  
 hym: & we shulen dwelle wip hi:  
 he yat lōney me not: kepiȝ not  
 my wordis: & yē word which ze  
 han herd is not myn: but yē fa-  
 diris yat leide me: yē pīs I ha-  
 ue spōke to ȝou dwelligē amog  
 ȝou: but yis hooly goist yē confort-  
 our: whom yē fadir shal seide  
 in my name: he shal techē ȝou  
 alle pīs what eū pīs I shal  
 seie to ȝou: pees I leue to ȝou:  
 my pees I ȝpue to ȝou: not as yē  
 world ȝpueȝ I ȝpue to ȝou: be not  
 ȝou: her te afraȝed: ne drede it: ze  
 ha herd yē seide to: I go & come to: yē  
 ze lōned me: for love ze shule  
 hane ioye: for I go to yē fadir: for  
 yē fadir is gretteȝ yā I: & now  
 I hane leid to ȝou bifore yē it be don:  
 whine it is don: ze bileuen: now  
 I shal not speke many pīs w  
 ȝou: for yē pite of yis word comeȝ:  
 & hay not in me ony pīs: but yē  
 yē world knowe yē I lōne yē fadir:  
 & as yē fadir is a comandemēt  
 to me: so I do: yis ze go we heu-  
 ren. **C. xiiii.**  
**I**ne: & my fadir is an erpe-  
 tiker: ech brauce i me yat  
 berip not fruyt: he shal take a  
 wey it: & ech yat berip fruyt: he

shal purge it yat it bere yē mo-  
 ze fruyt: now ze ben clene for yē  
 word yat I hane spōkē to ȝou: dw-  
 elle ze in me: & I in ȝou: as a brau-  
 che may not make fruyt of it self:  
 but it dwelle in yē vīne: so neȝ-  
 ze: but ze dwelle in me: I am a  
 vīne ze yē brauchis: who yat dwel-  
 ly in me: & I in hy: yis berip mo-  
 che fruyt: for wipoute me ze  
 moni ne pīs do: if ony mā dwel-  
 ly not i me: he shal be cast out  
 as a brauche: & shal were dreye: & yē  
 shule gadre hi: & yē shule caste hi to yē fier:  
 & he breneȝ: if ze dwellen i me: & my  
 wordis dwellen in ȝou: what eū  
 pīs ze wolen: ze shulen aȝe: &  
 it shal be don to ȝou: in yis pīs  
 my fadir is clarified: yē ze bryȝe  
 for ful moche fruyt: & yē ze be ma-  
 ad my dylaplis: as my fadir lōne  
 de me: I hane lōned ȝou: dwelle ze  
 i my lōne: if ze kepen my coman-  
 demētis: ze shulen dwelle i my  
 lōne: as I hane kept yē coman-  
 demētis of my fadir: & I dwelle in  
 his lōne: yē se pīs I spak to  
 ȝou: yē my ioye be in ȝou: & ȝou  
 ioye be fulfilled: yis is my coman-  
 demēt: yē ze lōne to gidre: as I lōne  
 de ȝou: no mā hay moze lōne yā  
 yis: yē aman putte his lyf for hile  
 frendis: ze ben my frendis: if ze  
 doen yē pīs yat I comande to  
 ȝou: now I shal not clepe ȝou ser-  
 uantis: for yē seruant moot not  
 what his lord shal do: but I hane  
 clepid ȝou frendis: for alle pīs whē  
 I eūe I herde of my fadir: I hane  
 maid knowē to ȝou: ze han not  
 chosē me: but I chees ȝou: & I ha-  
 ue put ȝou: yē ze go & bryȝe  
 for fruyt: & ȝou fruyt dwelle



e.

What en pig ze a ren pe fadir.  
 in my name: he zyne to zoi. pes  
 pigis / comande to zoi: p ze loue  
 to gidre / if pe word haty zoi.  
 wite ze p it hadde me in hate ra  
 pur van zoi / if ze hadden be of  
 pe world: pe world shulde loue  
 pat pig pat was his / but for  
 ze ben not of pe world: but /  
 chees zoi fro pe world: p fore pe  
 world haty zoi. hane my de of  
 my word which / seide to zoi:  
 pe seruants is not gretter van  
 his lord / if pei han purfued me:  
 pei shulen purfulke zoi also / if  
 pei han kept my word: pei shu  
 len kepe zoi: also / but pei shu  
 len do to zoi alle pes pigis for  
 my name: for pei knowe not hi  
 pat sente me / if / hadde not co  
 mu / hadde not spokn to he:  
 pei shulden not hane syne / but  
 now pei han noon excusatiou of  
 her syne: he pat haty me: haty  
 also my fadir / if / hadde not don  
 werk is in hem: whiche uod oyr  
 man dide: pei shulden not ha  
 ue syne / but now hope pei han  
 seyn / han hatid: me / my fa  
 dir / but p re word be fulfild.  
 pat is writn in her lawe: for pei  
 hadden me in hate wyoute cau  
 se / but whie pe confortour shal  
 come: which / shal sende to zoi.  
 fro pe fadir: al pryt of treupe  
 which comey of pe fadir: he shal  
 bere witnellig of me / ze shule  
 bere witnellig: for ze bey wy me  
 fro pe biggyns. **John 16:11**

**T**hes pigis / hane spokn  
 to zoi: p ze be not shail  
 did: pei shulden make  
 zoi wyouten pe synagogis /  
 but pe our comey: p ech man pat

sleep zoi: come p he dory beru  
 se to god / and pei shulen do to zoi  
 pes pigis: for pei han not known pe  
 fadir ney me / but pes pigis / spak to zoi:  
 whane pe hour of hem shal come.  
 ze hane myde p / seide to zoi: /  
 seide not to zoi pes pigis fro pe  
 biggyns: for / was wy zoi: /  
 now / go to hi pat sente me: / no  
 ma of zoi axy me whidur yon  
 goist / but for / hane spokn to zoi:  
 pes pigis: hennelle hay fulfild  
 lid zoi: herte / but / seide to zoi  
 treupe: it sped to zoi: / go: for  
 if / go not forp: pe confortour sh  
 al not come to zoi: but if / go fo  
 ry: / shal sende hi to zoi: / whie  
 he comey he shal repreue pe  
 world of syne: / of reuelacioun  
 se / of dom: of syne: for pei han  
 not bilened in me / of reuelacioun  
 nelle: for / go to pe fadir: / now  
 ze shulen not se me / but of dom:  
 for pe puce of pis world is now de  
 med: / ze / hane many pigis for  
 to seie to zoi: but ze moyn not be  
 re hem now: but whane yllke spi  
 rit of treupe comey: he shal te  
 che zoi al treupe: for he shal not  
 speke of hi self: but what ever  
 pigis he shal heer: he shal speke:  
 / he shal telle to zoi: yo pigis pat  
 ben to come: he shal clarifie me:  
 for of myne he shal take: / shal  
 telle to zoi: alle pigis whiche en  
 pe fadir hay: ben myne / p fore  
 / seide to zoi: for of myn he shal  
 take: / shal telle to zoi: **John 16:12**  
 tel: / rane ze shulen not se me:  
 / eke loone alitel: ze shulen se  
 me: for / go to pe fadir: / p fore hi  
 me of hile dylis senden to gidre:  
 what is pis pig pat he ley to us  
 alitel: ze shule not se me: / eke

soone alitel: ze shule se me: for  
 / go to pe fadir: / p fore pei seide /  
 what is pis pat he ley to us alitel:  
 we witen not what he spak: /  
 he knew p pei wolden aze hy: /  
 he seide to hem: of pis pig ze seke  
 among zoi: for / seide: alitel: ze  
 shulen not se me: / eke loone al  
 til: / ze shulen se me: / treu  
 treu / seie to zoi: pat ze shule  
 morne / wepe: but pe world sh  
 al hane ioye: / ze shule be ioyis  
 ful: but zoi: se forwe shal turre  
 into ioye: / whan whie she  
 berry child: hay hennelle for hi  
 tyne is comu: but whie she  
 hay born a lone: now she peny  
 not on pe peyne for ioye for a ma  
 is born to pe world: / p fore ze ha  
 uoye soure: but eke loone / shal  
 se zoi: / zoi: herte shal hane  
 ioye: / no ma shal take fro zoi:  
 zoi: ioye: / in pat day ze shule  
 not aze me omy pig: / treu  
 treu / seie to zoi: if ze a ren  
 pe fadir omy pig in my name:  
 he shal zyne to zoi: til now ze  
 ariden no pig in my name:  
 aze ze / ze shule take: / zoi:  
 ioye be ful: / hane spokn to zoi:  
 pes pigis in prouis: pe our co  
 mey whane now / shal not spe  
 ke to zoi: i puerbis: but openly  
 of my fadir: / shal telle to zoi:  
 in pat day ze shule aze i my  
 name: / / seie not to zoi: /  
 shal preie pe fadir of zoi: for pe  
 fadir hi self louey zoi: for ze ha  
 loued me: / han bilened p / we  
 te out fro god: / wente out fro  
 pe fadir: / / cam into pe world:  
 eke loone / leene pe world: / / go  
 to pe fadir: hile dylis senden

to hi lo now p spekt openly: /  
 you seist no puerbe: now we wi  
 ten pat you woost alle pigis:  
 / it is not nede to see: / omy ma  
 aze pee in pis pig we bilenen:  
 p you wentest out fro god: /  
 answerde to he: now ze bilene:  
 lo pe our comey / now it comey:  
 / ze be dysaplyd: eke into his ow  
 ne pigis: / p ze leue me alloone:  
 / / am not aloone: for pe fadir  
 is wy me / pes pigis / hane spo  
 ke to zoi: / ze hane pees i me: /  
 pe world ze shule hane dilese:  
 but truste ze / hane oucome pe world: **John 16:13**

**T**hes pigis ihc **John 16:14**  
 spak: / whie he hadde  
 cast / op his yzen into heue  
 ne: he seide: fadir pe our co  
 mey: clarifie pi loue: / p pi lo  
 ue clarifie pee: as you hast zoi  
 to hi pouer of ech fleish: / al  
 pig pat you hast zoi to hi: he zyn  
 ne to hem eulastige lye: / pis  
 is eulastige lye: / p pei knowe  
 pee very god aloone: / who you  
 hast sent ihc: / / hane clarified  
 pee on pe erpe: / hane endid pe  
 werk pat you hast zoi to me to  
 do: / now fadir clarifie you me  
 at pi self: wy pe clerenelle pat  
 / hadde at pee: bifore pe world  
 was maid: / hane shewid pi na  
 me to po me whiche you hast zo  
 in to me of pe world: pei weren  
 yme: / you hast zoi hem to me:  
 / pei han kept pi word: / now  
 pei han known: / alle pigis pat  
 you hast zoi to me ben of pee:  
 for pe wordis pat / hast zoi  
 to me: / / zaf to hem: / pei han  
 takn / han known: verily: /  
 wente out fro pee: / pei bilene







swerde / you seist: / I am a kig /  
to pis pig / I am born. / & to pis /  
am comi into ye world: to bere  
witnesse to trewe / ech pat is  
of trewe heerip my vois / pilat  
seip to hi / what is trewe? / & whā  
ne he hadde seid pis pig: / est he we  
te out to ye ierwis. / & seide to hem /  
I fynde no cause in hi / but it is a  
custom to you: / & I deliue oon to  
you i pale / & fore wole ze / & I deli  
ue to you ye king of ierwis: / alle  
cristen efre soone / & seide not pis:  
but baraban / & barabas was a reet  
C Herfore pilat / **C. 19.**  
took pāne ihu: / & don  
gide / and knyghtis wryp  
a crowne of porres: / & setten on  
his heed / & dūen aboute hi a clop  
of purpur: / & camē to hi / & seide  
hail kig of ierwis: / & rei zanen  
to hi boffatis / efre soone pilat we  
te out: / & seide to hem / lo / I byge  
hi out to you: / & ze knowe / & I fy  
de no cause in hi / & so ihu wente  
out berige a crowne of porres:  
/ & a clop of purpur: / & he seip to hem  
lo ye mā / but whāne ye biho  
pis / & mynys / hadden seyn hi:  
rei ceden / & seiden / crucifie cru  
cifie hi / pilat seip to hem / take  
ze hym: / & crucifie ze / for / I fynde  
no cause in hi / ye ierwis an  
swerde to hi / we han a lawe: / &  
bi ye lawe he omy to dre: / for he  
made hi godis lone / & fore whāne  
pilat hadde herd pis word: / he  
dredde more / & he wente into ye  
moot halle efre soone: / & seide to  
ihu / of whē art þu? / but ihu zaf  
noon answer to hi / pilat seip to  
hi / spekest þou not to me: / woost  
þou not / & I have power to cru

cifie þee: / & I have power to de  
lyue þee: / ihu answerde / & ihu  
seid not hane ony power / azen  
me: / but it wer zoun to þee frō  
a boue / þerfore he pat bitook me  
to þee: / har ye more hme / fro pat  
tyme pilat souyte to deliue hi /  
but ye ierwis cryede / & seide / if  
deliuest þis: / þou art not ye em  
perours friend / for ech mā pat  
makip hi silt / þing: / azen seip ye  
empour: / & pilat whāne he had  
de herd þes wordis: / ladde ihu for  
/ & sat for domesma / i a place pat  
is seid hcostratos: / but in ebrew  
golgatha: / & it was pass eyn  
as it wer ye sūte our: / & he seip  
to ye ierwis / lo your kig: / but  
rei cryede / & seiden / take away  
take away: / crucifie hi / pilat  
seip to he / shal I crucifie þou  
kig: / ye bihopis answerden  
we ha no kig: / but ye empour: /  
pāne pilat bitook hi to hem: / &  
he shulde be crucified / and rei to  
ben ihu / & ladde hi out: / & he bar  
to hi self a cross: / & wente out to  
pat place pat is seid caluare:  
in ebrew gulgatha: / wher rei an  
cified hi: / & ower tweyne wryp  
oon on pis syde: / & oon on pat side:  
/ & ihu in ye myddel: / & pilat wro  
ot a tytle: / & sette on ye cros: / & it  
was writū / ihu of nazareth kig  
of ierwis / & fore manye of ye ier  
wis radden pis tytle: / for ye pla  
ce wher ihu was crucified: / was  
myz ye cite: / & it was writū in  
abrew: / greek: / & latyn: / & fore ye  
bihopis of ye ierwis seiden to pi  
lat / myle þou wryte kig of ierwis:  
but for he seide / I am kig of ierwis:  
pilat answerde / pat pat I have

writū: / I have writū / & fore ye  
knyghtis whāne rei hadden cruci  
fied hi: / tooken hile clopis: / & ma  
den four partis: / to ech knygt a  
part: / & a coote / & ye coote was w  
oute seem: / & woun al aboute / &  
fore rei seiden to gide: / kette we  
not it: / but caste we lott whos it  
is / & ye septine be fulfild seynge  
rei partiden to hem my clopis: / &  
on my clop rei casten lott: / & ye  
knyghtis dūen þes pigis / but bi  
dis ye croll of ihu stode his modir:  
/ & ye sūter of his modir: / marie  
cleofe / & marie maudeleyne: / & rei  
fore whāne ihu hadde seyn his mo  
dir: / & ye disciple stoude whom  
he louete: / he seip to his modir / wo  
man: / lo þi lone: / after war: / he seip  
to ye disciple / lo þi modir: / & fro þ  
our: / ye disciple took hi into his  
modir: / **C. 20.** Ward ihu wryte  
/ & now alle pigis ben endid: / & ye  
septin: / wer fulfild he seip / & pr  
te: / & a vessel was sett ful of vyn  
egre: / & rei seide / þylope aboute ye  
spouinge ful of vynegre: / & rei  
ten to his mony: / & fore whāne ihu  
hadde takū ye vynegre: / he seide  
it is endid: / & whāne his heed was  
bowid down: / he zaf up ye goft / &  
fore for it was ye pass eyn: / &  
ye bodies shulden not abyde on  
ye croll in ye sabot: / for pat was  
a greet labat day: / ye ierwis piete  
pilat: / & ye hyris of he shulde be  
brokū: / & rei takū away / & fore kn  
yghtis camē: / & rei braken ye pries  
of ye firste: / & of petro pat was e  
cified wryhū: / but whāne rei we  
ren come to ihu as rei lyze hym  
wed pāne: / rei braken not hile  
pries: / but oon of ye knyghtis: / ope

nyde his side wry alper: / & anon  
blood / & watir: / wente out: / & he  
pat syz bar witnesse: / & his wit  
nesse is trewe: / & he woost / & he  
seip trewe pigis: / & ze bileue: / &  
þes pigis weren don: / & ye scrip  
ture shulde be fillid: / & shulen  
not breke a boon of hi: / & efre soone  
anoy apur seip: / rei shulen se  
into whō rei pisten pur: / but af  
ter þes pigis wolep of armath:  
preiete pilat: / & he shulde take a  
wey ye body of ihu: / for pat he was  
a disciple of ihu: / but þu for dre  
de of ye ierwis: / and pilat suffri  
de: / & so he cam / & took away ye  
body of ihu: / & nicodeme cam also  
/ & hadde come to hi first by nyzt:  
/ & brouzte a medelung of myrrre:  
/ & aloes: / as it were an hondrid  
pound: / and rei token ye body of  
ihu: / & bounden it in linnen clois:  
wry swete finelinge opmentis:  
as it is custom to ierwis for to bi  
rie: / & in ye place wher he was  
crucified: / was azerd: / & ye zerd  
a newe graue in which zit no mā  
was leyd: / & fore þer rei putten  
ihu for ye vigile of ierwis fecite:  
for ye sepulcre was myz: / **C. 21.**  
A Id in oday of ye wole:  
mary maudeleu cam eer  
ly to ye graue whāne it  
was zit dert: / & she spyz ye stoon  
moued away fro ye graue: / & fore  
she ran / & cam to symount petri:  
/ & to anoyr disciple: / whom ihu  
louete: / & seip to he / rei han ta  
kū ye lord fro ye graue: / & we wi  
ten not wher: / rei han leyd hym  
/ & fore petre wente out / & vilke  
opur disciple: / & rei camen to ye  
graue: / & rei tweyne rūnen to



gadre. & pilke oþur duple ran bi  
fore petre. & cam first to þe graue  
and whine he stoupe. he sez þe  
sheetis lyggige: neþeles he en  
tride not. þe fore symonid petre cam  
fynge hi. & he entride into þe  
ne. & he sez þe sheetis leid. & þe  
dane pat was on his heed not  
leid wip þe sheetis: but bi it self  
wlaþid into o place. þe fore þane  
pilke duple pat cam first to þe  
grauē entride. & sez & bileuede  
for þe fneþen not 3it þe strip  
tur. & it bihoþe hi to ryle azen  
fro deþ. þe fore þe duple weten  
eftloone to he self. but marie sto  
od at þe gne wyoute for weþi  
ge. & þe while she wepte. she bo  
nde hir. & biheeld forp into þe  
ue. and she sez tweþne angelis  
sittege in whyt. oon at þe heed.  
& oon at þe feet. wher þe body of  
ihū was leþ. & þe seien to hir.  
wōman what wepst þ. she  
seide to he. for þe han take away  
my lord. & i woot not wher þe  
han leþ hi. whine she hadde seid  
res pigis. she tuede backward.  
& sez ihū stouðige. & wiste not þ  
it was ihū. ihc seip to hir. wōman  
what wepst þ. who sekist þou.  
she geþige þe he was agardener.  
seip to hi. si. if þou hast takē hi  
vp. seie to me wher þou hast leid  
hi. & i shal take hi away. ihc seip  
to hir. marie. she turnede. & seip  
to hi. rabon. þis to seie maistn.  
ihc seip to hir. nyle þou touche me  
for i hane not 3it stried to my fa  
dir. but go to my brþen. & sepe  
to hem. i aze to my fadir. & to  
3our fadir. to my god. & to 3our  
god. marie mardeleyn cam tel

lige to þe duple. þ. i sez þe  
lord. & res pigis he seide to me.  
þe fore whine it was enu. & þe day  
oon of þe sabotis. & þe zatis were  
sthat wher þe duple were  
gadrid for drede of þe ieris. ihc  
cam & stood in þe myddel of þe duple  
cþis. & he seip to hem. pees to i.  
and whine he hadde seid þis. he the  
wite to he hondis. & seide. þe fore þe  
duple is opede. for þe lord was  
seyn. and he seip to hem est. pees  
to 3ou. as þe fadir seute me. i se  
de 3ou. whine he hadde seid þis. he  
blew on he. & seide. take þe hooþ.  
goft. whos spues þe forþe. ro  
ben for 3ou. to he. & whos þe wip  
holden. ro ben wipholdn. but þe  
misoon of þe twelue. pat is seid  
didm. was not wip hem whine  
ihc cam. þe fore þe oþe duple sei  
den. we han seyn þe lord. & he seide  
to hem. but i ge in his hondis þe  
fichþing of naphis. & putte my  
fingur into þe places of þe naph  
les. & putte myn hond into his  
spide. i shal not bileue. & after  
eizte dages. eftloone hile duple  
were wip me. & thomas wip he.  
ihc cam while þe zatis were sthat.  
& stood in þe myddel. & seide. pees  
to 3ou. after ward he seip to the  
mis. putte yn her. i fingur. &  
se myn hondis. & putte hidur  
m hond. & putte ito my spide. &  
nyle þou be vnbileedful. but fear  
ful. thomas answere. & seide  
to hi. my lord. & god. ihc seip to hi.  
thoms for þou hast seyn me. þou  
bileuedist. blelid be þe pat sepe  
not. & han bileued. & ihc dide ma  
nye oþer signes in þe sit of hi  
se duple. whiche ben not wri

tu in vis book. but þis ben wri.  
þe bileue þe ihc is crist þe lone  
of god. & þe bileuþge. hane luf  
in his name. **A**nd ihc eftloone sthat  
de hi to hile duple. at  
þe see of tiberias. & he  
sthat hi þis. þe were to gadre  
symonid petre. & thoms. pat is  
seid didm. & nathanael pat was  
of þe came of galilee. & þe lones  
of sebedee. & tweþne oþe of hi  
se duple. symonid petre seip  
to hem. i go to fyllhe. þe seipen  
to hi. & we come wip þe. & þe  
wenten out. & wenten into a bo  
ot. & in þat nyzt þe tooken no  
þing. but whine þe moxwe was  
com. ihc stood in þe byrke. ne  
þeles þe duple fneþe not. þ  
it was ihc. þe fore ihc seip to  
hem. chldren wher þe han omy  
louþing pig. þe answere to  
hi. nay. he seide to he. putte ze þe  
nett into þe rixthalf of þe row  
þing. & ze shule fynde. & þe put  
tiden þe nett. & þane þe myre  
not draue it. for mltitide of foz  
st. þe fore pilke duple whom  
ihc louede. seide to petre. it is þe  
lord. symonid petre. whine he had  
de herd þe it is þe lord. gurte hi  
wip a coote for he was nakid.  
& wente into þe see. but þe oþe  
duple came bi boot. for þe we  
re not fer fro þe lond. but as a  
two hundrid cubytis. drauþge  
þe net of fyllth. & as þe came  
don into þe lond. þe syzen cohs  
lyggige. & a fyllth leid on. & breed  
ihc seip to he. byrþge ze of þe fyll  
th. whiche ze han takē now.  
symonid petre wente vp. & drow.

þe nett into þe lond ful of grete  
fyllth. an hundrid fifty & þe. &  
whine þe weren so manþe. þe nett  
was not brokē. ihc seip to hem. co  
me ze ete ze. & no mā of þe pat  
saten at þe mete durste aze hi.  
who art þou. witege þe it is þe lord.  
& ihc cam & took breed. & aze to he.  
& foz the also. now þis þe tye  
me ihc was sthat to hile duple.  
whine he hadde ryll azen foz  
deþ. & whine þe hadden etē. ihc  
seip to symonid petre. symonid of  
john louest þou me more þan  
þe se. he seip to hi. he lord. þe woot  
þe i loue þe. ihc seip to hi. fede  
þou my lambzen. eft he seip to hi.  
symonid of john louest þou me.  
he seip to hi. he lord. þou woot  
þe i loue þe. he seip to hi. fede þou  
my lambzen. he seip to hi. þe þe  
de tyme. symonid of john louest  
þou me. petre was heip. for he  
seip to hi. þe þe tyme louest þe  
me. & he seip to hi. lord. þou knoþst  
alle pigis. þou woot þe i loue þe.  
ihc seip to hi. feede my sheep. &  
treuh treuh. i seie to þe. whine  
þou wer. 3onger. þou gurteðst þe.  
& wandredist wher þou woldist.  
but whine þou sthat werē eldē.  
þou sthat holde forp my hondis.  
& anof. shal gurte þe. & shal lede  
þe wipdun. þe wot not. he seide þis  
pig. signyfyge bi what deþ he  
shulde gloufie god. & whine he  
he hadde seid þe pigis. he seip to  
hi. swiwe þou me. petre turnede  
& sez pilke duple fyllþge. who  
ihc louede. which also restide in þe  
louper on his brest. & he seide to  
hi. lord. who is it pat shal bi þe  
þe. þe fore whine petre hadde



seyne pis. he seip to ihu lord but  
what pis. ihu seip to hi so i wo  
le pat he dwelle til i come. whi  
to pee. sinke pou me. yf ore pis  
word wente out among ye bu  
yen. yf ilke disciple diep not. i  
ihu seide not to hi. yf he drey not.  
but so i wole yf he dwelle til i  
come. what to pee. pis is ilke  
disciple. pat berip witneslig of pes  
pignis. i woot he. and we wite  
yf his witneslig is trewe. i ver  
ben also manye ope pignis pat  
ihu dide. whiche if rei ben writu  
bi ech bi hi self. i deme yf ye world  
hi self shal not take yo bokis.  
pat ben to be writu.

*Here en  
dyt ye gospel of ioh. i. bigyn  
ner ye plog on ye pistle of po  
ul to romayns.*

**P**aulus ben in ye citie of  
stake. rei weren disseyned first  
of falsse profetis. yf falsse techere.  
i vndir ye name of our lord ihu  
crist. rei weren browt into ye la  
we. i pfetis yf into cerymony  
es eyn fleschly keepyng of nup  
ses lawe. i of pfetis acordige w  
yo cerymonyes. whiche vlig is  
contrarie now to ye trewe. i fre  
dom of criste gospel. Poul azen  
depit res romayns to vrs seip  
i trewe of ye gospel. i wryt  
to hem pis pistle fro corinthe.

*pis seip ierom in his plog on  
ye pistle to romayns. i here  
bigynner ye pistle.*

**P**aul ye seruait of  
ihu crist. clepid an  
apostle. departid  
into ye gospel of god.  
whiche he hadde by  
hote to fore bi hi pfetis. in hooly

scripturis of his sone. whiche is maad  
to hi of ye seed of dauid. bi ye fle  
sch. i he was bifore ordeyned ye  
sone of god in vtru. bi ye spurt of  
halewinyng. of ye azenyng of deid  
me of ihu crist our lord. i yf whom  
we han resseyned grace. i ye offi  
ce of apostle. to obeie to ye seip  
in alle folkis for his name. Amig  
whiche ye ben also clepid of ihu  
crist. i so alle pat ben at rome. der  
ligis of god. i clepid hooly. grace  
to zou. i pees of god our fadir. i  
of ye lord ihu crist. i first i do pa  
fignis to my god. bi ihu crist for alle  
zou. for zoure seip is shewid i all  
ye world. for god is a witnesse to  
me. to who i serue in my spurt. i  
ye gospel of his sone. yf wyoute  
ceessig. i make myde of zou eie in  
my preieris. i biseche if in ony  
maner. su tyme i haue a spedy  
weye i ye wille of god to come to  
zou. for i desyre to se zou. to par  
ten shuphat of spiritual grace. yf  
ze be cōfessyng. yf is. to be cōfessy  
tid to god. i in zou. bi seip pat is  
boye zour. i myn to gidre. i bi  
yen. i nyle yf a vnbuoye. yf of  
te. i purposide to come to zou.  
and i am lett to pis tyme. yf i  
haue su fruyt in zou. as moye  
folkis. to grekis. i to barberyng  
to wyle me. i to vnbuoye me. i am  
dettour. so pat yf i me is redy  
to preche ye gospel also. i to zou  
pat ben at rome. for i shame not  
ye gospel. for it is ye vertu of god  
into heelp to ech ma pat bilenei.  
to ye ieu first. i to ye grek. for  
ye rist wysnesse of god is shewid  
in it. of seip into seip. as it is shewid  
in. for a iust man lyue of seip.

for ye wraipe of god is shewid fro  
heueue. on al vnpyte. i wickidnes  
se of yo me. pat wrytholde ye tren  
ye of god in vnytyng. i shewid  
pat sig of god pat is knowu. is  
shewid to he. for god har shewid  
to he. for ye vnyfible pignis of hi.  
pat ben vndirfonden. i biholdu  
of ye creatur of ye world bi po  
pignis pat ben maad. i ye euer  
lastige vtru of hy. i ye godhed. so  
yf rei moln not be excusid. for wha  
ne ye hadden knowe god. ye glori  
fieden hi not as god. neyn. dū  
pantignis. but ye vnyfshede in  
her pouzys. i ye vnyfshede herte  
of hem was derfid. for ye seipnge  
yf hem self were wyle. ye were  
maad foolis and ye chaūgeden ye  
glorie of god vncorruptible. into  
ye lykenesse of an ymage of a deid  
ly ma. i of byddis. i of foum. foo  
tid beestis. i of serpentis. for whid  
pign. god bitook hem into ye desy  
ris of her herte. i to vnbuoye. yf  
ye ponys the wip wrongis her  
bodies in hem self. ye whiche chail  
giden ye trewe of god into leelhyng.  
i herieden i serueden a creature.  
rape ran to ye creatour. pat is  
blestid into worldis of worldis a  
me. i perfore god bitook he into pas  
sions of shenlythp. for ye wymen  
of hem chaūgiden ye kyndely vil. i  
to pat vil pat is azen kynde. alle pe  
men forloken ye kyndely vil of wo  
man. i beneden in her desiris to  
gidre. i men into men wryouzen  
filyhed. i resseyneden into he self  
ye meede pat bihofte of her erro.  
and as ye pūede pat ye hadden  
not god in knowig. god bitook he  
to a repuable wit yf ye do po pign.

pat ben not couenable. yf rei be ful  
fillid w al wickidnesse. malice.  
fornycation. couetise. weyward  
nesse. ful of of enye. malleyngis.  
stryf. gile. yuel wille. pūy bacbite  
ris. detractouris. hateful to god.  
debatouris. proude. i hy on meure.  
fyndens of yuele pignis. not obei  
shige to fadir. i modur. vnyfshede.  
vmanly wyoute loue. wyoute  
boond of pees. wyoute mercy. ye  
whiche whiche ye hadden knowe  
ye rist wysnesse of god. vndirfoden  
not. yf ye pat den such pignis. be  
woyri ye deip. not oonly ye pat do  
en po pignis. but also ye pat con

**W**herfore yf art vnyfshede  
ble. ech ma pat demest. for  
in what pign. ye demest anoy man.  
ye condepynt yf self. for ye donit  
ye same pignis. whiche ye demest.  
i we wite yf ye dom of god is asen.  
trewe azen he. pat doen such  
pignis. but ge list ye ma. pat de  
meit hem pat toge such pignis. i yf  
doit po pignis. yf ye shal allape  
ye dom of god. wher yf dispylet ye  
richellis of his goodnesse. i ye paci  
ence. i ye long abydyng. i knowist yf  
not yf ye benygnyte of god. leedir  
ye to fornykig. but afc ym hard  
nesse. i vnyfshede herte. yf tre  
sourest to pee. wraipe in ye day  
of wraipe. i of shewig of ye rist  
ful dom of god. pat shal zelde to ech  
ma asen. his werkis. i seip to he  
pat ben bi patience of good werk.  
glorie. i honour. i vncorruption.  
to hem pat seken euiladige lyf. but  
to he. pat ben of stryf. i pat alen  
ten not to trewe. but bileue to  
wickidnesse. wraipe. i indigna



cion. toulacion. & angwylch. ito ech  
soule of mā pat worchyp ynel to  
ye ieris first & to ye greek. but glo  
rie & honoir. & pees to ech mā pat  
worchyp good pig. to ye ieris first  
& to ye greek. for acceptioun of p  
loones. is not auentis god. for who  
eue han syned wipoute ye laue.  
thule peridhe wipoute ye laue.  
and who eue han syned in ye laue.  
pei thulen be demed by ye laue.  
for ye heereris of laue. ben not  
uist auentis god. but ye doeris of  
ye laue thule be mand uist. for wha  
ne hepeue me pat han not laue.  
doen kyndely po pigis pat ben of  
ye laue. pei not hampe such ma  
ner laue. ben laue to hem self. pat  
theben ye weik of ye laue. witiu  
in her hertis for ye consience of  
hem zeldip to hem a witnellig by  
twiue hem self of pouztis. pat be  
accusunge or defendunge. in ye day  
whine god thal deme ye pny pigis  
of me afur my gospel by ihu crist.  
but if you art named a ieris. & res  
tit in ye laue. & hast glorie in god.  
& hast knowe his wille. & you lernid  
by ye laue. preuest ye more pfi  
table pigis. & trustit yisilk to be  
a leder of blynde me. ye list of he  
pat ben iderknessis. to a techet  
of vniyse me. a maistr of zonge  
children. pat hast ye fourme of kni  
ng. & of treupe in ye laue. what  
pāne techist you anop. & techist  
not yisilk. you pat pchist y me  
thal not aeke. thebit you pat te  
chist y me thal do no lecherie.  
doit lecherie. y pat islatist malb  
metis. doit saclegie. y pat hast  
glorie i ye laue. wipoutchypett  
god by breekig of ye laue. for ye

name of god. is blasfemyd bi you  
a mong hepeue me. as it is writu  
for circucision. pfitet if you kepe  
ye laue. but if you be a trespasser  
azeyn ye laue. y circucision is  
mand prepuce. verfore if you kepe  
ye ryzwylnessis of ye laue.  
wher his prepuce thal not be a  
rettid into circucision. & ye p  
cie of kynde pat fulfiller ye laue.  
thal deme pee. pat bi lettre. & con  
cucision art trespassour azeyn  
ye laue. for he pat is in apyne is  
not a ieris. ues it is circucision  
pat is openly in ye flesch. but  
he pat is a ieris in hnd. and ye cir  
cucision of herte. i spm. not bi  
ye lettre. whos preshyng is not of  
me but of god. **¶** **¶**  
**W**hat pāne is more to a ieris.  
or what profyt of circuci  
cion moche. by al wyle. first for ye  
spetigis of god. were bitakn to he  
& what if sume of hem bileuede  
not. wher ye vubileue of hem hay  
avoidid ye fey of god. god forbe  
de. for god is sorfast. but ech mā  
a lyer. as it is writu. y you be ius  
tified in y wordis. & oncome wha  
ne you art demyd. but if our wyl  
fiduelse comende ye ryzwylness  
se of god. what thulen we seie.  
wher god is wickid. pat hyngy  
in wryppe. afen mā y seie god  
forbede. ellis how thal god deme  
pis word. for if ye treupe of god  
hay aboundid i my leeching. into ye  
glorie of hi. what yt am i demed  
as a syner. & not as we ben blas  
femyd. & as sū me seyen y we seie.  
do we yuele pigis. y gode pigis  
come. whos dāpnacioun is uist  
what pāne. & passen we he. nay.

for we han thewid bi skile. y alle  
bope ieris & greekis ben vndir hi  
ne. as it is writu. for y is no mā iust.  
y is no mā vndir stondige ney  
dekige god. alle boweden away.  
to gidre ye ben mand vnzofitable.  
y is noon pat doy good pig. y is no  
on til to oon. ye prote of hem is an  
opyn sepulcre. wip her tūgis pei  
daen gilefily. ye venym of ena  
tis is vndir her lippis. ye mony  
of whiche is ful of curthys. & bit  
turnelle. ye feet of hem ben swete  
to thode blood. sozwe & curthidness  
ben i ye weies of he. & yei kewe  
not ye weye of pees. ye dade of  
god is not bifore her yren. & we  
witen. y what eue pigis ye laue  
spetir. it spetir to hem pat ben  
i ye laue. y ech mony be stopid.  
& ech word be mand suget to god.  
for of ye werkis of ye laue ech  
flesch thal not be iustified  
bifore hi. for bi ye laue yei is kno  
wying of syne. but now wipoute  
ye laue. ye ryzwylness of god  
is thewid. pat is witneslid of ye  
laue & ye pfitis. & ye ryzwylness  
of god is by ye fey of ihu crist. to all  
me & on alle me pat bileue in hi. for y is  
no departyng. for alle me synede.  
& han nede to ye glorie of god. & ben  
iustified frely by his grace. by ye  
azenyng pat is in cā ihu. whom  
god ordeynede forziner bi fey i his  
blood. to ye thewying of his ryzwyl  
ness. for remysion of bifore go  
unge synes. in ye berig. xop of  
god. to ye thewying of his ryzwyl  
ness in pis tyme. y he be iust &  
iustefyng hi pat is of ye fey  
of ihu crist. wher pāne is y glori  
fying. & it is excludid by what la

we. of dedis doynge. nay. but by  
ye laue of fey. for we deme amā  
to be iustified bi ye fey. wipoute  
werkis of ye laue. wher of ieris.  
is god onely. wher he is not also of  
hepeue me. & his & of hepeue me. for  
oon god is. pat iustifiet circucisi  
on bi fey. & pūcie bi fey. distriw  
en we pfore ye laue bi ye fey. god  
forbede. but we stabbith ye laue.  
**¶** **¶**  
**W**hat pāne. **¶** **¶**  
thulen we seie. y abra  
him our fadir. afen ye fle  
uth foond. for if abrahā be iusti  
fied of werkis of ye laue. he hay  
glorie but not auentis god. for  
what seye ye i pntin. abrahā bile  
uede to god. & it was arettid to hi  
to ryzwylness. & to hi pat worchyp.  
meede is not arettid bi grace. but  
by dette. soveli to hi pat worchyp not.  
but bileuey into hi pat iustifiet a  
wickid mā. his fey is arettid to  
ryzwylness afen ye purpos of go  
dis grace. as dāny seye ye blestid  
ness of amā. whō god accepty.  
he jnyer to hi ryzwylness wip  
oute werkis of ye laue. Blestid  
ben yei whos wickidnessis ben for  
zoin. & whos synes be hyd. Blef  
lid is pat mā. to whō god arettide  
not syne. pān wher dwellip yis  
blythidness oonly in circucision.  
or also in pūcie. for we seyen y  
ye fey was arettid to abrahā  
to ryzwylness. how pāne was  
it arettid. in circucision or i pū  
cie. not i circucision. but i pūcie.  
& he took a signe of circucision. a  
tooke of ryzwylness of ye fey  
which is i pūcie. y he befadir of  
alle me bileuynge bi pūcie. y it be  
arettid also to he to ryzwylness.



þat he be fadir of circuncisioun / not  
only to hem þat ben of circuncisi-  
oun: but also to hem þat han þe  
feyr. of þe fey / which fey is  
in spaci of our fadir abraham  
for not bi þe lawe. is biheete to  
abraham or to his seed. þe schil-  
de be eyr of þe world: but bi þe  
ristwysnesse of fey / for if þe  
pat ben of þe lawe. ben eyris:  
fey is distryed. biheete is don a-  
wey for þe lawe wordyng. þat  
þe / for where is no lawe þer is  
no trespas: ney is trespassing.  
þfore ristwysnesse is of þe fey.  
þ bi grace biheete be stible to  
ech seed / not to þat seed only þat  
is of þe lawe: but to þat þat is  
of þe fey of abraham / which is fa-  
dir of us alle: as it is writun / for  
þe hane sett þe fadir of many fol-  
kis bifore god: to whom þou hast  
biheued / which god quykeneþ  
deed me: & clepyþ þe þis þat be  
not as þe þat ben / which abraham  
agens hope. biheued into hope:  
þe schilde be mard fadir of ma-  
ny folkis. as it was seid to hym  
þus schal þi seed be. as þe þer is  
of heuene. & as þe granel þat  
is in þe byrke of þe see: & he  
was not mard / vntil defast in þe  
bilene. ney he biheued his body  
þane nyz deed. whane he was  
almost of an hundred yer. ne þe  
wombe of sare nyz deed: also in  
þe biheete of god. he donide not  
wy vntil: but he was confort-  
tid in bilene. þynge glorie to  
god: witige moost fully. þe whi-  
eu þis god hay biht: he is nyz  
ti also to do / þerfore it was aret-  
tid to hi to ristwysnesse: & it is

not writun only for hi. þe it was  
arettid to hi to ristwysnesse: but  
also for us to which it schal be  
arettid. þat biheue in hi þat þe  
side our lord ihu crist. fro deþ / whi-  
ch was bitakun for our synes: &  
roolmen for our iustifying.

**V**erfore we writun / **C. vi.**  
fied of fey: hane we pees  
at god bi our lord ihu crist. bi  
whom we han nyz goyng to.  
þe fey into þis grace. in which  
we stonden & han glorie in þe hope  
of reglorie of godis children: &  
not þis only: but also we glori-  
en in tribulacioun / whiche. þe  
tribulacioun wordyng patience  
& patience þynge. & þynge hope  
& hope confortid not / for þe chari-  
te of god is lized abroad in our her-  
tis bi þe hooly gost þat is comi  
to us / and whyle þe we were lize  
after þe tyme. whiche dyde crist for  
wicked me / for synis dyer on þe  
for þe nyz man: & it for a good ma-  
pauente liu ma dar dyde: but god  
comedy his charite in vs / for if whi-  
ne we were it synis: after þe  
tyme crist was deed for vs. þane  
moche more now we iustified in his  
blood schulen be sauf fro wyrt  
by hi / for if whane whane we  
weren enemyes: we ben recon-  
celid to god bi þe deþ of his sonne  
myche more we reconciled: schu-  
len be sauf in þe lize of hi: & not  
only þis: but also we glorie in  
in god. bi our lord ihu crist: bi  
whom we han resseyued now re-  
concelis / þfore as þe o ma. synen  
tride into þis world. & bi þe deþ  
& so deþ passid for to alle me:  
in which ma alle me syneden: for til

to þe lawe: syne was in þe world  
but syne was not rettid: whiche  
lawe was not. But deþ regnede  
from adam til to moyses. also  
to hem þat syneden not. & hi-  
se of þe trespassing of ada: þe whi-  
ch is liknesse of crist to comyge / but  
not as gilt: so þe zifte / for if þe  
þe gilt of oon. manye ben deed:  
moche more þe grace of god: &  
þe zifte in þe grace of o ma ihu  
crist. hay aboundid into many me  
& not as bi o syne: so bi þe zifte  
for þe don of oon into condeþna-  
cioun: but grace of many giltis  
into iustificacioun / for if in þe gilt  
of oon. deþ regnede þynge oon: mo-  
che more me þe zifte. plente of  
grace & of zynge & of ristwys-  
nesse schule regne in lize bi oon  
ihu crist / þfore as bi þe gilt of oon  
into alle me into condeþnacioun:  
so bi þe ristwysnesse of oon. to  
alle me into iustifying of lize / for  
as bi moþedience of oon ma. ma-  
nye ben mard synis: so bi þe  
obedience of oon. manye schule  
be iust / and þe lawe entride: þe  
gilt schule be plenteuous / but  
wher gilt was plenteuous: gra-  
ce was more plenteuo / þe as sy-  
ne regnede into deþ. so grace  
regne bi ristwysnesse into euer-  
lastige lize bi ihu crist our lord.

**V**erfore what / **C. vi.**  
schule we seie / schulen  
we dwelle in syne: þe gre-  
be plenteuo: god forbete / for  
his schulen we þat ben deed to sy-  
ne: lize it þe: wher þe synen  
ze knowe not. þe whiche eu we be  
baptid in crist ihu: we ben bap-  
tid in his deþ / for we ben to

gideþ buried with hi bi baptym  
to deþ / þe as crist aroos fro deþ bi  
þe glorie of þe fadir: so walke we  
in a newnesse of lize / for if we plan-  
tid to gyde. ben mard to þe lize  
se of his deþ: also we schule be of  
þe lize of his ristwysnesse / whi-  
tize þis þe: & our oltre man is  
crucified to gyde: þe þe body of sy-  
ne be distroyed: þe we serue no mo-  
ze to syne / for he þat is deed: is ius-  
tified fro syne: & if we ben deed  
with crist: we biheue þe also we schu-  
len lize to gyde with hi. whiche.  
for crist ristwysnesse azen fro deþ: now  
dier not. deþ schal no more hane  
lordship on hi / for þe he was deed  
to syne: he was deed onys / but þe  
he lize: he lize to god / so ze de-  
me zon sile to be deed to syne: but  
þynge to god ihu crist our lord  
þerfore regne not syne in your  
deedly body: þe obeith to his co-  
metyngis / ney þe ze zon me þe  
armis of wickednesse to syne:  
but þe ze zon sile to god. as þe  
þat synen of deed me. & zone mem-  
bris armis of ristwysnesse to  
god / for syne schal not hane lord-  
ship on zon / for ze ben not vnder  
þe lawe: but vnder grace. what  
þerfore / schulen we do syne. for we  
ben not vnder þe lawe: but vnder  
grace / god forbete / whiche ze not  
to whom ze synen zon seruantis  
to obeie to: ze ben seruantis of þat  
þis to which ze han obeithid: ef  
of syne to deþ. ef of obedience  
to ristwysnesse / but / þe god  
þe weren seruantis of syne: but  
ze han obeithid of herte. into þat  
fourme of teching. in which ze be  
bitakun / & ze deliuerid fro syne.



be mad seruantes of rystwylle.  
 I seie pat pig pat is of us. for re  
 vntableness of zour fleish. but  
 as ze han zour mebris to ser  
 ue to vntableness & to wickidnesse  
 to wickidnesse. so now zune ze zour  
 mebris to serue to rystwylle  
 le into hoolynesse. for whane ze we  
 ren seruantes of syne. ze were  
 fre of rystwylle. yfze whar  
 fruyt hadden ze pane in po pigis.  
 in whiche ze shame now. for ze  
 ende of hem is deap. but now ze de  
 lynd fro syne. & mad seruantes  
 to god. han zour fruyt into hooly  
 nesse. & ze ende chelastige lyf  
 for ze wasis of syne. is deap. ze  
 grace of god. is chelastige lyf i  
 crist ihu oure lord. **¶** **vij.**

**B**ryen wher ze knowe not.  
 for I speke to me pat kno  
 wen ze laue. for ze laue  
 hap lordship in ama. as long ty  
 me as it lyuey. for pat woman pat  
 is vnder an haleboude. is boundu  
 to ze laue while ze haleboude ly  
 uey. but if hir haleboude is deed.  
 she is deliued fro ze laue of ze h  
 lebonde. **¶** yfze she shal be depid  
 auowtrese. if she be wy anoyr  
 ma while ze haleboude lyuey. but  
 if hir haleboude is deed. she is  
 deliued fro laue of ze haleboude.  
 yf she be not auowtrese. if she be  
 wy anoyr man. and so my bryen  
 ze be mad deed to ze laue in ze  
 body of crist. yf ze be of anoyr. pat  
 roos azen fro deap. yf ze bere fruyt  
 to god. **¶** for whie we weren in  
 fleish. passions of synes pat we  
 re by ze laue. wrouzte in oure  
 mebris. to bere fruyt to deap.  
 but now we ben bound fro ze la

ue of deap. i whiche we were hol  
 diu. so we serue in newnesse  
 of spirit. & not i eldnesse of lette.  
 what yfze we seye. yf ze la  
 ue is syne. god forbete. but I knowe  
 not syne. but by laue. for I wille  
 not yf conetige was syne. but for  
 ze laue seide. pou shalt not coney  
 te. and purz occasion taku. syne  
 bi ze manermet hap wrouzt i me  
 al conetile. for wyouten ze laue.  
 syne was deed. & syne wrouzt  
 te ze laue in tyne. **¶** but whane  
 ze comanemet was comu. syne  
 lynde azen. but I was deed. & pis  
 comanemet pat was to lyf. is  
 foundu to me to be deap. for syne  
 purz occasion taku bi ze comande  
 ment dilleynde me. & by pat it  
 slou me. yfze ze laue is hooly.  
 & ze comanemet is hooly. & iust  
 & good. is pane pat pig pat is god.  
 mad deap to me. god forbete. but  
 syne yf ze seie syne. purz good  
 ying wrouzt deap to me. yf ze  
 ne on maner purz ze comanemet.  
 and we witen yf ze laue is spiri  
 tual. but I am fleishly. seid and  
 syne. for I vnderstonde not pat  
 pat I worche. for I do not ze good  
 pig pat I wole. but I do ze ilke  
 yuel pig pat I hate. and if I do  
 pat pig pat I wole not. I conse  
 te to ze laue. yf it is good. but  
 now I worche not it now. but ze  
 syne pat dwelly i me. but I  
 woot. yf in me. yf is i my fleish  
 dwelly no good. for will hyt to  
 me. but I fynde not to parfume  
 good pig. for I do not ze ilke go  
 od pig. pat I wole. but I do ze il  
 ke yuel pig. pat I wole not. and  
 if I do pat yuel ying. pat I wole

not. I worche not it. but ze syne  
 pat dwelly in me. yfze I fynde  
 ze laue to me willige to do go  
 od pig. for yuel pig hyt to me  
 for I do ze to gidre to ze laue  
 of god after ze yner man. but I  
 be anoyr laue i my mebris. azen  
 fytige ze laue of my soule. & ma  
 kige me captif in ze laue of syne  
 pat is i my mebris. I am an vnce  
 ly ma. who shal deliue me. fro  
 ze body of pis syne. ze grace of god.  
 by ihu crist oure lord. yfze I am  
 sile bi ze soule serue to ze laue of  
 god. but bi fleish to ze laue of syne.

**¶** **vij.** **¶** **vij.** **¶** **vij.**  
**V**yng of dāpnaciō. is to he  
 pat ben i crist ihu. whiche mā  
 dren not after ze fleish. for ze  
 laue of ze spirit of lyf in crist ihu.  
 hap deliuered me fro ze laue of  
 syne & of deap. for pat pat was  
 ympossible to ze laue. i whar  
 ying it was hyl by fleish. god se  
 te his sone into ze lyfnesse of fle  
 ish of syne & of syne dāpnide  
 syne in fleish. yf ze makyng of  
 ze laue wer fulfild in us pat  
 goen not after ze fleish. but af  
 ter ze spirit. for ze pat ben af  
 ter ze fleish. sauoren po pigis  
 pat ben of ze fleish. but ze pat  
 ben after ze spirit. feelen po pi  
 gis pat ben of ze spirit. for ze  
 prudence of fleish. is deap. but  
 ze prudence of spirit. is lyf & ze  
 es. for ze wisdom of ze fleish.  
 is enemy to god. for it is not su  
 get to ze laue of god. for ney  
 it may. & ze pat ben in fleish.  
 moun not plesse to god. but ze  
 ben not in fleish. but in spirit.  
 if neyelles ze spirit of god dwel

ley in zou. but if ony hap not ze spi  
 ryt of crist. pis is not his. for if crist  
 is in zou. ze body is deed for syne.  
 but ze spirit lyuey for makyng.  
 and if ze spirit of hi pat reside ihu  
 crist fro deap dwelly i zou. he pat  
 reside ihu crist fro deap shal quy  
 bene also zour deedly bodies. for  
 ze spirit of ihu pat dwelly i zou.  
**¶** **vij.** **¶** **vij.** **¶** **vij.**  
**F**oreze bryen we ben detouris.  
 not to ze fleish. yf we lyue after  
 ze fleish. for if ze lyue after ze fle  
 ish. ze shal dye. but if ze bi ze  
 spirit slean ze dedis of ze fleish.  
 ze shal lyue. for who ene ben lad  
 bi ze spirit of god. res ben ze sones  
 of god. for ze han not take est loo  
 ne ze spirit of seruage in deede.  
 but ze han take ze spirit of adop  
 tiō of sones. in whiche we cryen.  
 abba. fader. & ze ilke spirit. zeldy  
 wituellig to oure spirit. yf we be  
 ze sones of god. if sones. & cryis  
 and cryis of god. & cryis to gidre  
 wy crist. if neyelles we suffer to  
 gidre. yf also we benglorified to  
 gidre. **¶** **vij.** **¶** **vij.** **¶** **vij.**  
**A**nd I tēme yf ze passious  
 of pis tyme ben not worpi. to ze  
 glorie to comyng pat shal be lke  
 wid in us. for ze abidig of creatu  
 re. abydy ze sthewig of ze sone  
 of god. but ze creatur is suget to  
 vanyte. not willige. but for hi  
 pat made it suget in hope. for  
 ze ilke create shal be deliued fro  
 seruage of corruptiō. into liber  
 te of ze glorie of ze sones of god.  
 & we witen. yf ech creatur. for wy  
 & trauely wy peyne tlyt. and  
 not oonly it. but also we vs sile  
 pat han ze fiste fruytis of ze  
 spirit. & we us sile lomen wy in  
 us for ze adopsiō of godis sones.



abidyngre ye azenbyng of our bo  
dy but bi hope we ben maid laf  
for hope pat is seyn is not hope  
for who hopre pat pig pat he seyn  
and if we hopen pat pig pat we  
seen not. we abiden bi pacience  
and also ye spirit helpre our in  
firmyte for what we shulen  
preye as it bihouer we wat not  
but ye ilke spirit aris for us in  
sowynge. pat moit not be teld  
out for he pat sekis ye hertis.  
woot what ye spirit desirre. for  
bi god he aris for hooly me  
we witen y to me pat lone god  
alle pigis worchen to gidre into  
good. to hem pat astir purpos  
ben depid seyntis for pilke pat  
he knew bifore. he bifore ordeyne  
de bi grace to be maid lyk to ye  
ymage of his lone. y he be ye fir  
ste bigetun among many byren  
and pilke y he bifore ordeyne to  
blis. hem he depide. y whiche he  
depide. hem he iustifiede. y whi  
che he iustifiede. y hem he glo  
rifiede. what pane shule we seie  
to pes pigis. if god for us. who  
is azen us. ye which also spari  
de not his owne lone. but for us  
alle bitook hy. how also 3at he not  
to us. alle pigis wy hy. who  
shal accuse azen ye chosne me  
of god. it is god pat iustifiede.  
who is it pat cōdepney. it is he  
cit pat was deed. the ye which  
roos azen. ye which is on ye ryz  
half of god. y ye which preier  
for us. who pane shal departe  
us fro ye charite of cit. tribula  
cion. oz angwylth. oz hynur. oz  
nakidnesse. oz plectuon. oz pel.  
oz liverd. as it is writun for we

ben slayn al day for pee. we be  
geillid as sheep of slaynter but  
in alle pes pigis we ouercome.  
for hy pat louede us but y am  
certeyn. y ney deey. ney hy. ney  
angels. ney pncypalis. ney  
tues. ney prelet pigis. ney  
pigis to comyge ney streng  
re. ney hyre. ney depnesse. ney  
noon opir creatur. may depar  
te us fro ye charite of god. y is  
in cit ihu oure lord. **C. 11. v.**  
**I** Seie trewe i crist ihu.  
y he not. for my colie  
ce berre witnessig to  
me in ye hooly gost for greet  
hermyne is to me. y contyni  
el soure to my herte for my  
salf desirede to be departid fro  
cit for my byren. pat be my  
cousins azen ye flesch. y he me  
of isrl. whos is adopcion of lones  
y glorie. y testamet y ympe of  
ye laue. y sermyse of biheeste  
whos ben ye fadris y of whiche  
is cit azen ye flesch. y is god a  
bone alle pigis. blessed to wold  
dis amē but not y ye word of  
god hap falle don for not alle pat  
ben of isrl. yes israelitis ney  
rei pat ben seed of abrahā. alle  
ben lones. but in ysaac ye seed  
shal be depid to pee. pat is to  
seie not rei pat ben lones of ye  
flesch. ben lones of god but rei  
pat ben lones of biheeste. ben  
demed in ye seed for whi pis is ye  
word of biheeste. Alas pis tyme  
y shal come. y a lone shal be to  
sare y not onuly she. but also  
rebecca hadde twey lones of o  
luggynge by of ysaac our fadir  
y whane rei were not yet born.

don  
ne y hadde on pig of good erir  
of yuel. y ye purpos of god shul  
de dwelle by electon. not of wer  
kis. but of god depige it was  
leid to hy pat ye more shulde  
serue ye lalle. as it is writun y  
louede iacob. but y hatide esau  
what perfore shulen we seie.  
wher wylidnesse be anentis  
god. god forbode for he seip to  
moyses y shal haue mercy on  
whom y haue mercy. y shal y  
ue mercy on whom y shal haue  
mercy perfore it is not ney of  
man wylige. ney renyge. but  
of god haunge mercy y ye scrip  
ture seip to faraol for to pis pig  
y haue sturid pee. y shewe in  
pee my etir. y my name be  
teeld in al erpe y fore of whom  
god wole he hap mercy. y is ho  
he wole he endur y pane seist  
yon to me. what is souzt y it. for  
who bystondy his wille. y ma  
what art y. pat answerit to god.  
wher a maid ping seip to hy pat  
made it. what hast yon maid me  
so. wher a potter of dey hap not  
poiker to make of ye same gobet  
o vessel into hous. anoz into dil  
pyt. y if god wylige to shewe  
his wryppe y to make his poiker  
knowun. hap snuffid in greet  
pacience vessels of wryppe. able  
into deey to shewe ye richelhis  
of his glorie. into vessels of mer  
cy. whiche he made redy to glo  
rie. whiche also he depide not on  
ly of jewis. but also of here me.  
as he seip in olee. y shal clepe.  
not my peple. my peple. y not  
my lonyd. my lonyd. y not geti  
ge mercy. getige mercy y it

shal be in ye place. wher it is leid  
to he. not ze my peple. rei  
shule be depid ye lones of god  
hyngre but y shal crye for ihu  
if ye noubre of ihu shal be as  
gravel of ye see. ye relis shu  
len be maid laf. forlope a word  
make an ende y abreggig in  
equite. for ye lord shal make  
a word breggid on al ye erpe. y  
as y shal bifore seide but god of  
coftis hadde lest to us seed. we  
hadden be maid as sodom. y we  
hadde be lyk a gomoz y fore whi  
shule we seie. y heyeue me pat  
shulde not ryz wyllesse. han ge  
te ryz wyllesse. the ye ryz wyl  
nesse pat is of fey but ihu in  
wrynge ye laue of ryz wylnes  
se. cam not. pftyth into ye la  
ue of ryz wylnesse. whi. for  
not of fey. but as of werkis. y  
rei spurneten azen ye stoon of  
offencion. as it is writun. lo y put  
te a stoon of offencion in syon.  
y a stoon of shandre. y ech pat  
shal bileue y it. shal not be co  
foundid. **C. 11. x.**  
**B** Reperen ye wille of my  
herte. y my biseching is  
maid to god for hem to heeche  
but y bere witnessig to hem y  
rei han loue of god. but not at  
tir kymyng. for rei vnkowysge  
goddis ryz wylnesse. y sekige to  
make trefast her owne ryz  
fulnesse. be not ligit to ye  
ryz wylnesse of god for ye ende  
of ye laue is cit. to ryz wylnes  
se to ech ma pat bileue. for mo  
yses wroot. for ye ma pat shal  
to ryz wylnesse y is of ye la  
ue. shal lyue in it. but ye ryz



Wysnele pat is of bileue seip  
seve you not in pi herte. who st  
hal stye into heuene: y is to  
seie. to lede don eit. or who shal  
go don into helle: pat is to azen  
depe eit fro depe: but what seip  
ye aptur: ye word is ny: i pi  
mony: & in pi herte pis is ye  
word of bileue: which we preche  
pat if you knowlecht i pi mo  
ny. ye lord ihu eit. & bileued i  
ym herte. y god rethid hi fro  
depe: you shalt be saaf: for by  
herte me bileuey to rztibisnel  
se: but by mony knowlechyng is  
mand to heelp: foribly aptur  
seip: ech pat bileuey in hi: sh  
al not be confoundid: & y is no  
distinction of iews & of greek  
for ye same lord of alle: is ryche  
in alle pat inuwardly clepen hi:  
for ech ma who enie shal inuward  
ly clepe ye name of ye lord: shal  
be saaf: how rane shule per m  
wardly clepe hi: into who per  
han not bileued: or how shule  
per bileue to hi: who per han not  
herd: how shule per heer: wy  
oute a prechour: & how shule  
per preche: but per be sent:  
as it is writu: how fan: ben  
ye feet of hem pat pchen  
pees: of he y prechen goode  
pigs: but not alle me oberent  
to ye gospel for i laye seip: lord  
who bileuede to our heeryng:  
y fore seip is of heeryng: but hee  
ryg: bi ye word of eit: but i seie  
wher per herde not: shis lope  
ly ye word of hem wente out  
into al erve: & her wordis ito  
ye ende of ye world: but i seie wh  
rael knew not: first moyses

seip: i shal lete you to enye: y ze  
be no folk: y ze be an vnylyse  
folk: i shal sende you into wyap  
ye and i laye is boold & seip: i  
am foundu of me pat seken me  
not: openly: i apperide to hem: y  
ariden not me: but to israel he seip  
al day: i stremte out my hondis to  
a peple pat bileuede not: but azen  
seide me // **C. 21. 1.**  
**U**erfore i seie wher god  
hay put away his peple:  
god forbode: for i am an isra  
elite: of ye seed of abrahm: of  
ye lynage of beiamy: god hay  
not put away his peple: which  
he bifore knew: wher ze wite not.  
What ye aptur: seip in elye: how  
he preiey god azens yrael: lord per  
han slayn pi pfetis: per han vn  
dirdoluen ym antenis: & i am  
left aloone: & per seken my lyf  
but what seip godis answere to  
hi: i haue left to me tenene you  
sendis of me: y han not boluid  
her knees bifore baal: so y fore al  
so in pis tyme: ye relyts be mand  
saaf: by ye chelyng of ye grace  
of god: & if it be bi ye gre of god:  
it is not now of werkis: ellis gre  
is not now gre: what rane: il  
rael hay not getu pis pat he sou  
te: but election hay getu: &  
ye ope ben blyndid: as it is writu  
god gaf to hem a spirit of compic  
tion: hen y per se not: & eeris y  
per heer: not: into pis day: & da  
my seip: be ye boord of he mand  
into a grym bifore hem: & into cac  
chyng & into standir & into zeldyng  
to he be ye yzen of he mand derk  
y per se not: & howe you don al  
gatis ye baf of hem: y fore i seie

Wher per offend so: y per schilden  
falle don: god forbode: but by ye  
gilt of hem: heche is mand to he  
rene me: y per liare he: y if ye  
gilt of he ben richellis of ye wo  
ld: & ye makig lesse of he be ry  
chellis of heven me: how moche  
more ye plente of se: but i seie  
to you hevene men: for as lon  
ge as i am apottle: of heven  
me: i shal honou: my myn  
terie: i in ony maner: i am my  
fleshty for to folowe: & y make  
sume of he saaf: for if ye lost of  
he is ye retonchlyng of ye world:  
what is ye takyng vp: but lyf  
of deid me: for if a litil part of  
pat pat is taffid be hooly: ye hool  
gobet is hooly: & if ye roote is hooly:  
also ye branchis: what if ony of ye  
branchis ben brokū: whie y wer  
a wylde olyne tree: art graffid a  
mong hem: & art mand felowe of  
ye roote: & of ye fatnesse of ye oly  
ne tree: nyle you haue gloze aze  
mus ye branchis: for if you gloze  
eit: you berit not ye roote: but  
ye roote pee: y fore you leit: ye bran  
chis ben brokū: y be graffid ym  
wel for vnbilene ye branchis be  
brokū: but you stouidist bi seip  
nyle you sanore hy pig: but dre  
de you: for if god sparid not ye  
kyndly branchis: lest panetun  
he spare not pee: y fore se ye good  
nesse: & ye ferfuellie of god: zhe ye  
ferfuellie: into he pat felid down  
but ye goodnesse of god into pee:  
if you dwelldist in goodnesse: ellis  
also you shalt be itt don: zhe &  
per shule be sett ym: if per dwelle  
not i vnbilene: for god is myty:  
to sette he ym eitloone: for if y art

kyndly  
itt don of ye wylde olyne tree: & a  
zen kynde art sett ito a good olyne  
tree: how moche more: per pat ben  
by kynde: shule be sett in her oly  
ne tree: but bryper i wole not  
pat ze vnknoke pis mystie: pat  
ze be not wyle to you silt: for blyd  
nesse hay fild a party in israel:  
til pat ye plente of heven men  
entride: & so al israel shule be  
mand saaf: as it is writu he sh  
al come of syon pat shal deliue:  
& turne away ye wickidnesse of  
jacob: & pis testamēt to he of me:  
whie i shal do a wey her synes  
after ye gospel per ben enemys for  
you: but per ben moost dere worpe  
bi ye election for ye fadris: & ye nif  
tis & ye clepyng of god: ben wy  
oute foryngyng: and as hi tyme  
also ze bileueden not to god: but  
now ze han gete mercy for ye vn  
bileue of hem: so & rese nois bileue  
den not: into you mercy: y also  
per gete mercy: for god dolide  
to gidre alle pigis in vnbilene:  
y he haue mercy on alle a ye hy  
nesse of ye richellis of ye wylde  
of ye kyngyng of god: how icomp  
henible ben hile domes: & hile wey  
es ben vnlerchable: for whi who  
knew ye watt of of ye lord: or who  
was his conicelour: or who for  
me gaf to hy: & it shal be quyt  
to hym: for of hym & by hy: & in  
hy be alle pigis: to hi be gloze  
into worldis amē // **C. 21. 1.**  
**U**erfore brayen i bileche  
you by ye mycy of god: y  
ze ynye you bodies: a lymge sa  
crifice: hooly plehyge to god: & you  
re seruise resonable: and nyle ze  
be cofourmed to pis world: but be  
ze refourmed i newnesse of you



whitt: p ze priene which is ye wille  
of god. good & wel plesynge & par  
fyt for i seie by ye grace pat is  
joinn to me to alle pat ben a nio  
zon. p ze saie not more pan it bi  
honey to saie. but forto saie to  
eobrenelle and to ech man as  
god hay departid ye mesur of  
feyr for as in o body we han ma  
ny membris. but alle ye membris  
han not ye same dede. so we ma  
nye ben o body in eit. & ech ben  
membris. con of anoyr perfore  
we pat han zifris drynunge after  
ye grace. pat is joinn to us. eyn  
profecie after ye resoi of fey. ey  
seruise i mynistrig. eyn he pat  
techy in techig. he pat sturp lof  
ly i monestryng. he pat zynep i  
syplenelle. he pat is sonereyn i  
bifynelle. he p hay mercy i glad  
nelle. lone is woutte fernyng. ha  
tynge yuel. drynunge to good. loyn  
ge to gidre ye charite of bryphed  
ech come bifore to wozlshypen oye  
not slois in bifynelle. feruet in lpr it  
seruynge to ye lord. ioyge in hope  
patient in tribulaciou. bily in p  
er. zynunge good to ye nedis of  
seynis. keppynge hospitalite. bles  
se ze me pat purshiben zon. blesse  
ze & nyle ze curle. forto ioye wy  
men pat ioyen. forto wepe wy me  
pat wepen. feele ze ye same ying  
to gidre. not sauyngge hy yingis.  
but cōsentynge to meke yingis.  
f. **P**zile ze be prudent anentis zon  
sulf. to no man zeldynge yuel for  
yuel. but puruepe ze good yigis.  
not onely bifore god. but allo by  
fore alle me. if it may be don. pat  
pat is of zon. hane ze pees wy al  
le me. ze moost dere brypere not

defendynge zon sulf. but zyme ze pla  
ce to wryppe for it is wryt. ye lord  
seip to me vnanice. & i shal zelde  
but if ym enemy hugrip. fede p  
hym. if he purst. yue you dym  
ke to hi. for you doyngge yis ying.  
shalt ga. die to gidre colis on  
his heed. nyle you be onerto  
mū of y. uel. but onercome  
yuel by good. **Em**  
**E**re potberis for yer is no  
potber. but of god. and po  
yngis pat ben of god. ben orderid  
perfore he p azenlondy potber.  
azenlondy ye ordynance of god.  
& yei pat azenlondy. geten to hem  
sulf dāpnaciou. for pures be not  
to ye drede of good iwerk. but of  
yuel. but wolt p. p. you drede not  
potber. do you good yig. & you  
shalt hane prelyng of it. for he  
is ye mynistrig of god. to pee ito  
good. but if you doist yuel. drede  
you. for not wrypente caule he be  
ryp ye liberd. for he is ye mynistrig  
of god. weiere into wryppe. to hy  
pat doy yuel. & pfore by nede he ze  
sugert. not conly for wryppe. but  
allo for consiencie. for perfore ze  
zynen tributis. yei ben ye mynistrig  
tris of god. & seruen for yis same  
yig. perfore zelde ze to alle me det  
tis to whom tribute. tribut. to  
who tol. tol. to who drede. drede.  
to whom honour. hono. to no mā  
oibe ze ony yig. but pat ze lone  
to gidre. for he pat louey his ney  
ebore. hay fulfillid ye laise. for  
shalt do no lecherie. you shalt  
not sle. p. shalt not stele. p. shalt  
not sepe fals witnesis. you shalt  
not coneyte ye ying of yuepe

boze. and if yer be ony oyr maide  
met. it is inforid in yis woid. p  
shalt lone y neryebore as y bilf  
ye lone of neryebore. wozchy not  
yuel. pfore lone is ye fulfillig of  
ye laise. and we knolten yis tyme  
p. ye our is nob. p. we ryle fro  
sleep for now our heclre is neer.  
pā whine we bilenede. ye nyste  
wante bifore. but ye day hay  
uered pfore caste we albey ye ther  
his of derfnessis. & be we clord  
in ye armis of lht. as in day  
wandze we onestly. not in super  
flue fecris & drikenessis. not in  
beddis & vnchasttees. not i stryf  
& mēpe. but be ze clord in ye  
lord ihu eit. and do ze not ye bi  
lynelle of fleish i dehyris. **Em**  
**B**t take ze a sylt mā i bile  
ne. not i demyngis of rom  
tis. for anoy man leuey p  
he may ete alle yigis. but he pat  
is sylt. ete woztis. he pat ety. dis  
pile not hi pat ety not. and he p  
ety not. deme not hi pat ety.  
for god hay take hi to hym. who  
art you pat demest anoyes ser  
uait. to his lord he stondy or fal  
ly fro hy. but he shal stonde. for  
ye lord is mystry. to make hym  
parfyt. for whi con deney a day  
by tibre a day. anoy demey ech  
day. ech man encrese in his witt.  
he pat vndr stondy ye day. vū  
dr stondy to ye lord. & he pat e  
ty. ety to ye lord. for he don pan  
higis to god. & he pat ety not. ety  
not to ye lord. & don pakigis to god.  
for no mā of us lyuey to hi sulf.  
& no mā drey to hi sulf. for wher  
we lyuen. we lyuen to ye lord.  
& wher we dyen. we dyen to ye

lord pfore wher we lyuen or drey.  
we ben of ye lord. for whi for yis  
yig. eit was deed and roos aze.  
p. he be lord bope of quike & of  
deed me. but what demest you p  
broy. or whi dispist you p bro  
yir. for alle we shulen stonde bi  
fore ye throne of crist. for it is wry  
tū. i lyue seip ye lord. for to me  
ech kne shal be boikid. & ech tū  
ge shal knowleche to god. pfor  
ech of us. shal zelde resoi to god  
for hy sulf. pfore no more deme  
we ech oyr. but more deme ze yis  
yig. p. ze putte not. hūtyg or  
stalandre to a broy. **Em** wout & tril  
te in ye lord ihu. p. no yig. is co  
myn by hym. no but to hi pat de  
mey ony yig. to be vncleue. to  
hi it is vncleue. & if y broy be mid  
sory in cōsiencie for mete. now  
you walkst not after charite. nyle  
you pūz y mete leesle hym.  
for whom crist drede. pfore be not  
our good yig. blasfemyd. for whi  
ye reuyme of god is not mete &  
drynk. but rist wryshelle & pees  
& ioye i ye hooly goft. and he pat  
in yis yig. seruey eit. plesy god.  
& is proued to me. pfore hake we  
yo yingis pat ben of pees. & kepe  
we to gidre yo yigis pat ben of  
edificaciou. nyle you for mete dis  
trye ye werk of god. for alle yigis  
ben clene. but it is yuel to ye mā  
pat ety by offendynge. it is good  
to not ete fleish. & to not drynke  
wyn. ney in what yig. y broy  
offendy. or is stalandy. or is mid  
sylt. you hant fey anentis y silf.  
hane you bifore god. blesid is he  
pat demey not hym sulf. in pat  
yig. pat he preney for he pat de



meþ is dāpned. if he etip: for it  
is not of fery: & al þis ƿ is not  
of fery: is þine. **¶** **¶** **¶**

**B**ut we laddere me oiben to  
suteyne þe febleuēsses of  
þis me: & not plese to  
us lest: ech of us plese to his nez  
eþore in good: to edificaciōn: for  
est pleide not to his self: as it is  
writū: þe reþones of me dīsp  
hise þee: felden on me for what  
ener þis ben writū: þo ben wri  
tū to our techig: ƿ by þe pacie  
ce & confort of scripturis we han  
hope: but god of patience & of  
solace zyne to zou to vnderston  
de þe same þis: ech into oþer at  
tir ihu crist: þat ze of o wille  
writ o moir wozshipe god &  
þe fadir of our lord ihu est: for  
which þing take ze to gidre: as  
allo est took zou into þe honour  
of god: for i sepe ƿ ihu est was  
a mynysre of circūciōn for þe treu  
ye of god: to conferme þe biheestis  
of fadris: & heþene me oiben to ho  
noure god for merch: as it is wri  
tū: þerfore lord i shal knowleche  
to þee amōg heþene me: & i shal  
synge to þi name: & est he seip  
ze heþene me be ze glad wip his  
peple: and est alle heþene men  
herie ze þe lord: and alle pepis  
magnyfie ze hym: and est i shal  
seip: ƿer shal be a roote of ielle:  
þat shal ryle vp to goime heþene  
me: & heþene men shulen hope in  
hy: & god of hope fulfille zou in al  
iope & pees in bilyngge: ƿ ze entre  
ce in hope & vertu of þe hooly gost

**¶** And byþere i my self am cer  
teyn of zou: þat allo ze ben ful of  
loue: and ze ben fillid wip al þis

myg: so ƿ ze moir moneste ech of  
and byþere more boldely i woot  
to zou a party as bynggynge zou  
to myde: for þe grace þat is zoun  
to me of god: ƿ i be þe mynys  
tre of est ihu among heþene me  
& i halowe þe gospel of god: ƿat  
þe offryng of heþene me be accep  
tid: & halewid in þe hooly gost: ƿ  
fore i haue glorie in est ihu to god  
for i dar not speke ony þing of  
þis þis: which est dōir not by  
me in to obedience of heþene  
men: in word & dedis in vertu  
of tokenes & grete woundis: i  
vtn of þe hooly gost: so ƿ fro  
ierlm bi cūpas to þe illrik lee:  
i haue fillid þe gospel of est: & lo  
i haue prechid þis gospel: not  
where crist was named: lest  
i bylde vpon anoyers ground  
but as it is writū: for to whos  
it is not teeld of hy: ƿer ihu  
se: and ƿer þat herden not: sh  
ulen vnderstonde: for which þis  
i was lettid ful myche: to come  
to zou: & i am lettid to þis tyme  
and nois i haue not ferþere  
place in þes cuntreis: but i ha  
ue desyr to come to zou: of ma  
ny zeeris þat ben passid whā  
ne i bigyne to passe into spay  
ne: i hope ƿ in my goyng i  
shal se zou: & of zou i shal be  
led ydū: if i vse zou first in  
party: þerfore nois i shal passe  
for to ierlm: to mynysre to  
seyntis: for macedonye & acane  
han asayed to make sū ziste:  
to poze me of seyntis þat ben  
i ierlm: for it pleide to þe: &  
ƿer ben detours of hem for he  
þene me ben maad pteners

of her gostly þing: ƿer eiben  
allo in fleschly þingis to my  
nystre to hem: þerfore whāne i  
haue endid þis þis: i haue as  
signed to hem þis fruyt: i shal  
passe by zou into spayne: and i  
woot: ƿ i comyge to zou: shal  
come into þe abūdance of þe  
blesig: of est ƿ fore byþen i  
bileche zou bi our lord ihu est:  
& bi charite of þe hooly gost: ƿ  
ze helpe me in zour pteners  
to þe lord: ƿ i be deliuerid fro  
þe vnteyful men þat ben i iu  
dee: and ƿ þe offryng of my  
seruyce: be acceptid in ierlm to  
seyntis: ƿ i come to zou i ioye  
by þe wille of god: & ƿ i be re  
freithid wip zou: & god of pees  
be wip zou alle amē. **¶** **¶** **¶**

**A**nd i comende to zou þe  
ben our sūm: which  
is in þe seruyce of þe  
churche ƿ is at tencris: ƿ ze rel  
seyne þis into þe lord wozshipe  
to seyntis: & ƿ ze helpe þis: in  
what eue cause she shal nede  
of zou: for she helpide many  
men: & my self: greete ze þat  
ca & aquyla myn helperis in  
est ihu: which vnderputide  
her neckis for my lyf: to which  
not i alcone do þankis: but  
allo alle þe churche of heþene  
me: & greete ze wel her meþ  
neal churche: greete wel efene  
te loued to me: þat is þe firs  
te of alþe i est ihu: greete wel  
marie: ƿer which hay traueled  
moche in vs: greete wel andro  
nyk & iulian my colyns & my  
enene prisois: which ben no  
ble among þe apostlis: & wh

che were bifore me in est: greete  
te wel amphote moost dereþor  
þe to me in þe lord: greete wel  
urban our helper in est ihu: &  
staachen my derlyng: greete wel  
appellem þe noble in crist: greete  
te wel hem þat ben of aristobolis  
hous: greete wel erodion my  
colyn: greete wel hem ƿ ben of  
narciscies hous: ƿat ben in þe  
lord: greete wel tryfenuam & tri  
folam which wimen traueled  
in þe lord: greete wel þe fida  
moost dereþor þe woman: þat  
hay traueled moche in þe lord:  
greete wel rufus: & cholone  
in þe lord: & his modir & myn gr  
eete wel anicrete: flegoncia: her  
me: patroban: herma: & byþen  
þat ben wip þe greete wel filo  
logus & niham & neren & his  
sister & olympades: & alle þe sey  
tis þat ben wip hem: greete  
ze wel to gidre in hooly coll: alle  
þe churche of est: greete zou wel  
**¶** But byþen i þeþe zou: ƿ ze  
aspie hem ƿ maken dissencions  
& þis tyns bilydis þe doctm: ƿ  
ze han lerned: & boke ze away fro  
hem: for synche me serue not to  
þe lord est: but to her woube:  
& by þisete wozdis & blesigis  
disseyne þe hertis of inocent  
me: but zoure obedience is þat  
plithid in to euy place: þerfore i  
haue ioye in zou: but i wole ƿ  
ze be wyle in good þis: & synple  
in þuel: and god of pees trede  
sathanas vnder zour feet: þis  
tely: þe grace of our lord ihu  
est: be wip zou. **¶** Timothe my  
helper: greetu zou wel: & allo  
lucius & iason & solipar my co



lyns / I tereyns greete zoi wel:  
pat woot vis epistle in ye lord /  
Gaius my oost gretip zoi wel: &  
al ye churche / erastus tresorer of  
ye citee gretip zoi wel: & quar-  
tus broper / ye grace of oure lord  
ihū cīt: wy zoi alle amen / & ho-  
nour & glorie be to hy pat is myz-  
ty. to cōferme zoi by my gospel  
& prethig of ihū cīt: by ye re-  
uelacion of mysterie holdū stille  
in tymes euilantige / which myl-  
terie is now maid oppn. by sp-  
tiris of pfectis. bi ye commande-  
ment of god wy oute bigynnyng  
& endig: to ye obediēce of fey tall  
hevene me / ye mystye knowbi  
bi ihū cīt to god alcone wys. to  
whom be honour & glorie into  
wordis of worldis amē.

*Ver endip ye pistle to romayns.*

*& bigynnyng ye prolog on ye firste pistle to corinthis / vis leyr jero.*

**C**orinthis ben of acage. & rei-  
m hē man herde of ye post-  
le ye word of trewe. & weren  
peritid i many maneris of fal-  
se apostlis / sume were peritid  
of eloquēte of filosofie ful of wo-  
dis: ower men were led into ye  
lect of laibe of jehis / & is. to hol-  
de it nedeful wy ye gospel / ye  
pistle clepī azen yes corinthis  
to verry fey & wysdom of ye  
gospel: & writip to hem fro ef-  
frie by tymothe his discipule.

*Ver endip ye plog: & bigynnyng ye firste pistle / c. p.*

**D**ul depid apostle  
of ihū cīt: bi ye will  
of god: & lostenes  
brov: to ye churche of god pat is  
at corithe / to hē pat ben halowid

in cīt ihū: & depid leyntis. wy  
alle pat myhardly clepen ye na-  
me of oure lord ihū cīt. in ech pla-  
ce of hē & of oure: grace to zoi  
& pees of god oure fadir: & of ye  
lord ihū cīt: / I do pankyng to my  
god eimore for zoi i ye grace  
of god: & is zoi to zoi i cīt ihū  
for m alle pigis ze ben maid ry-  
che i hy. in ech word. & in ech k-  
nyng: as ye witnessig of cīt is cō-  
fermyd i zoi / so y no pig fable  
to zoi i ony grace: pat abyden  
ye sthebig of oure lord ihū cīt /  
which also shal cōferme zoi to  
ye ente wyponne cryme: in ye  
day of ye comyng of oure lord ihū  
cīt: / Al treth god: by who ze ben  
clepid into ye felowshipe of his  
sone ihū cīt oure lord: but bypen  
I blesche zoi by ye name of ou-  
re lord ihū cīt: & ze alle seye ye  
same pig: & pat dilleuons be not  
amog zoi / but be ze parfyte in ye  
same witt: & in ye same kumyng  
for my bypen it is teld to me of  
hē pat ben at does: & stryues be  
amog zoi / and I seye pat. y ech  
of zoi leyr / for I am of pouil: & I  
am of appollo: & I am of cesas:  
but I am of cīt: wher cīt is depar-  
tid: wher pouil was crucified for  
zoi: eyn ze ben baptid in ye na-  
me of pouil: / I do pankyng to my  
god: & I baptide noon of zoi:  
but crispus & gabus: lest ony mā  
seye y ze ben baptid i my name  
and I baptide also ye hous of  
stephan / but I woot not y: / bap-  
tide ony oye for cīt sente me not  
to baptide: but to preche ye gos-  
pel / not in wysdom of word: y  
ye croll of cīt be not voidid alwey

for ye word of ye croll: is foli to  
hem pat peristhen / but to hē pat  
be maid laif y is to seye to us:  
it is wtt of god: for it is writū  
I shal distraye ye wysdom of  
wyle mē: & I shal reproue ye  
prudence of prudent mē: wher  
is ye wyle mā: wher is ye wyle  
lawyere: wher is ye purchalo  
of ye world: wher god hay not  
maid ye wysdom of ye world: fo-  
myd: for ye world in wysdom of  
god: knew not god by wysdom:  
it pleide to god by foli of pchige  
to maken hem laif pat biledē  
for jehis seken signes: & gree-  
kis seken wysdom / but we pche  
cīt crucified: to jehis standre:  
& to heven mē foli / but to ye jehis  
& greekis pat ben clepid we pche  
crist ye vertu of god: & ye wys-  
dom of god: for pat y is foli pig  
of god: is wyser pan mē: & pat  
pat is feble pig of god: is stren-  
ger pan mē / but bypen ze ze zoi  
re depyng: for not many wyle  
mē star ye fleist: not many  
myzti not many noble / but god  
chees po pigis pat ben fōned  
of ye world: to confōnde wyle  
mē / and god chees ye feble ym-  
gis of ye world: to confōnde ye  
stronge pigis: & god chees ye  
v-noble pigis: & dispilable pigis  
of ye world: & po pigis pat be  
not: to distraye po pigis pat be  
y ech mā haue not glorie i his  
syt / but of hē ze be in cīt ihū:  
which is maad of god to us by  
dō & ryztyng: & hoolynesse:  
& azenbyng: & as it is writū  
hē pat glorie: haue glorie in  
ye lord.

**A**nd I bypen whāne I cam  
to zoi: cam not in ye hy-  
nelle of word ey of wyl-  
dom: tollige to zoi ye witnessig  
of crist: for I demede not me to  
kūne ony ying among zoi: but  
cīt ihū & hy crucified: & I in syl-  
nelle & drede & moche tremblig  
was among zoi: & my word &  
my prethig was not in sūtely  
sturyng wordis of māns wyl-  
dom: but in sthebyng of spirit  
& of vertu / y zoi fey be not  
in ye wysdom of mē: but in ye  
vertu of god: for we speke wyl-  
dom among parfyte mē: but not  
wysdom of pis world: ney of pi-  
ces of pis world pat ben distried  
but we speken ye wysdom of  
god i mysterie: which wysdom  
is hid / which wysdom god bifoze  
ordēmed bifoze wordis to on-  
re glorie: which noon of ye prin-  
ces of pis world knew: for if  
ye hadden knowbi: ye shulden  
neuer haue crucified ye lord  
of glorie / but as it is writū: y  
ze sayz not: ne eere herde: ney  
it steyde into herte of mē: whē  
pigis god arayed: to hē pat lōuen  
uen hi / but god sthe wite to us: bi hy  
spirit: for whi ye spirit serchyp all pigis:  
zhe ye depe ymgis of god: and  
who of mē woot: what pigis  
ben of mā: but ye spirit of mā  
pat is in hi: so what pigis be  
of god: no mā knowip: but ye  
spirit of god: and we han not  
releyued ye spirit of pis world:  
but ye spirit pat is of god: y  
we wite what pigis ben zoi  
to us of god: whiche pigis we  
speken also not in wyle wordis



of manys wisdom: but in ye  
doctryn of ye spirit. & maken  
a liknesse of spiritual yngis  
to gostly me: for a beestly man  
perleuey not po yngis: nat be  
of ye spirit of god: for it is foly to  
hy: & he may not vnderstonde  
for it is examyned gostly: but  
a spiritual ma demey alle ym  
gis: & he is demed of no man  
as it is writun: & who knew ye  
witt of ye lord: or who taughte  
hy: & we han ye witt of est. **C. m.**

**A**nd I brysen myzte not  
speke to you: as to spi  
ritual men: but as to  
fleschly men: as to litte childe  
in est. I zaf to you mylk drynke  
not mete: for ze myzten not  
yet ney ze moibn now: for ze  
ze ben fleschly: for while stryf  
is amog you: wher ze ben not  
fleschly: & ze goen after ma: &  
for whane sume ley: I am of  
poul: anoy but I am of apollo:  
wher ze ben not me: what pfor  
is apollo: & what poul: yei be  
mystryis of hy: to whom ze ha  
bileyd: & to ech ma as god hay  
zoun: I plaunte. apollo moyl  
tude: but god zaf encreeching  
perfore ney he pat planty is  
ony pig: ney he pat moystry:  
but god pat zuner encreeching  
& he pat planty: & he p moystry:  
ben oon: & ech shal take his oib  
ne meede: after his tranel: for  
we ben ye helperis of god: ze  
ben ye erpe tilyng of god: ze  
ben ye bolyng of god: after ye  
grace of god pat is zoun to  
me: as a wyl maystr carpent  
I sette ye foudemet: & anoy

byldy abone: but ech ma se hois  
he byldy abone: for no ma may  
sette anoy foudamet: ontakun  
pat pat is sett: which is est ihu  
for if ony byldy ouer his fou  
demet: gold. siluer. piousse stoo  
nes. stichis. hey or tribul: eny  
manys werk shal be oppn: for  
ye day of ye lord shal declare:  
for it shal be thewid in fyer  
ye fier shal preue ye werk of  
ech man: what maner werk it  
is: if ye werk of ony ma dibelle  
stille. which he byldit abone: he  
shal relleyne mete: if ony ma  
mys werk beue: he shal suffre  
harm: but he shal be saaf: so ne  
veles as by fyer. **C. m.** ze not  
pat ze ben ye temple of god: &  
ye spirit of god dwellyn in you:  
& if ony defouly ye teple of god:  
god shal lese hy: for ye temple  
of god is hooky: which ze ben: no  
ma dwellyn hy sylf. **C. m.** ony ma  
amog you is ley to be wps in  
his world: be he maid a fool: y he  
be wyle: for ye wisdom of his  
world: is foly auentis god: for it  
is tizit: I shal caache wyle me  
in her fel wisdom: & est ye lord  
knowy ye pountis of wyle me:  
for po ben weyn: perfore no ma  
hane glorie in me: for alle yngis  
ben zoun. ep poul. ep apollo. ep  
cefas. ep ye world. ep hy. ep  
dey. ep yngis plent. ep yngis  
to comye: for alle yngis be zoun:  
& ze ben of est: & est is of god.  
**C. m.** **A**ma gelle. **C. m.**  
us: as mystryis of est.  
& dispenderis of ye mystry  
teries of god: now it is souz her  
amog ye dispenseris p a man

be foudmetre: & to me it is for ye  
leeft pig: y I be demyd of you: or  
of manys day: but ney I deme my  
sylf: for I am no pig ouertro  
wige to my sylf: but not i ris  
yng: I am iustified: for he pat  
demey me: is ye lord: pfor nyle  
ze deme bifore ye tyme: til ye  
ye lord come. which shal lizue  
ye hid yngis of derkneslis. & it  
shal thewe ye councels of hertis  
and yane preching shal be to e  
che ma of god. **C. m.** brysen I  
hane tiffingurd yes yngis to  
me: & into apollo for you: y m  
vs se lerne lest on y it is writun:  
oon azeis anoy. be blown wy  
pyde: for anoyer: who demey p:  
ze what hast you: pat y hast not  
relleynd. what glorie p as y  
haddit not relleynd: now ze  
ben fillid: now ze ben maid ry  
che ze regnen wy outen us: &  
I wolde pat ze regne: y also we  
regne wy zoun: & I gelle. y god  
shewit us ye laste apostis.  
as pilke pat bey sent to ye deep:  
for we ben maid a spectacle to  
ye world: & to aigels: & to men:  
we foolis for est: but ze prndet  
in est we syke: but ze stronge  
ze noble: but we vnable: til ito  
his hour. we hngren & yrtten  
& ben nakid: & ben lymen wy  
buffatis: & we ben vustable: &  
we trauelen wozdige wy our  
hondis: we ben curid: & we blec  
sen: we suffren persecucion:  
& we abiden longe: we be blasfe  
myd: & we bueche as defingis  
of his world: we ben maid ye out  
castig of alle yngis til zit: I kn  
te not yes yngis. y I confoude  
you: but I warne as my moost

deere wyse sones: for why: if ze  
han ten youland of vnder maistis  
in est: but not not many fadris  
for in est ihu I hane geuend you  
by ye gospel: perfore brysen I ppe  
you: be ze folowerris of me: as I of  
crist: perfore I sente to you ty mothe:  
which is my moost deere wyse so  
ne: & feryful: ye lord which shal  
teche you my weyes: pat be in est  
ihu: as I teche enery pisher: & ech  
churche: as you: I shulde not co  
me to you: so sume be blown wy  
pyde: but I shal come to you: if god  
wile: & I shal knowe not ye word  
of he pat ben blown wy pyde: but  
ye vertu for ye reuue of god is  
not in word: but in vertu: what  
wile ze: shal I come to you in a  
zerde: or in charite: & in spirit of  
mydenesse. **C. m.**

**I**n al maner fornycationis  
herd amog you: & such for  
nycationis: which is not a moos he  
yeu me: so pat su man hane ye  
wyf of his fadur: ze ben bohun  
wy pyde: & not more haddt wey  
lynge: y he pat dte his werk be  
takun away fro ye myddel of you:  
& I absent in body: but present in  
spirit: now hane demyd as plet  
hym pat hay pus wzouzt: whyne  
ze ben gaderid to gidre in ye name  
of oure lord ihu crist: & my spirit  
wey ye vertu of ye lord ihu: to  
take such ama to sathanas: ito  
ye perulthig of flesch: y ye spyr  
rit be saaf in ye day of our lord  
ihu crist: zoun gloriyng: is not  
good: writep ze not y alptal sou  
dois apepny al ye gobet: of  
se ze ont ye olde souzdon: y ze be  
neibe spyrngynge to gidre: as  
ze ben yert: for crist offrid: is oe

soone



past: pfor ete we not i old sdom: nep  
i sdom of malice & of weywardnesse  
but in pers pigis of clerenesse  
& of trewe: i wort to you i apst  
le: p ze be not medlid wip lechos  
not wip lechos of re world: ne  
conetoule me ne raneynos ne  
wip men seruige to malmeti:  
ellis ze shulde hane gon out of pis  
world: but now i wort to you: p  
ze be not meynogd but if he pat is  
named a broper amog you: & is  
a lechour: or conetous: or seruige  
to ydols: or a curlet: or ful of dui  
kenesse: or a raneynour: to take  
no mete wip luche: for what is  
it to me: to deme of hem pat be  
wipoute for: i wher ze deme not  
of pigis p ben not wipyne for:  
for god shal deme hem pat ben  
wipoute for: do ze alkeiuel fro  
you self: **C.** **vj.** **iiij.**  
**D**ar ony of you pat hay a  
cansle agens anop: be de  
myd at wickid men & not at hoo  
ly me: wher ze witen not: p sei  
tis i shule deme of pis world: &  
if ye world shal be demyde by you:  
be ze unborpi to deme of ye leet  
te pigis: witen ze not p we shu  
len deme anigels: how moche mo  
ze worldly pigis: verfore if ze  
han worldly domes: ordeyne ze  
vo cotemptible me pat ben i ye  
churche to deme: i sepe to make  
you a thamed: so per is not ony  
wyle ma: p may deme bi tibe  
a broper & his bropr: but a bro  
p wip bropr arnyer in dom: & p  
a mog: vnseful me: & now tref  
pas is algatis in you: for ze han  
domes amog you: wher rapere  
take ze no wrong: wher rape

snifre ze not dissent: but also ze  
doen wrong: & doe fraude: & pat  
to bypen wher ze wite not p  
wickid me shulen not weelde  
ye bigdom of god: nyle ze er  
re: nep lechours: nep me pat  
sermen maymetis: nep anois  
teris: nep lechos agens tunde:  
nep pei pat doe lecherie wip  
me: nep penes: nep anaron  
le me: nep ful of drakenesse: ne  
pnr curletis: nep raneynours:  
shule welde ye bigd of god: &  
ze weren lu tyme vele pigis  
but ze ben wailhy: but ze ben ha  
lewid: but ze ben mistified in ye na  
me of our lord ihu crist: & in ye spirit  
of our god: **A**lle pigis ben leet  
ful to me: but not alle pigis ben  
spedful: alle pigis ben leetful to  
me: but i shal not be brougt don  
vndir ony manys power: mete  
to ye wombe: & ye wombe to me  
tis: & god shal distre ye bope pis  
pat: & ye body not to fornicacion:  
but to ye lord: & ye lord to ye body:  
for god rethide ye lord: & shal re  
leus by his werty: **W**iten ze not  
p zome bodys be mebris of crist:  
shal i pane take ye mebris of crist:  
& shal i make hem ye mebris of  
an hoze: god forbede: wher ze  
witen not: p he pat cleuey to an  
hoze: is maid o body: for he ser  
per shulen be tibeine i oo flesh  
& he pat cleuey to ye lord: is oo  
spirit: fle ze fornicacion: al hme  
whit ener hme a ma dom: is wip  
onte ye body: but he pat dom for  
nicacion: syner agens his body:  
wher ze wite not: p zome me  
bris ben ye temple of ye holy gost:  
pat is in you: whom ze han of

god: & ze ben not zowd onwe: for  
ze be bougt wip greet prys: glori  
fie ze & ber ze god in zoure body:  
**B**ut of yllke **C.** **vij.** **iiij.**  
**B**igis pat ze han wite  
to me: it is good to ama  
to conche not a woman: but for  
fornicacion ech ma hane his ois  
ne wif: & ech woman hane hir  
oisne holebonde: ye holebonde  
zelle dette to ye wif: & also ye  
wif to ye holebonde: ye woman  
hay not power of hir body: but  
ye holebonde: And ye holebonde  
hay not power of his body: but  
ye woman: nyle ze de fraude ech  
to oyr: but paneture of consent  
to a tyme: p ze zyne tent to a  
preyer: & est turne ze agen to  
ye same pig: lest sathanas tep  
te you for zow: vncoutynete  
but i seye pis pig as zynge  
leene: not by comandemet: for  
i wole: p alle me ben as my sile:  
but ech ma hay his ppeze zifte  
of god: oon pris: & anop y us  
but i seye to hem pat ben not  
weddid & to wipdowis: it is good  
to hem: if ye dwelle so as i: & if ye  
coteyne not hem self: ben ye wed  
did: for it is bettr to be weddid:  
pa to be bzent: but to hem pat be  
iorned i mactymonje: i coman  
de: not i but ye lord: p ye wif de  
parte not fro ye holebonde: & p  
if she deprey: pat she dwelle: ou  
weddid: or be reuocelid to hir  
holebonde: & ye holebonde forlake  
not ye wif: but to ope i sepe:  
not ye lord: if ony bropr hay an  
ofseful wif: & she consenty  
to dwelle wip hy: leene he hir  
not: and if ony woman hay an

vnseful holebonde: & pis cōsen  
try to dwelle wip hy: leene she  
not ye holebonde: for ye vnseful  
ful holebonde is halewid: by ye sey  
ful woman: & ye vnseful wom  
ma is halewid by ye seful hole  
bonde: ellis zowre childre weren  
vndene: but now yei ben hooly:  
p if ye vnseful departy: depar  
te he: for wher ye bropr or hister is  
not suget to seruage in luche:  
for god hay clepid us i pees: &  
wherof woot you woman: if  
you shalt make ye ma saaf: or wher  
of woot p man: if you shalt make  
ye woman saaf: but as ye lord hay  
departid to ech: & as god hay clepid  
ech ma: so go he: as i teche i alle  
chyrche: ama circūsid is clepid:  
brunge he not to: ye pncie: a ma  
is clepid in pncie: be he not circū  
sidid: circūsidion is nougt: & pncie  
is nougt: but ye keepyng of ye  
comandemētis of god: ech ma in  
what clepyng he is clepid: i pat  
dwelle he: you seruait art clepid:  
be it no charge to pee: but if you  
mayst be fre: ye rape vse you:  
he pat is a seruait: & is clepid in  
ye lord: is a fre ma of ye lord: al  
so he pat is a fre ma & is clepid:  
is ye seruait of crist: wip prys:  
ze ben bougt: nyle ze be maid ser  
uaitis of me: pfore ech ma in  
what pig he is clepid a bropr: dwel  
le he in pis anentis god: but of  
vngyng i hane no comandemet  
of god: but i zyne coucil: as he  
pat hay mercy of ye lord: p i be  
trewe: pfore i selle p pis yng  
is good: for ye present nede for  
it is good to a ma to be so: p art  
bound to a wif: nyle you seke



unbynding/ you art unbound fro  
a wyf. nyle you seke a wyf/ but  
if you haue takē a wyf. you haue  
not syned. & if an auyden is wed  
did. she synede not. nepeles  
liche schulen hane tribulaciō  
of fleulth/ but I spare you/ per  
fore byperē I sepe pis pig. pe  
tyme is sthort/ anoyer is pis.  
p. pei pat han wyues. be as pouz  
pei hadde noone. & pei pat wepe.  
as pei wepten not. And pei pat ioy  
en. as pei ioyeden not. & pei pat  
byen. as pei hadde not. & pei pat  
vlen pis world. as pei pat vlen  
not. forwhi ye figur of pis wor  
ld passy/ but I wole pat ze be  
wyoute bysynesse/ for he pat is  
wyoute wyf. is bysynesse. what pigis  
ben of pe lord. how he schal plese  
god/ but he pat is wyf a wyf.  
is bysynesse. what pigis ben of pe wor  
ld how he schal plese pe wyf. & he  
is departyd. and a wōman vn  
weddid & mayden penky what  
pigis ben of pe lord. & she be hoo  
ly in body & spirit/ but she pat  
is weddid penky what pigis be  
of pe world. how she schal plese  
pe holebōnde. And I sepe pes pi  
gis to you. p. fyt. not p. I caste  
to you a snar. but to pat pat is  
honest & p. zynne e synesse wy  
outen lettynge to make preieris  
to pe lord. & if ony mā gessy hy  
sile to be seyn foul on his vngy.  
pat she is ful wōm. & so it biho  
uey to be don. do she pat p. she  
wole/ she synne not. if she be  
weddid/ for he pat ordeynede aa  
bly in his herte. not hange ne  
de. but hange poiber of his  
wille & har demed in his herte

pis rig to kepe his virgyn. do  
p. wel. p. fore he pat ioyney his  
virgyn in matrimony. dōp wel  
and he pat ioyney not. dōp bet  
ter. pe wōman is bound to pe  
lanke. as long tyme as hir hole  
bōnde luyet. & if hir holebōnde is  
deed. she is deliuerid fro pe la  
nke of pe holebōnde. be she weddid  
to whom she wole. conly in pe  
lord but she schal be more blestid.  
if she deliueris pis affir my con  
cel. & I weene. p. I haue pe ha  
ryt of god. **C. viii. #**  
**B**ut of pes pigis pat ben  
sacrificed to ydols. we  
witen. for alle we han kynnys  
but kynnys. blawp charite edy  
fier but if ony mā gessy p. he  
kan ony pig. he har not zit kno  
we how it bihouey hym to kno  
ne. and if ony mā louey god.  
pis is knouen of hy. but of met  
pat ben offrid to ydols. we wite  
p. an ydol is no pig in pe world.  
& p. per is no god. but oon for you.  
p. ben sūme pat ben seid goddis.  
epir in heuene epir in erpe. as  
per ben many goddis & many  
lordis. nepeles to us is o god. pe  
fadir of whom ben alle pigis. &  
we in hym. & o lord ihu crist. by  
whō ben alle pigis. & we by hy  
but not in alle mē is kynnys. for  
sū me wyf cōscience of ydol. til  
now eten as pig offrid to ydols.  
& her cōscience is defouled. for it  
is lyk mete comēdy us not to  
god. for ney we schulen faye. if  
we eten not. ney if we eten. we  
schulen hane plente. but se ze  
lest perauentur. pis your leue.  
be maad hurtynge to sē me for

if ony man schal se hy pat har  
kynnys. etyge in a place wher  
ydols ben wōldhynd. wher his cō  
science synen it is lyk schal not  
be edified to ete pigis offrid to  
ydols. & ye syke brop for whom  
crist diede. schal perithe in yk  
nyg. for pus ze hange asens hu  
men. & smytige her syke cōscien  
ce. synen asens crist. wherfore  
if mete standy my broyr. &  
schal neide ete fleulth. lest I alai  
de my broyer. **C. ix. #**  
**W**hey I am not fre. am  
I not apostle. & wher I  
say not ihu crist our lord.  
wher ze ben not my werk in pe  
lord. & a pouz to ope I am not apost  
le. but nepeles to you I am. for ze  
ben pe lyde signe of myn apost  
leshed in pe lord. my defense to he  
pat aren me. pat is. wher we  
han not poiber to ete & drynke.  
wher we han not poiber to lede  
aboute a wōman a sile. as also  
ope apostles & bypen of pe lord  
& cefas. & I aloone & barnabas.  
han not poiber to worche pes  
pigis. & who tranely ony tyme  
wyf hile owne wags. & who plan  
ty a vynezard. & ety not of his  
fryt. & who kep a floe. & ety  
not of pe mylk of pe floe. wher  
affir mā I sepe pes pigis. wher  
also pe lanke seyn not pes pigis.  
for it is wōm in pe lanke of moy  
ses. & schalt not bynde pe mony  
of pe ore pat preithy. wher  
of crist is charge to god. wher  
for us he seyn pes pigis. for p. ca  
whi. po ben wōm for us. heed  
for he pat erp. ower to ere.  
in hope. & he pat preithy. in

hope to ete frytis. if we so  
iben spiritual pigis to you. is it  
greet if we repen your fleulth  
ly pigis. if ope ben parteneris  
of your poiber. whi not rafe  
we. but we vlen not pis poiber.  
but we suffren alle pigis. & we  
synne nolettis to pe euangelye  
of crist. wite ze not p. pei pat wō  
chen i pe temple. eten po pigis  
pat ben of pe temple. & pei pat  
serue to pe auter. ben partene  
ris of pe auter. so pe lord ordey  
nede to hem pat tellen pe gospel.  
to hime of pe gospel. but I. whide  
noone of pes pigis. & I wōt not  
pes pigis. p. po be don so in me.  
for it is good to me rafe to dye.  
van p. ony mā anoyde my glorie.  
for if I preche pe gospel. glorie  
is not to me. for neide lyth I moot  
don it. for who to me. if I preche  
not pe gospel. but if I do pis pig  
isfully. I haue meede. but if  
asens my wille. dispendig is  
brakē to me. what pāne is my  
meede. & I prechige pe gospel.  
putte pe gospel wyoute operis  
cost. p. I vlen not my poiber in  
pe gospel. forwhi whāne I was  
fre of alle mē. I made me ser  
uant of alle mē. to wyne pe mo  
me. & to ieris. I am maad as a  
iery. to wyne pe ieris to hem  
pat ben vnder pe lanke. as I we  
re vnder pe lanke. whie I was  
not vnder pe lanke. to wyne he  
pat weren vnder pe lanke. to  
hem pat weren wyoute lanke.  
as I wet wyoute pe lanke. whā  
I leue ne I was not wyoute  
p. pei pat pe lanke of god. but I  
knowen was in pe lanke of











a myroure in der kuesse: but þane  
face to face / now / I knowe of par  
ty: but þane / I shal knowe. as  
I am knowyn / and now dwellen  
feyr hope & charite. yee see. but  
ye mooste of yee is charite.

**S**ike ze chari. ¶ 1. corinthis  
te. loue ze spiritual vi  
gis: but more yee pfe  
ciē. & he pat speke in tūge:  
speke not to me but to god / for  
no man heere / but ye spirit spe  
ke in myderies / for he pat pfecter:  
speke to me to edificaciō. &  
monestynge & confortynge / he  
speke in tūge: edifye hy self  
but he pat pfecter: edifye ye  
churche of god. & I wole yee alle  
ze speke in tūgis: but more yee  
ze pfecte / for he yee pfecter: is  
more þan he pat speke in langa  
gis / but perauētū he expōn  
ne: yee the churche take edificaci  
ōn / but now bypen but if I co  
me to you & speke in langagis:  
what shal I profite to you: but  
if I speke to you: eyn in reuelaci  
ōn: eyn in sciēce: eyn in pro  
fecie: eyn in techig: for yee vīgis yee  
ben wyoute soule: & zūer yee  
ces: eyn pipe: eyn harpe: but yee  
zynen distynctiō of soundyngis:  
how shal it be knowyn yee is li  
gū: eyn pat pat is triūp / for if  
a triūp zūne an ouer tēyn sou  
ne: who shal make hy self redy  
to batel: so but ze zūne an apyn  
word bi tūge: how shal pat yee  
is leid be knowyn: for ze shule  
be spekyng in weyn / yee be ma  
ny kyndis of langagis in yis wor  
ld: & no vīg is wyoute voyz /  
but if I knowe not ye vñ of

a voyz: I shal be to hy to who / I shal  
speke a barbaris: & he pat spe  
ke to me: shal be a barbaris  
so ze for ze ben loneris of spū  
tis seke ze yee be plenteuous:  
to edificaciō of ye churche / and  
yfore he pat speke in langage:  
preye pat he expōne / for if I  
preye in tūge: my spirit pcei  
ep / my vñdirstondig: is wyoute  
te fruyt / what þane / I shal preye  
in spirit: I shal preye in myte /  
I shal seie salm in spirit: I shal  
seie salm alle in myte / for if yee  
blestid in spirit: who shal ye pla  
ce of an pteot / how shal he seie  
amē on yee blestynge: for he woot  
not what you seist: for you doist  
wel pākyngis: but anoy mā is not  
edifyed. ¶ I pāke my god: for  
I speke in ye langage of alle you:  
but in ye churche I wole speke sy  
ne wordis in my vñt: pat alle I  
teche ope me: þan ten thousandis  
of wordis in tūge. ¶ 2. corinthis  
ze be maad childre in wittis: but  
I malice be ze childre / but I wñ  
tis: be ze parfyt / for in ye lawe  
it is wñtū / yee in ope tūgis & ope  
lypis / I shal speke to yis peple:  
& ney so verithule heet me: seie  
ye lord / yfore langagis ben into  
tokene not to feyful me: but  
to me out of ye fey / but pfectes  
ben not to me out of ye fey:  
but to feyful me / yfore if al ye  
churche come to gūde into oon:  
& alle me speken in tūgis: if ydō  
tis eyn me out of ye fey entren:  
wher yee shulen not seie: what  
ben ze woode: but if alle men  
pfecten: if ony vnfeyful mā or  
ydot entre: he is conyt of alle.

he is wytey demyd of alle / for ye  
shid vīgis of his herte ben kno  
wn: & so he shal falle don on ye  
face: & shal worshype god: &  
shewe verily: yee god is in you  
what þane byperē: whē ze  
comen to gūde: ech of you hay  
a salm. he hay techig: he hay a  
pocalyps he hay tūge he hay ex  
pōnyng: alle vīgis be yee don  
to edificaciō / wher amā speke  
in tūge: by tūge me eyn yee at  
ye mooste: & by parties. yee oon  
interprete / but if yee be not an  
interpretour: be he stille in ye chur  
che: & speke he to hy self & to god:  
pfectis tūgeyne or yee seie: & ope  
wytey demē / but if ony vīg be  
shewid to a sūtē: ye formere  
be stille / for ze mon pfectie al  
le: ech by hy self: yee alle me lerne:  
& alle moneste & ye spiritis of  
pfectis: be suget to pfectis / for  
why god is not of distynctiō: but  
of pces / as in alle churchis of hoo  
ly men / I teche. ¶ 3. corinthis  
chis be stille / for it is not sufrid  
to be to speke: but to be suget  
as ye lawe seie / but if yee wole  
ouny vīg lerne: athom aye yee  
her hole bondis / for it is foul vīg  
to a wōman: to speke in churche /  
wher of you ye word of god  
cam fory: or to you alone it cā:  
if ony mā is seyn to be a pfecte  
te or spiritual: knowe he po  
vīgis pat I wñte to you: for po  
ben ye comandemētis of ye lord:  
& if ony man vñknowy: he sh  
al be vñknowyn / yfore byperen  
loue ze to pfectie: & nyle ze for  
bede to speke in tūgis / but be al  
le vīgis don honestly & by due

ordre in you. ¶ 4. corinthis  
**B**ryen I make ye gospel  
knowyn to you: which I ha  
ue prechid to you: ye wh  
ich allo ze han takū. in which ze  
stonden: alle by which ze shulen  
be lāned / by which resōū. I haue  
prechid to you if ze holden: if ze  
han not bilewēd vñely / for I by  
took to you at ye bygynnyng: pat  
vīg which allo I haue resōūed.  
yee crist was deed for oure synes:  
by ye scripturis: & yee he was bi  
ryed: & pat he roos azen ipe vñd  
de day after scripturis: & yee he wñ  
seyn to cefas: & after yee vīgis  
to euleneue / after ward he was  
seyn to mo þan fyue hundrid bry  
en to gūde: of which manye  
lyne zit: but sume ben deed / af  
ter ward he was seyn to james:  
& after ward to alle ye aposthis /  
& last of alle: he was seyn also to  
me: as to a deed born child / for I  
am ye leeste of aposthis: yee am  
not worri to be clepid apostle:  
for I purfūwde ye churche of  
god / but by ye grace of god I am  
pat vīg yee I am / and his grace  
was not voyde in me: for I tra  
uelide more plenteuously þan  
alle yee / but not I: but ye gra  
ce of god wyne me / but why  
I or yee: so we han prechid: &  
so ze han bylewēd: & if cā is  
prechid: pat he roos azen fro  
deey: how seyen sū me a mog  
zon: yee ye azenryng of deed  
me is not: & if ye azenryng  
of deed me is not: ney crist roos  
azen fro deey: & if cā roos not:  
ouny prechig is veyn: ouny fey  
is veyn / And we ben foundū fals



Witness of god for we han seid  
Witness of azens god. p<sup>r</sup> he re-  
side c<sup>t</sup>. whom he reyside not.  
if deed me r<sup>y</sup>sen not azen for  
why if deed me r<sup>y</sup>sen not azen.  
nep<sup>r</sup> c<sup>t</sup> roos azen / & if c<sup>t</sup> roos  
not azen. o<sup>r</sup> f<sup>r</sup>ey is veyn / &  
zit ze ben i zom<sup>e</sup> synes / & p<sup>r</sup>ane  
pei p<sup>r</sup>han dyed in c<sup>t</sup>. han peril  
chid / if in vis h<sup>r</sup> only we ben  
hoppyng in c<sup>t</sup>. we ben more  
wretchys van alle me / but now  
cris<sup>t</sup> roos azen fro deap. pe firs<sup>t</sup>e  
fruyt of deed me / for deap was  
by aman. & by ama is azen r<sup>y</sup>  
syng fro deap / & as in adam al  
le men depen. so in c<sup>t</sup>. alle me  
ithulen be quykend / but ech  
ma in h<sup>r</sup>s ord<sup>r</sup>e. pe firs<sup>t</sup>e fruyt  
c<sup>t</sup>. after ward vei p<sup>r</sup>ben of c<sup>t</sup>.  
pat biledet in pe comp<sup>r</sup>g of c<sup>t</sup>.  
after ward an ende. whanne he  
shal bitake pe kyngdom to god  
& to ye fadir. whanne he shal a  
voyte al p<sup>r</sup>nsheed. & p<sup>r</sup>over &  
overtu / but it bihonyer hy to reg-  
ne. til he putte alle h<sup>r</sup>s enemy  
es vnder h<sup>r</sup>s feet / & at pe laste  
deap pe enemy shal be distroyd  
for he hap maid suget alle pig-  
gis vnder h<sup>r</sup>s feet / & whanne  
he seip. alle piggis ben suget  
to hy. w<sup>r</sup>iponten dourte out ta-  
ku hi pat sugetide alle piggis  
to h<sup>r</sup>m / & whanne alle piggis ben  
suget to h<sup>r</sup>m. p<sup>r</sup>ane pe lone h<sup>r</sup>  
sulf shal be suget to h<sup>r</sup>. p<sup>r</sup>ma  
de suget alle piggis to h<sup>r</sup>. p<sup>r</sup>god  
be alle piggis in alle piggis / ellis  
what thulen vei do pat ben bap-  
tild for deed me. if in nowyle.  
deede me r<sup>y</sup>sen azen / whert to be  
vei baptild for han. & whert to

ben we in perel eyn our. **E**ch  
day i dye for zom<sup>e</sup> glorie bryfen.  
which glorie i haue in c<sup>t</sup> ihu  
our lord / if after ma i haue sou-  
ten to beethis at c<sup>t</sup>es<sup>t</sup>. what  
pfitip it to me. if deed me r<sup>y</sup>se  
not azen. ete we & d<sup>r</sup>ynke we.  
for we thule dye to morib / ny-  
le ze be dyllewed / for puel spe-  
chis distroyen god p<sup>r</sup>ewis / a wa-  
ke ze nist me. & niple ze syne for  
su men han ignorauce of god.  
but to reneyce / speke to zom  
deed me r<sup>y</sup>se azen. o<sup>r</sup> in what  
man body thulen vei come. v<sup>r</sup>  
wyle man. pat pig p<sup>r</sup>ou solbit  
is not quykend. but it dye firs<sup>t</sup>  
& pat pig p<sup>r</sup>ou solbit. p<sup>r</sup> solbit  
not pe body p<sup>r</sup> is to come. but a  
nakid corn as of whete o<sup>r</sup> of su-  
oper seedis / & god zyuep to it  
abody as he wole. & to ech of see-  
dis a p<sup>r</sup>re body / not ech fleish  
is pe same fleish. but oon is of  
me. Anoy is of beethis. Anoy is of  
bryddis. Anoyr of f<sup>r</sup>uthis / & he  
nenly bodpes ben. & erpely bo-  
dyes ben / but oon glorie is of he-  
uely bodpes. & anoy is of erpe-  
ly. Anoyr derenele is of pe su-  
ne. Anoy derenele is of pe moue.  
& anoy derenele is of f<sup>r</sup>erris  
and a f<sup>r</sup>err<sup>r</sup> dyu<sup>r</sup>lip fro a f<sup>r</sup>err<sup>r</sup>  
in derenele. & so pe azen r<sup>y</sup>lig  
of deed men / it is solbi in corrup-  
cion. it shal r<sup>y</sup>se in corrupci-  
on / it is solbi in v<sup>r</sup>noblep. it shal  
r<sup>y</sup>se in glorie / it is solbi in f<sup>r</sup>ir-  
myte. it shal r<sup>y</sup>se in v<sup>r</sup>ertu / it  
is solbi a beethy body. it shal r<sup>y</sup>se  
a spual body / if p<sup>r</sup> is a beethy body.  
p<sup>r</sup> is also a spual body. as it is

W<sup>r</sup>ti. pe firs<sup>t</sup>e ma adam was  
maid into aboule h<sup>r</sup>nyge. pe laste  
adam into a spual quykend  
but pe firs<sup>t</sup>e is not pat pat is  
spual. but pat p<sup>r</sup> is beethy. aft-  
ward. pat p<sup>r</sup> is spual. pe fir-  
ste man of erpe. is erpely / pe  
secunde ma of heuene. is heuen-  
lych / such as pe erpely ma is. hi  
che ben pe erpely me. & such as  
pe heuenly ma is. such ben al  
so pe heuenly me / p<sup>r</sup>for as we han  
bozn pe ymage of pe erpely ma.  
bere we alto pe ymage of pe he-  
uely bryfen. / seye vis pig / pat  
fleish & blood mou not welde pe  
kyngdom of god. nep corrupcion  
shal welde vncorupcion / lo / seie  
to zom p<sup>r</sup>te of hooly pigis / & al-  
le we thulen r<sup>y</sup>se azen. but not  
alle we thulen be chaigid / in a  
moniet in pe t<sup>r</sup>ib<sup>r</sup>nkelyng of an-  
ye in pe laste t<sup>r</sup>ipe / for pe t<sup>r</sup>i-  
pe shal dourne. & deed me thulen  
r<sup>y</sup>se azen w<sup>r</sup>iponten corrupcion. &  
we thulen be chaigid for it biho-  
ney vis v<sup>r</sup> corruptible pig to do  
pe vncorupcion. & p<sup>r</sup>is deethy pig  
to putte away vndeethynesse / but  
whanne p<sup>r</sup>is deethy pig shal clope  
vndeethynesse. p<sup>r</sup>ane shal pe word  
be don pat is w<sup>r</sup>ti. deap is sapi-  
up in v<sup>r</sup>ictorie / deap wher is v<sup>r</sup> vic-  
torie. deap wher is p<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>icke. / but  
pe p<sup>r</sup>icke of deap. is syne / & pe d<sup>r</sup>u-  
of syne. is pe lawe / but do we pa-  
bigis to god. pat zat to us v<sup>r</sup>icto-  
rie. by our lord ihu c<sup>t</sup>. p<sup>r</sup>fore my  
dereworpe bryfen. be ze f<sup>r</sup>idestast  
& v<sup>r</sup>ionable / beynge plentou-  
se in werk of pe lord eimore w<sup>r</sup>i-  
tynge p<sup>r</sup> zom<sup>e</sup> t<sup>r</sup>amel is not idel  
in pe lord. **C. 26. 11.**

**B**ut of pe gadryngis of mo-  
ney pat ben maid into seyn-  
tis. as i ordeynede in pe  
churchis of galathe. so allo do ze  
oday of pe wole. ech of zom kepe  
at h<sup>r</sup>m sile. kepige pat p<sup>r</sup> plestip  
to hy. p<sup>r</sup> whanne i come pe gad-  
gis be not maid / and whanne i shal  
be plent. whiche me ze p<sup>r</sup>ene. /  
shal sende hem by epistlis to be  
re our grace into ierlm / p<sup>r</sup> if it be  
w<sup>r</sup>orpi. p<sup>r</sup> allo i go. vei thulen go  
w<sup>r</sup>ip me / but i shal come to zom.  
whanne i shal passe by macedonye  
for w<sup>r</sup>th i shal passe by macedonye  
but p<sup>r</sup>anetue. i shal diu<sup>r</sup>elle at zom.  
o<sup>r</sup> allo diu<sup>r</sup>elle pe w<sup>r</sup>ip<sup>r</sup>ur. p<sup>r</sup> & ze le-  
de me whidur eu. i shal go. & i  
wole not now se zom in my passig  
for i hope to diu<sup>r</sup>elle w<sup>r</sup>ip zom a whi-  
le. if pe lord shal suffre / but i sh-  
al diu<sup>r</sup>elle at c<sup>t</sup>es<sup>t</sup>. til to watonti-  
de / for agreeet doze. & an opyn is  
openid to me. & many aduersari-  
es. & if t<sup>r</sup>ymothie come. se ze pat  
he be w<sup>r</sup>iponten drede w<sup>r</sup>ip zom for  
he w<sup>r</sup>oxchp pe werk of pe lord. as  
i p<sup>r</sup>fore no ma dylpale hy. but le-  
de ze hi for in pees. p<sup>r</sup> he come  
to me / for i abide hy w<sup>r</sup>ip bryfen  
but bryfen i make knowu to  
zom of apollo. p<sup>r</sup> i p<sup>r</sup>epede hy mo-  
che. p<sup>r</sup> he thulde come to zom w<sup>r</sup>  
bryfen / but it was not his wille.  
to come now / but he shal come.  
whanne he shal haue leyser. **A**shal  
be ze & stonde ze in pe few. do ze  
maly. & be ze confortid in pe lord.  
& be alle zom pigis don in chari-  
te / & bryfen i bileche zom. ze kno-  
we pe hous of stephan. & of fortu-  
nati. & acari. for vei ben pe fir-  
ste fruytis of acaye & into my

vis stephan  
a roman



mytherie of seyntis. rei han ordey  
ned hem self. y also ze ben suget  
tis to luche. & to ech worchige to  
gidre & trauelige. for i haue  
ioye in ye presence of stephan  
& of fortunate & acaci. for rei  
filliden yat pig y faile to zoi  
for rei han refreithid bope my  
spirit & zoi. y fore knowe ze  
hem yat be luche man me alle  
ye churchis of alie. greeten zoi  
wel. Ziquila & prilla wir her ho  
mely church greeten zoi moche  
in ye lord. at ye whiche i am her  
bond. alle bryen greden zoi wel  
greeten ze wel to gidre in hood  
coll. my greetig bi poulis hond  
if ony ma louey not our lord ihu  
est. be he curid mara natha. ye  
grace of our lord ihu est. be wir  
zoi. my charite be wir zoi alle i  
est ihu our lord and. **Her en**  
**dyr ye firste pistle to corinthis & bigy**  
**ner ye plog on ye secunde pistle to cor**

is in ye comys  
of ye lord

**A** fur penance don. pouil wir thi  
ty to corinthis a pistle of coi  
fort. fro troade bi titus. & he p  
ly he. & exetip to betre pigis. &  
stheny yat rei were mand zoi.  
but amedid. **Her seip pis i his**  
**plog on ye secunde pistle to corinthis**

**D**ul apostle of ihu est.  
by ye wille of god. & ty  
mothe broy. to ye chr  
che of god y is at cori  
th. wir alle seyntis yat be. nat  
acac. grace to zoi & pees of god  
oure fadir. & of ye lord ihu est. blef  
sid be god & ye fadir of our lord  
ihu crist. fadir of mercies & god  
of al confort. which confortis us  
in al oure tribulaciou. y also we  
moun conforten he yat ben i al di

ele. bi ye monestig bi which also  
we ben monestid of god. for as ye  
passions of est be plenteuouly  
us. so also by est our confort is  
plenteuous. & wher we ben  
tribulaciou. for zoi re tribulaci  
ou & heelp. er we ben confortid.  
for zoi confort. er we be mo  
nestid. for zoi monestig & heelp  
ye. which worch in zoi ye suf  
firing of ye same passions. whi  
che also we suffren. y our hope  
be sad for zoi. whiche for as ze be  
felowis of passions. so ze shule  
be also of confort. **For** bryen  
we wolen y ze wite of oure tri  
bulaciou yat was in alie. for ou  
maner we weren greuyd ouer  
myxt. so y it anoyde us zhe to  
lyue. but we in us self hadden  
answer of deap. y we triste not  
in us but in god yat reish deed  
men. which deliuered us. & deli  
uery fro so grete perels. into  
who we hope. also ze he what  
deliuer. while also ze heelp in  
preier for us. y of ye plones of  
many faces. of yat yung y is  
in us. panygis be don for us by  
many me to god. for oure gloze  
is pis. ye witnessis of our con  
science. y in syplenelle & denel  
se of god. & not in fleitly wyl  
dom. but in ye grace of god.  
we lyueden in pis world. but  
more plenteuouly to zoi. & we  
writen not ope pigis to zoi. ya  
po y ze han red & knowe. & i ho  
pe. y into ye ende. ze shule kno  
we. as also ze han knowe us a  
party. for we ben zoi gloze.  
as also ze ben oure i ye day of ou  
re lord ihu est. And in pis triste

myg. i wolde first come to zoi.  
yat ze shulden haue ye secunde gra  
ce. & passe by zoi into macedouye.  
& est fro macedouye come to z.  
& of zoi be led into judee. but  
whane i wolde pis pig. wher  
i vlide vultide fastnesse. er  
po pigis y i penke. i penke at  
tir ye fleit. y at me be. it is.  
& it is not. but god is trewe.  
for oure word yat was at zoi.  
is & is not. is not y fine. but is.  
is in it. for whi ihu est ye lone  
of god. which is prechid a mog  
zoi bi us. bi me & siluan & tymothe.  
per was not in hi is & is not.  
but is was in hi. for whi how  
many ene ben bihectis of god.  
in pilke is ben fulfillid. y fore bi  
hi we seyen ame to god. to ou  
re gloze. sopey it is god y ofer  
mey us wir zoi i est. & ye which  
anoynted us. & which marke  
us. & ze ernes of ye spirit i on  
re hertis. for i depide god to  
witnesse azens my soule. y i  
sparyge zoi can not ouer to co  
rthe. not y we ben lordis of zoe  
fer. but we ben helperis of zoi  
re ioye. for ymz bileue ze fode.  
**Ad i ordeynede. C. ij. 2.**

is vis  
trewe

**A**vis pig at me. y i sh  
ulde not come etelone  
in heynesse to zoi. for if i ma  
ke zoi loy. who is he yat gla  
dy me. but he y is loyful of  
me. & pis same pig. i woot to  
zoi. y whne i come. i haue not  
soybe on soybe. of ye which it  
bihoft me to haue ioye. and  
i triste in zoi alle. y my ioye  
is of alle zoi. for of myche tri  
bulaciou & anglysh of herte.

i woot to zoi by many teeris.  
not y ze be loy. but yat ze wite  
what charite i haue moze ple  
tenouly i zoi. for if ony ma har  
maad me sozful. he har not  
maad me sozful. but a parti  
y i charge not zoi alle. yis bla  
myg y is maad of manye. suf  
ficy to hi y is such con. so y ze  
ward. ze raper for yne & confor  
te. lest pamenture he y is such  
amauer ma. be sopu up by mo  
ze greet heynesse. for whych pig  
i bileche zoi. y ze cofeine charite  
into hi. for whi y fore i woot.  
pis. y i knowe zoi. preef. whe  
y i alle pigis ze ben obedient.  
for to who ze han for ymz ony  
ymg. also i haue for zoi. for i  
yat y i for zaf. if i for zaf ony  
pig. haue zoi. for zoi i ye per  
soone of crist. y we be not distei  
ned of sathanas. for we knowe  
hile pouztis. but whne i was co  
muni to troade for ye gospel of est.  
& a doze was openy to me in ye  
lord. i hadde not reite to my spi  
rit. for i foond not my broy tite.  
but i seide to hem fare wel. & i  
passide into macedouye. & i do  
panygis to god y eumore maky  
us to haue victorie in est ihu. &  
stheny by us ye odour of his kno  
wig in ech place. for we ben ye  
good odour of est to god. among  
yese y ben maad sath. & among  
yese y perillhen. To ope sopeh  
odour of deap into deap. but to  
ye ope. we ben odour of lyf in  
to lyf. & to yese pigis. who is so  
able. for we be not as manye  
yat doen auonte bi ye word of  
god. but we speken of denelle.



as of god before god in cit. ¶ 11. m.  
**B**rotheren we þfore eftloo  
 ne to preise us selfe. or  
 wher we ueden as su  
 men pithis of preising. to zoi  
 or of zoi. ze ben oure pithle. wri  
 tu in oure hertis. which is kno  
 wn i red of alle me. i maid oppu  
 for ze ben pe pithle of cit. myn  
 trid of us and wri tu not wri  
 enke. but bi pe spirit of pe luy  
 ge god not in stouen tablis. but  
 in fleishly tablis of herte for  
 we han such cit by crit to god.  
 not þ we ben sufficient to pe  
 ke ouy pig of us as of us. but ou  
 re sufficiete is of god which al  
 so made us able mynistris of pe  
 newe testamēt. not by lettre  
 but by spirit for pe lettē slep.  
 but pe spirit quykney. i if pe  
 mynistracoi of deap wri tu bi  
 lettris in stouen. was in glorie  
 so pat pe childzen of isrl nuyzen  
 not biholde unto pe face of moyses.  
 for pe glorie of his cheer which is  
 anoydid. how ishal not pe mynistr  
 cion of pe spirit be more i glorie.  
 for if pe mynistracoi of dapnaciō  
 was in glorie. moche more pe  
 mynistracoi of ryzwille is ple  
 teuous in glorie for ney pat pat  
 was cleer. was glorified in pis  
 part for pe excellēt glorie. i if pat  
 þ is anoydid was bi glorie. moche  
 more pat þ dwellyt stille. is i glo  
 rie. þfore we þ han such hope.  
 vlen moche trist and not as moy  
 les leide a veyl on his face. þ pe  
 childzen of isrl shuld not bihol  
 de unto his face. which veyl is a  
 voydid. but pe wittis of hem be  
 a ston. d. for into pis day. pe la

me veyl in redige of pe olte testa  
 mēt dwellyt. not shewid. for it is  
 anoydid in cit. But into pis day  
 whie moyses is rad. pe veyl is  
 put on her hertis. but whie if  
 rael ishal be coitid to god. pe veyl  
 ishal be don away. i pe spirit is  
 pe lord. i wher pe spirit of pe  
 lord is. pere is freedom. i alle we  
 þ wryt opyn face seen pe glorie  
 of pe lord. ben trasfourmed into  
 pe same ymage. fro clerenesse  
 into clerenesse as of pe spirit  
 of pe lord. ¶ 11. m. 4.

**H**efore we pat han pis  
 administracoi. after pis  
 þ we hangeti merce. fayne we  
 not. but do we away pe pyn pi  
 gis of shame not walkige in shi  
 til gyle ney doringe anoyte by  
 pe word of god. but in shewige  
 of pe trewe comēdige us list to  
 ech consience of me. þfore god  
 for if also our gospel is kenerid.  
 in vele pat perithen it is kener  
 id. in whiche god hay blend pe son  
 lis of onferful me of pis world.  
 þ pe luyng of pe gospel of pe  
 glorie of cit which is pe ymage  
 of god. shyne not. But we pre  
 chen not us list. but our lord ihu  
 cit. i us zoi seruantis bi ihu for  
 god pat seide luyt to shyne of cler  
 nellis. he hay zoi luyt i our her  
 tis to pe luyng of pe shence of  
 pe clerenesse of god in pe face of  
 ihu cit. i we han pis trelour i  
 brutil vellels. þ pe wrymelle  
 be of godis oertu. i not of us  
 in alle pigis we sustren tribla  
 cion. but we ben not angiblyd  
 or anoyed. we ben maid poze.  
 but we lacky no pig. we suf

fren psecucion. but we ben not  
 forlorn. we ben maid lowe. but  
 we ben not cofoundid. we ben  
 cast down. but we perithen  
 not. and eimoz we bere abou  
 te pe slepyng of ihu in our body.  
 þ also pe luyt of ihu be shewid i  
 our bodies. for eimoz we pat  
 luyt. ben takū into deap for ihu  
 pat pe luyt of ihu. be shewid in  
 our deaply fleish. þfore deap woz  
 chup in us. but luyt in zoi. i we  
 han pe same ne spirit of fery.  
 as it is wri tu. i haue bileued.  
 i haue spoke. i we bileue. wher  
 fore also we speken wryte pat  
 he pat reside ihu. ishal reyle  
 also us wry ihu. i ishal ordey  
 ne wry zoi. i alle pigis for zoi.  
 þ a plenteuous grace by many  
 vauygis. be plenteuous into  
 pe glorie of god for which pig  
 we fallen not. but pouz our ot  
 ter mā be corruptid. nepeles  
 pe pner mā is newid fro day  
 to day. but þ luyt pig of our t.  
 bulaciō pat lasty nōis but as  
 it were bi a moment wozchup  
 in us ou melin an euilastige bu  
 ven into pe luynele of glorie.  
 while þ we biholde. not po pui  
 gis pat ben seyn. but po þ ben  
 not seyn for po pigis pat be seyn. be  
 but durige for a short tyme. but  
 po pigis pat ben not seyn. ben  
 eneralastige. ¶ 12. m. 1.  
**A**d we witen. þ if oure  
 erpely hous of pis dwel  
 luyng be dissolued. þ we han a  
 byldyng of god. an hous not maid  
 bi hondis euilastige in heuenes  
 for whi in pis pig we mornē.  
 conertige to be clorid aboue us

our dwellyng which is of heue  
 ne. if nepeles we ben foundū do  
 pid. i not nakid. for whi we pat  
 ben in pis tabernacle. sozben  
 wryme. i ben heuped for þ we  
 wole not be spoyld. but be clo  
 rid aboue. þ pe ilke pig þ is deed  
 ly. be seyn vp of luyt. but who  
 is it þ maky us into pis same  
 pig. god. pat zat to us pe er  
 nes of pe spirit. þfore we ben  
 hardy algatis i witen þ pe whi  
 le we ben i pis body. we goen i  
 pilgrynage fro pe lord. for we  
 walken by fery. i not by deer list.  
 but we ben hardy i han good  
 wille. moze to be in pilgryma  
 ge fro pe body. i to be present  
 to god. i perfore we stryue. whe  
 þ a bleit wher present. to ple  
 se hy. for it bihouey us alle. to  
 be shewid before pe trone of cit.  
 þ every mā telle pe ppe pigis  
 of pe body. as he hay don. epr  
 good epr. puel. þfore we wryte  
 pe drede of pe lord. conuelen me.  
 for to god we ben opyn. i i ho  
 pe þ we ben opyn also in zoi  
 coltenciis. we comende not us  
 selfe eftloone to zoi. but we zy  
 uen to zoi occasiō to haue glo  
 rie for us. þ ze haue to hem pat  
 gloriē i pe face. i not in pe her  
 te. for ouy we by mynde passe.  
 to god epr we ben soze. to zoi  
 for pe charite of cit dmyer us.  
 gellige pis pig. þ if oon dyede  
 for alle. pane alle weren deed.  
 i cit dyede for alle. þ pei þ luyt.  
 luyt not nōis to hem selfe. but  
 to hi pat dyede for hem i roos  
 asen. þfore we fro pis tyme  
 knowe no mā after pe fleish.



youz we knowe it after pe flesch:  
but now we knowe not / for  
if our newe creature is in it: pe  
elde pigis ben pallid. & lo alle pi-  
gis ben of god / which reconselede  
us to hi bi crist: & zaf to us pe  
seruise of reconcelig: and god  
was in it: reconcelig to hym  
pe world: not retigge to he her  
giltis / & putide in us: pe word  
of reconcelig: yf we wlen  
mellage for crist: as if god mo-  
nesty bi us / we bi sechen for it:  
be ze reconcelid to god: God pe  
fadir made hi syne for us: which  
kneis not syne: yf we shulden  
be maid rixt by synelle of god i hi:

*lactice for hve  
ty*

**B**ut we helpege // *C. vii.*  
monege: yf ze rellepie  
not pe grace of god in  
veyu for he seip / In tyme wel  
pleyunge / I have herd pee: & in  
pe day of heelp / I have helpid  
pee: lo now a tyme acceptable:  
lo now a day of heelp / yf we  
to no ma our offencion: yf our  
seruise be not reppenyd / but  
in alle pigis yf we us hile as  
pe mynistis of god: i moche pa-  
cience: in tribulacions: i nedis: i  
angurillhis: i betyngis: i plous:  
i dissencions wry me: i travels:  
i wakigis: i fastigis: i chastite:  
i kyming: i long abidig: i trist-  
nelle in pe hooly gost: i charite  
not feyned: i pe word of tren-  
pe: i vertu of god: By armis  
of rixt by synelle on pe rixt hafe  
& on pe left hafe / bi glorie & on  
nobley / by ynel fame & good fa-  
me / as disseynieris & trewe me:  
as pei pat ben on knowu: & kn-  
owu / as me dyge: & lo we ly-

nen / as chastid: & not maid de-  
ed / as forswen: & more ioyu-  
ge / as hange nete: but waki-  
ge many men ryche / as no pig  
hange: & weldige alle pigis  
// *C. viii.*  
ze cozithis our moyn is  
open to you: our herte is alar-  
gid / ze be not angurillid i us:  
but ze ben angurillid i zour  
wardnesse: & i seie as to sones:  
ze pat han pe same rewarde be-  
ze alargid myle ze bere pe zok w-  
onferpful me / for what partig  
of rixt by synelle wry wickidnes-  
se: or what felowship of lyt to  
derknesis: And what acordig  
of it to belial: or what part of  
a feyful: wry pe onferpful / &  
what consent to pe temple of god  
wry manymetis: & ze ben pe te-  
ple of pe linge god: as pe lord  
seip / for i shal dwelle in hem:  
& i shal walke among he: & i  
shal be god of he: & pei shule  
be a peple to me / for which pig  
go ze out of pe myddel of hem:  
& ze departid seip pe lord: & ton-  
che ze not onclene pig: & i shal  
rellepie you: & i shal be to you so  
afadir: & ze shulden be to me i  
to sones & douztris seip pe lord

**T**herfore moost derest  
pe bysen: we pat han  
pes bihectis: cleuse we us fro  
al filpe of pe flesch & of pe spirit:  
doyng hooly nelle i pe drede of  
god / take ze us: we han hurt no  
ma: we han apenid no ma: we  
han biggid no ma: yf seie not  
to zour cōdepnyng: for i seide  
bifore: yf ze ben i zour hertis: to  
dye to gidre & to lyue to gidre:

moche trist is to me anentis  
you: moche gloriyng is to me  
for you: i am fillid wry confort:  
i am plenteuous i ioye i al our  
tribulacion: for whane we we-  
re come to macedonie: our fle-  
sh hadde no reite: but we suf-  
friden al tribulacion: wry wry  
forz fytigis: & dzedis wry me:  
but god pat confort me  
men: confortide us i pe comyng  
of tite: & not oonly i pe comyng  
of hi: but also i pe confort by  
which he was confortid i you:  
telligge to us zour desir: zour  
wepig: zour loue for me: so  
yf i ioyede more: for youz i ma-  
de you for i apistle: it rewry  
me not: youz it rewry seige  
yf youz yllke pistle made you  
soz at an our: now i have ioye  
not for ze were maid sozful:  
but for ze were maid sozful  
to penance: for ze be maid  
soz afir god: yf in no pig ze  
suffre peiremet of us: for ze for  
we yf is afir god: wrych pe  
nauce into trefast heelp: but  
sozwe of pe world: wrych decy-  
for lo pis same pig: yf ze be for  
wful afir god: how moche bish-  
nelle it wrych in you: but de-  
fendig: but indignacion: but  
diede: but desyr: but loue: but  
veiance: in alle pigis ze han zo  
nu you self to be vnde foulid in  
pe cause: yf ze youz i wroot to  
you: i wroot not for hym pat  
dye pe iurie: uer for hy yf suf-  
fride: but to shewe our bish-  
nelle which we han for you by  
fore god: yf ze we ben confort-  
tid: but in zour confort more

plenteuous: we ioyede more  
on pe ioye of tite: for his spirit  
is fulfillid of alle you: & if i glo-  
riede our pig anentis hi of you:  
i am not confoundid but as we  
han spoke to you alle pigis: so  
also our glorie yf was at tite:  
is maid trewe: & pe mardnes-  
se of hi be more plenteuous in  
you which hap in mynde pe obe-  
dience of you alle: how wry dzed  
& tremblig ze rellepie hym: i  
have ioye: yf in alle pigis i trite  
in you // *C. viii.*

**B**ut byperen we make two  
bil to you pe grace of  
god: pat is you in pe churchis of  
macedonie: yf in moche alaping  
of tribulacion: pe plente of pe  
ioye of he was: and pe herte po-  
uert of hem: was plenteuous i  
to pe richellis of pe explenelle  
of hem: for i bere wrychlyng to he:  
afir myt & aboue myt pei were  
wful: wry moche mouettig bi  
sechge us pe grace & pe comyng  
of mynistis: yf is maid to hooly  
me: & not as we hopiden: but pei  
zamen hem self first to pe lord:  
afirward to us: bi pe wille of  
god: so pat we preiede tite: yf as  
he bigan: so also he pat fourme  
in you pis grace: but as ze abou-  
den in alle pigis: in seip & word  
& kyming: & al bishynelle: more ou-  
& in zour charite unto us: yf also  
in pis grace ze aboude: yf seie not  
as comandige: but by pe bishnel-  
se of ope men: apprenye also pe  
good witt of zour charite // And  
ze wite pe grace of our lord ihu  
crist: for he was maid neddy for  
you whane he was ryche: yf ze shul



den be maid ryche bi his nedmesse  
 & i þuue conceil in þis pig for þis  
 is profitable to þou. & not onli  
 han bigune to do: but also ze bigu  
 ne to haue wille fro þe formere  
 zeer: but now þar þoume ze m  
 teede þas þe diltrethou of wille  
 is redy: so be it also of þe formere  
 of þat ze han for if þe wille  
 be redy: it is acceptid astur þat  
 þat it hap not astur þat þat it hap  
 not & not þat it be remysshoun  
 to oþer men: & to þou tribulaci  
 on. But of euenele: i þe plente  
 tyme: þou abouduice fulfille  
 þe mysele of þe þat also þe abu  
 daunce of hem: be afulfillig of  
 þou mysele: þe euenele be mid:  
 as it is writu: he þat gedude my  
 che: was not encresid: & he þat  
 gedude lital: hadde not lesse: & i  
 do þankigis to god: þat þe þe  
 me biþuenele for þou in þe herte of  
 tye for he respynde exortaciou  
 or monefig: but whane he was  
 biher: bi his wille: he wente for  
 to þou & we sente wy þi abipir.  
 whos þilgig is in þe gospel bi  
 alle churchis & not onli: but also  
 he is ordeyned of churchis: þe felo  
 we of oure þilgig into þis  
 grace þis mynistrud of us to þe  
 glorie of þe lord: & to oure ordey  
 ned wille: escheþunge þis pig: &  
 no man blame us: in þis plente.  
 þis mynistrud of us to þe glorie  
 of þe lord: for we þuueyen goode  
 pigis: not onli bi þe god: but al  
 so bi þe alle me: for we sente w  
 he also oure þroþ: who we han þ  
 mid i man pigis ofte: þe was  
 biþy but now moche biher: for  
 myche et in þou: ep for tite þ

is my felowe & helper in þou: ep  
 oure þuueyen apostlis of þe churchis  
 of þe glorie of et þe fere thewe  
 ze into þe in þe face of churchis:  
 þat thewe þis is of þe charge  
 & of oure glorie for þou. **¶**  
**¶** Of þe mynistrud þat  
 is maid to hooly me: it is  
 to me of plente to write  
 to þou for i knowe þou wille:  
 for þe which i haue glorie of  
 auentis macedouyes: for also a  
 caye is redy fro a zeer pallid:  
 & þou loue hap sturd fulmanye  
 and we han sent þuueyen: þis  
 pig: þe we glorie of þou be not  
 auoydid in part: þas i seide ze  
 be redy: lest whne macedouyes  
 come wy me: & fynde þou oure  
 di: we be shamed: þe we hze þou  
 not in þis substance: þe i gelli  
 de necessarye to þe þe þe þe  
 come bi þe to þou & make redy  
 þis biþy blessing to be redy: so al  
 blessing & not as auarice: for i seie  
 þis pig: he þat lowy sturly: sh  
 al also repe sturly: & he þat lowy  
 mblelligis: shal repe also of blec  
 ligis: ech man as he castide in his  
 herte: not of hemnele or of ne  
 de: for god louey a glad þe: &  
 god is mynistrud: to make al grace  
 aboude in þou: þe malle pigis  
 eu more han al sufficiencye: & a  
 boude into al good werk: as it is  
 writu: he deide abroad: he zaf to  
 pore men: his ryz wylnele dyel  
 ly wyppente ende: and he þat m  
 mistry seed to þe sower shal  
 þe also breed to ete: & he shal  
 multiplie þou seed: & make  
 moche þe encresligis of fruy  
 tis of þou: ryz wylnele þe alle

þis ze maid ryche: weven plen  
 tenous into al symplenele: wh  
 ich worchy bi us: doing of þe  
 þis to god for þe mynistrud of  
 þis office: not onli filly þe þe  
 þis þat faulen to hooly me: but  
 also multiplie many þaukig  
 to god: bi þe þe þe of þis my  
 nistrye: which gloriengod  
 i þe obedience of þou: þe wille  
 chig in þe gospel of et: & in þe  
 plenelle of comynaciou into  
 hem & to alle: & in þe bleschig  
 of he for þou: þe þe þe for þe  
 excellent grace of god in þou: i  
 do þankigis to god of þe zifte of  
 hi: þe may not be teld. **¶**  
**¶** And i my self þou blesche  
 þou bi þe mynistrud &  
 softnele of et: which i  
 þe face am meek amog þou: &  
 absent trite in þou for i þe þe  
 þe i þe þe be not boold bi þe et  
 in which i am gellid to be boold to  
 sume: þat demen us: as if we wa  
 dien astur þe fleuth: for we walki  
 ge in fleuth: fixen not astur þe  
 fleuth: for þe armur is of oure  
 knyztod þe not fleuthly: but  
 mynistrud to þe distructioun of  
 strengis & we distructioun conels  
 & al hynelle þat hze it self: æus  
 þe strenge of god: & dyuen into  
 captite al vnder stoung into þe  
 seruile of et: & we han redy to  
 avenge al oure obedience: whne þou  
 re obedience shal be fillid: se ze  
 þe pigis þe ben astur þe face: if  
 ou man tridy to hi self þe is  
 of crist: þenke he þis pig: ete ane  
 tis hy self: for as he is etis: so  
 also we: for if i shal glorie ony  
 pig more of oure þe which þe

lord zaf to us into edifying: & not  
 into þou distructioun: i shal not  
 be shamed: but þe i be not get  
 tid: as to feet: þou bi epistlis: for  
 þe seþen: þe epistlis ben gre  
 uoule & stronge: but þe presence  
 of þe body is feble: & þe word wor  
 yi to be dispild: he þe is such con  
 þenke þis: for such as we absent  
 ben i word bi þis: such we be  
 present in de: for we doren not  
 þitte us amog: or copariþone  
 us to sume þat comende he self:  
 but we meþe us in us self: &  
 copariþone us self to us: for we  
 shule not haue glorie ouer me  
 sure: but þe meþe of þe reule  
 which god meþe to us þe me  
 sur: þat stretch to þou: for we  
 ouer stretchen not for us: as not  
 stretch to þou: for to þou we ca  
 men in þe gospel of et: not glori  
 ynge ouer meþe: i oþe menys  
 uels: for we han hope of þou: fey  
 þe weþ in þou to be magnified  
 bi oure reule in abouduice: also to  
 preche into þe pigis þat ben biþe  
 dis þou: not to haue glorie i oþe  
 manys reule: i þe pigis þe ben  
 maid redy: he þe glorie: haue glo  
 rie in þe lord: for not he þe comen  
 dy þe self is þe þe: but whom  
 god comend. **¶**  
**¶** Make þe wolden suffre  
 lital pig of myn vnyf  
 dom: but also supporte ze  
 me: for i loue þou bi þe loue of  
 god: for i haue spoulid þou to co  
 holebunde: to zelde a chafte vnyf  
 to et: but i dzed lete as þe ser  
 pent dilleuete eue wy his lital  
 fraude: so þou wittis ben cor  
 rupt: & fallen don fro þe apple



nelle pat is i cēt for if he p comey.  
prechy anoy crist. whō we prech-  
den not. or if ze taken anoyr spi-  
rit. whom ze taken not. or anoy  
gospel. which ze releyne not.  
ristly ze shulden lustre for i we  
ne. p. i. haue don no pig lesse pā  
pe grete apostlis for youz i be  
vnterid in word. but not in fū-  
nyz for in alle pigis i am opp-  
to you or wher i haue do syne.  
mekige my self. p. ze be enhan-  
sid. for fely i prechide to you pe  
gospel of god. i made nakid of e  
churche. i took soude to you  
seruyle. And whāne i was amog  
you i hadde uede. i was charge-  
ous to no mā for bysen pat ca-  
me fro macedonpe fulfilden  
pat p fayhde to me and i alle  
pigis i haue kept i shal kepe  
me wyoute charge to you pe  
treupe of cēt is in me. for pis  
glorie shal not be brokū i me  
in pe citreys of acaye. whi. for  
i loue not you. god woot for p  
pat i do. i pat i shal do is p  
i kate alwey pe ogacon of hem.  
p wolen ocacon. p in pe ring  
in which pei glorien. pei be fou-  
dun as we for luche false apost-  
lis. ben trecherous werkmen.  
i traufigure hem to apostlis  
of crist. i no wondur for satha-  
nas hi self tūfignur hi into an  
aigel of lzt. pfore it is not gre-  
et. if his mynistris ben tūfign-  
rid. as pe mynistris of ryzt wyl  
nelle. whos ende shal be after  
her werkis. est. i seie. lest ony  
mā gelle me to be vntys ellis  
take ze me as vntys. p. also  
i haue glorie a lūl what p pat

i speke. i speke not after god  
but as in vntysdom. i pis sub-  
stance of glorie for many me  
glorien after pe fleish. i sh  
al glorie for ze sustren glad-  
vntys men. whāne ze self be  
wylle for ze sustrenen if ony  
mā dzyner you into seruage.  
if ony mā deuour. if ony mā  
take. if ony mā is enhansid. if  
ony mā smyt you on pe face. bi  
vntys i seie. as if we were  
syke in pis party i what pig  
ony mā dar. i vntysdom i seie. i  
dar not pei ben cherys. i  
pei ben iheralms. i. i. pei ben  
pe seed of abrahā. i. i. pei be  
pe mynistris of cēt. i. i. as les-  
se wylle i seie. i more in fulma-  
ny trauels. in plos more ple-  
tenouly. i wondis aboue ma-  
ner. i deys ofte tymes i rel-  
ceyuede of pe ieris fyne syne  
fourty stokis. oon lesse pnes  
i was betū wyzerdis. onys i  
was stoupyd pnes i was at sh-  
up breche. anyt i aday i was  
in pe depnele of pe see. in wei-  
es ofte in perels of floodis. in  
perels of yems. i pels of kyn.  
i pels of heven me. i pels i citee.  
in pels in desert. i pels i pe see.  
in pels amog false bysen. i t-  
neil i nedynelle. i many waki-  
gis in hysur in ynt. in many  
fastigis in coold. and nakidnesse  
wyoute po pigis pat ben wy-  
oute for. myn eche dayes trau-  
lyng is pe vshuelle of alle chr-  
chis who is spk. i. i. am not syke  
who is standid. i. i. am not byt  
if it bihoney to glorie. i shal glo-  
rie i po pigis pat ben of my iher

myte. Sod i pe fadyr our lord  
shū cēt. p. is blelid into woldi.  
woot p. i. he not pe puost of  
damak. of pe kyng of pe folk  
of arethe. kepte pe citee of da-  
malenes to take me. i by awy-  
dow in a leep i was latū donbi-  
awal. i. so i astapide hi hōdi.  
i. i. bihoney to. **C. xii. H.**  
i haue glorie. i. i. speid not. but  
i shal come to pe vislonis i to pe  
renelacions of pe lord i woot  
amā mēt p. bfore fourtene  
reer. wher in body. wher out  
of body i woot not. god woot.  
p. such amā was ranslyd til  
to pe ynde heuene. i. i. woot  
such amā. wher in body or out  
of body. i woot god woot. pat  
he was ranslyd into parady-  
se. i herde pyn wōdis. whi-  
che it is not leetful to amā  
to speke for suchē mā pigis  
i shal glorie. but for me no pig.  
no but myne infirmytes. for  
if i shal wylne to glorie. i sh  
al not be vntys. for i shal sei  
e treupe. but i spare. lest ony  
mā gelle me on pat pig p. he  
leep in me or heer up ony pig  
of me. i. lest pe greetnele of  
renelacions enhance me i pe.  
pe pricke of my fleish an am-  
gel of sathanas is zoni to me.  
p. he bnfate me for which pig  
pnes i preyde pe lord. p. it sh  
ulde go anye fro me. i. he seide  
to me. my grace sufficy to p.  
for vertu is par faly maad  
i infirmyte pfore gladi. i sh  
al glorie i myne infirmytes.  
p. pe vertu of cēt dwelle i me  
for which pig i am plelid in

myne infirmytes. i. i. dispilgis  
i nedis. i. i. plectuonis. i. angul-  
chis for crist. for whāne i am  
syk. pāne i am myzti. i am ma-  
ad vntys. ze contreyne den  
me for i onte to be comendū  
of you. for i dide no pig lalle  
pā pei. pat ben apostlis aboue  
man. youz i am nouz. nepeles  
pe signes of my apostlhed be  
maad on you i al pāciance. i. i. fig-  
nes i grete wondis i vertues.  
i. i. what is it p. ze hadde lalle pā  
ope churche. but p. i. my self  
greupe you not. for p. i. ze  
to me pis wong. **C. xiii.** i. i. pis  
ynde tyme i am redy to come  
to you. i. i. shal not be greuo  
to you. for i seke not po pigis  
p. ben zoni. but you. for nert  
for nert lones oiven to tresoe  
to fadyr i modir. but pe fadyr  
i modir to pe lones. for i shal  
zyne moost wylfull. i. i. my self  
shal be zoni aboue for zoni tou-  
lis. youz i. i. more loue you. i. be ter-  
se lonyd. but be it. i. greupe  
not you. but whāne i was lūl  
i took you wy gyle wher i  
dilleuete you. bi ony of hem  
whiche i. i. sente to you. i. p. rei-  
ete titee. i. i. sente wy hi abro-  
p. wher tite bigylde you. wher  
we zede not in pe same spyt.  
wher not in pe same seppis. i. i.  
tyme ze wene p. we shulen ertu-  
se us anentis you bfore god i cēt  
we speken. i. moost der bysen.  
alle pigis for zoni edifyng. but  
i drete. lest whāne i come. i sh  
al fynde you not luche as i wo-  
le. i. i. shal be foundū of you. luche  
as ze wolen not. lest pāneture



Arrogans. Envy. Stomdynellis.  
dissencions & detractionis. pny  
spectis of discord. boluygis bi p  
de. debatis ben amog zoi. & led est  
sone wthane. I come. god make me  
low. anentis zoi. & I biweple ma  
nye of hem p bifoze synede. & di  
de not penance on pe vnde nese  
foumpacion. & vncastite p rei

**I** handon. C. xii. H. H.  
O vis pnde tyme. I come  
to zoi. & in pe moip of us  
tweyne of pe witnellis. euy  
word wthal stonde. I seide bifoze &  
seye bifoze as flent tityes & now  
abient. to hem pat bifoze han sy  
ned & to alle ope. for if I come est  
loque. I shal not spare. Wheyr  
ze seken pe preef of pat est pat  
specty in me. which is not feble  
i zoi. for pouz he was crucified  
of ifirmyte. but he lyney of pe  
vertu of god. for also we ben syf  
i hi. but we shulen lyue wy h  
of pe etu of god in us. alawe zoi  
sulf. if ze ben i pe fey. ze zoi hlf  
preue. wheyr ze knowen not.  
sulf. for est ihu is i zoi. but i hap  
ze ben repprouable. but I hope  
ze knowen. y we be not repna  
ble. & we picien pe lord. y ze do  
no pig of yuel not y we seme  
preyde. but y ze do pat y is good  
& y we be as repnable. for we  
mon no pig asens treupe. but  
for pe treupe. for we wopen wthie  
we be syf. but ze ben myzt. & we  
picien vis pig zoi. pfection. p  
foze. I abient wyte pes pigis.  
y I flent do not harder. bi pe po  
wer which pe lord gaf to me into  
edificacion. & not into zoi. diffi  
cion. **E**ripen hemys forpward

woye ze. be ze parfyt. erate ze.  
vndir stonde ze pe same pig. ha  
ne ze pees. & god of pees & of lo  
ne shal be wy zoi. **E**rete ze  
wel to gidre i hooli coll. alle hoo  
ly me greet. zoi wel. pe grace  
of oure lord ihu est. & pe charite  
of god. & pe comynge of pe hoo  
ly gost. be wy alle zoi ane. **I** xii.  
endy pe seide pistle to corinthis. &  
bigyne pe plog. o pe pistle to galathies.

**G**alathies ben grekis. pei toke  
first of pe apostle. pe word  
of treupe. but atur his goyng a  
wey. pe were temptid of falle a  
postlis. y pei weren tued into pe  
lawe & circucision. pe pottle ase  
depy he to pe fey of treupe. &  
wyty to hem fro efeties. **I** xii.  
his plog to galathies seip al vis.

**D**ul pe apostle not of  
me ne by ma. but bi ihu  
est & god pe fadir. y re  
side hi fro deap. and alle  
pe brypen pat ben wy me. to pe  
churchis of galathie. grace to zoi  
& pees of god pe fadir. & of pe lord  
ihu est. pat gaf hi sulf for oure sy  
nes. to deliue us fro pe flent  
wicked world. bi pe wille of god  
& oure fadir. to whom is worlthip  
& glorie into worldis of worldis  
Amen. **I** wondre y so soone ze be  
yus moned fro hi pat depite zoi  
into pe grace of est. into anoyr  
euangeli. which is not anoyr. but  
y per be sume pat troublen zoi.  
& wolen mystie pe euangeli of  
crut. but pouz we oz an angel of  
heuewe pchide to zoi bishdis pat  
y we han prechid to zoi. be he acur  
sid. as I haue seid bifoze. & now  
estloone I seie. if ony preche to y

bishdis pat y ze han vndirfongu.  
be he acur sid. for now whey cou  
cele. I me oz god. oz whey I seche  
to plese me. if I plese it men.  
I wer not etis eriant for bryen  
I make knowe to zoi. pe euange  
lie y was prechid of me. for it is  
not by man. ne I took it of man  
ne lerne. but bi reuelacion of  
ihu est. for ze han herd my consla  
cion su tyme i pe ierurie. & y  
pnrliwede palligly pe church  
of god. & fauzt azen it. & y pfitid  
i pe ierurie aboue many of myn  
euueldis i my kymed. & was mo  
ze abundaunt a folowere of my  
fadris tradicions. But wthane  
it plese hi pat departe me fro  
my modir wombe. & depite bi his  
grace. to schewe his sone i me. y  
I shulde pche hi amog pe hevene.  
me. anoon y drou me not to fleuth  
& blood. ne I cam to ierlm to pe a  
postlis. y were to fore me. but  
I wente into arabie. & estloones  
I turnede azen into damask. & sy  
pe zeer. after. I cam to ierlm to  
se petre. & y diuellihe wy hi. &  
dayes. but I saw noon oyr of pe  
apostlis. but James oure lordis  
brof. And yele pigis which y  
wrote to zoi. loo to fore god. I lie  
not. after ward. I cam into pe  
coostis of syrie & cilice. but I was  
vknouin bi face to pe churchis  
of iudee. y weren i est. & y had  
den only an heerig. y he pat p  
shwede us su tyme. pchide now  
pe fey. asens which he fauzte  
su tyme. & in me pei glorihe god.

**A**d sy fourtene. C. ii. H.  
zeer. after. estloones I wete  
yp to ierlm wy barnabas.

& took wy me tite. I wente up  
bi reuelacion & spak wy he pe e  
uangelie. which y pchide among  
pe hevene. & bi hem sult to yele y  
semede to be suwhat. lest I rine  
oz hadde rine in weyn. & ney tite  
y hadde be wy me while he was  
hevene. was compellid to be circi  
lidid. but for false bryen pat we  
ren brouz me. which had den entrid  
to alpe oure freedom. which we ha  
u ihu crut. to brynge us into ser  
uage. but we yue no place to sub  
iection. y pe treupe of pe gospel  
shulde dibelle wy zoi. but of pe  
le y semyden to be suwhat. whi  
che pei were su tyme. it per tey  
ney not to me. for god taky not  
pe ploone of ma. for pei y semyde  
to be suwhat. zanie me no pig.  
but azenward. wthane pei hadden  
seyn. y pe euangeli of prepucie  
was zoi to me. as pe euangeli  
of circucision was zoi to petre.  
for he pat wrouzte to petre i apostle  
heed of circucision. wrouzte also  
to me amog pe hevene. & wthane pei  
hadde knowe pe grace of god pat  
was zoi to me. James & petre.  
And John which were seyn to be  
pe pilers. pei zanen rythand of  
felonshyp to me & to barnabas.  
y we among pe hevene. & y i  
to pe circucision. only y we had  
den mynde of poze me. pe which  
pig. I was sul bish to don. but wtha  
ne petre was comi to antioche.  
I azenhood hi in pe face. for he was  
wozy. to be vndir noum. for bifo  
ze y per came su me fro James.  
he eet wy hepen me. but wthane  
pei were comi he wy drou. & de  
partide hi. dredige hem y were of



circumcision / & ye of ye ieris assenti  
den to his seipung. So p<sup>r</sup> barna  
bas was drawi of hem to pat  
seipung. But whine / & sy / p<sup>r</sup> rei  
wall den not rithly to ye treupe  
of ye gospel. I seide to peti bi  
foze alle me / if pou p<sup>r</sup> art a ieris.  
lynest hepenlych / & not ierlich.  
how coustreyneft p<sup>r</sup> hepen men  
to bcome ieris. We ieris of kin  
de / & not syful me of ye hepene.  
knowe pat ama is not iustified  
of ye werkis of lawe. but bi ye  
seip of ihu crist / & we bileue in ihu  
crist / & we ben iustified of ye seip  
of crist. & not of ye werkis of la  
we. wherfore of ye werkis of  
lawe. ech flesch shal not be ius  
tified. & if we sechen to be iusti  
fied in crist. we ou<sup>r</sup> self ben fou  
den syful me. wher crist be mi  
nistre of syne. god forbete / &  
if / bilde azen pigis p<sup>r</sup> / I hane dis  
troyed. I make my self a trespass  
soun. for bi ye lawe. I am deed to  
ye lawe. & I am frild to ye cros  
p<sup>r</sup> / I lyue to god wip crist. & now  
lyue not / I. but crist lyue i me.  
but p<sup>r</sup> / lyue now in flesch. I ly  
ue i ye seip of godis loue. pat lo  
uete me. & zaf hi self for me. I  
caste not away ye grace of god.  
for if rithfulnesse be p<sup>r</sup> / I laue.  
p<sup>r</sup>ane crist diede wipoute cause.

**G**alathies / **C. m.**  
mans. to fore whos p<sup>r</sup>zen  
ihū crist is exchid. & is cru  
cified. / & who hap diseyued. /  
p<sup>r</sup> / ze obeyen not to treupe. / pis  
oonh / I wilne to lerne of zoi. / whe  
p<sup>r</sup> ze han vnderfonge ye spirit  
of werkis of ye lawe. / or of hee  
ryng of bileue. / so ze ben fooli.

p<sup>r</sup> whane ze han bigaine i spirit.  
ze ben endid in flesch. so grete  
p<sup>r</sup>is ze han suffrid wipoute cau  
se. if it be wipoute cause. he pat  
zyney to zoi spirit / & worchip ver  
tues i zoi. wher of werkis of ye  
lawe. or of heeris of bileue. as  
it is writi / abraham bileuede to  
god. & it was retid to hi to rithful  
nesse. / & p<sup>r</sup>fore knowe ze p<sup>r</sup> / yes p<sup>r</sup>  
ben of bileue. ben ye sonas of  
abraham. and ye scripture seyn  
ge after pat iustified ye hepene.  
of bileue tolde to fore to abraham.  
p<sup>r</sup> in pee alle ye hepene shulen be  
blesid. & p<sup>r</sup>fore yes p<sup>r</sup> ben of bi  
leue. shulen be blesid wip seip  
ful abraham. for alle p<sup>r</sup> ben of ye  
werkis of lawe. ben vnder curs.  
for it is writi / ech mā is cursid  
pat abidit i alle pigis p<sup>r</sup> ben wri  
ti in ye booke of ye lawe. to doo  
p<sup>r</sup>is. & pat no man is iustified  
in ye lawe bifore god. it is opyn.  
for arithful mā loney of bileue.  
but ye lawe is not of bileue. but  
he pat doo ye pigis of ye lawe.  
shal lyue in hē. but crist azenbon.  
te us fro ye curs of ye lawe.  
I was maad acursid for us. for it  
is writi / ech mā is cursid pat han  
gip in ye tree. / & a mong ye he  
pene ye blesid of abraham. we  
re maad i crist ihū. / & we vnderfon  
ge ye blesid of spirit. p<sup>r</sup> / bi  
leue. / bryen / I seie after mā. / no  
mā dispilip ye testament of mā  
pat is cōfermyd. / or ordeyned a  
bone. ye blesid is were seid to  
abraham. / & to his seed he seip not  
in seedis as in manye. but as in  
oon. / & to pi seed p<sup>r</sup> is crist. / But /  
seie pis testament is cōfermyd

of god. ye lawe p<sup>r</sup> was maad af  
foun. hūdrd & p<sup>r</sup>nti zeer. ne mā  
p<sup>r</sup> not ye testament. / & zeir. to auoy  
de away ye blesid. / for if eritage  
were of ye lawe. it were now of  
biheeste. but god graunte to a  
braham. p<sup>r</sup> / biheeste. / what p<sup>r</sup>  
ne ye lawe. / it was sett for trel  
passing. til to ye seed come to who  
he hadde maad biheeste. / which la  
we was ordeyned bi angelis. in  
ye hond of a mediator. but a me  
diator is not of con. but god is  
oon. is p<sup>r</sup>ane ye lawe azen ye bi  
heestis of god. / god forbete. / for  
if ye lawe were zoi p<sup>r</sup> myzte  
quyrene. / & rithly we rithfulnes  
se of lawe. but scripture hap cō  
cludid alle pigis vnder syne. / p<sup>r</sup>  
ye biheeste of ye seip of ihū crist.  
were zoi to hem pat bileuen  
and to fore p<sup>r</sup> bileue cam. / pei we  
re kept vnder ye lawe. enclodid  
into pat bileue p<sup>r</sup> was to be lye  
wid. / & so ye lawe was ou<sup>r</sup> vnder  
maister. in crist. / & we ben iustifi  
ed of bileue. / but after p<sup>r</sup> bileue  
cam. we ben not now vnder ye  
vndermaister. for alle ze be ye  
children of god p<sup>r</sup> / ye bileue  
i ihū crist. / for alle ze pat ben bap  
tised. ben doyd wip crist. / & is no  
ieris ne greek. / no bonde mā. / no  
fre mā. / no male. / no female. / for  
alle ze ben oon i ihū crist. / & if ze be  
oon i ihū crist. p<sup>r</sup>ane ze ben ye seed  
of abraham. / & eures bi biheeste.

**B**ut I seie as / **C. m.**  
long tyme as ye eir is a  
lytil child. he dyntip no  
pig fro a seruait. whane he is  
lord of alle pigis. but he is vnder  
keperis & tūmouris. into ye ty

me determined of ye fadir. / So  
we whane we were lytle chil  
dre. we serueten vnder ye ele  
mentis of ye world. but after p<sup>r</sup>  
ye fulfylling of tyme cam. god  
sent his lone maad of a wōmā  
maad vnder ye lawe. / & he shulde  
azenbie he pat were vnder ye  
lawe. / & we shulde vnderfonge  
ye adopcion of sonas. / and for ze be  
goddis sonas. / god sente his spirit  
into zoi hertis. / cōnge alba  
fadir. / & so p<sup>r</sup> is not now a seruait  
but a lone. / & if he is a lone. he is  
an eyr bi god. but p<sup>r</sup>ane ze vntuo  
wpyng god. / seruete to hem p<sup>r</sup>  
in p<sup>r</sup>nde weren not goddis. but  
now whane ze han knowe god.  
ze ben knowi of god. / how ben  
ze turned escloues to ye feble  
ze nedy elementis. to ye whiche ze  
wolen est serue. / ze taken kepe  
to dayes & moneyis & tymes  
& zeiris. but / I drede zoi. / lest  
wipoute cause / I hane trauehid  
among zoi. / Se ze as p<sup>r</sup> / for I am  
as ze. / & zeir. / & biseche zoi. / ze ha  
hert me no pig. / but ze knowe  
p<sup>r</sup> bi infirmyte of flesch. / I hane  
prechid to zoi now bifore. / & ze  
dispileten not ney forsoken zoi  
teptacion in my flesch. / but ze  
relapneted me as an angel of god.  
as crist ihū. / wher p<sup>r</sup>ane is zoi  
blesid. / for I bere zoi wittnesse.  
p<sup>r</sup> / if it myzte hane be don. / ze wol  
den hane put out zoi p<sup>r</sup>zen. / &  
hane zoi hem to me. / am / p<sup>r</sup>ane  
maad an enemy to zoi. / seyringe  
to zoi ye sope. / pei lone not zoi  
wel. but pei wolen exclud zoi p<sup>r</sup>  
ze swaben hem. / but suabe ze ye  
good enermore in good. / & not ooh



Whiche I am present wip you my  
smale childe. whiche I ber est  
loones til pat it be fourmed i  
you. I wolde now be at you. I  
change my voyce. for I am con  
foudid amog you. seie to me ze  
p wolu be vndir ye laue. ze ha  
not redd ye laue. for it is wri  
till. I habraham hadde two lones  
oon of a seruait. I oon of a fre  
woman. but he p was of ye ser  
uait. was born astur ye fleulth  
but he p was of ye fre woma.  
bi a biheeste. ye whiche pigis  
be leid by anopr. vndir stondig  
for yele ben two testamētis. oon  
in ye hul of synay. gendrige ito  
seruage. which is agar. for sy  
na is an hil p is marabie. which  
hil is ioyued to it. p is now ie  
rusalem. I seruey wip hir chil  
dren. but pat ierlm p is abone  
is fre. which is oure modir. for  
it is wri. Be glad you barey.  
pat berit not. hrek out I crye.  
p byngist fory no childe. for  
many lones ben of hnr. pat is  
left of hnr holebonde. more pan  
of hnr pat hap an holebonde. but  
bryen we ben lones of biheeste.  
astur. I linc. but now as pis pat  
was born astur ye fleulth. purhi  
ede hi p was astur ye spirit. so  
now. but what sey ye scriptur.  
caste out ye seruait. I hnr lone  
for ye lone of ye seruait. shal  
not be cur. wip ye lone of ye fre  
wip. And so bryen we be not  
lones of ye seruait. but of ye  
fre wip. bi which freedom. it hap

**S**maid us free. I. v. /  
Bonde ze p fore. I. nyle  
ze est loones be holden i

ye rok of sernage. lo I poul seie  
to you. p if ze be circuldid. cit  
shal no rig profite to you. I  
witnesse est loones. to ech ma p  
circuldid hi silt. p he is detour  
of al ye laue to be don. And ze ben  
vopdid alkei fro cit. ze ze p ben  
nuthid i ye laue. ze han fallu a  
wey fro grace. for we purz ye  
spirit of bileue. abyden ye hope  
of riz fulnesse. for in ihu cit ney  
circulidion is ony pig. wozp ney  
ppucie. but ye bileue p wozdhip  
bi charite. ze rimen wel. who let  
tude you p ze obeyeden not to tren  
pe. consente ze to no ma. for pis  
coucil is not of hi p hap clepid  
you. Altil somdoun. apenry al  
ye gobet. I. truste on you i oure  
lord. p ze ihulde vndir stonde noo  
opr pig. I. who p distunbly you.  
shal bere doom. who eide he be  
I bryen if. I. prethe zit circuli  
on. what suffre I. zit perlecuci  
on. pane ye staudie of ye cross.  
is voidid. I. wolde p rei were cutt  
akey p distunbly you. for bryen  
ze ben clepid into freedom. conly  
zyne ze not freedom ito occasion  
of fleulth. but bi charite of spi  
rit. serue ze to gode. for enery  
laue is fulfillid in o word. pon  
thalt lone pi neyboze as pi silt.  
I. if ze bite I. ete ech opr. ze ze  
lest ze be wastid ech fro opr. I. I  
seie you i cit. walke ze i spirit. I.  
ze ihule not parfourme ye deli  
ris of ye fleulth. for ye fleulth co  
nente a zen ye spirit. I. ye spirit  
azen ye fleulth. for pes ben aduer  
saries to gudre. p ze doen not alle  
pigis p ze wille. p if ze be led by  
spirit. ze be not vndir ye laue

I ye werkis of ye fleulth ben opp  
whiche ben fornicacion. vndel  
le. vndelate. lecherie. seruile  
of falle goddis. wpathecraftis.  
emitees. stryngis. idignacions.  
wzappis. chidigis. dullencions. lec  
tis. enyes. mallangtris. drakenel  
his. vmesurable etyngis. I. rigis  
pke to yele. whiche I seie to you.  
as I hane toold you to fore. for yei  
pat doenliche pigis. ihule not  
hane ye figdom of god. But ye  
fruyt of ye spirit. is charite. io  
ye pees. patience. long abydig.  
benygnte. goodnesse. myldnel  
se. fey. tepaunce. contynence. chal  
tite. azen synche pigis is no laue.  
I. yei p ben of cit. han crucified  
her fleulth wip vices I. conenti  
gis. I. if we lyng by spirit. walke  
we by spirit. Be we maad not  
conentous of veyn glorie. stryge  
ech opr to wzappe. or hange en  
we ech to opr. **C. vi.**

**B**ryen if aman be ocupied  
in ony gilt. ze p ben spri  
tual enfourme ze liche  
I spirit of sofnesse. biholdige pi  
silt. lest p you be teprid. ech ber  
operis charges. I. so ze sthulen  
fulfille ye laue of cit. for who  
p tronry p he be out. whie he  
is nouzt. he biggly hi silt. but  
ech man prone his owne werk.  
I. so he shal hane glorie in hym  
silt. I. not in anopr. for ech man  
shal ber his owne charge. he p  
is tangt by word. comyne he w  
hi pat techy hi in alle goodis.  
myle ze erre. god is not storned  
for ye pigis pat amā sowp. po  
pigis he shal reye. for he pat so  
wip in his fleulth. of ye fleulth he

shal reye corrupcion. but he pat  
sowp ye spirit. of ye spirit he sh  
al reye euilastige hnt. I. doynge  
good. fayne we not. for i his ty  
me we shal reye not faynege.  
pfore while we han tyme. woz  
che we good to alle me. but moost  
to hem p ben homelich of ye  
fey. ze ze what man lettris  
I hane wryte to you. wip myn  
owne hond. for who ene wole  
plese ye fleulth. pis costreynen  
you to be circuldid. oonly. p rei  
suffre not ye psecucion of cris  
tis cross. for ney rei p be circi  
cidid. tepen ye laue. but rei wo  
len p ze be circuldid. p rei hane  
glorie i you. fleulth. but fer be  
it fro me to hane glorie. but in  
ye cross of oure lord ihu cit. bi who  
ye world is crucified to me. I. I  
to ye world. for in ihu cit. ney  
circulidion is ony pig. wozp. ne  
ppucie. but anewe creatur. I.  
who ene sulben pis reule. pees  
on he I. mercy. I. on yrael of god.  
and herafter no ma be hein to  
me. for I bere i my body. ye toke  
nes of oure lord ihu cit. ye grete of oe lord ihu  
sowp spirit bryen ame. **Here cit. be w**

**endy re epistil to galathes. I. bi  
gynnyng ye plog on ye pistle to effecies.**

**E**phesians ben of asie. yele  
whane rei hadden resleyued  
ye word of tremp. abide stedfasth  
ye fey. ye postle preship he. wri  
ge to he fro rome. out of pson. bi ti  
tic. ye deken. **Iero in his plog on  
pis pistle. seiy pis. C. p.**

**D**ul ye apostle of ihu  
cit bi ye wille of god.  
to alle seyntis p be  
at effecty. I. to ye fey



fulme in ihu crist. grace be to you  
 & pees of god oure fadir. & our  
 lord ihu crist. blestid be god & pe  
 fadir of our lord ihu crist. & har  
 blestid us i al spiritual blessing  
 i heuely pigris in crist. as he har  
 chosin us in hi self. bifore we ma  
 kig of pe world. & we were ho  
 ly & withouten wem i his hit i cha  
 rite. which har bifore ordey  
 ned us into adopcioin of sones.  
 by ihu crist into hy bi pe purpos  
 of his wille. into pe hering of  
 pe glorie of his grace. i which he  
 har glorified us in his derewor  
 pe sone. i who we han redepci  
 on bi his blood. forz fuesse of sy  
 nes. After pe richellis of his g  
 ce & aboundie greetly i us mal  
 wysdom & prudence. to make kno  
 we to us pe sacramet of his wil  
 le. bi pe good pleisance of hy. pe  
 which sacramet he purpouse  
 i hy. i pe dispelacioin of plente  
 of tymes. to enstoure alle pigris  
 i crist. which be i heuene  
 & which be i erpe in hi. i who  
 we be depid bi soun. bifore ordey  
 ned by pe purpous of hy & worchm  
 alle pigris. bi pe conseil of his wil  
 le. & we be into pe hering of hi  
 glorie. we & han hapid bifore i  
 crist. i whom also ze were de  
 pid. whane ze herde pe word of  
 treupe pe gospel of zour heelp.  
 i who ze belyue ben markid  
 wip pe hooly gost of biheeste.  
 which is pe eerues of our eri  
 tage. into pe redepciou of pur  
 challing into hering of his glo  
 rie. **E**per fore. i heerige zour  
 fery pat is i crist ihu. & pe loue in  
 to alle seyntis. ceesse not to do pa

trigis for you. makige myde of  
 you i my preieris. & god of our  
 lord ihu crist. pe fadir of glorie.  
 zyne to you pe spirit of wysdo  
 & of reuelacioin into pe knowig  
 of hym. & pe zen of zour herte  
 lytred. & ze wite which is pe  
 hope of his clepig. & which be  
 pe richellis of pe glorie of his e  
 ritage in seyntis. & which is pe  
 excellent greetnesse of his ver  
 tu. to us pat han bileuid bi pe  
 worthig of remyt of his wille.  
 which he wouhte i crist. refige  
 hi fro deap. & settege hi on his tri  
 half. i heuely pigris. above ech  
 pncipal & potestat & etu. & do  
 minacioin. & above ech name. &  
 is named. not conly i pis world.  
 but also in pe world to comig.  
 & made alle pigris suget vnder  
 his feet. & zat hi to be heed on  
 al pe churche. & is pe body of hi.  
 & pe plente of hi. which is alle  
 pigris i alle pigris. fulfilled. **A**  
**nd** whne ze were a  
 ded i zour gyltis & synes.  
 i which ze wandred in  
 tyme. after pe counel of pis world.  
 after pe pnce of pe power of pr  
 er. of pe spirit. & worchm. not  
 into pe sones of vnbileue. in which  
 alle we alle lueden in tyme  
 in pe de liris of our fleit. do  
 yuge pe wille of pe fleit. & of  
 pncipis. & we were by kynde pe lo  
 nes of wraipe. as ope me. but  
 god & is ryche in mercy. for his  
 ful moche charite in which he lo  
 uede us. & he whne we were ded  
 in synes. quykende us to gide  
 in crist. by whos grace ze ben sauid.  
 & azenrethid to gide. & made to gi

die to lute in heuely pigris. i crist ihu.  
 & he schulde thewe in pe worldis  
 aboue comig. & pe plenteuousse  
 richellis of his grace in goodnes  
 se on us i crist ihu. for bi grace ze  
 ben sauid by fery. & pis not of  
 for it is pe zifte of god. not of wer  
 kis. & no man hane glorie. for  
 we ben pe makig of hi. maid of  
 nouzt in crist ihu i gode werkis.  
 which god har ordey ned. & we  
 go in pe werkis. for which pig be  
 ze mynde ful. & in tyme ze were  
 hepe in fleitly. which were  
 seid pnce. fro pat & is seid cir  
 cuacioin maid bi hond in fleitly.  
 & ze were in pat tyme withoute  
 crist. aliened fro pe lyng of fra  
 el. & gestis of testamētis. not ha  
 uig hope of biheeste. & withoute  
 god in pis world. but now i crist  
 ihu. ze pat weren in tyme ferr.  
 be maid in pe blood of crist. for  
 he is our pees. & made hope con.  
 & vnbryndige pe myddel wal of  
 a wal withoute mortar enemy  
 tes in his fleitly. & anoydite pe  
 laue of maudementis by donee.  
 & he make tweyne i hi self. to  
 o nerke ma. makige pees. to re  
 coule hope in o body to god by  
 pe cross. sleynge pe enemytees  
 in hi self. & he comig prechide  
 pees to you pat were ferr. &  
 pees to he & were my. for bi hy  
 we hope han my comig. & in  
 o spirit to pe fadir. & fore now ze  
 ben not gestis & strangeris. but  
 ze ben citeis of seyntis. & hous  
 hold meyne of god. above bildid  
 on pe fudamēt of apostlis. & of  
 pferis. upon pat hyste corner  
 stoon crist ihu. i whom ech bildig

maid. were into an hooly tem  
 ple i pe lord. in who also be ze bil  
 did to gide into pe abitade of  
 god in pe hooly gost. **E** m.  
**O** pe grace of pis pig  
 I poul pe bound of crist  
 ihu for you hepen me. if  
 neceles ze han han herd pe dis  
 pensacioin of goddis grace. & is  
 zoun to me in you. for by reuela  
 cioin pe sacramet is maid kno  
 wu to me. as i aboue wroot in  
 short pig. as ze mowen rede. & on  
 dirstonde my prudence. i pe unil  
 terie of crist. which was not kno  
 wu to ope genaciois to pe sones  
 of me. as it is now thewid to his  
 hooly apostlis. & pferis i pe spirit.  
 & hepe me ben euene eyris of  
 o body. & partenes to gide of  
 his biheeste i crist ihu bi pe enighe  
 whos mynstre i am maid bi pe  
 zifte of goddis grace. which is  
 zoun to me bi pe worthig of his  
 vertu to me leest of alle seyntis.  
 pis grace is zoun to preche amog  
 hepen me. pe vnserchable richel  
 lis of crist. & to lizne alle me which  
 is pe dispelacioin of sacramēt hid  
 fro worldis i god. & made alle pigris  
 of nouzt. & pe moche fold wysdo  
 of god be knouu to pnces & po  
 testatis i heuely pigris. by pe chur  
 che. by pe bifore ordinaunce of woz  
 dis. which he made i crist ihu ou  
 re lord. i who we han trust. & my  
 comig. i trustemig by pe fery of  
 hi for which pig i ope. & ze faple  
 not i my tribulaciois for you. which  
 is zour glorie. for grace of pis  
 pig i boue my knees to pe fadir  
 of our lord ihu crist. of who ech fa  
 dicheed in heuene & in erpe is



named / p<sup>r</sup> he zyne to you after pe riches  
his of his glorie: vertu to be streng  
pid in his sp<sup>ir</sup>it bi pe yner ma<sup>n</sup> / p<sup>r</sup>  
est diu<sup>er</sup>selle by fery: in zour hertis  
p<sup>r</sup> ze rootid & growidid i charite: mo  
wen cōprehēde wy alle sermōs. Wh  
ich is pe bryde & pe lengpe & pe bz  
nelle & pe depnesse: also to wite pe cha  
rite of est more excellēt pā science:  
p<sup>r</sup> ze be fillid in al pe plente of god  
& to hym p<sup>r</sup> is wyse to do alle  
figis more plenteuouly pā we ar  
en oz vnderstonde by pe vertu pat  
wozchp in us: to hym be glorie i  
pe churche & in est ihu into alle pe  
genaciōs of pe world of worldis  
amen. // **C. m.** //

**V**erfore i boundū for pe lo  
rd biseche zou: p<sup>r</sup> ze walke  
wozchp i pe depis i which  
ze ben clepid wy al mekenes  
& myldenesse: wy patience hy  
portynge ech op<sup>r</sup> i charite: byli  
to kepe vntite of sp<sup>ir</sup>it: in pe bo  
ond of pees: o body & o sp<sup>ir</sup>it: as  
ze ben clepid in con hope of zour  
clepyng: o lord o fery: o baptym  
o god & fadyr of alle: which is abo  
ue alle mē & by alle pigis & in us  
alle: but to ech of us grace is zo  
mi: by pe mesure of pe zynnyng  
of est: for which ymg he seip he  
stryngē an hy: ledde caritue can  
ryf: he zaf zif to mē: but wlt  
is it p<sup>r</sup> he stryde x<sup>p</sup>: no but p<sup>r</sup> also  
he cam don first into pe lowere  
partis of pe erpe: he it is p<sup>r</sup> cam  
don & p<sup>r</sup> stryde on alle heuenes:  
p<sup>r</sup> he shulde fille alle pigis & he  
zaf sume aposths: sume p<sup>r</sup>etis  
o<sup>r</sup>e euangelists: o<sup>r</sup>e shpardis  
& tēcheris: to pe ful endig of ley  
tis: into pe werk of mynsterie:

to edificaciō of cristis body: til  
we reuen alle ito vntite of fery  
& of knowig of goddis sone: i  
to a parfyt man after pe mesu  
re of age of pe plente of est: p<sup>r</sup>  
we be not now hyle children  
moynge as wauis: & be not ho  
zi aboute wy ech wynd of re  
chyng i pe weywardnesse of mē  
in sum wite to pe dysseymyng  
of errour: but do we treipe in  
charite: & were in hy bialle pi  
gis p<sup>r</sup> is est our heed of whom  
al pe body lett to gidre & boundū  
to gidre by ech ioyntū of vnder  
sermyng: bi wozchp into pe me  
sur of ech mē: makyng  
crefig of pe body into edificaciō  
of it self in charite: p<sup>r</sup> fore p<sup>r</sup> se  
& witnesse pis pig in pe lord: p<sup>r</sup> ze wal  
ke not now: as hevene mē walke  
in pe vanite of her witt: pat han  
vnderstondig derbed wy derbed  
sis: & ben aliyened fro pe l<sup>y</sup>st of god:  
by ignorance p<sup>r</sup> is in hem: for pe  
blindnesse of her herte: which  
dispenrige bitoken hē zif to vn  
chastite: into pe wozchp of al vn  
clēnelle i couertise: but zehan not  
so lerd est: if nepeles: ze herden  
hy: & ben taut in hy: as is treipe  
in ihu: do ze awei by pe elde lymyng  
pe elde mā p<sup>r</sup> is corrupt by pe d<sup>y</sup>st  
ris of errour: & be ze reuelid in  
pe sp<sup>ir</sup>it of zour sone: & clope ze  
pe newe man: which is mād aft  
god i r<sup>e</sup>z<sup>e</sup>llyshelle & hoolynesse of  
treipe: for which pig ze putte  
awei lehyng: & speke ze treipe  
ech mā wy his neyboze: for we  
ben mēbis ech to op<sup>r</sup>: be ze wyse:  
& nyle ze do syne: pe sume falle  
not down on zoure wazpe: nyle

ze zyne stide to pe denel: he p<sup>r</sup> stail:  
now stele he not: but more trauele  
he in wozchp: wy his hondis pat  
p<sup>r</sup> is good: p<sup>r</sup> he haue wherof he  
shal zyne to pe nedre: ech ynel  
word go not of zour moyn: but  
if ony is good to pe edificaciō  
of fery: p<sup>r</sup> it zyne grace to mē  
pat heeren: & nyle ze make pe  
hooly goot of god loz: in whi  
ch ze ben markid in pe day of re  
depciō: al bittynesse & wazpe  
& indignaciō: & cry: & blasfemye:  
be takū awei fro zou: wy al ma  
lice: & be ze to gidre be mygne:  
moyful: for zynge to gidre: as  
also god forzat to zou in crist:  
Verfore be **C. v.** //

**T**ze folowris of god: as  
moost dērewope sones:  
& walke ze in loue: as est louede  
us: & zaf hē zif for us: an offryg  
& a sacrifice to god: into pe odour  
of swetnesse: & fornyaciō: & al  
vndēnelle: oz anarice be not na  
med amōg zou: as it bicomep  
hooly mē: op<sup>r</sup>: fihre oz folh spe  
che oz har lozpe p<sup>r</sup> perteynep not  
to profyt: but more doynge of  
paukyng: for wite ze pis & vnd  
stoude p<sup>r</sup> ech lechour: oz vndene  
man oz couetous: p<sup>r</sup> seruey to  
māmetis: har not eritage  
in pe kygdom of est & of god: no  
mā dysseyme zou by veyn wordis:  
for whi: for pes pigis: pe wazpe  
of god cam ou pe sones of vnb  
leue: p<sup>r</sup> fore nyle ze be mād par  
tēneris of hem: for ze werē sū  
tyme derknesis: but now lzt  
in pe lord: walke ze as pe sones  
of lzt: for pe fruyt of lzt is i  
al goodnesse & ryzt wyshele and

treupe: & preue ze what pig is  
wel plehyngē to god: & nyle ze co  
myne to vntititouse werkis  
of dercuelles: but more repro  
ue ze: for what pigis ben don of  
hē in p<sup>r</sup>ny: it is foul: ze to spe  
ke: & alle pigis p<sup>r</sup> ben reponed of  
pe lzt: ben openly shewid: for  
al ymg p<sup>r</sup> is shewid: is lzt: for  
which pig he seip: ryle you p<sup>r</sup> sle  
pist & ryle vp fro deep: & est sh  
al lztne yee **A** verfore bryen se  
ze: how warly ze shule go: not as  
vnbyle mē: but as wyse mē aze  
bryngē tyme: for pe dayes ben  
puele: p<sup>r</sup> fore nyle ze be mād vn  
wyse: but vnderstonde which  
is pe wille of god: & nyle ze be dū  
lū of wyne: in which is leatherie:  
but be ze fillid wy pe hooly goot:  
& speke ze to zou sif i salmes &  
ymynes & sp<sup>ir</sup>itual songis: fih  
yngē: & seynge salu i zour her  
tis to pe lord: euemore doynge  
paukyngs for alle pigis i pe name  
of oure lord ihu est: to god & to  
pe fadyr: be ze suget to gidre in  
pe dzele of est **A** wimen be pei  
suget to her hōsebondis: as to  
pe lord: for pe mā is heed of pe  
wōman: as est is heed of pe chr  
che: he is sauour of his body: but  
as pe churche is suget to est: so  
wimen to her hōsebondis i alle  
ymgis **A** zen loue ze zour wymes:  
as est louede pe churche: & zaf hē  
zif for it: to make it hooly &  
cleulid it wy pe washyng of wa  
tur: in pe word of l<sup>y</sup>st: to zyne  
pe churche glorious to hē zif: p<sup>r</sup>  
it hadde no wem ne r<sup>y</sup>nelhyng:  
oz ony such ymg: but p<sup>r</sup> it be ho  
oly & vndesoulid: so & mē loue



to you  
 I heere of you þe stonde in o  
 spirit. of o wille. trauelinge to  
 gidre to þe fere of þe gospel. &  
 in no þing be ze afere of aduer  
 saries. which is to þe cause of  
 perdition. but to you cause of  
 heelp. & þis þing is of god. for  
 it is you. for crist. & not onli  
 ze bileue in þe. but also þe  
 suffre for him. hauege þe sa  
 me stryf. which ze laye in me.  
 & now ze han herd of me. **C. iij.**  
**V**erfore if ony confort  
 is in crist. if ony solace of  
 charite. if ony felouschip  
 of spirit. if ony iustwardnes  
 of mercy doyng. fille ze my  
 ioye. & ze vnderstonde þe same  
 þing. & haue þe same charite.  
 of o wille. & feelen þe same þing.  
 no þing bi stryf. neyn bi veyn  
 glorie. but i mekenesse. demyge  
 ech oþer to be lyer. & hi silt. not  
 biholdige ech þing bi hi silt. whi  
 þis ben his owne. but po þis  
 þe ben of oþer me. & feele ze þis  
 þing in you. which also in crist ihu.  
 & whi he was in þe fourme of  
 god. demyde not raneyn. & hi  
 silt were euene to god. but he  
 lowde hi silt. takige þe fourme  
 of a seruaunt. & was mead to þe  
 liknesse of me. & in abytt was  
 founden as ama. he meide hi silt.  
 & was maid obedient to þe deap.  
 & he to þe deap of þe croll. for whi  
 ch þis god enhaunide hi. & ze to  
 hi aname þis aboue al name. &  
 in þe name of ihu. ech knee be  
 bowid. of heuēly þis of erpely  
 þis. & of helis. & ech tinge kno  
 wleche. & þe lord ihu crist is i þe  
 glorie of god þe fadir. **C. iij.**

fore my mooste derewore be  
 þen as enmore ze han oberthid  
 not i my þense onli. but mo  
 che more now i my abience. for  
 che ze wydred & tremlyng. you  
 re heelp. for it is god. & worch  
 in you hope to wille. & to þour  
 me for good wille. & do ze alle þin  
 gis. wipoute grunthigis & deu  
 tigns. & ze be wipoute playnt.  
 & exple as þe sones of god. wip  
 oute reft. i þe myddil of a dñre  
 wid nacioun. & a keyward among  
 whiche ze sthyne as zyners  
 of list. in þe world. & holde ze to  
 gidre þe word of luf to my glorie  
 i þe day of crist. for i haue not rñ  
 ne in veyn. ne i haue trauelid  
 i veyn. but þou i be offrid or slay  
 on þe sacryfice & exple of you.  
 fere. i haue ioye. & i þanke you  
 alle. & þe same þing haue ze ioye.  
 & þanke ze me. & i hope in þe  
 lord ihu. pat i shal se de  
 chynuche looe to you. pat i  
 be of good confort. whi po  
 þis ben knowen. & ben abou  
 te you. for i haue no mā so of  
 o wille. & is biþ for you. wy de  
 ne affection. for alle me seken  
 po þis. & ben her owne. not  
 po þe ben of crist ihu. but knowe  
 ze þe assay of þe. for as a lone  
 to þe fadir. he þay lerned wy  
 me i þe gospel. & forze i hope  
 & i shal sende hi to you. and as  
 i se what þis ben aboute me.  
 & i truste in þe lord. & also my  
 silt shal come to you soone. &  
 i geþite it nedeful. to sende to  
 you epafrodite my broþer. & eue  
 ne worcher. & my euene knyt.  
 but youre apostle. & þe ministr

of my need. for he desyre you  
 alle. & he was lozenful. þore  
 & he herden. & he was lyk. for he  
 was lyk to þe deap. but god had  
 de mercy on hi. & not onli on  
 hi. but also on me. lest i hadde  
 heynesse on heynesse. & þore  
 more hastely i sente hi. & whi  
 ne ze han seyn hi. ze haue ioye  
 eft. & i be wipoute heynesse.  
 & þore reserue ze hi. wy al ioye  
 in þe lord. & haue ze suche wy  
 al hono. for þe werk of crist. & ze  
 wente to deap. & þingge his luf.  
 & he shilde fulfille. & þat fay  
 lde of you. and as my seruice.  
**C. iij.**  
**H**ome forþard. **C. iij.**  
 my þurpen haue ze ioye  
 i þe lord. to write to you þe  
 same þis. to me it is not slow.  
 & to you it is necessarie. & ze hou  
 dis. & ze þe uel werkme. & ze dy  
 in hon. for we ben circunsiom.  
 whiche bi spirit serue to god. &  
 glorien in crist ihu. & han not  
 trist in þe fleit. þou i haue  
 trist. & he in þe fleit. & ony op  
 mā is seyn to trist in fleit. &  
 moxe. & was circunsiom in þe  
 erpe day. of þe kyn of israel.  
 of þe lynage of beniamy. an e  
 breu of ebr. & as bi þe la  
 we. a farle. bi lone. & þingge  
 þe churche of god. bi rñt. whi  
 se þis in þe laue. & þingge wy  
 oute playnt. but whiche þis  
 weren to me. & þingge. i haue  
 dempde þe. & þingge. for crist.  
 & þe þe. i selle alle þis to be  
 þe remēt. for þe cleer thence of  
 ihu crist. my lord. for whom i made  
 alle þis. þe remēt. & i deme as  
 drit. & i wyne crist. & þat i be fou

den in hi. not hauege my rñt. whi  
 nelle. & is of þe laue. but þat  
 is of þe fere of crist ihu. & is of  
 god. þe rñt. whi nelle. & fere. to kno  
 we hi. & þe vñ of his rñt. & ze.  
 & þe felouschip of his passion. &  
 to be maid lyk to his deap. & on  
 ony mā. i come to þe reserret  
 cion. & is fro deap. not. & now i  
 haue tak. & now am þat. &  
 but i selue. & in ony mā. i co  
 prehēde. in whiche rñt. also i am  
 comprehendid of crist ihu. & þe  
 i deme me not. & i haue coþrehē  
 did. but o þis. & forze po þis  
 & ben biþindis. & fere. & forze  
 my silt. to po þis. & ben biþore  
 & þurfinse to þe ordeyned meete  
 of þe hñ. & deap. of god. in crist ihu.  
 & þore who eue we ben þat. &  
 feele we þis þing. & if ze vñdñ  
 stonden in oþe mā. ony þis. & þis  
 þis god shal shewe to you. & þe  
 les to what þis. we han com. &  
 þat we vñdñstonde þe same þis.  
 & þe we þat. & þe we. & þe we.  
 reule. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 weris. & warte ze þe þat. & þe we.  
 so. as ze han on. fourme. for  
 manye walke. whiche i haue seid  
 ofte to you. & þe we. & þe we.  
 seie. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 whos ende is deap. whos god is  
 þe wombe. & þe glorie. & þe confu  
 oil of þe. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 but our. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 whi. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 our. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 refōme. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 se. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 clerenesse. & þe we. & þe we. & þe we.  
 ich he may also make alle þis  
 suget to him. **C. iij.**



**V**erfore my brayen moost  
dereworpe & moost desirid.  
my ioye & my crowne. so  
fonde ze i pe lord moost der  
brayen. I preie encodiam. & bi  
teche huncum. to vnderstonde pe  
same pig in pe lord. also I preie  
I pee germa felowe. helpe p' pe  
ilke wimen p' trauelide wip me  
in pe gospel wip demet & ope  
myn helperis. whos names be  
i pe booke of lyf. Ioye ze i pe lord  
euermore. est I seie ioye ze be  
zoure patience knowu to alle  
me. pe lord is my be ze no ying  
bly. but i al preier & bileding w  
doynge of pankyng. be zoure at  
yngis knowu at god & pe pees  
of god p' passyng al wytt. kepe  
zour hertis & vnder stoungis i  
crist ihu. fro heims fory brayen.  
whit eue pigis ben ioye. what  
eue pigis chaf. whit eue pigis  
mst. whit eue pigis hooly. what  
eue pigis able to be loued. whit  
eue pigis of good fame. if ony  
vtn. if ony preihs of disciplyne.  
pe ke ze pes pigis. p' also ze han  
lernd & take & herd & seyn i me.  
do ze pes pigis. & god of pees sh  
al be wip you. but I ioyete greet  
ly i pe lord. p' en tyme asen ward  
ze flouride azen to feele for me.  
as also ze feelid. but ze were ocu  
pied. I seie not as for nede. for  
I have lernd to be sufficient. in  
whiche pigis I am. & I can also  
be lowd. I can also haue plente  
euywhere & in alle pigis. I am  
taryt to be fillid & to hūgre.  
I to aboude & to suffre miseste.  
I may alle pigis. in hī p' confort  
ty me. nepeles ze han doon wel.

comynge to my tribulaciou for  
also ze philipensis wite. p' in pe bi  
gynge of pe gospel. whiche I we  
te fory fro macedonie. no chre  
che comynede wip me i resoi  
of pig zom & taku. but ze al  
oone. whiche senten to tessalo  
nyk. comys & ryges also into  
vll to me. not for I seke ihte.  
but I requyre fruyt aboundige  
i zom resoi. for I have alle pi  
gis. & aboude. I am fillid wip  
po pigis taku of epafrodite. wh  
che ze sente into pe odour of his  
etnelle a couenable sacrifice ple  
lige to god. & my god fill all zom  
re desir. bi hile richellis i glorie  
i crist ihu. but to god I am fady.  
be glorie to worldis of worldis  
ame. Greete ze wele euy hooly  
ma in crist ihu. po brayen p' be w  
me greeten zom wel. alle hooly me  
greete zom wel. moost sopeh pe  
p' ben of pe empouris hous. pe  
gite of our lord ihu. & be wip you  
re spirt ame. **Here endy pe  
pistle to philipensis. & bigynner pe  
plog on pe pistle to colocenhs.**

**C**olocensis ben also laodic  
his. pes ben of ahe. & pe had  
de be disseynd by false aposths.  
pe possle hī. Sift cam not  
to he. but he bringy he age  
to correctiō by epistle. for pe  
hadde herd pe word of archy.  
pat hadde vnderfonge pe my  
sterie ito he. p' fore pe apostle  
now boundu woot to he. & effelie.  
bi titic pe deken & onosym pe a  
colyt. **Herō i his plog  
on vis pistle seip vis  
Dul apostle. C. p.  
of crist ihu. bi pe wille**

of god. & tymothe brop. to he  
p' ben at colose. hooly & feyful  
brayen i crist ihu. gte & pees to  
zom of god our fady. & of pe lord  
ihū. We don pankyng to god  
I to pe fady of our lord ihū. &  
eumore perynge for zom hee  
rige zoure fery i crist ihū. & pe lo  
ue p' ze han to alle hooly me. for  
pe hope p' is kept to zom i heue  
nes. whiche ze herde in pe word  
of tremp of pe gospel p' cam to  
zom. as also it is in al pe world.  
I may fruyt & wery as in  
zou fro pat day. i whiche ze her  
den & kenne pe gte of god i treu  
pe. as ze lerne of epafas our  
felawe moost dereworpe. whiche  
is a trewe ministr of ihū. & for  
zom. whiche also stheride to us. zom  
re loyng in spirt. p' fore we fro  
pe day i whiche we herden. creelle  
not to preie for zom & to are. p'  
ze be fillid wip pe knowig of his  
wille. in al wysdom & goostly. con  
dystondig. p' ze walke woryly to  
god plesyng by alle pigis. & ma  
ke fruyt in al good werk. & were  
in pe stence of god. & ben confort  
tid in al vertu bi pe myzt of his  
derenesse. i al patience & long  
abidynge wip ioye. p' ze don panky  
ng to god & to pe fady. whiche  
made zom wory into pe part of  
eritage of hooly me in lyt. whiche  
dehmerde us fro pe power of derk  
nessis. & tūllatide into pe kydo  
of pe sone of his loyng. in whom  
we han azenbyng & remitiō  
of synes. whiche is pe ymage of  
god vnyshle. pe friste bigeti  
of ech creatur. for i hī alle pigis  
ben maad. in heuenes & in erpe.

visible & vnyshle. ep trones ep  
duacions. ep pucehodis ep poib  
eris. alle pigis ben maad of nouzt  
by hī & in hī. & he is bfore al  
le. & alle pigis ben in hī. & he is  
heed of pe body of pe churche. wh  
ich is pe bigynnyng. & pe friste  
bigeti of deed me. p' he holde pe  
friste dignyte in alle pigis. for  
i hī it pleside al plente to inhā  
te. & bi hī alle pigis to be recon  
celid into hī. & made pees by pe  
blood of his cross. po pigis pat  
ben i erpis. ep p' ben in heue  
ms. & whiche ze were sū tyme  
ahenyd & enemyes bi witt i y  
nele werkis. now he hay recon  
selid zom i pe body of his fleish  
bi deye to haue zom hooly & vny  
myd. & wipoute reprof bfore  
hym. if nepeles zedivelle in pe  
fery. foundid & stable. & vnyuāble  
fro pe hope of pe gospel p' ze han  
herd. whiche is prechid in al crea  
tur. p' is vnder heuene. of whiche  
I pou am maad mynistr. & now  
I have ioye i passion for zom. & I  
fille po pigis p' faulen of pe pas  
sious of crist i my fleish. for his  
body p' is pe churche. of whiche I  
pou am maad mynistr. bi pe dis  
pensaciō of god p' is zom to me  
i zom. p' I fille pe word of god. pe  
prinypal p' was hid fro worldis  
& genaciōis. but now it is sche  
wid to his seyntis. to whiche  
god wolde make knowu pe ry  
chellis of pe glorie. of vis sacra  
met in heuene me. whiche is  
crist in zom. pe hope of glorie. wh  
we stherben. reprenge ech mā.  
& techge ech mā in al wysdom.  
p' we offere ech mā partyt i crist



in which pig also / trauele  
 i dreyng: bi pe wordyng of hy  
 he wordyng i me i vertu  
**B**ut i wole y ze wyl  
 te. What bishynelle i ha  
 ne for zoi. i for he y be  
 at laodice. i whiche enie saye  
 not my face in fleish. y her her  
 tis be conforid. i pe be tanyt  
 in charite. into alle pe richelth  
 of pe plente of vndirfoudig.  
 into pe knowyng of myfterie  
 of god pe fadr of ihu crist. in  
 whom alle pe tresouris of wyl  
 dom i of thence ben hid for pis  
 pis i seye. y no ma disseyne  
 m hize of wordis for pouz i  
 be absent in body. by spirit i  
 am wy zoi ioyge i seynge zoi  
 re ordie. i pe sadnele. of zoi  
 bilene y is in cit. y fore as ze ha  
 takn ihu cit oure lord. walke  
 ze in hy. i be ze rootid i byldid  
 aboue in hi. i cōfermyd in pe bi  
 leue as ze han lerud. abouidige  
 i hy in doynge of panfigis. Se  
 ze y no ma disseyne zoi. bi filo  
 sofye i veyn fallace. afen pe i  
 dition of me. afen pe elemētis  
 of pe world. i not afen cit for  
 in hi dwellyn bodilich al pe fulnel  
 of pe godheed. i ze ben fillid i hi.  
 y is heed of al principat i polber  
 i who also ze ben circūdid. in  
 circūchou not maad wy hond i  
 dispoylge of pe body of fleisch.  
 but i circūchou of crist. i ze be  
 buried to guidre wy hi in bapty.  
 in who also ze han rise age bi fep  
 of pe wordyng of god. y reside hi  
 fro deyr i whāne ze were deed  
 i gyltis i ye pūcie of zoi fleisch.  
 he qtemyte to guidre zoi wy hi

forpynge to zoi alle gyltis.  
 doynge anke y wryng of de  
 are. y was azen us. y was a  
 tre to us. i he took anke pat  
 fro pe myddel pīthige it on pe  
 croil. i he spōhite pūcipat i  
 pūberis. i ledde out etyly. ape  
 ly onercomye he in hi self. y  
 fore no ma hige zoi i mete or in  
 dzyne or in part of feeste day.  
 or of neomenye or of sabotis. whi  
 che ben shadowe of pigis to co  
 myge for pe body. is of cit. i  
 man disseyne zoi wyllyge to te  
 che i mekenelle i religion of  
 angls po pigis whiche he har not  
 seyn walkege veynly bolned  
 wy wit of his fleisch i not hol  
 dige pe heed. of whiche al pe body.  
 by bondis i ioyngis to guidre vū  
 dir ministrid i maad. wey ito  
 eutreslyng of god for if ze ben dee  
 de wy crist fro pe elemētis of pis  
 world. what zit as me lūyge to  
 pe world deme ze. y ze touche not  
 ney taste ney trete wy hondis  
 po pigis. whiche alle ben into deyr  
 bi pe ilke vll. afen pe comāde  
 mētis i pe techyngis of me whi  
 che han a relou of wylsom in  
 veyn religion i mekenelle. i  
 not to spare pe body. not i ony  
 honou to pe fulfyllig of pe fleisch.  
**V**erfore if ze han  
 rilu to guidre w cit. seke  
 ze po pigis y ben aboue. whi  
 re cit is lūyge in pe rit  
 half of god. sanore ze po pi  
 gis y ben aboue. not po pigis  
 y be on pe erpe for ze ben deede.  
 i zoi lūf is hid wy cit in god  
 for whāne cit i thal apper zoi  
 lūf. pane also ze i thulen appere

Wy hi in glorie y fore sle ze  
 zoi mebis whiche ben on pe er  
 pe. for mactiou vncleuelle. lec  
 cherie. yuel couetise. i auarice  
 whiche is sermyse of malmetis  
 for whiche pigis. ye wryppe of  
 god cam on pe lones of vūbile  
 ne in whiche also ze walke i  
 tyme. whiche ze lūyde in he. but  
 not pūtte ze anke alle pigis.  
 wryppe indignacion. malice.  
 blasfemye. i foul word of zoi  
 mouy nyle ze he to guidre spō  
 le ze zoi fro pe eelde mā wy his  
 dedis i clove ze pe nerue man.  
 y is maad nerue azen into pe  
 knowyng of god. afen pe yma  
 ge of hy y made hi wher is  
 not male i female. hepeue mā  
 i jew. circūchou i pūcie. bar  
 barus i lita. boude mā i fre  
 mā. but alle pigis i m alle pi  
 gis cit. y fore ze as pe chōlene  
 of god. hooly i loued clove zoi  
 wy pe entrails of mercy. be  
 mygryte i mekenelle. tēpan  
 ce patience i supporte ze echo  
 opr. i forpynge to zoi self. if  
 ony mā azen ony har a quere  
 le as pe lord forzaf to zoi. so al  
 lo ze i upon alle pigis y es ha  
 ne ze charite. y is pe bond of p  
 fecion i pe pees of cit. i roye  
 in zoi hertis i whiche ze be de  
 pid in oo body. i be ze kynde pe  
 word of cit dwelle in zoi plente  
 uously in al wylsom. i techē  
 moneste zoi self in salmes i  
 ympnes i spūritual songis in  
 grace. lūyng in zoi hertis  
 to pe lord al pig. what en yng  
 what en yng ze doen i word or  
 i de. alle pigis in pe name of

our lord ihu cit. doynge pūfigi  
 to god i to pe fadr bi hi. y  
 me be lūget to zoi hōlebondis.  
 as it bihouey in pe lord me lo  
 ne ze zoi wrynes. i nyle ze be  
 butre to hem bones. obepe ze  
 to zoi fadr i mudr by alle  
 pigis for pis is wel plehyge in  
 pe lord fadris. nyle ze terre zo  
 lones to indignacion. y pe be  
 not maad feble hertid. seruau  
 tis. obepe ze by alle pigis to fleis  
 chly lordis. not sermyge at yze.  
 as plehyng to me. but in sp  
 plenelle of herte. dzedige pe  
 lord. what en ze doen. worche  
 ze of wille. as to pe lord. i not  
 to me wryng. y of pe lord ze  
 i thule take zeldig of eritage  
 serue ze to pe lord cit. for he pat  
 doyn nurie. what resseyn pat  
 y he dide yuele i a ception of  
 ploones. is not auentis god.  
**O**rdis zyne. i m.  
 ze to seruauitis. y pat  
 is mst i euene wryng.  
 y also ze han alord in heuene. be  
 ze bily in preier. i wake in it.  
 in doynge of panfigis i paeie  
 ech for opr i for us. y god app  
 ne to us pe dore of word. to lpe  
 ke pe myllye of cit for whiche  
 allo i am bondu. y i thēwe it.  
 so as it bihouey me to lpe ke  
 walke ze in wylsom to he pat  
 ben wyoute for. azen byge  
 tyme. zoi word be sanore i  
 salt enermore in grace. y ze  
 wite. how it bihouey zoi to an  
 cof. lūer to ech man. i tūcus  
 moost dere brof i fepful my  
 mstre i my felouke i pe lord.  
 what make alle pigis knowu



**¶ The firste pistle to tessalonicis**

to 3on þ ben aboute me / whom I  
sente to 3on to pis same pis: þ  
he knowe what rigis ben abou  
te 3on. & comforte 3on hertis  
wip one tyme moost dere & fery  
ful broþer. which is of 3on / whi  
che shulde make alle rigis þ be  
don here: knowe to 3on. & shul  
tark psoner wip me. greetip  
3on wel / & mark þe colun of Bar  
nabas: of who ze han take man  
dmetis / if he come to 3on: rel  
seue ze hy / and ihs þ is leid mit  
whiche ben of circucision þe al  
cone ben my helperis in þe kyg  
dom of god: þ were to me in solace  
& pateras þ is of 3on þe seruait  
of ihs cñt. greetip 3on wel / eue  
bily for 3on i pieris: þ ze stonde  
par fyt & ful in al þe wille of god  
and I bere witnessig to hy: þ he  
hay moche trauel for 3on / and for  
he þ ben at laodice: & þ ben at  
jerapolyth / þe þe leche moost  
dere & demas: greetip 3on wel  
Greete ze wel þe brufen: þ ben  
at laodice: & þe woman nymfau:  
& þe churche þat is in hir hous  
& whane pis pistle is rad amog  
3on: do ze þ it be rad i þe churche  
of laodicensis: & rede ze þat pist  
le þ is of laodicensis: & sepe ze to  
archippus / Se þe mynistris þat  
þ hast takn in þe lord: þ þ fille it  
my saluacion: bi þe hond of  
poul / be ze mydful of my bondis  
þe grace of þe lord ihs be w 3on  
amē. **¶ Here endip þe pistle to  
colocensis: & bigyne þe plog o  
þe firste pistle to tessalomicis**

**¶ Tessalomicis ben / lis**  
macedones: in ihs cñt / whi  
ane þe hadde resseyned þe word

of tremp: þe stood in defacty  
in þe fery: & also i pferuacion of  
her owne cite seyns / þe fmo  
ze þe resseyned not falle a  
posthis: ne þe rigis þ weren  
leid of falle aposthis / þe sepe  
pottle preisy: wrighte to hem  
from athenis bi titicus & onesy  
mus. **¶ Jerom in his prolog on  
his pistle seip pis: C. p. 11**  
**¶** Oul & siluan & thymo  
the: to þe churche of tes  
salomicis: in god þe  
fader & in þe lord ihs  
crist: grace & pees to 3on / we do  
paukigis to god eimore for al  
le 3on: & we make mynde of 3on  
in our preieris wipoute ceasing  
hauinge myde of þe werk of 3o  
ure fery & trauel & charite & a  
bpydig of þe hope of our lord ihs  
crist bifore god & our fader: ze  
louyd bruper of god: we wri  
ge 3on re che syng / for our gospel  
was not at 3on i word oonly: but  
also in wri & in þe hooly goost &  
in moche plente: as ze witen  
whiche we were amog 3on for  
3on: & ze ben maad folowbers of  
us & of þe lord: resseynge þe  
word i moche tribulacion wip  
ioye of þe hooly goost / so þat ze  
ben maad ensauple to alle men  
þ bileue: i macedonie & in acaye  
for of 3on þe word of þe lord is  
pupplithid: not oonly i macedo  
nye & acaye / but 3on fery þat  
is to god: in ech place is gon for  
so þat it is not nede to us for to  
speke ony þing: for þe shewe  
of 3on: what maner entre we  
hadde to 3on: & how ze be comitid  
to god fro malmetis: to serue

**¶ to tessalomicis**

to þe luyge god & very: & to  
abryde his sone fro heuenes.  
Whom he resside fro deap: þe  
lord ihs þ deliyede us fro weap  
re to conynge. **¶ C. 1. 11**  
**¶** Bruper ze wite our  
entre to 3on: for it was  
not weyn / but first we  
suffrede & were poustid wip  
wryngis as ze wite in filippis: &  
hadden trist in our lord: to speke  
to 3on þe gospel of god in moche  
bilynelle / for our exortacion: is  
not of errour: ney of vndeuel  
se: ney in gyle / but as we ben pre  
id of god: þe þe gospel of god  
shulde be takn to us: so we spe  
ken / not as pleste to me: but  
to god þ preuey our hertis: for  
ney we were ony tyme i word  
of glosyng: as ze wite / ney in  
oacion of auarice: god is wit  
nesse / ney þe sekyge gloze of me:  
ney of 3on ney of opur / whiche  
we as cristis aposthis myzten  
hane be in charge to 3on / but we  
were maad lytle in þe myddel of  
3on as if a murle fottre hir lo  
nes / so we desirige 3on wip gre  
et loue: wolde hane brake to 3on  
not oonly þe gospel of god / but  
also our lynes: for ze ben maad  
moost dere wope to us / for  
brufen ze be mynde ful of our  
trauel & weynesse / we worchid  
de myt & day: þ we shulde not  
greue ony of 3on & prechide to  
3on þe euangelie of god / god & ze  
ben witnessis: how hooly & inst  
ly: & wipoute playnt we were  
to 3on þat bileued: as ze witen  
how we preied 3on & confortide  
ech of 3on as þe fader his sones:

& we han witnessid / þe shulde  
go woryp to god: þat depite 3on  
into his kygdom & gloze / þ fore  
we don paukigis to god: wipou  
te ceasing / for whane ze hadden  
take of us þe word of þe heerig  
of god: ze tooken it not as þe word  
of men / but as it is wily þe word  
of god: þ worchip i 3on þ han bi  
leued / for brufen ze ben maad fo  
lowers of þe churthis of god þ be  
in iudee i crist ihs / for ze han suf  
frid þe same rigis of 3on: enene  
lynagis: as þe of þe ielwis / whi  
che slouen boye þe lord ihs & þe  
pfetis: & þurshbede us / & þe  
plesen not to god: & þe ben adu  
saries to alle me / forbedge us  
to speke to hevene me: þ þe be  
maad sark / þ þe fille her lynes  
eimore for þe wryppe of god cñ  
on he: into þe ende / & bruper we  
desolat fro 3on for a tyme by mo  
ny: & in biholding: but not in her  
te: han lized more plenteuou  
ly to se 3on: face wip greet desir  
for we wolde come to 3on / þe I  
poul oonlys & efelooone: but sa  
thanas lettide us for whi what  
is our hope: or ioye or coroune  
of gloze: wher ze ben not bifore  
our lord ihs cñt: in his conynge:  
for ze ben our gloze & ioye. **¶ C. 1. 11**  
**¶** Which pig we suffrede  
no lengere: & it pleste  
to us to diuella aloone at  
ztemp: and we sente tymothe  
our broþer: & mynistris of god in  
þe euangelie of cñt: to 3on to be  
cofermyd: & to be taryt for 3on  
fery: þ no ma be moued in þe se  
tribulacions / for ze silt wite: þ  
in pis pig we ben sette / for whiche



we were at you. We before seiden  
to you þat we shuld suffre tri-  
bulaciounis as it is don. & ze w-  
ten þat fore I poul no legere a  
bidige. sente to knowe youre  
seyf lest. þat we shuld be  
tepte you. & your tranel be-  
maad veyn but now we shuld be  
mothe shal come to us fro  
te & ze han good mynde of  
us. ever desirige to se us. as  
we also you þat fore brypen we be  
confortid in you i al our ned  
tribulacioun. bizon. fery for  
now we lyne. if ze stonde in pe  
lord for what doyng of pan-  
gis moyn we zelde to god for  
you. in al ioye. i which we ioye  
for you. bizon our lord. nyzt  
i day more plenteuouly prei-  
ge. þat we se your face. & ful-  
le po pigis þat faplen to you fery  
but god hi self & our fadur & pe  
lord ihu crist. dresse our weye to  
you & pe lord multiplye you. &  
make your charite to be plen-  
teuous of ech to ovr & into alle  
me. as also we in you þat your  
hertis ben confertid. wypon  
te pleynt in hoolynesse bizon  
god & our fadur. i pe comyng of  
our lord ihu crist. wy alle hile.  
leynthis amē. **C. m.**  
**V**efore brypen fro he-  
ne forþard we pien you.  
i bisechen i pe lord ihu. þat  
as ze han resseyned of us.  
how it bihoney you to go & to  
plese god. so walke ze þat ze a  
bonde pe more for ze wite wht  
comandementis I haue zom  
to you. by pe lord ihu. for pis

is pe wille of god. zomre  
hoolynesse. þat ze absteyne you  
fro fornicacioun. & ech of you  
kune welde his vessel. in hoo-  
lynelle & hono. uot i passiou  
of lust. as hepen me þat we  
not god. & þat no mā on go. uot  
dilleynie his broþer in chastite  
for pe lord is venger of alle þe  
pigris. as we before seide to you.  
I han witneslid for god clepe  
not us to vncleynesse. but to  
hoolynesse. þat fore he þat dilleynie  
pes pigris. dilleynie not mā. but  
god & also zaf his hooly spirit  
i us. **C. m.** But of pe charite of ben  
þeheed. we hadde no nede to wri-  
te to you. ze self han leyd of god.  
þat ze loue to gidre. for ze doe pat-  
into alle brypen i al macedonie  
I brypen we preyen you. þat ze a  
bonde more. & take kepe. þat ze  
be quyet. & þat ze do your ned. i  
ze worche wyf zomre hondis. as  
we han comandid to you. & þat  
ze wandre honestly to he þat  
ben wypones for. & þat of no mā  
nes ze desir our pig. for brypen  
we wolen not þat ze vnkunne.  
of me þat dopen. þat ze ben not lo-  
ful as oþe þat han not hope. for  
if we bilyuen þat ihu was deed  
i roos azen. so god shal lede  
wyf hi. hem þat ben deede bi ihu  
I we seien pis pig. to you. i pe  
word of pe lord. þat we pat lyuen  
þat ben lest in pe comyng of pe lord  
shuld not come bizon hem þat  
ben deede. for pe lord hi self shal  
come down fro heuene. i pe  
comandement & in pe vois of  
an archangel. & in pe tripe of  
god. & pe deede me þat ben i crist.

shuld ryle men first. afterward  
we þat lyuen þat ben lest. shuld  
be rany shid to gidre wyf hem  
in clowdis. meetige eit into pe  
eyr. & so eimore we shuld be  
wyf pe lord. þat fore be ze toufor-  
tid to gidre. i pes wordis. **C. m.**  
**B**es brypen of ty. **C. m.**  
mes & monētis. ze nede  
not þat I wite to you for  
ze self witen diligently. þat pe  
day of pe lord shal come as a  
peef in pe nyzt. for whāne pe  
shuld sepe pees is & eiknel  
se. pāne liden deap shal come  
on hem as sorwe to a wōman  
vis wyf child. & pei shuld not  
stape. but brypen ze ben not i  
derkeness. þat ze ilke day as a  
peef caache you. for alle ze ben  
pe lones of lyt. & lones of day  
we be. not of nyzt. uot of derk-  
ness. þat fore slepe we not as  
oþe. but wake we & be we so  
bze. for pei pat slepen. slepe  
in pe nyzt. & pei þat ben drū. i.  
ben drū. i. in pe nyzt. but we  
þat ben of pe day. ben sobze. do  
pid in pe habyrion of fery &  
of charite. & in pe helm of ho-  
pe of helpe. for god putte not  
us into wrappe. but to pe þat  
challig of heche by our lord  
ihu crist. þat was deed for us. pat  
whet we waken. whet we sle-  
pen. we lyne to gidre wyf hyf  
for which pig confortte ze to gi-  
dre. & edefie ze ech ovr. as ze  
don. & brypen we preien you.  
þat ze knowe hem þat tranelē  
amōg you. & ben loueyns to  
you in pe lord. & techen you. þat  
ze haue hem abondantly i cha-

rite. & for pe werk of hem. ha-  
ue ze pees wyf he & brypen we  
preyen you. reprene ze wyf pe  
lyble me. confortte ze me of lytle  
herte. resseynie ze syke me. be  
ze pacient to alle me. & ze pat  
no mā zelde puel for puel to ovr  
mā. but eimore smke ze þat ze is  
good ech to ovr & to alle me. en-  
more ioye ze. wyponce ceel-  
preie ze. in alle pigris do ze pan-  
pigris. for pis is pe wille of god  
in crist ihu. in alle you. nyle ze  
quenchie pe spirit. nyle ze dis-  
pile ptecies. but prene ze alle  
pigris. & holde ze pat pig. þat is  
good. absteyne you fro al puel  
spice. & god hi self of pees ma-  
ke you hool bi alle pigris. pat  
your spirit be kept hool. & sou-  
le & body wyponce playut i pe  
comyng of our lord ihu crist. god  
is trewe þat clepe you. which  
also shal do brypen. preie ze for  
us. grette ze wel alle bryper  
in hooly coll. i comre you bi pe  
lord. þat pis pistle be rad to alle  
hooly brypen. pe gte of of our  
lord ihu crist. be wyf you amē.  
**Her endy pe furste pistle to  
thessaloniceis. & bigynnyng pe  
log on pe secunde pistle to thes-  
saloniceis. m. m.**  
**T**he possle wryt pe secū-  
ce pistle to thessaloniceis. &  
maky knowu to hem of pe las-  
te tymes. & of pe comyng of  
pe adūsarie. & of pe prowyn-  
don of hym. he wryt pis epist-  
le fro athenys. bi titicus pe de-  
bene & onesym. pe acolyt.  
**Ierom in his prolog on pis  
pistle seip pis. C. m. p. m. =**



**D**ul & saluan & tyme  
the to ye church of tes  
saloniceis i god our  
fadir. & in ye lord ihu  
crist grace to you & pees of god  
our fadir. & of ye lord ihu crist  
we owen to do pawkis enmo  
re to god for you bryere. so as  
it is worpi for our fery on wer  
p. & ye charite of ech of you to  
ope aboundy so p we salk glori  
en in you i ye church of god.  
for your patience & fery. i alle you  
re psecucious & tribulacions  
whiche ze susteynen ito ye en  
sauple of ye mist dom of god. p  
ze be had worpi in ye kyngdom  
of god. for whiche ze susteyne if  
nepeles it is mist to fore god.  
to quyte tribulacion to hem pat  
troublen you. & to you p ben trou  
bled. sette us in ye the big  
of ye lord ihu fro heuene wy  
angelis of his oertu. in ye fla  
me of fier. p thal zyne ven  
iance to he p knowe not god.  
p obeyen not to ye euange  
lie of our lord ihu crist. whiche  
thulde susteyne enlastige peynes.  
i perillthig fro ye face of ye lo  
rd. & fro ye glorie of his fery.  
whane he thal come to be glo  
rified in his fery. & to be man  
dounful in alle me p bylene  
den for our witneslig is bile  
nyd on you. in pat day i whiche  
pis also we pzepe enmoze for  
you. p oure god make you wor  
pi to his clepig. & fille al ye wil  
of his goodnesse. & ye werk of  
fery i oertu. p ye name of oure  
lord ihu crist. be claresied i you  
ze in hi. bi ye gre of our lord

**B**lessid & tyme  
St bryere we pzepe  
you bi ye comys of ou  
re lord ihu crist. & of oure cōgre  
gacion into ye same comys.  
p ze be not mouyd soone fro you  
re wit. ney be ascerd. ney by  
spirit. ney by word. ney by  
epistle as sent by us. as if ye  
day of ye lord be ny. no man  
dullepne you i any maner. for  
but dissencion come first. & ye  
mā of lyne be thewid ye soue  
of p dicion. p is aduer sarie &  
is enhauid ouer al pis. p is  
leid god. or pat is worlthipid so  
p he sitte in ye temple of god. &  
sthepe hi salk. as if he were god.  
wher ze holde not. p it whane  
p was at you. p leide res pigns  
to you. & now what wypholdy.  
ze wne. p he be thewid in his  
tyme. for ye pmyte of wickid  
nesse worchyn now. onely pat  
he p holdy now. holde til he be  
don away. & pāne we lke the  
fid mā thal be thewid. who  
ye lord ihu thal ele wy p spi  
rit of his mowp. & thal distre  
wy lzt myg of his comys. hi  
whos comys is bi ye worchys  
of sathanas. i al vtu & signes.  
p grete wondris falsse & mal  
dyllet of wickidnesse. to hem  
p perillthen. for p per resseue  
den not ye charite of trewe.  
p per thulde be mand lre. & p  
for god thal sente to he. a wor  
chys of errour. p per bileue  
to lesing. p alle be demyd. whi  
che bileuede not to trewe but  
cōsentide to wickidnesse. but  
bryen loued of god. we owen

to do pawkis enmoze to god  
for you. p god chees us ye firste  
fryntis into heelpre i halewys  
of spirit & in fery of trewe  
in whiche also he depide you by  
oure gospel. into getig of ye  
glorie of our lord ihu crist. p for  
bryen stonde ze & holde ze ye tra  
dicionis p ze han lernd. ep by  
word. ep by our epistle. & oure  
lord ihu crist hi lre. & god oure  
fadir. whiche lonede us & zaf en  
lastige cōfort & good hope & g  
ce. for your hertis & cōterme  
i al good werk & word. *C. m.*

**B**ryen fro hemis forwarde  
pzepe for us. p ye word  
of god rene & be clarifi  
ed. as it is anentis you. & p we  
be deliyed. fro noyous & yuele  
me. for fery is not of alle me.  
but ye lord is trewe p thal  
cōterme you. & thal fepe fro  
ynel. & bryen we triden of you  
in ye lord. for what en pigns we  
comande to you hope ze don &  
thulen do. & ye lord dresse you  
re hertis i ye charite of god.  
p in ye patience of crist. but  
bryen we denoucen to you i  
ye name of our lord ihu crist.  
p ze wypholde you fro ech bro  
pyr. p wandry out of ordre  
& not after ye techys. p per res  
seuede of us. for ze salk watē.  
how it bihouey to lube us.  
for we were not vnpehible a  
mog you. ney by wone our ow  
ne tranel. we ecte breed of ony  
mā but i tranel & werynelle  
worchid nyxt & day. pat we  
grenede noon of you not as we  
hadden not power. but p we

thulden zyne us hlt ensauple  
to you to snwe us for also wha  
ne we were amog you. we de  
noucede pis pis to you. p if ony  
mā wole not worche. ney ete  
he. for we han herd p sime a  
mog you goe in reite. & no pis  
worchen but doe curiously. but  
we denoucen to he p ben luche  
me. & blesche in ye lord ihu crist.  
p per worche wy hltē. & ete her  
owne breed. *C. m.* But nyle ze bry  
perē faple. wel doynge. pat if  
ony mā obeyer not to our word  
by epistle. marke ze hi. & comyne  
ze not wy p. p he be thanned.  
p nyle ze geile hi as an enemye.  
but reproue ze hi as a broy. & god  
hi hlt of pees. zyne to you en  
lastige pees i al place. ye lord be  
wy alle you. my saluacion. by  
ye hond of poull. whiche signe i  
ech epistle. i wyte pus. ye g  
ce of our lord ihu crist. be wy  
alle you. amē. *Ver endy ye*  
*secunde pistle to tessaloniceis.*  
*& bigynep a plog on ye firste*

**P**istle to tymothe  
enfourmey & techy tym  
othe of ye ordynance of bisho  
pis office. & of debenes office.  
& enych distuplyne of hooly chr  
che. writige to hi fro macedonie  
by titicus ye dekene. *Jerō i his*  
*plog on pis pistle. fery pis. C. m.*

**D**ul apostle of crist  
ihū. bi ye comande  
met of god our sany  
our. & of ihū crist our  
hope. to tymothe biloued sone  
in ye fery. gre & mercy & pees.  
of god ye fadir & of ihū crist our  
lord. as p pzepe p p thul



dist diuine at effect. whane I  
wente into macedonie. y<sup>e</sup> pou  
shuldest denouce to su me y<sup>e</sup>  
pei shuldest not teche of wylle  
ney y<sup>e</sup>ue tent to fablis. & gene  
logies y<sup>e</sup> ben vncertey. whiche  
zyuen questionis more pa edi  
ficacion of god y<sup>e</sup> is in pe fery  
for pe ende of comaundment of  
charite of clene herte & good  
conscience. & of fery not feyned  
fro whiche yigis hi me han er  
rid & ben turned ito weyn spe  
che. & willen to be techeris of  
pe laue. & vnderstonde not  
rehat yigis pei speken. ney  
of what yigis pei affermen.  
& we witen y<sup>e</sup> pe laue is good.  
if ony man se it lauefully &  
writunge yis yig. y<sup>e</sup> pe laue is  
not lett to a nist ma. but to vn  
nist me & not ligit. to wickid  
me & to syneris. to curtid men  
& desoulid. to sleeris of fadir &  
sleeris of modir. to me sleeris  
& lechouris. to hem y<sup>e</sup> doe leache  
rie wip me. lesyngmogeris. &  
forlyorne. & if ony opir ying  
is cotrarie to pe holli teching.  
y<sup>e</sup> is astir pe euagelie of pe glo  
rie of blelid god. whiche is bita  
kun to me. I do pankigis to hym  
y<sup>e</sup> confortide me in crist ihu ou  
re lord. for he geskide me fery  
ful & putte me in my mistery.  
first was a blasfeme & a plu  
ere & ful of wrongis. but I ha  
ue getti pe mercy of god. for  
I vnkuninge dide i vnbiene  
but pe grace of our lord. ou  
aboundide wip fery & loue y<sup>e</sup> is  
i crist ihu. a trewe word & wozp  
al redelyng. for crist ihu cam i

to yis world. to make syful me  
salf. of whiche I am y<sup>e</sup> firste  
but y<sup>e</sup>fore I haue getti mercy.  
y<sup>e</sup> crist ihu shulde thewe i me  
first. al pacience to pe enfor  
myng of he y<sup>e</sup> shulde bileue to hi  
into euiladige lyf. & to pe king  
ito worldis of worldis. amē  
bitake yis comaundment to pee  
pou lone tymothe astir pe p  
fecies y<sup>e</sup> han be her tofore in  
pee. y<sup>e</sup> pou trauele in he a god  
trauel. hauryge fery & good co  
lour. whiche su men casten ansey.  
& pulstide aboute pe fery of  
whiche is ymene & alilandie.  
whiche I brook to sathanas.  
pei lerne to not blasfeme.

**V**erfore I biledhe first  
of alle yigis y<sup>e</sup> biledigis.  
preieris. ar. yigis. doynigis  
of pankigis be maid for alle  
me. for kingis. & alle y<sup>e</sup> ben  
set in hyrnesse. y<sup>e</sup> we leden a  
myet & a pesible lyf in al pi  
te & chastite. for yis yig is go  
od & acceptid bi fore god oure  
sanyoun. y<sup>e</sup> wole y<sup>e</sup> alle men  
be maid salf. & y<sup>e</sup> pei come to  
pe knowig of treupe. for o  
god & a mediatr is of god & of  
me. amē crist ihu. y<sup>e</sup> crist ihu  
redepcion for alle me. whos  
witnessing is confermyd in  
his tymes. in which I am sett  
a pchour. & an apostle. for I  
sepe treupe. & I lyze not. par  
am atechere of hepen me in  
fery & in treupe. y<sup>e</sup>fore I wole  
y<sup>e</sup> men preye in al place. list  
ge vp. clene hondis wipoute  
wraype & stryf. also wipmen  
i couenable abite. wip thame

fastnele & sobrenelle arayinge he  
salf. not in wryp heeris eyr i  
gold. eyr peeris. eyr precous  
clou. but pat y<sup>e</sup> bicomer wryne.  
blycetige pitee. by good werthe.  
thowman lerne in silence wip  
al subiectiou. but I suffre not  
anwōman to teche. ney to hane  
lordshyp on pe hōsebonde. but  
to be in silence. for adam was  
first fourmed. astirward eue.  
& adam was not disleyned. but  
pe wōman was not disleyned i  
bretig of pe laue. but shal be  
sauded bi genacion of children.  
if she dwelle pfythly in fery &  
loue & hoolpnele wip sobrenelle

**A**stirful word. **C. m.**  
if ony mā desirp abillhop  
ryche. he desirp a good  
werk. y<sup>e</sup>fore it bihouey a bish  
op to be wipoute repret. pe ho  
sebonde of o wryf. sobre. pridet.  
chast. vtiuous. holdige hōspita  
lite. a techer. not zōu moche  
to wryp. not almyte but tepat.  
not ful of chidig. not couento.  
wel rewlige his hōus. & hane  
sones ligit wip al chastite.  
for if ony mā kan not goime  
his hōus. how shal he hane di  
ligēce of pe churche of god. not  
neue couertid to pe fery. lest  
he be born vp into pride. & fal  
le into dom of pe denel. for it  
bihouey hy to hane also good  
witnessing. of hem y<sup>e</sup> ben wryon  
teforp. y<sup>e</sup> he falle not ito repret.  
& into pe snar of pe denel. **Al**  
so it bihouey dekenes to be ch  
ast. not double tigid. not zōu  
moche to wryp. not luyng so  
ul wrynyng. y<sup>e</sup> han pe myte

of fery in clene consciēce. but be  
pei preynd first. & mymistren  
so. hauryge no cryme. also it bi  
houey wrymen to be chast. not  
barbyrige sobre. feryful in alle  
yigis. dekenes be hōsebondis of  
o wryf. whiche gouerne wel her  
sones & her hōules. for pei pat  
mymistre wel. shulde gete a  
good degre to he salf. & moche  
triste in pe fery y<sup>e</sup> is in crist ihu.  
Sone tymothe. I wryte to pee  
res yigis. hopige y<sup>e</sup> I shal co  
me soone to pee. but if I tarie.  
y<sup>e</sup> pou wite how it bihouey pee  
to hne i pe hōus of god. y<sup>e</sup> is pe  
churche of huryge god. a piler  
& sadnesse of treupe. & opynly  
it is a greet sacramēt of pitee.  
pat ying y<sup>e</sup> was thewid i flesh.  
it is iustified in spirt. it appe  
ride to angelis. it is prechid  
to hepe me. it is bileued i pe wo  
ld. it is takū vp in glorie. **C. m.**

**B**ut pe spirt lery openly.  
pat in pe laste tymes. hi  
me shulen departe fro  
pe fery. zōnyge tent to spirti  
of errour. & to techigis of deue  
lis. y<sup>e</sup> speken lesyng i pocri  
lie. & hane her conscience corrupt.  
forbedige to be weddid. to abtan  
ne fro metis whiche god made.  
to take wip doynig of pankigis  
to feryful me & hem y<sup>e</sup> han kno  
we pe treupe. for ech creatur  
of god is good. & no yig is to  
be cast away. whiche is takū i  
doynig of pankigis. for it is ha  
lewid bi pe word of god & bi prei  
er. pou puttige forp res yigis  
to brypen. shakbe a good myml  
tre of crist ihu. noridid wip wo



dis of fey & of good doctryne. wh  
ch pou hast gete / but eltheise p  
vncouenable fablis & elde wim  
mes fablis: haite poul to pi  
tee / for bodily exercitaciou. is  
pfitable to lyl pig: but ptee  
is pfitable to alle pigs: p hay  
a biheete of lyf & now is & p  
is to come. **T**rewe word.  
& worp al acceptaciou & in pis  
pig we travele. & ben cur lid.  
for we hopen i hygge god p is  
sampion of alle men. moost of  
sepyful me / comande p vis pig  
& tech / no ma dispile p zongre.  
but be pou ensauple of sepyful  
me i word. i hygg. i charite. m  
sepy i chastite. til i come take  
tent to redige. to exortaciou  
& techig. nyle p luel charge pe  
grace which is in pee. p is so  
uu to pee bi pfectie wip puttig  
on of hondis of presthod penke  
pon pes pigs. i pe se be pon: pat  
pi pfitig be thewid to alle me  
take tent to doctryn: be blyp i  
he / for pou doyng pes pigs.  
shalt make bope p silt. & he  
p heere pee / blame pou not an  
eldere man: but bylech as a fad  
zonge me as bryen. elde wip  
men. as modis / zonge wip me.  
as hys i al chastite. **C. v. //**  
**H**onour pou widows: p  
ben vzi widows: but if  
ony widowe hay childe  
of lones: lerne the first to go  
ine hir hous. & quite to fadir  
& modir: for vis pig is acceptid  
bifore god: & the p is a widowe &  
zily & desolat: hope in god. & be  
blyp in bylechigis & preieris  
nyzt & day: for she pat is lyny

ge i delices: is deed & comande  
pou vis pig: p rei ben wiponte  
reprez / for it ony ma hay not  
cure of his owne. & moost of  
his houshold me: he hay denyd  
pe fey. & is worse pa an vnsepy  
ful ma: & widowe be choli not  
lesse pau fyrty zeer. p was wip  
of oon holebonte. & hay witnes  
sig in good werke: if she nozif  
childe childe. if she rellepyne  
pore me to herboze. if she hay  
wailthi pe feet of holi me: if  
she mynstride to me p suffre  
den tribilaciou. if she solewile  
al good werk: but eltheise pou  
zonge widows: for whame pei  
han don lecherie: & wolen be  
weddid in ca: hange dapna  
ciou: for rei han maid voyde pe  
fiste fey: also rei ydel lerne  
to go aboute housis. not oonly  
ydel but ful of wordis & curion  
le: spekege pigs p bihouey not  
pfore i wole p zonger widows  
be weddid. & brynge forp childe.  
& ben holewines: to zyne noo  
ocasiou to pe adulsarie: bi can  
se of curid pig: for now linge  
ben turned abat after lathans  
is ony sepyful ma hay widows:  
mynstre he to he / p re churche  
be not greuyd. p it suffice to  
hem p ben verrey widows: pe  
prestis p ben wel goynouris:  
ben pey had worp to double  
honour moost rei p travele  
in word & techig: for lature sepy  
p shak not bryde pe mony of  
pe oze vzeuchige. & alwer  
ma is worp hys hyze: nyle  
pou rellepyne acutis agen a  
preest: but vnder trepyne

or pte witnesis: but repreue  
pou me pat hyne bifore alle  
me: p also ower hangede: i pte  
bifore god & ihu crist & his choli  
angels: p on kepe pes pigs  
wiponte pndice. & do no pig  
i bolyngge into pe ovr tyde: put  
te pou hondis to no ma. neyr  
anoon comyne p wip ovr me  
mys lynes: kepe p silt chast  
nyle pou zit dzyne watur: but  
vte altyl wip for p stomak.  
& for p m ofte fallig: i fymite  
es: su mens lynes ben opyn  
bifore goyng to doom: but of  
su men pei come after: & also  
goode dedis ben opyn: & po pat  
han he in opy manner mollen  
not be lid. **C. vi. //**  
**W**at eu seruantis be in  
dwzok: deme rei her loz  
dis worp al honour. lest pe na  
me of pe lord & pe doctryn be  
blasfemyd: & rei p han sepyful  
lordis: dispile hem not for rei  
ben bryen: but more serue  
rei: for rei ben sepyful & loned.  
whiche ben parteneris of be  
nefice: tech pou pes yngis.  
& mouette pou pes pigs: if ony  
ma techy opy wyle. & accordy  
not to pe holli wordis of oure  
lord ihu crist. & to pat techig p is  
by ptee: he is prond & can no  
pig: but langwylthly aboute  
questiounis & stryngs of wordis.  
of pe whiche ben brynt forp  
eyes. strynges. blasfemyes. y  
nyle suspicioun. fytigis of me  
p ben corrupt in soule: & p be  
pryued fro treupe: p demen  
wipyns to be ptee: but a greet  
wipyns is ptee: wip sufficie

ce: for we brynten in no pig ito  
pis world. & no doute: p we moun  
not bere alye ony pig: but we  
hange fadis & wip what pigs  
we shulen be hild: be we pained  
wip pes pigs: for rei p wolen  
be maid ryche: fallen into tep  
taciou. & into snare of pe deuel  
& into manye vnpfitable de liris  
& noyous: whiche drenchen men  
into depy & per ditiou: for pe roo  
te of alle ynels: is conentile: w  
hich su me conentige: erride fro  
pe fey. & biletiden he wip many  
lozys: but pou ma of god flee  
pes pigs: but liabe p ryzt wip  
nelle pte sepy charite paciete  
myldenes: Strye p a good stryff  
of sepy cache enlastige lyf. into  
which p art clepid: & hast know  
lethid a good knowlethig bifore  
many witnesis: i comande to  
pee bifore god. p quikeney alle  
pigs. & bifore crist ihu: p zeldide  
al witnesis: vnder pilat of pou  
ce: a good confessioun: p pou ke  
pe pe comandemet wiponte  
wem wiponte reprez. into pe  
comyg of oure lord ihu crist: who  
pe blethid & aloone myzty king  
of kyngis. & lord of lordis shal  
theise in his tymes: whiche al  
oone hay vndeedy nelle: & dyl  
ly in lye to whiche no ma may  
come: who no ma sayz: ney may  
se: to who glorie & honour & em  
pire be wiponte ende amen.  
Comande pou to pe riche me of  
pis world p rei vnder stonde  
not hily. ney p rei hope in vn  
cetynte of richellis: but in pe  
hygge god p zyne to us alle  
pigs plenteounly to dole to do







de pouertis. blynde loneris of hū-  
tis. moze pan of god. hawaye  
ye hēnesse of pite. but demy  
yuge ye vertu of it. & esthele  
pon pes mē of yele pei ben y<sup>t</sup>  
peerlen houls. & leden wyme  
caytifs chargid wip synes.  
Whiche ben led wip dyuerse de-  
lyris. eimozē lernyge. & neie  
parfytly comyge to pe stiente  
of treupe. & as iannes & mā-  
bres azenstode moyses. so pes  
azenstoden treupe. mē corrupt  
in vnderstondig repeneued a  
boute ye fery. but ferper. pei  
shule not pite. for ye vnwyf-  
dom of hem shal be knowū to  
alle mē. as hern was. but pou  
hast getū my techig. ordynati-  
ce spolis. fery long abydyg. to  
ue patience. perlecucioūs. pas-  
sioūs. whiche werē maid to me  
at antioche. at pcomy. at hitris.  
What maner perlecucioūs y  
suffride. & ye lord hay deliyed  
me of alle. & alle mē y<sup>t</sup> wolen ly-  
ue feryfully i cēt ihū. shulen  
suffre psecucioū. but yuele  
mē & disseyueris. shule encre-  
se into wofle. errige & sendige  
into errour. but dwelle y<sup>t</sup> in  
pes pigis y<sup>t</sup> pou hast lerd. &  
pat ben brakū to pee. wryge  
of whom pou hast lerd. for y<sup>t</sup>  
hast knowū hooly letteris fro y<sup>i</sup>  
zoupe. whiche mow lerne y<sup>t</sup>  
to heelye bi fery y<sup>t</sup> is in cēt ihū.  
for al scripture mlynd of god.  
is profitable to techē. to repen-  
ne. to chastise. to lerne i ryght  
ynesse. pat ye man of god be  
parfyt. lerd to al good wo-  
werk. // = = = **Ch. iij.** // = = =

**I**btu nelle bifore god ȝe ch  
 ihu. p̄ ſhal deme ye quene  
 ȝe ceede. ȝe by ye coming  
 of hi. ȝe kyngdom of hi. p̄eche  
 ye word. be pou biſp̄ conuenabli  
 wypointe reſte / reprene p̄. biſe  
 che pou. blame pou i al pacien  
 ce ȝe doctryn / for tyme ſhal be  
 whāne me ſhulen not ſuffre  
 ſchooli techiḡ. but <sup>at</sup> her delluris  
 per ſhulen gadre to gidre to hē  
 ſilf maſtris ȝichige to ye ee  
 ris ȝe treuhy per ſhulē turue  
 anſey ye heerig fro treipe. but  
 to ſablis per ſhulē turue / but  
 wake pou. in alle yḡis trauēle  
 pou / do ye werk of an euāḡe  
 liſte / fulfille in ſerupſe. be pou  
 ſobze for i am ſacrificed now.  
 ȝe tyme of my departig is  
 nyz / i haue ſtryu a good ſtryf  
 i haue endid ye cours. i haue  
 kept ye ferp̄ in petoy tyme a  
 crowne of ryzthulneſſe is kept  
 to me. which ye lord auiſt domes  
 mā ſhal ſelde to me in y day ȝe  
 not couly to me. but alſo to ye  
 p̄ louē his comyḡ / hye p̄ to co  
 me to me ſoone / for demas louy  
 ge pis world hay forſakē me. ȝe  
 wente to tellalouyk. creſſiens  
 into galathie. tite into dalmacie.  
 hie alſoone is wy me / take pou  
 mark. ȝe brige wy pee for he  
 is p̄fitable to me into ſerupſe /  
 forſore i ſente titicus to eſſen  
 ye clor which i leſte at trome  
 at carpe. whāne y comelt hy  
 ge wy pee. ȝe booke is but no  
 oft parchemy / aſlandre ye tre  
 ſerer. ſhe wude to me moche  
 yuel ye lord ſhal ſelde to hym  
 aſtir his werk is who alſo pou

entherwe/ for he azenstod ful gre  
tly oure wordis/ In my firste de  
fence, no mā helpide me: but al  
le forsoke me/ be it not arettid  
to hem/ but ye lord helpide me  
& confortide me: v̄ ye prechis be  
filled by me/ & ȳ alle folkis here  
ȳ I am deliuerid fro ye moyn of  
ye hyon/ & ye lord deliuide me fro  
al synel werk: & shal make me  
saif into his heuely kyngdom to  
whom be glorie into worldis of  
worldis amen/ Greete wel pris  
ca & aquila: & ye hous of onole  
foris/ crastus lette at corinth/ &  
I lette trofym/ syk at mylete/  
hise pou to come bifoze wyntn/  
Dyabolis & prudente & hyms &  
claudia & alle byrwen greetē yee  
wel oure lord ihu crist be wim lpi  
ryt/ ye grace of god be wry zom  
amen/ Here endy ye secunde pil  
tle to tymothe: & biggney ye p  
log on ye pistle to tito 11=11

**H**warner tite i entomer  
hy of pe ordynauce of pest  
hood: i of spiritual consolacion  
i of cretikis to ben estherwid.  
p' hilenē in pe jewis writis  
writige to hym fro mycopolis  
Jerō his plog o' in' p'ffle seip p'

**D**ul þe seruante  
of god & apottle of ihu  
crist. bi þe fere of þe tho  
lene of god & bi þe kno  
winge of þe treuwe: which is  
afere þatwe. into þe hope of eu  
lastinge lif / which lif god pat  
þer not biþizte: bifore tymes  
of þe world / but he her aþe wud  
in hile tymes his word i þchig:  
v is bralū to me bi þe coman  
demet of our sauþour god / to

tre moost der ewighe lone bi pe  
 comyng seip. grace & pees of god  
 pe fadir. & of al ihu oure lady  
 our for cause of pis pig. / I sette  
 pee at crete. p<sup>r</sup> you amede po pi  
 gis y<sup>f</sup> saylen / and ordeyne pzel  
 tis bi citees. as also / I disposi  
 de to pee / if ony ma is wyponte  
 cryme. an holeboute of o wyf  
 & hay feryful lones. not i accu  
 sacion of leatherie. oz not singer  
 for it bihouey abillthop to be w  
 ounte cryme. a dispendour of  
 god. not proud. not wraipful.  
 not drukelewe. not syntere.  
 not couertons of foul wymyng.  
 but holdige hospitalite. beynge  
 ne. prudent. sobre. mist. hooky.  
 cotyment. takege y<sup>f</sup> trewe word.  
 y<sup>f</sup> is astur doctryn / y<sup>f</sup> he be myghti  
 to amonestte in hollu teching. &  
 to repreue hem y<sup>f</sup> aen seuen  
 for yer ben manye vobediet  
 & veyn spekeris. & dyspaueris.  
 moost yei y<sup>f</sup> be. & of circuculi  
 ou. whiche it bihouey to be re  
 proued / whiche subuerste alle  
 houles. techige whiche pigis it  
 bihouey not for ye lone of foul  
 wymyng. & oon of he her ppre  
 profete. seide / me of crete ben  
 eumore sperris. yuele beestis of  
 slowe wombe / pis witnellig is  
 trewe. for what cause blame he  
 soze. y<sup>f</sup> yei be hool in fery. not  
 zynge tent to fablis of jehus.  
 & to maundmetis of me. y<sup>f</sup> tur  
 nen akyey hem fro treuwe. &  
 alle pigis be clene to clene me  
 but to vncleue me. & to vnsepy  
 ful. no pig is clene. for ye soule  
 & consience of hem be maid vn  
 clene / yei knowleche. y<sup>f</sup> yei kno



ben god: but bi dedis pei demp  
en whāne pei ben abhomyā  
ble & vnbiene ful: & reproua  
ble to al good werk. *C. ij.*

**B**et speke you po pigis.  
pat biseimen holci te  
chig: p'elde me be soubre.  
chast. prudent. hool in fey i lo  
ue & patience: also olde wyme  
in hooly habite. not standre  
ris: not seruyge moche to wy  
wel techige: p'pei teche pri  
dence: moneste you zonge w  
me: p'pei loue here holebondi:  
p'pei loue her children: & p'pei  
be prudent. chast. sobre. han  
ge cure of ye hous. benygne. li  
get to her holebondis: p'pe word  
of god be not blasfemyd. *Also*  
moneste you zonge me: p'pei be  
sobre in alle pigis: yue pi self  
enchauple of good werkis: ite  
chig: in hoolnesse. in sadnesse.  
an hooli. *word & virepro*  
uable p'he. *vis of ye cont*  
rie hyde be a thamed: hanng  
noon synel pig to seie of you: *mo*  
neste you seruauis. to be liget  
to her lordis in al pigis: pleyge  
not azenleyge. not defraudige  
but in alle pigis thewige good  
fey: p'pei honoure i alle pigis  
pe doctryn of god our sauour:  
for ye grace of god oure sau  
our hay apperid to alle me: & tan  
te us p'we forsake wickidnesse  
& worldly desiris: lyue sobrelly  
& mistly & pteuonilly in pis wo  
ld: abidige ye blessed hope & ye  
comng of ye gloze of ye grete  
god: & of oure sauour ihu crist:  
p'zaf hi self for us: to aenbie  
us fro al wickidnesse: & make

clene to hi self a peple accepta  
ble & swere of good werkis:  
Speke you pes pigis & mones  
te you: & repene you wy al  
comandemēt: no mā dispise p'  
moneste he: to *C. m.*

**A**be fugetis to paces &  
to poveris: to obeillhe  
to pat p'is seid. & to be redy to  
al good werk. to blasfeme no  
mā: to be not ful of chidig: but  
teporat thewige al unplenes  
se to alle men: for we were su  
tyme vnkylle: vnbiene ful. er  
rige & seruyge to desiris & to dy  
uile lufis. doynge i malice & en  
mye worpi to be hatid. hatige  
ech oyr: but whāne ye benyg  
nitye & ye manheod of our sa  
uour god apperide: not of wer  
kis of rixt wickidnesse p'we dūe.  
but by his mercy he made us  
sant: bi waulthig of azen bige  
tig: & azen nekyng of ye hooly  
gost: who he shede into us ple  
teuonilly bi ihu crist oure sau  
p'we iustified by his grace: be  
eyris bi hope of enelastige lyf:  
a trewe word is: & of pes pigis  
i wole p'you cōferme ope: pat  
pei p'biene to god: be bily to  
be aboue ope in goode werkis:  
pes pigis ben goode: & pfitable  
to men: & estheue you folthe  
questions & genealogies & stry  
ues: & fytigis of ye laue: for  
yo ben vnprofitable & weynel  
cheue you ama eretp. after  
oon & ye secude correccion: *W*  
tuge p'he p'is such aman mā:  
is lubitid: & trespassy: & is  
dāpned bi his oure dom: whā  
ne i sende to pee artema o2 ti

ticus: hūe you to come to me  
to nycopolis for i hane spolid.  
to dwelle in wyntur pere: bilyly  
bifore sende zenam a wise man  
of laue & apollo: p'no pig: faile  
to hem: pei p'ben of ouris: lerne  
to be gouernouris in goode wer  
kis: to necessarie vlis: p'pei be  
not wyoute fruyt: alle me pat  
ben wy me: greette pee wel: gr  
eete you wel hem: p'loue us in  
fey: ye grace of god be wy you  
alle amen. *Here endy pe pil*  
*tle to tite: & biggney re plog*  
*ou pe pille to filemon.*

**H**uaky samylar o2 ho  
mely lettris to filemon.  
for honestimus his seruauit: *W*  
rige to hi fro ye cite of rome  
out of prilon bi ye for seid ouer  
unus. *Jerom i his*

**D**ul pe boundi of crist  
ihu: & cymothe brop:  
to filemō biloned &  
oure helper: & to ap  
pia moost der: luter & to archap  
on euene kuyt: & to ye chr  
che p'is in ym hous: grace be  
to you & pees of god our fadr:  
& of ye lord ihu crist: i do paki  
gis to my god eumore: makige  
myde of pee in my pzeieris: hee  
rige pi charite & fey p'you  
hast in ye lord ihu: & to alle hoo  
ly me: pat ye comynng of pi  
fey be maad opyn: in knolig  
of al good pig in crist ihu: & i had  
de greet ioye & confort i pi cha  
rite: for ye entraills of hooly  
me refide by pee brop. *For*  
which pig i hanng moche tr  
ust in crist ihu to comande to pee.

pat p'pzeieris to pfit: but i bi  
leche moze for charite: Siven  
you art such as ye elde poult: &  
now ye boundi of ihu crist: i bile  
che pee for my lone onely me:  
whom i in boondis bigat: wh  
ich su tyme was vnprofita  
ble to pee: but now profitable  
boye to pee & to me: who i sente  
azen to pee: & resseyue you hi:  
as myne entraills: who i wolde  
wypholde wy me: p'he shulde  
serue to me for pee in boondis  
of ye gospel: But wyoute pi  
couceil i wolde not do any pig:  
p'pi good shulde not be as of  
uede: but wylful: for pauetyn:  
pfore he departide fro pee for  
a tyme: p'you shuldut ressey  
ue hi wyoute ende: Now not  
as a seruauit: but for a seruauit.  
a moost dere brop. moost to me  
& hōw moche moze to pee: boye  
in fleish & in ye lord: pfore if p'  
hast me a felowe: resseyue hy  
as me: for if he hay any ping a  
noyed pee: ey ouy: arette you  
pis pig to me: i poult wroot wy  
myn hond: i shal zelde: i seye not  
to pee: pat also you owist to me  
pi self: So brop i shal vte pee i  
ye lord: fille you my entraills in  
crist: i tristenng of ym obediē  
ce: wroot to pee: wrighte p'you  
shalt do: on pat p' i shal seye:  
also make you redy to me an hous  
to dwelle yue: for i hope p'bi zom  
pzeieris i shal be zoini to you:  
Epafraas psoner wy me i crist  
ihu greett pee wel: and mark.  
aristark. demas. lucas. myn hol  
peris: ye grace. of our lord  
ihu crist: be wy you. re spirit.



thine. Here endy pe pistle to  
Phileas. & bigynner pe plog on  
pe pistle to Phileas.

**I**f it is to seye. whi paul  
apostle i pis epistle. in writtege  
kepyn not his vlsage. distynge  
ge his name oz pe dignte of his  
ordre. pis is pe cause p he wri  
tyge to hem. p were of carci  
hon. bileded. wroot as pe apost  
le of hevene me & not of ieris  
and he knowe ge her prude. & the  
wige her owne humelnesse. nol  
de not putte bifoze pe distert of  
his office. & in lyk man also John  
pe apostle for humelnesse in his  
epistil. for pe same skile sette  
not his name to foze. Als it seid  
pe apostle sente pis epistle to  
pe phileas witten in ebreis ti  
ge. & after pe deap of paul pe a  
postle. hys pe enangeliste made  
it in greet speche. holdynge pe  
vndir stouping. & pe ordre of it.  
**Here ilus plog o pis pistle leyn pis**

**A**d pat apak. **C. p.**  
en tyme by pfectis. i  
many manes to our  
fadris. at pe laste in  
pes dayes he hay spoke to us bi  
pe sone. whom he hay ordeyned  
er of alle pigis. & by whom he  
made pe worldis. which whie  
also he is pe brytneesse of gloze.  
& figm. of his substance. & herp  
alle pigis bi word of his vertu.  
he makyn purgaciou of synes  
& enty on pe rythale of pe ma  
gette in hevenes. & so moche is  
mard bete pan angelis. bi how  
moche he hay en eritid amoz dy  
uers na. me bifoze he for  
to. whiche of pe angels

seide god om tyme. p art my sone.  
I hane gendrid pee to day. & eft  
soone. I shal be to hy into a fadyr.  
& he shal be to me into a sone. &  
whie eftsoone he byngyn yn pe  
furte bigetii sone. into pe world.  
he leyn & alle pe angels of god wro  
thlype hy. but he leyn to angelis.  
he p makyn his angels spiritis.  
& hile mynistis flakme of flet.  
But to pe sone he leyn god yn tro  
ne is into pe world of world. agend  
of eqypte is pe zerd of yn re  
me. pon hast loued ryttyshes  
le. & handest wickidnesse. pfor  
pe god yn god. anoyntide pee  
wry oyle of ioye. moze pa pife  
louis. & pon lord i pe bigynnyng  
foundedit pe erpe. & hevenes  
bea wry. his of ym hondis. pe  
shulde. peritthe. but p sh  
alt parspity dwelle. & alle sh  
len were elde as a clop. & p sh  
lt change hem as a clop. & pe sh  
len be chaigid. but pon art pe  
same pis. & yn zeeris shulen  
not faple. but to which of pe an  
gels seide god at om tyme. litte  
on my rythale. til i putte yn  
enemys astool of yn feet. & the  
p pei alle be not seruyge spri  
tis. sent to seruen. for he pat  
taken pe eritage of heeche.

**For moze. C. 7.**  
**V**plenteuoulyt bihouer  
us to kepe vo pigis p we  
han herd. let panetm. we  
fleten atey. for if pe ilke  
word p was seid bi angels. we  
mard sad. & ech brekyng of pe  
lawe. & violence took ust re  
tribucion of meete. how shu  
len we allape. if we dispisen

so greet an heeche. which whane  
it hadde takn bigynnyng to be teld  
ont bi pe lord. of hem p herde. is  
cofermyd into us. for god wryet  
side to gidre by myrachis. & wron  
dus & greette mychels & dynerse.  
tues. & departigis of pe hooly go  
ost bi his wille. but not to angels.  
god luyetide pe world p is to co  
myge. of which we speke. but  
su ma wrytneesse in a place. & sei  
de. what pig is man. p art my  
dehil of hy. oz mams sone. for pon  
vstet hy. pon hast mard hi a lital  
lesse pan angelis. p hast crowned  
hy wry gloze & honour. & p hast oz  
deyned hy on pe werkis of ym hon  
dis. pon hast mard alle pigis luyet  
vndir his feet. & in pat. p he enge  
tude alle pigis to hy. he leste no pig  
vnluyet to hy. but now we seen  
not it alle pigis luyet to hy.  
but we seen hy. p was mard altil  
lesse pan angelis. ihu for pe pass  
on of deap. crowned wry gloze &  
honour. p he ym grace of god  
shulde tande deap for alle me. for it  
biledede hy for who alle pigis. & by  
whom alle pigis were mard. which  
hadde brougt many sones into glo  
ze. & was andour of pe heeche of  
hem. p he hadde an ende by passon.  
for he pat halewry. & pei p ben hale  
wid. ben alle of con. for which cau  
se he is not shamed to clepe hem  
bryeren seynge. I shal telle yn na  
me to my bryeren. in pe mydel of  
pe churche. I shal herie pee. & eft  
soone. I shal be tritnyge into hy.  
& eftsoone. lo. I & my childe. wh  
iche god zaf to me. pfoze for chl  
dren conynede to flesch & blood.  
& he also took part of pe same

p by deap he shulde destrye hym  
p hadde lordshyp of deap. p is to  
seye pe deuel. & p he shulde dehy  
ner he. p bi drede of deap bi all hy.  
weren bound to seruage. & he  
took neie angelis. but he took  
pe seed of abrahim. wher fore he  
oynte to be hlymed to bryen by  
alle pigis. p he shulde be mard  
merciful. & seynful bishop to god.  
p he shulde be merciful to pe  
trepassis of pe peple. for i pat  
pig in which he sustide & was  
temptid. he is myxti to helpe al  
lo he pat ben teptid. **C. 11.**  
**V**erfore hooly bryen. &  
preneris of heuely cle  
pyng. biholde ze pe apos  
tle & pe bishop of our cofel  
hon ihu. which is trewe to hy  
pat made hy. as also moyses in  
al pe hous of hy. but pis bishop  
is had wrypi of moze gloze pan  
moyses. by as moche as he hay  
moze honour of pe hous p made  
pe hous. for ech hous is mard of  
su ma. he p made alle pigis of  
noyt. is god. & moyses was tre  
we in alle his hous. as a seruant  
into wrytneessig of vo pigis pat  
were to be seid. but cit as a sone  
in his hous. which hoys we be.  
if we holden sad trist & gloze  
of hope into pe ende. wher fore  
as pe hooly goost seyn. to day if  
ze hau herd his vois. nyle ze hard  
ne zoure hertis. as in wryppig.  
lyk pe day of teptaciou i desert.  
wher zour fadris teptiden me.  
& preuede & syzen my werkis  
fourty zeeris. wher fore I was  
wry to pis genaciou. & I seide  
enmore pei erren i herte. for



pei knele not my weyes. to whiche I swooz in my wrappe. pei shulen not entre into my reste. bypen se ze. lest panetun i om of zoi be an yuel herte of vnbileue. to departe fro pe lympe god. but moneste zoi gylt bi all dayes. pe while to day is named. p noon of zoi be hardned bi falla ce of syne. for we ben maad par ceneris of est. if nepeles we hol den pe bigynnyng of his substan ce sad into pe ende. while it is leid. to day. if ze han herd pe vois of hi. nyle ze hardne zoi hertis. as in p wrapping. for su me heerige wrappen. but not alle pei pat weiten out of egypt by moyses. but to whiche was he wrappid fourty zee ris. whey not to he p synede. whos careyns were cast doun i desert. i to whiche swooz he. p pei shulde not entre into pe reste of hy. no but to hem p were vnbilestul. i we seen. p pei myzte not entre into pe rest of hi for vnbileue. **C. m. //**

**T**herfore drede we lest p anetun. while pe biheel te of entrynng into his reste is left. p om of us be gelid to be a weye. for it is teild al so to us. as to hem. i pe word p was herd. p fide not to he. not meynd to seip. of po p is pat pei herden. for we p han bileud. shule entre into reste. as he seide. as I swooz in my wrappe. pei shule not entre into my rest. i whine pe werks weren maad. p fyt at pe ordynance of pe world. he seide p is i a place of pe senenpe day. i god reste

in pe senenpe day. fro alle his werks. i in his place estloone. pei shulen not entre into my reste. p fore for it lympe. p su men shule entre into it. i pei to whiche it was teild to bifore entien not for her vnbileue. estloone he termynen su day i seip. i da my to day after so moche tyme of tyme. as it is bifore seid. to day if ze han herd his vois. nyle ze hard ne zoi hertis. for it he hadde zoi reste to hem. he shulde neie speke of opere after his day. p for pe la bot is left to pe peple of god. for he pat is entrid into his reste. restide of his werks. as also god of hile. p fore hadde we to entre into pat reste. p no ma falle into pe same ensample of vnbileue. for pe word of god is quik i spedy in working. i more able to perse pan any tweyne eggid liwerd. i sterchy for to pe departyng of pe soule i of spirit. i of pe wintu ris i merewis i demer of poiz tis i of ententis i hertis. and no creatur is vnbile in pe sirt of god. for alle p is ben nakid i o pyn to his ien. to who alword to us. p fore we p han a greet bish op p p fide heuenes. i hi pe some of god. holde we pe knowlechyng of om hope. for we han not a bi shop p may not hane compassion on oure i frimytes. but was teptid bi alle p is. bi liknesse wv onte syne. p for go we out to pe trone of his grace. p we gete my. i fynde gre i conena ble help. **C. m. //**

**A**nd bi shop takn of me. is ordeyned for me.

in pes p is p be to god. p he of fre i firs i sacrificis for syne. which may to gidre some wip he pat bey vnbilmyge i erren. for al lo he is enyrbined i mfirmyte. i p fore he ovir. as for pe peple. so also for hi self to offre for syne. ney om ma takn to hi honou. but he i is depid of god as aaron was. so est clarified not hi self. p he wer bi shop. but he pat spak to hi. pou art my lone. to day i gen dute pee. as in anoy place he seip. p art a pcest wip oute ende af tir pe orde of melchisedech. whi ch in pe dayes of his fleulth offri de wip greet cry i teeris. prie ris i bilechis to hy p myzte ma ke hym saf fro deip. i was herd for his reuence. and whine he ws goddis lone. he lernide obedi en ce of pes p is p he suffride. i he byouyt to pe ende. is maad cau se of eulastig heelp to alle pat oberthen to hi. i is depid of god a bi shop. by pe orde of melchisedech of who per is to us a gret word. for to seip. for ze ben maad feeble to heere. for whine ze onte to be maistris for tyme. estloo ne ze niden p ze be tanyt. whiche ben pe lettris of pe bigynnyng of goddis wordis. and ze be maad pilke. whiche is nede of mylk. i not sad mete. for ech p is par cener of mylk. is wipoute part of pe word of ryztyfnesse. for he is a lytil chld. but of parfyt me is sad mete. of he p for cust han wittis extichid. to distracion of good i of ynel. **C. m. //**

**W**herfore we byngnyge in a word of pe bigynnyng

of est. be we born to pe pfecti on of hi. not estloone leggyng ge pe foundamet of penance. fo deede werks i of pe seip to god. i of techig. of baptymis. i of leygis on of hondis i of rlyg men of deede me. i of pe eulasti ge dom. i ris pig we shule do. if god shal suffre. but it is ym possible p pei p ben couys lytued. i han tanyd also an heuenly zite. i ben maad parceus of pe hooly goost. i nepeles han tanyd pe good word of god. i pe vtnes of pe world to conyge. i ben shidun fer away. p pei ben renewed est loone to penance. whiche estloo nes crucien to he self pe lone of god. i han to storn. for pe erpe p drynkyn reyn ofte conyge on it i byngny forp conenable erbe to he of whiche it is tilid. takn blesig of god. but pat p is by gynge forp pornes i breeris. is repreuable. i next to cur. whos endig shal be into byngnyng. but ze moost dere wozye. we tristen of zoi bett. p is. i neer to heel pe. pouz we speken so. for god is not vnt. p he forzete zoi wer i lone whiche ze han shewid in his name. for ze han mymyl trid to seyntis. i mymytre. and we couete p ech of zoi shewe pe same bishneille to pe fylling of hope. into pe ende. p ze be not maad slowe. but also lympe ris of he whiche bi seip i paci ence shulen enherite pe biheel tis. for god byheestas. for god biheetynge to abrahm. for he hadde noon gret by who he sh uld liwer. swooz by hi self i



leide: I blesse ſhal blesse pee: & I multiplynge ſhal multiplye pee: & ſo he longe abidige: had de pe biheeste: for me liwere bi a gretter pan hem ſelf: & pe ende of al her pleis an ooy to confirmation: I which pig god wil lige to ſtheve plenteuouſſher to pe eyris of his biheeste: pe ſadnelle of his conſent: putide but wyre an ooy: & by riſey pig: *amenable* by which it is ympossible y god lye: we haue ſtrengente ſolace: pat ſlen to gidge to holde pe hope y is put forp to us: which hope as an ankur we han ſiker to pe ſoule & ſad & goynge yn to pe ynet pigis of hydig: whe pe biſore goere iſt y is maad bi ſhop wyoute ende: by pe ordre of melchiledech: entie for us: **A**d yis melchile *¶ C. viij. //* dech lig of ſalem: & pceſt of pe hyste god: which met te wy abrahm: as he turnede a zen fro pe ſleyng of kigis: & bleſ ſide hi to whom: alſo abrahm departide tyris of alle pigis: firſt he is leid kig of ryz wiſneſſe: & after ward kig of ſalem y is to ſeie kig of pees wyoute ſadir wyoute modir: woute genealogie: ney hanſge bigynnyng of dayes ney ende of lyf: & he is likned to pe ſone of god: & dwellip pceſt woute ende: but biholde ze hou greet: is yis: to whom abrahm pe patriarch: & tyris of pe beſte pigis: & tyris for me of pe ſones of leeny takige pceſthod: han man demet to take tyris of pe peple bi pe laue: y is to ſeie of her by perē: yon: alſo pei wente out

of pe leendis of abrahm: but he whos genacion is not notid in hem: took tyris of abrahm: & he bleſide yis abrahm which hadde repmyſſions wyouten any azenſeyg: pat y is leſſe: is bleſid of pe bettre & here deſch me take tyris: but pei he be rry wiſneſſig y he lyncy: & pat it he ſeid ſo: bi abrahm: alſo ſe ny pat took tyris was tyrid: & zit he was in his ſadris leendis: whie melchiledech mette wy hy yſore if perſectiou was bi pe pceſthod of leny: for vndir hi pe peple took pe laue: what zit was it nedeful: anoy pceſt to ryle bi pe ordre of melchiledech: & not to be ſeid bi pe ordre of aaron: for wh whie pe pſthod is tūlatid: it is nede: & alſo tūlatid of laue be maad: but he in whom pes pigis ben ſeid: is of anopr lynage: of which no mā was pceſt to pe ainter: for it is oppn: y our lord is born of juda: in which lyna ge moſes ſpak no pig of pceſt: & more zit it is knowin: it bi pe ordre of melchiledech: an oy pceſt is riſi up: which is not maad bi pe laue of fleuthly maudemēt: but but by vertu of lyf y may not be vndon: for he wiſneſſip y pou art a pceſt wyoute ende: bi pe ordre of melchiledech: y repreyng of pe maudemēt biſore goynge is maad: for pe ynſadnelle & on pſit of it: for whi pe laue hris te no pig to pſectiou: but y is a bringyng yn of a bettr hope: by which we neize to god: and how greet it is: not wyoute liueryg: but pe oye ben maad pceſtis wy

outen an ooy: but yis pceſt wy an ooy bi hi y ſeide to hi: pe lord ſkooz: & it ſhal not rewe hi: y art a pceſt wyoute ende: bi pe ordre of melchiledech: i ſo moche iſt is maad biheeter of pe bet tre teſtamēt: & pe oye were ma ad manſe pſtis yſore for pei we re forbedn bi deey to diuſſe ſille: but yis: for he dwellip wy oute ende: har an eulantiſe pceſthod: wherfore alſo he may ſane wy oute ende: comyge ny: by hy ſelf to god: & eimmore lyncy to pie for us: for it biſenſide y ſuch a mā were a biſhop to us: hooky innocent: vnde ſonlid: clene depar tid fro eyful mē: & maad hzeri pan heuenes: which hay not nede: ech day as pceſtis: for his owne gilis to offre ſacrifices: & after ward for pe peple: for he diſe yis pig i offrige hi ſelf conys: & pe laue ordeyne me pceſtis: hanſge ſykenſſe: but pe word of ſwerig: which is aſar pe laue: ordeyne pe ſone pſit wyoute ende: *¶ C. xij. //* **B**ut a capitle on po pigis y ben leid: we han end abillhop: y ſat in pe rythalf of pe ſeete: of greetueſſe i heuenes: pe mynſtre of leyntis & of pe very tabernacle pat god made & not mā: for ech biſhop is ordey ned to offre ziftis & ſacrificis: wh fore it is nede y alſo yis biſhop hane ſū pig: y he ſhal offre: & for if he were on erpe: he wer no pceſt: whie per were pat ſhilden offre ziftis bi pe laue: which ſerue to pe ſampler & ſhadowe of heuenly pigis: as

it was anſwerid to moſes: whie he ſhulde ende pe taber nacle: ſe he ſeide: make y alle pigis: bi pe ſampler y is ſthe rid to pee i pe moit: but not he hay getti a bettr mynſtre: bi ſo moche as he is a mediator: of a bettre teſtamēt: wy bettr biheetis: for if pe ilke firſte had de lackid blame: pe place of pe ſecunde ſhulde not haue be ſout: for he repreyng hem: ſer y lo dayes comen ſer pe lord: & I ſhal make parſyt a newe teſ tamēt on pe hous of iſrl: & on pe hous of juda: not lyk pe teſta mēt y i made to her ſadris i pe day i which I cauſte her hond: y i ſhulde lede hem out of pe lond of egypt: for pei dwellid not par ſyly i my teſtamēt: & i haue diſ pilid he ſer pe lord: but yis is pe teſtamēt: which i ſhal diſpole to pe ſous of iſrael: after po dayes ſer pe lord: in ymſge my lauis into pe ſouls of hem: & into pe hertis of he: i ſhal aboue wryte hem: & i ſhal be to he into a god: & pei ſhulen be to me into a peple: & ech mā ſhal not teche his ney ehoze: & ech mā his brop: ſerynge knowe me: fro pe leſſe to pe mo re of he: for i ſhal be merciful to pe wickidneſſe of he: & nois i ſhal not biſenke on pe ſynes of he: but in ſerige a newe: pe former werid eeld: & pat y is of many dayes & werid eeld: is *¶ C. xij. //* **A**d pe former teſtamēt hadde iſtifyingis of wor ſhip & hooky pig duryge for a ty me: for pe tabernacle was maad

Which is aſygn

Quoſia pou po lord: for alla mā ſigola



first. in which were candelsticks.  
 & boord & setting forp of loones  
 which is seid hooly. & pe veil. pe  
 secunde tabernacle. yis seid sanc-  
 ta stoz. yis hooly of hooly pigis  
 haunge a goldi censer. & pe arke  
 of pe testamēt. Fewerid aboute  
 on ech syde wy gold. in which  
 was a pott of gold. haunge mā-  
 na. & pe zerd of aron y florid th-  
 de. & pe tablis of pe testamēt. on  
 which pigis were cherubyns  
 of glorie ouer shadowyge pe ap-  
 ciatorie. of which pigis it is not  
 now to sepe by alle. but whane  
 pes were maid yus to gidre. pre-  
 tis entride enemore i pe former  
 tabernacle. doynge pe offices of  
 sacrifices. but i pe secunde taber-  
nade pe bishop entride oonys  
 in pe zeer not wy oute blood.  
 which he offride for his ignoran-  
 ce & pe peple. for pe hooly gost  
 signyfyede pis pig y not yit pe  
 wepe of seyntis was openyd. whi-  
 le pe former tabernacle hadde  
 stat. which parable is of pis p-  
 sent tyme. bi which also ystis  
 & sacrifices ben offrid. which  
 mouen not make a man seruyge  
 parfyt by consience. conly i me-  
 tis & drynkis & drynkis wauldhyngis.  
 & ryt wysnes of fleish. y were  
 get to pe tyme of correction. ||  
 But cit beynge a bishop of goo-  
 dis to conyge. entride bi a large  
 & pfitere tabernacle not maid  
 by hond. y is to sepe not of pis ma-  
 fig. ney bi blood of goot buckis  
 oz of calues. but by his owne blo-  
 od entride oonys into hooly pigis  
 y were fouden bi an enlastige re-  
 depcion. for if pe blood of goot bu-

ckis & of bohs. & pe aulthe of a cons-  
 calf spreind. hale wy vndene  
 me to pe denhyng of fleish. hons  
 moche more pe blood of cit. which  
 bi pe hooly gost offride bi self. ren-  
 we myd to god. shal dense oure  
 consience fro deade werks to ser-  
 ue god y lyuep. and y fore he is  
 a mediator of pe newe testamēt.  
 y bi depe falligge bryue into re-  
 depcion of vo trespalligis y were  
 vndir pe former testamēt. yei  
 pat ben clepid. take pe biheeste  
 of everlastig eritage. for wher  
 a testamēt is. it is nede. y depe  
 of pe testamēt maker come by  
 tlyue. for a testamēt is confer-  
 med in deade me. elis it is not  
 wozy. while he lyuep. y made  
 pe testamēt. wherfore ney pe  
 frste testamēt was halewid  
 onte blood. for wher ech maide  
 mēt of pe lawe was rad of mo-  
 ples to al pe peple. he took pe blo-  
 od of calues. & of buckis of geet.  
 wy watir & reed wolle & slope  
 & bishpeynde bove yilke bock & al  
 pe peple & seide. pis is pe blood of  
 pe testamēt. y god comānde  
 to you. also he spreind wy blood  
 pe tabernacle & alle pe vessels of  
 pe seruyce in lyk man. & al mest  
 alle pigis ben denhid in blood bi  
 pe lawe. & wyoute shedyng of  
 blood. remission of synes is not  
 maid y fore it is nede pat pe shi-  
 pleris of heuely pigis. wy ber-  
 tre sacrifices van yele. for whi-  
 entride not into hooly pigis ma-  
 ad bi hondis. y ben saupleris  
 of verris pigis. but into he-  
 uene it self y he appere now  
 to pe cheer of god for us. ney

be denhid wy pes pigis. but yil-  
 ke heuely pigis.

y he offere hi self offe. as pe bish-  
 op entride into hooly pigis. bi  
 alle zeeris in ahen blood. elis  
 it bihofie hym to enuffre offe. fro  
 pe bigynnyng of pe woold. but  
 now oonys. in pe endyng of  
 wooldis. to destruccion of sy-  
 ne. bi his sacrifice he apperde.  
 & as it is ordeyned to men oonys  
 to dye. but aftir pis is pe dom-  
 so. cit was offrid oonys. to a noi-  
 de pe synes of many me. pe lecti-  
 de tyme he shal apper. wyoute  
 syne. to me y abiden hi to heeche.  
**H**ow pe lawe haunge. ||  
 a shadowe of good pigis y be-  
 come. not pe ilke ymage of pigis.  
 may neu make me neyge. pfit. bi pe ilke  
 same sacrifices. which pei offere  
 wyoute ceessig by alle zeeris. el-  
 lis pei shulde hane ceessid to be  
 offrid. for as moche as pe wor-  
 shyperis denhid oonys. hadde not  
 serpermore consience of syne.  
 but in hem mynde of synes is  
 maid by alle zeeris. for it is ym-  
 possible. y synes be don alyep  
 by blood of bohs & of buckis of ge-  
 et. y fore he entrige into pe woold.  
 seip. yon woldit not sacrifice &  
 offryng. but yon hast shypna  
 body to me. brent sacrifices also  
 for syne. plehte not to pee. pane  
 y seide. lo. y come. in pe bigynnyng  
 of pe bock it is writi of me. y  
 y do y wille god. he seiyge bifoze  
 y yon woldit not sacrifices &  
 offryngis & brent sacrifices for sy-  
 ne. ne y pigis ben plestant to pee  
 which ben offrid bi pe lawe. yā  
 ne y seide. lo. y come. y do y  
 wille god. he doy alyep pe frste.  
 y he make shidefast. pe secunde.

in which wille we ben halewid.  
 bi pe offryng of pe body of cit. whi-  
 conyge. & ech preeit is redy. myn-  
 drynge ech day. & ofe tymes of  
 drynge pe same sacrifices. whi-  
 che mouen neie do alyep synes.  
 but yis mā offryge o sacrifice  
 for synes. for enemore. litty in  
 pe ryzthalf of god pe fadir. fro  
 penys forp abidyge. til his ene-  
 myes be putt a stool of his feet.  
 for by oon offryng he made parfyt  
 for ene halewid me. & pe hooly  
 gost witnessip to us. for aftir y  
 he seide. pis is pe testamēt. whi-  
 ch y dā nelle shal to hem aftir  
 po dayes. pe lord seip. i zynge  
 my larys in pe hertis of hem. &  
 in pe soulis of hem. shal no mo-  
 ze penke on pe synes & warkid-  
 ness of hem. & wher remys-  
 sion of pes is. now is y noon  
 offryng for syne. y fore brypen  
 haunge trist into pe entrig of  
 hooly pigis in pe blood of crist.  
 which halewid to us a newe  
 wepe & lymge bi pe hlyg pat  
 is to sepe his fleish. & we haun-  
 ge pe greet preeit on pe hons  
 of god. neze we wy verris her-  
 te in pe pleinte of fery. and be-  
 din. hertis spreind fro an yuel  
 consience. & our bodies wauldhy-  
 wy clene watir. & holde we pe  
 cofusion of our hope bowyge to  
 no hyde. for he is trewe. y hap ma-  
 ad pe biheest. & biholde we to gi-  
 die in pe stryg of charite & of  
 goode werks. not for labyngge  
 our gaderig to gidre. as it is of  
 custom to su me. But conforti-  
 ge. & bi so moche pe more. bi hons  
 moche ze seen pe day neyzyng.



for ush now a sacrifice for synes  
is not left to us y<sup>e</sup> synen wil  
fuly: after pat we han take pe  
knowing of treuþe for ush on  
abpdyng of dom is dredeful. &  
pe synyng of fier: which shal  
waste aduſariness: who y<sup>e</sup> bre  
kyn moyses sake: diep wipou  
ten ony mercy by tseyne oz pre  
witneſſis: hou moche gellenze  
pat he diſſerney worſe turne  
tis: which defouley pe ſone of  
god: & holdy pe blood of pe tes  
tament polut. in which he is ha  
lewid: & dey diſpit to pe ſpirit  
of grace: for we knowen hym  
y<sup>e</sup> ſente: to me veſtante: & ſhal  
zeſe: & eft: for pe lord ſhal deme  
his peple: it is ferdyful to falle in  
to pe hondis of god hyngge: & haue  
ze mynde on pe formere dayes: i  
which ze weren lytued & outſide  
greet ſtryf of paſſionis: & in pe  
toþ ze were maid aſpectacle bi the  
ſhipis & tribulacionis: in anoyr  
ze weren maid felowis of me hy  
ngge ſo: for allo to bound me ze  
hadden compaſſion: & ze reſeyne  
den wip ioye: pe robbynge of zour  
goodis: knowyge y<sup>e</sup> ze han a bettr  
adibellig enſtance: y<sup>e</sup> fore nyle  
ze leeſe zour criſt: which hay gre  
et reſerdyng for patience is ne  
deſul to zou: y<sup>e</sup> ze doen pe wille of  
god: & bynggen azen pe biheest  
for zit alytel & he y<sup>e</sup> is to compge  
ſhal come: & he ſhal not tarie:  
for my niſt ma lynes of ſerpy: y<sup>e</sup>  
if he wipdambn hi ouſe: he ſhal  
not pleſe to my ſoule: but we  
ben not pe ſones of wyrdambn  
akey into perdition: but of ſerpy  
into getyng of ſoule. **III. C. 21.**

**B**ut ſerpy is pe ſubſtance of  
pyns pat ben to be hopid:  
& an argumer of pyns not  
apperige: and in pis ſerpy: elte me  
han getu witneſſig: bi ſerpy we  
vnderſtoden y<sup>e</sup> pe worldis were ma  
ad bi godis word: y<sup>e</sup> viſible pyns  
were maid of vniſible pyns: bi  
ſerpy: abel offride a moche more sa  
crifice pan caym to god: bi which  
he gat witneſſig to be niſt: for  
god bar witneſſig to hile ziftis:  
& bi pat ſerpy: he ded ſpekyn zit:  
bi ſerpy enok was tillaſid: y<sup>e</sup> he  
ſhulde not be wey: & he was not  
foudu: for pe lord tillaſide hi: for  
biſore tillaſion: he hadde witneſ  
ſig: y<sup>e</sup> he pleſide god: & it is ym  
poſſible: to pleſe god wipoute ſerpy:  
for it bihouey y<sup>e</sup> anna comyge to  
god bileue: y<sup>e</sup> he is: & y<sup>e</sup> he is reſer  
der to me pat ſeken hi: wip ſerpy:  
noe drede purj anſwer taku: of  
pes pyns y<sup>e</sup> zit were not ſerpy: &  
ſhapide althip: into pe heeſte of  
his honis: bi which he dāpuede pe  
world: & is ordeyned er of ryzthi  
nelle which is bi ſerpy: bi ſerpy: he  
pat is deyd abzalm: obere to  
go out into a place: which he ſhul  
de take into crutage: & he were  
out: not witige whidur he ſhul  
de go: bi ſerpy he diſbehe in pe lond  
of biheſte as man alien lond: diſel  
lige in lytel houſis wip ſerpy: &  
jacob enene eyris of pe ſame bi  
heſte: for he abood a citee ham  
ge foundemtis: whos crafty man  
& maker is god: bi ſerpy allo pe ilke  
sara bareyn: took vertu i coſey  
nyg of ſeed: & he azen of pe tyme  
of age: for ſhe bileuede hi trewe  
y<sup>e</sup> hadde biſpyt: for which pyn of

con & zit nys deed y<sup>e</sup> ben born as ſer  
tis of heuene in multitude: & as  
grauel y<sup>e</sup> is at pe lee hde out of  
noubr: bi ſerpy alle peſe ben deed:  
whie pe biheſtis were not ta  
ku: but pei biheſde hem aſer: &  
greetyge wel: & knowleche  
pat pei were pilgris & herbord  
niſt on pe erpe: & pei y<sup>e</sup> synen pes  
pyns: ſignificu y<sup>e</sup> pei ſeſchen a ci  
tree: if pei hadden had mynde of  
pe ilke of which pei wente out: pei  
haddē tyme of turnyge azen: but  
now pei deſyren a bettr: y<sup>e</sup> is to  
ſeje heuene: y<sup>e</sup> for god is not con  
foudu: to be clepyd pe god of he  
for he made redy to he a citee: bi  
ſerpy abzalm offride ſerpy: whie  
he was teptid: & he offride pe con  
bigeſu: which hadde take pe bi  
heſtis: to who it was ſeid: for  
in ſerpy pe ſeed ſhal be clepyd to  
pee: for he dempe y<sup>e</sup> god is myz  
ty to reyle hy: & he fro deey: wher  
fore he took hy allo into a para  
ble: y<sup>e</sup> ſerpy allo of pyns to co  
myge: ſerpy bleſide: jacob dyngge:  
bleſide alle pe ſones of joleph:  
& onourede pe hymelle of his zerd:  
bi ſerpy joleph dyngge: hadde my  
de of pe paſſig: for of pe childe  
of rael & comauide of his bo  
nes: bi ſerpy moyses bozn was ſid  
pre moneris of his fadir: & mo  
dir: for y<sup>e</sup> pei synen pe zong chid  
ſajz: & pei drede not pe manie  
met of pe eig: bi ſerpy: moyses  
was maid greet: & dempe y<sup>e</sup>  
he was pe ſone of faraas donz  
ty: and chees moze to be tur  
metid wip pe peple of god: pa  
to haue myzpe of tēporal ſyne:  
dempe pe reproſ of cit: moze

richellis: pan pe treſouris of  
egipcians: for he biheſde into  
pe rewardig: bi ſerpy he forſook  
egipt: & drede not pe hardueſ  
ſe of pe eig: for he abood al ſee  
yngge hi pat was vniſible: bi ſerpy  
he haleride paſt: & pe rhedis out  
of blood: y<sup>e</sup> he y<sup>e</sup> diſtipe pe ſer  
te pyns of egipcians: ſhulde not  
touche he: bi ſerpy pei paſſide pe  
reed ſee as bi dype lond: which  
pyns egipcians aſayinge weren  
denourid: bi ſerpy: pe walls of je  
rico ſelde don: bi ciſpaſſige of ſeue  
ne dayes: bi ſerpy rael hoze reſey  
uede pe aſprieris wip pees: & pe  
riſthide not wip vniſibleſul me:  
& what zit ſhal i ſeie: for tyme  
ſhal ſayle to me tellige of jede  
on: barab: ſaplon: ſepte: dāny  
& ſanniel & of ope profetis: whi  
che biſerpy oſcame reſumes wip  
ten ryzthiſneſſe gaten repro  
millionis: pei ſtappide pe monyſ  
of lyous: pei quenched pe ſerſ  
nelle of fier: pei dzyuede a wey  
pe egge of ſiwerd: pei koneride  
of ſikneſſe pei were maid ſtrōg  
in batel: pei turnede pe oostis  
of aliens: wipmen reſeyuede  
her dede children fro deey to lyf:  
but ope were holdu: for not ta  
lige redepcion: y<sup>e</sup> pei ſhulden  
ſynde a bettre azen yſyng: & ope  
aſayede ſtōnyngis & betyngis: mo  
re on & bondis & plous: pei were  
ſtōnyd: pei were ſauid: pei we  
re teptid: pei were deed i ſleyg  
of ſiwerd: pei wente aboute in  
hroſ ſkynis: & i ſkynes of geet: ne  
dy: anguſtlyd: turnetid: to whi  
che pe world was not wozpi: pei  
eride in wilduſneſſes: i moſtēis

Jacob &  
elau: bi  
ſerpy

|| ythoz m



and deins and canes of pe erpe: alle  
pele pzenyd by wunellig of fery:  
token not reppromysshon for god  
pur neyede gu better pig for us:  
y pei shulde not be maad par  
fyt wyponde us // **C. xxij.**

**V**efore we pat han so  
greet a clowde of wunel  
his punt to: do we awei al  
charge and syne stoudege a  
bouite us: and by patience reue  
we to pe baten possid to us: bi  
holdige into pe make of fery  
and pe par fyt ender ihu: which  
whane ioye was possid to hi  
he suffride pe croll: and dispide  
confusoun: And hitte on pe ryg  
hale of pe sete of god: and bi  
penke ze on hi y suffride such  
agen seyng of synful me agen  
hy self: y ze be not maad wery.  
faylige in zoun souls: for ze aye  
stoden not yet til to blood: fytige  
agen syne: and ze han forzete pe  
confort y speky to zoun as to so  
nes and fery: my lone wyle pou dispile  
pe techys of pe lord: ney be y maad  
wery: pe while pou art chastyd  
of hi: for pe lord chastyt hi pat  
he louey: he bette eury lone: pat  
he resseyney: abyde ze stille in ch  
astyng: god profer y hi to zoun  
al to lones: for what lone is it:  
whom pe fadir chastyt not: y  
if ze ben out of chastyng: whos  
parteneris be ze alle maad: y ane  
ze ben auowtrerys and not lones:  
and asturward. we hadde fadyr of  
oun fleidly techerys: and we wry re  
uerence drede hem: wher not moche  
more we shulen obeidhe to pe fa  
dyr of spyritys: and we shulen lyue:  
and pei in tyme of felle dages: can

ten vs bi her wille: but pis sadu  
techy to pat pig: pat is pfitable:  
and resseyng pe hale wryg of hym:  
and chastyng in present tyme: se  
mey to be not of ioye but of sor  
we: but asturward it shal zelce  
fryt of rygtyfnesse moost pee  
hble: to me exetralid bi it: for wh  
ich pig reile ze slowe hondis: and  
knees vnbondun: and make ze ryg  
ful steppis to zoun feet: y no ma  
halyge erre: but moze be heeld:  
sowe ze pees wry alle me and hoo  
lynelle: wyponde which no ma  
shal se god: biholde ze y no man  
fayle to pe grace of god: y no wo  
te of bitteresse: but ioyng  
upward lette: and manye be defou  
ld bi hit: y no ma be lechd epyr  
vnhoolp as elan: which for o miete  
selde his firtte pigis: for wite ze  
pat asturward. he couentige: to en  
erite blestyg: was repzenyd: for  
he foud not place of penance: pou  
he soughe it wry teeris: but ze han  
not come to: and to pe wrylewyn  
and myt and tempest and solun of tyn  
pe: and vois of wordis: which pei  
y herte exetale hem: y pe word  
shulde not be maad to he: for pei  
banne not: y pat was lew: and if  
a beest touchid pe hyl: it was stou  
ned: and so dredeful it was: y was  
seyn y moyses seide: I am aferd.  
and ful of tremblig: but ze han co  
myn nyz to pe hyl syon: and to pe cite  
of god luyng: pe heuently ierlm.  
and to pe mltitude of many poulad  
angels: and to pe church of pe fir  
ste me: which ben wrytun the  
nes: and to god domeina of alle: and  
to pe spirit of wry parfit me: and to  
ihu mediatour of pe newe testa

pe fier able to be touchid and able to  
come to.

met: and to pe luyng of blood.  
bece spekyng van abel: Se ze y  
ze forsake not pe speker: for if  
pei y forsaken hy y spak on pe er  
pe astapide not: moche more we  
y turuen away fro hy y speky  
us to fro heuene: whos vois pa  
ne mouede pe erpe: but not he  
agen bihet y fery: yet onys and y  
shal moue not onky erpe: but  
also heuene: and y he seyn yet comys:  
he declary pe tultation of mona  
ble pigis as of maad pigis: y po pi  
gis dwelle: y ben ymonable: y for  
we resseyng pe kyngdom ymo  
uable hane we grace: bi which  
serue we pletige to god wry drede  
and reuerence: for oun fier y wrytun

**G**od the charite of **C. xxij.**  
bynerhed dwelle in zoun: and  
nyle ze forzete holpalyte  
for bi pis: syn me pletiden to auge  
his ywer resseyued to her bozen:  
penke ze on bondun me: as ze we  
re to gude bondun: and of trauelge  
me: as ze sile dwellynge i pe ho  
dy weddigis i alle pigis houndable:  
and bed vnbemyn: for god shal de  
me fornycatouris and auowtrerys:  
be zoun manes wyponde come  
tyle: apayed wry present pigis  
for he seide: I shal not leue pee.  
neyr forsake: so y we seye tris  
tly: pe lord is an helper to me:  
I shal not drede: what am I shal  
do to me: hane ze myde of zoun  
loueyr pat han spokun to zoun pe  
word of god of which biholde ze  
pe goyng out of luyng: and luyke  
ze pe fery of hem ihu and iusturday  
and to day: he is also into wordis: my  
le ze be led away: wry dwile techy  
gis and strange: for it is best to sta

ble pe herte wry grace: and not ib  
metis: which profitede not to  
me wandrige in he: we han an  
auter of which pei y serue to pe  
tabernacle: han not power to  
ete: for of which beestis pe blood  
is bozn yn for syne into hooly pigis  
bi pe bulhop: pe bodys of hem be  
brent wyponde pe castels: for whi  
ch pig: ihu y he shulde halewe  
pe peple bi his blood: suffride wy  
poute pe zate: y fore go we out to  
hi wyponde pe castels: berige his  
reprez: for we han not here a ci  
tee dwellege: but we seken a citee  
to comyg: y fore bi hi offere we  
a sacrifice of heryng enen more  
to god: y is to seye: pe fryt of  
luyr knowlechyng to his name:  
and nyle ze forzete wel doyng and co  
mynys: for bi such sacrifice  
god is differnyd: obepe ze to zoun  
suffreyr. and be ze suget to hem:  
for pei parfytly waken: as to zel  
dige resoun for zoun souls: y pei do  
pis pig wry ioye: and not sorwige:  
for pis pig spedy not to zoun: pre  
re ze for us: and we tryste: y we  
han good consietye in alle pigis  
wyllyge to lyue wel: more ouer:  
I biledhe zoun to do: y be resto  
rid pe limer to zoun: and god of pees  
y ledde out fro depe pe greet sh  
eparde of sheep in pe blood of en  
lastige testamet oure lord ihu and  
shape zoun in al good ymyg: y ze do  
pe wille of hi: and he do in zoun y pig  
y shal plese bifore hy: bi ihu and  
to who be glorie to wordis of wordis: am  
and brypen y prepe zoun: y ze suf  
fre aword of solace: for bi ful fe  
we pigis I hane wrytun to zoun: fro  
we ze oun proper tyme the y is



send. & forp. wip whom if he  
shal come more hastily. I shal  
se you greete ze wel alle your so  
neyus. & alle hooly me ye bryne  
of ytalpe greete you wel. ye  
gite of god be wip you alle amē.  
**Here endy pe pistle to the  
vns. & bigyn pe prolog on  
pe dedis of apostles.**  
**A**ntioche of pe naciō  
of syrie whos prelig is teeld  
i pe gospel. at antioche he was a  
woyri mā of leche craft. & after  
ward a discipule of cōs apostles  
& subete poul pe apostle. he seruy  
de god i maydehod wip oute blame.  
& whāne he was four. & thre zeer  
old & four. he dyede i bythyng ful  
of pe hooly gost. & he purz. & arg. of  
pe hooly gost in pe coostis of acapē  
wroot pe gospel to fersful grekis.  
& thewede pe incarnaciō of pe lord  
by a trewe tellig. & thewede also y he  
was come of pe kyngdome of dāny  
to hē not wōnte desert wōnti po  
wer. to wite pe doynge of pe apol  
this ther mynistr. y god beige ful  
god whāne pe lone of pēdiciō was  
deed. & pe apostles hadde mād her pi  
er purz lot of pe lordis elemō. pe  
nōibre of pe apostles wer fulfild  
& also y poul shulde ceden pe doynge  
of pe apostles whō pe lord hadde cho  
si. y long tyme wylde azen pe pē  
ke. and to hē patrede & lechen god  
he wolde thewede it. bi short tellig  
rayer pā thewe for ony pēg mo  
ze lenger to hem y wlatē longe  
pēgis. knowyge y it bihōney pe ti  
lyer. y wōchp. to ete of his ovene  
fruytis. and he foond so moche g  
ce of god. y not only his medyc  
ne pfitete to bodies. but also pe

sonhs. **Jerom in his prolog**  
**on his booke ser pē**  
**Neofle first.**  
**I** made a sermon of  
alle pēgis y shi by  
gam to do & to teche into pe dāy  
of his assencion. & whāch he comā  
dite. bi pe hooly gost. to hile exō  
this whāche he hadde choi to whā  
che he thewede hē. hile a hūe. &  
tir his passiō by many argu  
mētis. apperige to hem forty  
dayes. & speke of pe reuēne of  
god. and he eet wip hē & comādi  
de y pei shulde not departe fro e  
rhm. but abyde pe biheeste of pe  
fadir. whāch ze herden he seide bi  
my mōy for John baptiste in  
watir. but ze shule be bapti  
sed in pe hooly gost. after pes se  
de dayes. perfore pei pat we  
re comū to gidre. & witen hē &  
seyde. lord whēyr in pis tyme  
you shalt restoze pe kyngdom of  
israhel. & he seide to hem. it is not  
your to knowe pe tymes epr  
mōmētis. whāch pe fadir hay  
pit i his powir. but ze shule  
take pe vertu of pe hooly gost  
conyge fro aboue into you. &  
ze shule be my witnesis i ie  
rhm. & in al iude & iunarie. &  
to pe vtmoste of pe erpe. & whā  
ne he hadde seid pes pēgis. in  
her eyt. he was lyft up. & a clōd  
de resseynede hē fro per yzen.  
& whāne pei bihelden hē gōyng  
into heuene. lo akey me stood  
biydis hē in whē dōyng. & seide  
men of galile. what stonde ze  
biholdige into heuene. yis shi  
whāch is takē up fro you into  
heuene. shal come. as ze sayen

hi gōyng into heuene. yāne pei  
tinneden azen into ierhm fro pe  
hil y is clepid of olyuete. whāch  
is biydis ierhm an halp dayes  
hūney. & whāne pei werē mō  
into pe hous whē pei dwellede.  
pei wente up into pe soler. pete  
& John. James & andrew. philip  
& thōms. bartilmeu & matheu.  
James of alpheu & symōnd zelote.  
& Judas of James. alle pes werē  
lastigly cōeyngē wip o wille  
in preier. wip wyman & marie  
pe modir of ihu. & wip his bry  
en. in po dayes petre roos up  
in pe myddel of hem. & seide. &  
pe was a cūpany of me to gidre  
al meet an hūnd & twenty  
bryen it bihōney y pe scriptu  
re be fillid. whāch pe hooly gost  
bifore seide bi pe mōy of dāny.  
of Judas pat was ledere of hē  
y token ihu. & was nōibrid a  
mōg us. & gat a part of pis  
seruyse. & yis Judas hadde a fe  
eld of pe hyze of nūthidnesse.  
& he was hangid. & to barst pe  
myddel. & alle his entrails we  
ren lthed a brood. & it was mō  
knowē to alle mē y dwelten  
i ierhm. & y pe ilke feeld was  
clepid acheldemak i pe langa  
ge of hē. y is pe feeld of blood.  
& it is witi in pe booke of sal  
mes. pe habitaciō of hē be  
mād desert. & be y noon pat  
dwelle in it. & anoy take his  
bilthopriche. y for it bihōney  
of pes mē pat be gade. &  
rid to gidre wip us in  
al pe tyme. i whāch pe lord  
ihu entride & wente out an  
ong. & bigan fro pe bap

tym of John til into pe day whā  
ich he was takē up fro us. y  
oon of pes be mād a witnes  
se of his resurrexiō wip us. &  
pei ordeynede thewe. Joseph  
y was clepid barlabas. y was  
named mist. & mathu. & pei prei  
ede. & seide. you lord y knowit  
pe hertis of alle mē. thewe who  
you hast choi of pes thewe.  
y oon take pe place of yis seruy  
se & apostilhed. of whāch Judas  
trespasside. y he shulde go into  
his place. & pei zauen lotis to  
hē. & pe lott felde on mathu. & he  
was nōibrid wip enleue apōth.  
**A**d whāne pe // C. 11.  
dayes of pentecost we  
ren fillid. alle pe disciples  
werē to gidre i pe same place.  
& suddenly y was mād a soun  
fro heuene. as of a greet wynd  
conyge. & it fillde al pe hous.  
whē pei laten. & dyuerse tū  
gis as fyer apperiden to hē. & it  
sat on ech of hem. & alle weren  
fillid wip pe hooly gost. & pei by  
gimen to speke dyuerse langa  
gis. as pe hooly gost gaf to hem  
for to speke. & pei werē in ierhm  
dwellige ierms religionle men.  
of ech naciō y is vōndir heuene. &  
whāne pis vois was mād. pe ml  
titude cam to gidre. & pei werē  
astōmped in pouit. for ech mā  
herde hē speke i his langage.  
& alle werē astōmped. & wōndrid  
& seide to gidre. whē not alle pes  
pat speke be men of galile. and  
how herde we ech mā his langa  
ge in whāch we ben bozn. par  
tly & medy & elampye. & pei pat  
dwellen at mesopotamy. Jude



capodocie & poute & alie. fri  
gie & pamfilie. egypt. & pe par  
ties of libie. p is aboue firenen.  
& comelgis romayns & ieris  
& proletris me of crete & of  
arabie. we han herd he spetige  
in our langagis pe grete p  
gis of god & alle weren a ston  
ed. & wondrit & seide to gidre  
what wole pis pig be. & ope  
stornede & seide. for pes me be  
ful of must. but petre stood wip  
pe enleuene. & reihde up his  
vois & spak to he. ze ieris & al  
le pat dwelle at ierlm. be pis  
knowu to you. & wip eiris per  
seine ze my wordis. for not as  
ze wene pes ben drnk. wha  
ne it is pe pridde our of pe day  
but pis it is. & was leid bi pe  
pfete Joel. & it shal be in pe las  
te dayes pe lord seip. I shal hea  
de out my spirit on ech fleuth.  
& your sonis & your donz & sh  
ule pfectie. & your zonge shule  
be vilious. & your eldres shule  
drene liuenenes. & on my ser  
uautis. & on my handmaydes.  
i po dayes. I shal shede out of  
my spirit. & pei shulen pfectie  
& I shal zyne grete wondris  
in heuene aboue & signes i er  
pe bmepe. blood & fyre & heete  
of smoke. pe lime shal be tun  
ned ito derknessis. & pe mone  
into blood. bifore p pe greet &  
pe appn day of pe lord come.  
& it shal be. ech ma which enet  
shal depe to help pe name of  
pe lord. shal be saif. Ze me of  
isrl heet ze pes wordis. ihu of  
nasareth a ma pceupd of god  
bifore you bi dries & wondris

& tokenes. which god dide bi hi  
in pe myddel of you as ze wne  
ze turmetide & killede bi pe  
hondis of wickid me. bi counsel  
deuyned. & bitakn bi pe for kno  
wying of god. whom god reihde.  
whie sorwis of helle were in  
boudn. bi pat p it was ipossible  
p he wer holdn of it. for damp  
sey of hi. I sanz afer pe lord bi  
foze me euer more. for he is on  
my ryzthalf. & I be not moued  
for pis pig my herte ioped & my  
tuge made fulout iope. & more  
ouer my fleish shal reste i hope  
for you shal not leue my soule  
in helle. ney you shal zyne p  
hooky to se corrupcion. you haf  
mand knowu to me pe weyes  
of hif. p shal fille me in my  
pe wip p face. bypen be it leet  
ful boldy to seie to you of pe pa  
triark. for he is ded & buried. &  
his sepulchre is amog us into pis  
daye. pfore whie he was a pro  
fete. & wite p wip a greet oop  
god hadde sworn to hi p of pe fir  
it of his leende. shulde com oute on  
his seete. he seynge afer spak of  
pe resurrexiou of cit. for ney he  
was left in helle. ney his fleish  
or corrupcion. god reihde pis  
ihu. to who we alle ben wituellis  
pfore he was enhaulid bi pe ryz  
thond of god. & puz pe biheeste  
of pe hooky gost. p he took of pe sa  
dur. he shede out pis spirit pat  
ze teen & heere. for damp stude  
net. into heuene. but he seip pe  
lord seide to my lord. sitte  
pon on my ryzthalf. til I  
putte ym enemyes. pe stool of  
p feet. pfore moost certeynly

wite al pe hous of nrael. p god ma  
de hi bope lord & cit. pis ihu who  
ze crucifide. whie pei herde pes  
pigs. pei were cepud in her te  
& pei seiden to petre. & to oye a  
posthis. bypen. what schulen  
we do. & petre seide to hem. do  
ze penance & ech of you be bap  
tisd in pe name of ihu cit. into  
remysion of your synes. & ze  
shulen take pe yfite of pe hooky  
gost. for pe biheest is to you. &  
to your sonis & to alle p ben fer.  
which enue our lord god hap de  
pid also wip ope wordis ful ma  
nye he wituellde to he. & mo  
nestide to hem & seide. be ze sa  
ued fro pis shrewid generaci  
on. pane pei pat reslyuete his  
word. were baptisd. & in pat day  
sonis were encreesid. aboute  
pe poulande. & were lastige sta  
bly in pe techig of pe aposthis. &  
in pe comynyg of pe brekig of  
breed & in pceperis. & drede was  
mand to ech ma. & many won  
dis & signes. were don bi pe  
aposthis i ierlm. & greet drede  
was in alle. & alle p bileden  
were to gidre. & hadde alle p  
gis comyne. pei seide posselions  
& castel. & departide po pigs to  
alle me. as it was nede to ech.  
& ech day pei dwellede  
stably wip o wille in pe  
temple. & brake breed aboute  
houles. & toke mete wip ful  
out iope & syplenesse of herte.  
& herde to gidre god. & hadde g  
te to al pe folk. & pe lord ecres  
fide he. p were ind saif e  
che day ito pe lame pig.  
Id petre & John. C. m.

wente up ito pe temple. at pe  
myne our of pcepyng. & a ma  
pat was lame fro pe wombe of  
his modr. was bozn. & was leid  
ech day at pe zate of pe temple.  
is leid sayz. to are almes of me  
p entriden into pe temple. pis  
whie he sayz petre & John bigy  
myge for to entre ito pe temple.  
prieete p he shulde take almes.  
& petre wip John biheeld on hy.  
& seide. biholde p into us. & he bi  
heeld into he. & hopeide p he sh  
ulde take su what of hem but  
petre seide. I hane ney siluer  
ne gold but pat p. I hane. I zyne  
to pee. in pe name of ihu crist  
of nasareth. ryle you up & go.  
& he took hi bi pe ryzthond & he  
wde hi up. & anon his leggis &  
his feet were sondid to gidre. &  
he leppide & stood. & wandride. &  
he entride wip he into pe temple.  
& wandride & leppide & heriede  
god. & al pe peple syz hi walki  
ge & heryngge god. & pei knewe  
hi. p he it was p. sat at almes  
at pe fair zate of pe temple. & pei  
were fulid wip wondrig. & sto  
nyng. in pat pig p bifelde to  
hi. but whie pei syzen petre  
& John. al pe peple ran to hem  
at pe porche. p was depid of sa  
lomon. & wondride greet  
ly. & petre syz. & auferide to  
pe peple. men of nrael. what  
wondren ze i pis pig. epu.  
what biholden ze us. as bi our  
vertu ep pouer. we made pis  
ma for to walke. god of abra  
hm & god of Isaac & god of Jacob.  
god of our fadris. hap glorified  
his sone ihu. who ze bitrayede.



denyede before pe face of pilat. Whine he denyde hi to be dehynerid. but ze denyede pe hooly & pe ryghtful. & aride amalleet to be zouni to zouni. & ze alone pe makef of lyf. Whom god rey lide fro deop of who we beu wit nellis. & pe fery of his name. he hay cofermid yis ma who ze seen & knowe pe name of hi & yis by hi. zat to yis man ful heelp in pe fyt of alle zouni. & now bypen y woot. y bi vullu tyng ze dide as allo zouni. pnces but god y before tolde bi pe mo up of alle profetis. y his crut thulde enffre. hay fillid so y fore be ze repentant & be ze co uertid. y zouni fynes be dona way. y whine pe tymes of re frenthig thulen come fro pe ert of pe lord. & he thal fode ylle ihu ct y is now prechid to zouni who it bihouey heuene to relseyne. into pe tymes of rethruccio of alle pigis. Whi ch ye lord spak bi pe mony of his hooly pfetis fro pe world. for moyses seide. for ye lord zouni re god thal reile me to zouni a profete of zouni bypen. as me ze thulde heer hy by alle pi gis. what eu he thal speke to zouni. & it thal be y eny ma y thal not heer pe ilke p fete. thal be destryped fro pe pe ple. & alle pfetis fro sam. Ward nel & afur. pat spaken. teelden pes dayes. but ze ben pe lones of pfetis. & of pe testamet pat god ordeynede to our fadris. & seide to abrahim. in y seed. alle pe meynes of erpe thulde be

blethid. god reilde his sone first to zouni. & sente hi blethige zouni. y ech ma cohte hi. fro his wit bidnesse. **A**d while pei spake to pe peple. pe prestis & magistratis of pe temple & pe saduce y pei tanyte pe peple. & telden in ihu pe azeuifing. fro deop. & pei leyde hondis on he. & putten den hem ito ward. ito pe moxwe. for it was pane euentid. but many of hem y hadden herd pe word. bileuete. & pe noubre of me was maad fyue poulandis. & a moxwe it was don. y re pncis of he & pe eldze me. & tribus were gedrid i ierlm. & anas. pnce of prestis & capfas & john. & alisandze. & how many eue we re of pe kynde of prestis. & pei settide he in pe myddel. & exide in what & tu ey in what name. han ze doon yis pig. y pane pe tre was fillid wip ye hooly go ost. & seide to he. ze pncis of pe peple and ze eldze me. heere ze. if we to day bede myd in ye good dede of a syk man. i who yis ma is maad laif. be it kno wu to zouni alle. & to al pe peple of urael. y in ye name of ihu ct of na. & areth. whom ze crucified. whom god reilde fro deop. in pis. pi ma stouid y hool. before zouni. yis is re stoon. which was repperyd of zouni bildige. which is maad into ye heed of pe corner. and heelp is not in ony opir. for nep of name vndir heuene is zouni to me. i which it biho

ney us to be maad laif. & pei sy en pe studefastnesse of petre & of iohn. for it was fouden pat pei were me vntetrid & lewid me. & pei wondze & knewen he y pei were wip ihu. & pei apzen ye ma y was heehd ston dige wip hem. & pei myzte no pig azen seye. but pei comandi den hem to go forp wipoute pe coucel. & pei spaken to gidze. & seiden. what thulen we do to res me. for ye signe is maad. knouhu bi he. to alle me y dnel len at ierlm. it is apyn. & we moxw not denye. but y it be no more pupplid into ye pe ple. manase we to he. y pei spe ke no more in pis name to ony me. & pei depide he. & denouice den to he. y on no man pei sthul den speke. nep teche in ye name of ihu. but petre & john answere den. & seiden to hem. if it be ryghtful in ye fyt of god to hee. zouni rapn pan god. deme ze. for we mote nedis speke po pigis. pat we han seyn & herd. & pei manafiden & leften hem. & fou den not how pei thulde pony the he. for ye peple. for alle me clarifide vat pig. y was don i vat y was bifalle. for ye man was moze pa of fourty zeer. i which yis ligue of heelp was maad. & whine pei were dehyu ed pei came to her felonis. & teelde to he. how grete pigis ye pnces of prestis & ye eldze me hadde seid to he. & whine pei herde wip oon herte pei rei seden vois to pe lord. & seide. lord pou pat madist heuene & erpe

se & alle pigis y ben in he. whi ch seidist bi ye hooly goft bi ye mony of oure fadir dany y ch ild. wip heepe me gnadiden wip teep to gidze. & ye pepis pouz ten. veyn pigis. figis of ye erpe stode up. & pnces come to gidze in oon azeus ye lord ye lord. & a zeus his ct. for verily eroude & poice pilat wip heven men & pepis of urael came to gidze in yis citee azeus yin hooly child ihu whom pou anoyntidest. to do ye pigis y yin hond & y coucel demede to be don. & now lord bi hold into ye pretenyngis of he & graute to y seruantis to spe ke y word wip al trist. i y pig y pou holde forp yin hond y hee pis & signes & wondzis be ma ad. bi ye name of yin hooly sone ihu. & whine pei hadden pried. ye place was moued. in which pei were gaderid. & alle were fillid wip ye hooly goft. & spa ke ye word of god wip trist. & of ye mltitude of me bileyge. was oon herte & oon wille. nep ony ma seide ony pigis of po pigis. y he weeldide to be his onue. but alle pigis were co myne to hem. & wip greet & th y apostlis zeldide wip neffig of ye azeuifig of ihu ct our lord. & greet grace was i alle hem. for nep ony uedy man was amog he. for how many enen weren possessoris of feeldis epur of houhis. pei sel den & bzouzte ye pris of po pi gis y pei selde & leyde before ye feet of ye apo. ths. & it was departid. to ech. as it



was nede to ech forsope joleph  
was named bar sabas of apost  
his y is to sepe ye lone of confort  
of ye lymage of leeny amā of ci  
pre. whne he hadde a feeld solde  
it & brouzte ye pris. & leide it bi  
fore ye feet of apostlis. **C. v.**

**B**ut amā anany bi name  
was sathira his wyf. sol  
de a feeld. & defraudide of  
ye pris of ye feeld & his wyf was  
writige. & he brouzte a part & lei  
de bfore ye feet of ye apostlis.  
& petre seide to hi. zmany whi  
hap sathanas tēptid ym herte.  
yon lye to ye hooly goost. & to de  
fraude of ye pris of ye feeld.  
wher it vuseeld was not ym. &  
whne it was seeld it was i pipo  
wer. whi hast you putt pris ym  
in ym herte. y hast not lyed to  
me. but to god. anany herde yis  
wordis. & felde dolu & was deed.  
& greet drede was maad on alle y  
herde. & zonge me risen & moue  
de hi away. & baren hi out & bur  
ide. & pere was maad as a space  
of pre ouris. & his wyf knele  
not pat yis y was don. & entride  
& petre answere to hir. wōmā  
seie to me. wher ze selden ye fe  
eld for so moche. & she seide zhe  
for so moche. & petre seide to hir.  
what bifel to you. to tēpte ye spi  
rit of ye lord. lo ye feet of hem  
y han buried ym hōlōbonde ben  
at ye doze. & yei shulen bere yee  
out. anon she felde dou at his  
feet. & diede. & ye zonge me en  
triden & fōnden hir deed. & yei ba  
ren hir out & buride to hir hōlō  
bonde. and greet drede was ma  
ad in al ye church. & into

alle y herden yis ygis. & bi ye  
hoondis of ye apostlis. signes  
& many woundis were maad in  
ye peple. & alle were of con accord  
in ye porche of salomō. but no  
man of opur durste ioyne hi. sū  
whi he. but ye peple magnified  
he. & ye multitude of me. & of yis  
me bileunge in ye lord. was  
more encreesid. so pat yee brou  
zite out syke me into streets.  
& leiden i lūl beddis & couchis.  
whne petre cam nameli ye shā  
dow of hi shulde shadowe ech  
of hem. & yei shulde be deliyed  
fro her synnestis. and ye multi  
tude of citees nyz to ierlm ran.  
bryngyge syke me. & y were tra  
nelid of vndene spiritis. whiche  
alle weren heeld. but ye pnce of  
prestis roos up. & alle y were  
wy hi. y is ye erelie of saduce  
is. & were fillid wy enye. & lei  
den hōndis on ye apostlis. & put  
tide he in ye cony warde. but ye  
āngel of ye lord openide hy nyz  
te ye zatis of ye pson. & ledde he  
out & leide go ze & stonde ze & he  
ke in ye tēple to ye peple. alle  
ye wordis of yis lūf. whi whne  
pei hadde herd yei entride eerly  
into ye tēple & tazyte. & ye pnce  
of prestis cam. & yei y were  
wy hi. & depide to gidze ye cō  
cil. & alle ye eldze me of ye chil  
dren of israhel. & senten to ye pri  
sou. yee yei shulde be brouzt wy  
& whane ye mynistis cam. fōu  
den he not. & for ye pson was  
openyd. yei turnede asen & fel  
den & leiden. we fōnde ye pson  
schitt wy al diligēce. & ye kepe  
ris stōndige at ye zatis. but we

openyd. & fōnden no mā y yne  
as ye maneratis of ye tēple.  
& ye pnces of pntis herde yis wor  
dis. yei douteden of he. whi was  
don. but amā cam. & telde to hem  
for lo ye me whiche ze han putt i  
to pson. ben in ye tēple & stonden  
& techen ye peple. pane ye malet  
trat. wente wy ye mynistis.  
& brouzte hem wyoute violence  
for yei dzedde ye peple. lest yei sh  
ulden be stōoned. & whne yei had  
de brouzt he. yei lettide hem i ye  
cōcil. & ye pnce of prestis. ari  
de hem & seide. i comāndmet we  
comānden you. y ze shulde not  
teche in yis name. & lo ze han fil  
lid ierlm wy you. techis. & ze  
wolen bryngē on vs ye blood of  
yis mā. & petre answere & ye a  
postlis & leiden. it bihouey to obere  
to god. moze pan to me. god of ou  
re fadris reilide ihu. whi ze slo  
wen. hangyngē in a tre. god en  
haūcde wy his rythōnd yis pnce  
& saupour. y penance wer. zo  
uū to us. & remysion of synes.  
& we ben witnesis of yis wordis.  
& ye hooly goost. whi god zaf to al  
le obeitēge to hi. whne yei her  
den yis ygis. yei were turnen  
tid. & yozte to sle he. but a man  
ros in ye cōcil. a farle gama  
hel bi name. adōtour of ye lawe.  
a wordlyful mā to al ye peple. &  
comāndide ye me to be putt wy  
oute forp. for a while. & he seide  
to hem. ze me of israhel take tent  
to you sū on yis me. whi ze sh  
ulen do. for bfore yis dāyes. oēo  
das pat seide hi sū to be sū mā.  
to whom anouēze of me consenti  
de. aboute fōur hūndid. whiche was

slayn. & alle y bileuete to hi. were  
disparpelid & brouzt to nouyt. af  
tir yis judas of galile was i ye  
dāyes of pfectiō. & turnede alwey  
ye peple attir hi. & alle hōw many  
eue cōsentide to hi. were staterid  
& he peritid. & nou yfōze. & seie  
to you. departe ze fro yis me. &  
suffre ze he. for if yis cōcil ey  
werk is of me. it shal be vndon.  
but if it is of god. ze mōuū not. vū  
do hem. lest pauētū. ze be fōndū  
to repugne god. & yei cōsentide  
to hi. & yei depide to gidze ye apōst  
lis. & denouēce to hem y were be  
tū. y yei shulde no moze speke i  
ye name of ihu. & yei leete he go.  
& yei wente ioyge fro ye syt of  
ye cōcil. y yei were had wyzi  
to suffre dispilg. for ye name  
of ihu. but ech dāy yei ceeiden  
not in ye tēple. & aboute hōules.  
to teche & to preche ihu cū. **C. vi.**  
**B**ut in po dāyes. whne ye  
nouēze of dispilis enca  
side. ye grekis grūachide  
asen ye ebreis. for y her wōdōbi  
were dispilid in euē dāyes. my  
nistrige. & ye abelue depiden  
to gidze ye multitude of dispils  
& leiden. it is not ryz ful. y we le  
ue ye word of god. & mynistren  
to bōdis. yfōze bryen biholdē ze  
me of you. of good fame. ful of  
ye hooly goost. & of wysdom. whi  
che we shulen ordeyne on yis  
werk. for we shulen be bily to  
preier & preche ye word of god.  
& ye word pleside bfore alle ye  
multitude. & yei cheside steneue  
amā ful of fery. & of ye hooly goost.  
& philyp & procoze & nycanor. &  
tymon & parmanam & nicol a



comelyng A mā of antioche / per  
depede pēte bīfore pe list of apost  
lis: & per pērede & leyde hōndis  
on hem / & pe word of pe lord w  
de: & pe noubre of discipulis i neri  
sale was moche multiplied / also  
moche cūpany of pētris: obey  
ede to pe fery / & stenen ful of  
gite & of strengpe: made wondris  
& greete signes in pe peple / but  
sūme risen of pe synagoge pat  
was depid libertyns: & cirenen  
lis: & of mē of alisaūdre: & of hē  
p iwerē of alice & of ahe: & dīspu  
tūde wip steneue / & per mīstē not  
wip stōnde pe wīldom & pe spūit  
p spak / pāne per pūely sentē mē  
pat sthūle sepe p per herde hī ser  
yngē wōrdis of blasfemye azens  
moyses & god: & so per monede  
to gidre pe peple: & pe eldre mē  
& pe strībis / & per rānen to gidre  
& taken hī: & brouzte into pe cōn  
cil: & per ordeynede fālle wātnes  
lis: p seide / vis mā ceelshy not to  
speke wōrdis azens pe hooly pla  
ce & pe lānge / for we herde hym  
serynge / p vis ihe of nālareth  
sthal dīstrūpe vis place: & sthal  
dānge pe tradiciōis: whiche mo  
yles bytook to vs: & alle mē pat  
lāten in pe cōncil biheldē hī: &  
sazzen his face: as pe face of an  
āngel. **C. vii.**

**A**d pe pnce of pāris sei  
de to steneue / whep pes  
pīgis hān hem so: whiche seide / bi  
sen & fadris heer / & god of glorie  
apperide to oū fadir abrahā: w  
ne he was i mesopotamye: bīfore  
p he dwelte in carrā: & seide to hī  
go out of y lond: & of y kīnrede:  
& come into pe lond whiche i sthal

sthebe to pee / pāne he wete out  
of pe lond of caldeis: & dwelte in  
carrā: & fro pēms afen: p hīs  
fadir was deed: he tūllatide hī  
into yis lond: in whiche ze dwelle  
nou: & he zaf not to hī: eritage  
i it: ney a pāis of a foot: but he  
bīstē to zyne hī it iō possēsiō:  
& to hīs seel afen hī: whiche he had  
de not a sone: & god spak to hī: p  
hīs seel sthal be comelig i an ahe  
lond: & per sthūlen make hē lūget  
to seruage: & sthūle ynel treete  
hem foure hūndred zeeris: & pūti  
& i sthal hūge pe folc: to whiche  
per sthūlen serue sepe pe lord: &  
afen pes pīgis per sthūle gon out:  
& per sthūlen serue to me in yis  
place: & he zaf to hī pe testamēt  
of circūsiō: & so he gendred  
īaac: & circūsidē hī in pe eyntre  
day: & īaac gedred īacob: & īa  
cob gendred pe tūelue patriar  
kis: & pe patriarkis hadde enye  
to ioseph: & seelde hī into egypt:  
& god was wip hī: & dehyūde hī  
of alle hīs tribulaciōis: & zaf to  
hī grace & wīldom i pe list of  
farao kīg of egypt: & he ordeyne  
de hī lōueyn on egypt: & on al hīs  
hōus: & hūgre cam iō al egypt  
& canaan: & greet tribulaciō: &  
oū fadris fōūde not mete: but  
whiche īacob hadde herd p wbee  
te was in egypt: he sente oū  
fadris first: & in pe secūde tyme  
ioseph was knowū of hīs brīpē:  
& hīs kīn was maad knowū to  
farao: and ioseph sente & depēde  
īacob hīs fadir: & al hīs kīnre  
de seuentē & fyne mē: & īacob  
cam dōwū iō egypt: & was deed:  
he & oū fadris: & per wēren

tūllatid into egypt: & wēren leid  
i pe sepulch p abrahā bonzte bi  
pīs of siluer of pe sones of e  
moz: pe sone of eichen: & whiche  
pe tyme of bīheeste cam mīz: wh  
ich god had knowleched to abra  
hā: p peple wēre i mīstph  
ede i egypt: tū anōp kīg roos i  
egypt: whiche knew not ioseph:  
pīs bīgylde oū: & tūmētide oū  
re fadris: p per sthūle pūtte  
alwey her zong: chīldre: for per  
sthūle not hūne: in pe same tyme  
moyses was born: & he was  
loued of god: & he was noustid  
pe monepis: in pe hōus of hīs fa  
dir: & whiche he was put out in  
pe flood: pe dōmtr of faraο to  
of hī wip & noustid hī into hī  
sone: & moyses was lērnē i al pe  
wīldom of egyptians: & he was mīstph  
i hīs wōrdis & wērkis: but wh  
āne pe tyme of fourty zeer w  
fild to hī: it roos wip into hīs  
herde: p he sthūle wīste hīs bī  
sen pe sones of īsrl: & whiche he  
saz amā sūstūge wōng: he  
wengite hī: & dīde wēaūce for  
hī p sūstūte pe wōng: & he  
fildde pe egyptian: for he geish  
de p hīs brīpē sthūle vndr stō  
de p god sthūle zyne to hem hel  
pe bi pe hōnd of hī: but per vū  
dīstōden not: for in pe day sū  
yngē: he apperide to hē chīdige:  
& he acōrdite hē in pees & seide:  
mē ze hē brīpē / whi nōp ze ech  
opir: but he p dīde pe wōng  
to hīs nezeboze: pūttide hī alwey  
& seide: wwho ordeynede pee pnce  
& dōmīnā on vs: wber p wāt  
sle me: as sūstūday p fildde  
pe egyptian: and in yis wōrd

moyses flier: & was maad a co  
melig in pe lond of madian: w  
re he bīgāt tūbey sones: & whiche  
he hadde fildid fourty zeer: an ā  
gel apperide to hī in fier of flāw  
me of a bōlth in desert of pe mōūt  
of sīna: & moyses sūz: & wōdri  
de on pe sūz: & whiche he neze  
to bīholde: pe wōis of pe lord was  
maad to hī & seide: i am god of iou  
& fadris: god of abrahā: god of  
īacob: god of īsaac: moyses w  
maad tremblige: & dūstē not bī  
holde: but god seide to hī: dō of pe  
sthoon of yī feet: for pe place i  
whiche p stōndist: is hooly erpe:  
i seeynge hī: pe tūmētys of mī  
peple p is in egypt: & i herde pe  
mōzēys of hē: and i cam dōwū  
to dehyūere hē: & nōw come pou:  
& i sthal seide pee into egypt:  
pīs moyses wwhom per denyede  
seeynge wwho ordeynede pee  
pnce & dōmīnā on vs: god  
seide pīs pnce & zēnbiere: w  
pe hōnd of pe āngel: p apperide  
to hī in pe bōlth: pīs moyses lād  
de hē out: & dīde wōndris & sig  
nes in pe lond of egypt: & in pe  
reed see & i desert fourty zeeris:  
pīs is moyses p seide to pe sone  
of īrael: god sthal reue to zōnā  
p fete of zōnā: bīpēn: as me ze  
sthūlen heer hī: pīs it is p w  
in pe chīrche in wīldōnnele w  
pe āngel p spak to hī in pe mōūt  
sīna & wip oū fadris: whiche  
took wōrdis of hē to zyne to us:  
to wwhom oū fadris wōlde not  
obey: but pūttide hī alwey: &  
wēre tūrnēd alwey i heris in  
to egypt: seeynge to ānōn: mā  
ke pou to us goddis p sthūle go



bifore us for to pis moyses p  
ledde us out of pe lond of egypt.  
we wite not what is don to hi  
¶ pei made a calf i po dayes: &  
offride a sacrifice to pe man  
met. ¶ pei were glad in pe wer  
his of her hondis: & god turne  
de & bitook hem to serue to pe  
furythod of heuene: as it is wri  
tū i pe book of psetis. wher  
ze hous of israel offride to me.  
slayn sacrifices & sacrifices  
fourty zeer in desert: & ze han  
take pe tabernacle of moloc &  
pe ster of zoin god renfann.  
figuris p ze han maid to worlde  
pe he: & i thal ciuillate zoin i to  
habiloyn: pe tabernacle of wit  
nessig was wyon: fadris in  
desert: as god dispote to he &  
spak to moyses: p he shulde ma  
ke it after pe fourme pat he say  
which also our fadris token wy  
shū & brouzte into pe possession  
of here men: which god putti  
de away fro pe face of our fa  
dris. til in pe dayes of damp  
p found grace anetis god: & ar  
ide p he shulde fyde a tabernacle  
to god of iacob: but salamo bildide  
pe hous to hi: but pe hys god dwel  
hy not in pigis maid bi hond: as  
he seip bi pe profete: heuene is  
a seete to me. & pe erpe is pe stool  
of my feet: what hous shule ze  
bylde to me seip pe lord: ey what  
place is of my resting: wher  
my hond made not alle pes ym  
gis: wy hand nol & vnrculi  
did hertis & eeris ze wrytode en  
more pe hooly goost: & as zoin fa  
dris so ze: who of pe psetis ha not  
zoin fadris purfined: & han slayn

hem pat bifor teelden of pe comys  
of pe ryzful mā: whos trantōs  
¶ manleeris ze were nōk: wh  
che tooken pe lawe in ordynance  
of angelis: & han not kept it: &  
pei herde pese pigis & were dys  
ly turmetid in her hertis. & gren  
netē wy teep on hi: but whne he  
uene was ful of pe hooly goost: he  
biheeld into heuene & syz pe glori  
e of god. & ihu stonde on pe ryz  
half of pe vertu of god: & he seide  
lo i se heuene openyd: & māys  
loue stonde on pe ryzhalf of pe  
vtn of god: & pei cryede wy agre  
et voys: & stoppide her eeris. &  
maiden wy o wille an almyt  
ito hi: and pei brouzte hi out of  
pe citee: & stoonete & pe wnter  
his dide of her cloys. bihydis pe  
feet of azong mā: p was clepid  
saule: and pei stoonete heuene:  
pat clepide god to helpe seynge  
lord ihu resseynue my spirit: & he  
knele & cede wy a greet voys &  
seide: lord sette not to he pis syne  
& whne he hadde seid pis pig: he dede  
**B**ut saul was cō. ¶ **vm**  
seynge to his deip: & gree  
psecution was maid pat  
day i pe chyrche p was in ierlm  
& alle me were waterid bi pecu  
treis of iude & samarie: outta  
kū pe aposthis: but good me bi  
riete heuene: & maide greet no  
yng on hy: but saul greetly dis  
tryede pe chyrche & entride bi hou  
lis: & drōke me & wyne. & bi  
took he into pson: & pei were  
waterid: passide fory: prechge  
pe word of god. ¶ **¶** had filip cam  
dowu into a citee of samarie:  
& prechde to hem cō: & pe pe

ple zat tent to pes pigis p were  
seid of filip: wy o wille heeri  
ge & seynge pe signes p he dide  
for manye of he pat hadden vcle  
ne spiritis: cryede wy a greet  
voys & wente out: & many lyke  
in pe paleste & crokid were hee  
lid: pfore greet iope was maid  
in pat citee. ¶ **¶** was amā  
in p citee whos name was symo  
id a wyche pat hadde disseyned  
seynge p hi self was li greet  
mā: whom alle herkenede fro pe  
leete to pe mooste: & seide: pis  
is pe vertu of god: which is de  
pid greet: & pei leuened hy for  
long tyme he hadde maddid hem  
wy his wyche: & as: but whā  
ne pei hadde bileyned to filip p  
pchy of pe kyngdom of god: men  
& wyemen were baptid i pe na  
me of ihu cō: & pāne allo symonid  
hi self bileuede: & whāne he was  
baptid: he drow to filip & he say  
allo signes & greet vtues were  
don: he was a stoned & wondri  
de: but whne pe aposthis p were  
at ierlm hadde herd p samarie  
hadde resseyned pe word of god:  
pei sente to hem petre & ioon: &  
whne pei came: pei preide for  
he p pei shulde resseynue pe hooly  
goost: for he cam not 3t into ony  
of hem: but pei were baptid oon  
ly in pe name of pe lord ihu: pā  
ne pei seide hondis on he: & pei  
resseynede pe hooly goost: & whā  
ne symonid hadde seyn: p pe hoo  
ly goost was zoin by leynig on  
of hondis of pe aposthis: & he pro  
feride to hem money & seide: 3y  
ne ze allo to me pis power pat  
whē ever i shal seye on my hon

dis: p he resseynue pe hooly goost  
but petre seide to hi: pi money be  
wy pee into perdition: for you  
gesliden ze zifte of god shulde be  
had for money: p is no part ne so  
ort to pee: in pis word: for pi her  
te is not ryzful bifore god: pfore  
do you penance for pis wickidnes  
se of pee: & preie god: if pāuete  
pis pouzt of ym herte be forzoun  
to pee: for i se p pērt i pe galle  
of bitternesse: & in pe bond of wic  
kidnesse: & symonid answeride &  
seide: preie ze for me to pe lord: p  
no pig of pes pigis p ze han seid  
come on me: & pei wnten thē & spa  
ken pe word of pe lord: & zede azen  
to ierlm & pchde to many citrees  
of samarieans: & an angel of pe  
lord: spak to filip & seide: ruse p  
& go azen pe loy: to pe weye  
pat goy dou fro ierlm into gala  
pis is desert: & he roos & wente fory  
& lo amā of ethapie: a myrti mā  
seruant a geldyng of candace pe  
queene of ethapiens. which wes  
on alle hir richellis: cā to worlde  
pe i ierlm: & he turnede are litige  
in his chare: & redige i laye pe  
profete: & pe spirit seide to filip  
nerse p: & ioyne pee to pis chare  
& filip ran to & herde hi redige  
flaye pe psete: & he seide: gesit  
p: wher you vnderstodist: what  
pigis p redist: & he seide: hōk  
may i if no mā shenke to me: &  
he preide filip: p he shulde come  
rep: & litte wy hi: & pe place of pe  
scripture p he redde: was pis  
as a sheep he was ledd to sleyn  
& as a lomb bifore amā p other  
hi: is doib wyoute voys: so he o  
penide not his mou: i mekenesse



his doom was takē up / who shal  
telle out ye genaciō of hi / for  
his lyf shal be takē away fro ye  
erpe / and ye geldig answere to  
filip / & seide / I bileche pee / of what  
pfeite lew he vis pig / of hi self  
erpe of our our / & filip openide  
his mouy / & bigan at pis tyme  
to prechide to hi ihu / & pe while pei  
weten bi ye weye / pei came to a  
bath / & pe geldig seide / lo watir  
who forbedy me to be baptisid / &  
filip seide / if you bileuest of al ye  
herte / it is lechful / & he answere  
to seide / I bileue y ihu cō is ye so  
ne of god / & he comāndide ye cha  
re to stonde stille / & pei weten  
don boye into ye watir / filip & ye  
geldig / & filip baptiside hi / & whā  
ne pei were come up of ye watir  
ye spirit of ye lord rāysshite fi  
hp / & ye geldig sayd hy no more  
filip was found in azotus / &  
he passide forp / & pchide to alle ci  
ties / til he cam to cesarie // **C. 11.**  
**B**ut saul zit ablonser of  
manalis & of betigis a  
zens ye distiphs of ye lo  
rd / cam to ye pnce of prestis / & ar  
ide of hi lettris to damask to ye  
synagogis / y if he fond our me  
& wyme of vis lyf / he shulde le  
de he bound to ierlm / and whā  
he made his journey / it bifelde  
y he cam ny to damask / & sude  
ly a lizt frō heuene shoon abou  
te hi / & he fallide to ye erpe / & her  
de a vois seynge to hi / saul saul  
what pursuest y me / & he seide  
who art thou lord / & he seide / I am  
ihu of nazareth / whom y pfluett  
it is hard to pee / to kile mens ye  
pcke / & he tremblide & wondide

& seide / lord what wolt thou par  
do / & ye lord seide to hi / rise up & en  
tre into ye citee / & it shal be led  
to pee / what it bihouey pee to do  
& yo me y weten wy hi / stoden  
astonyed / for pei herde abois / but  
pei sizen no mā / & saul roos fro ye  
erpe / & whā he was risen were ope  
nyd / he sayd no pig / & pei drōke  
hi bi ye hondis / & ledde hi into da  
mask / & he was ye days not seynge  
& he eet not neyr drank / & adis  
ciple anany bi name / was at  
damask / & ye lord seide to hi / a  
viliou anany / & he seide / lo I lord  
ye lord seide to hi / ryle pou & go  
into a strete y is clepid rectus  
& seke in ye hous of judas sau  
le bi name of tharle / for lo he pi  
ep / & he sayd amā anany bi name  
entuge & seynge on hi hondis / y  
he resseynge sxt / & anany answere  
ride / lord I haue herd of manye  
of vis man / how grete yuels he  
dide to y seyntis i ierlm / & vis hap  
porbor of ye pnces of prestis  
to hynde alle me y clepen y na  
me to help / & ye lord seide to hi  
go y for vis is to me a vessel of  
chelyng / y he bere my name bifor  
hepe men & kigis & tofore ye so  
nes of israhel / for I shal thewe  
to hi / how grete pizis it biho  
uey hi to suffre for my name  
& anany wete & entride to ye  
hous / & leyde on hi his hondis &  
seide / saul broy ye lord ihu seide  
me y aperide to pee in ye weye  
i which y comest / y pou se / & be  
fulfillid wy ye hooly gost / & a  
noo as ye italis felde fro his ye  
he resseynge sxt / and he roos / &  
was baptisid / & whā he hadde ta

bi mete / he was confortid / & he  
was bi sū dayes wy ye distiphs  
y were at damask / & anoo he en  
trede into ye synagogis / & pchide  
de ye lord ihu / for vis is ye sone  
of god / & alle me pat herde hym  
wondide / & seiden / where vis is  
not he y impugne i ierlm / heu  
y clepide to help vis name / & hdiu  
he cam for vis pig / y he shulde  
lete hem bound to ye pnces of  
prestis / but saul moche ye more  
weride strong / & confortid de ye  
ye was y dwelide at damask / & af  
ter myte y vis is cō / & whā ma  
ny dayes were fillid / ierlm ma  
den a conseil y pei shulde sle hy  
& ye apstres of he were mand kno  
wē to saul / & pei kepte ye zatis  
day & nyte / y pei shulde sle hi / but  
his distiphs tooken hy bi nyte  
& deliynde hi & leete hy doibn ma  
leep bi ye wal / & whā he cam i  
to ierlm / he asayde to ioyne hi to  
ye distiphs / & alle dreden / & leue  
de not y he was a distiple / but  
barnabas took & ladde hi to ye  
aposthis / & teelde to he / how in  
ye weye he hadde seyn ye lord  
& y he spak to hi / & how in dam  
ask he dide tithy / i ye name of  
ihu / & he was wy he & entide & ze  
de out i ierlm / & dide tithy in  
ye name of ihu / & he spak wy he  
pen me / & distipide wy grekis  
& pei souzte to sle hi / which pig  
whā ye bryen hadde knowe / pei  
ledde hi bi nyte to cesarie / & lete  
hi go to taris / & ye churche bi al  
judē & galile & samarie hadde pe  
es / & was edyfyed & walkide i pe  
dyete of ye lord / & was fillid w  
confort of ye hooly gost / & it by

felde y petre / ye while he passide  
aboute alle / cam to ye hooly men  
y dwelide at lude / and he found  
amā enas bi name y fro exte  
zeer he hadde sepe in bed / & he was  
syle in passye & petre seide to hi  
Enas ye lord ihu cō heele pee  
ryle you & arape pee / & anoo he ro  
os / & alle me y dweliden at lude  
& at sarone sayd hi / whiche were  
conuertid to ye lord / & in ioye was  
a distiphe whos name was tabi  
ta / y is to seie doctas / vis was ful  
of good werkis & almesdeis pat  
she dide / & it bifel in yo dayes / y  
she was syk & diede / & whā pei  
hadden wailthi hyr pei leide hyr  
i a soler / & for lidda was myz ioye  
ye distiphs herde y petre was per  
yne / and sente raye me to hy &  
preiede y pou tarie not to come  
to us / & petre roos up / & cam w  
he / & whā he was comm / pei led  
den hi into ye soler & alle wido  
wis stode aboute hy / & kepige &  
otherwige cootis & dovis / whiche  
doctas made to he / & whā alle me  
were pnt wyoute forp / petre  
kneide & preie / & he turnede to  
ye bodie / & seide / tabita ryle you  
& she openyde hyr yren / & whā  
she sayd petre she sayd up aze / &  
he took hyr bi ye hond / & reside  
hyr / & whā he hadde clepid ye hoo  
ly me & widows / he assignede hyr  
alyne / & it was mand knowē bi al  
ioyde & manye bileuede in ye lord  
& it was mand y may dayes he dw  
ellide i ioye / at conlymōnd a corio  
**A**oran was i ce // **C. 12.**  
sarie cornehe bi name  
a centurien of ye cūpāye  
of knyghtis y is leid of yralie / a



religious mā: & dreedige ve lord  
 by al his meyne / doynge many  
 almes to pe peple: & preynge  
 pe lord evermore / pis sayz i a  
 vision openly as i pe nyne our  
 of pe day: an aūgel of god entri  
 ge into hy: & seynge to hi / corne  
 lye / & he biheeld hi & was adrad  
 & seide / who art y lord / & he sei  
 de to hi / y prieris & ym almes  
 dedis: han styed up into myde  
 m pe sūt of pe lord / & now sen  
 de pou me into joppe: & clepe  
 oon symonit. y is named petre  
 pis is herbord at aman symonit  
 coriour: whos hous is bihydis  
 pe see / pis shal seye to pee: whi  
 it bihouey pee to do / & whine pe  
 aūgel y spak to hi: was gon a  
 wey: he clepde alwey me of his  
 hous: & a knyzt y dreedde pe lord.  
 whiche weren at his biddis: &  
 whine he hadde toold he alle pes  
 pigis: he sente he into joppe: &  
 on pe day synge while pei ma  
 den journey: & neyete to pe ci  
 te: petre wente up in pe hysse  
 place of pe hous to prie abou  
 te pe lyte our: & whine he was  
 hūgrid: he wolde haue ete / but  
 while pei made redy: a rany  
 shing of spirit: felle on hi: & he  
 spz heuene opoyd: & a uessel  
 comyge don as a greet sheete  
 wyfoun corneris to be lette  
 down fro heuene ito erpe / i wh  
 ich were alle four footid beestz  
 & crepige of pe erpe: & volatils  
 of heuene: & a vois was maid  
 to hi / ryle y petre ble & ete / and  
 petre seide / lord forbete: for i ne  
 uer eet ony comy pig & vnde  
 ne / & ete pe secūde tyme pe vois

was maid to hy / y pig pat god  
 hay clenid: seie pou not vnde  
 ne / & pis pis was don bi pries  
 & anoon pe vessel was relleyned  
 agen / & while y petre doutide  
 yne hi eile what pe vision was  
 y he spz: lo ye me y were sent  
 fro cornely: soute pe hous of sy  
 monit & stode at reiate / & whine  
 pei hadde clepid: pei aride if sy  
 monit y is named petre: hadde  
 per herboze / & while petre pouzte  
 on pe vision: pe spirit seide to hi  
 lo ye me seke pe ffore ryle pou  
 & godou & go wyf & dūre pou  
 no pig for i seke hem and ped  
 cam don to pe men: & seide / lo  
 i am who ze seke what is pe  
 cause: for which ze ben come  
 and pei seide / cornehe pe cūrie  
 a rust man & dreedde god &  
 hay good carue llyng of alle  
 pe folk of je wis: took answere of  
 an hooly angel to clepe ye per ito  
 his hous & to her wordis of pe  
 ffore he ledde he yne: & relleyned  
 de i herboze / & y nyst pei dike llyde  
 wyf / & in pe day synge he roo  
 & wente fory wyf he & hūme of  
 pe byperē folowide hi fro joppe.  
 y pei be vitnellis to petre / & pe  
 opir day he entride into cesarie  
 & cornehe abood he: wyf his co  
 syns & necessarie frendes pat  
 were clepid to gidre / & it was  
 don whine petre was comē in:  
 cornehe cam mettyge hi & fell  
 don at his feet: & worlthwilde hi  
 but petre reise hi: & seide / a  
 ryle y: also y my self am a mā  
 as pou / & he spak wyf hi & wote  
 yne & fond manye y were comē  
 to gidre / & he seide to he ze wite

how abhominable it is to a jew:  
 to be joynd: ey to come to a shē  
 but god thewde to me pat no  
 man seie aman comē ey vnde  
 ne: for which ying / cam whane  
 y was clepid: wyf oute dōutyns  
 yfore / & are zon: for what cause  
 han ze clepid me: & cornehe seide  
 to day four dayes into pis our /  
 was preynge & fastige i pe ny  
 pe our i my hous / & lo a mā stood  
 bifore me i a whit clooy: & seide  
 cornehe y pier is herd: & ym  
 almes dedis be i mynde i pe sūt  
 of god / ffore seide pou ito joppe:  
 & clepe symonit y is named petre  
 y is herbord i pe hous of symonit  
 coriour: bihydis pe see / pis wha  
 ne he schal come: shal speke to  
 pee / yfore anoo / seide to pee: &  
 pou didist wel in comyge to us  
 yfore now we alle ben present  
 in y list to heer pe wordis what  
 en ben comāidid to pee of pe lo  
 rd / and petre apempe his mouy:  
 & seide / in treure / i have foundū:  
 y god is not acceptd of ploods  
 but i ech folk he y dreedid god &  
 worchir ryztyfshelle: is accept  
 to hi / god seide a word to pe chil  
 dre of irael: thewyge pees by  
 ihu cū / pis is lord of alle pigis  
 ze wite pe word: y is maid purz  
 al judee: & bigan at gahle: aft  
 pe baptym y john prechide: ihu  
 of nazareth / how god anoyntide  
 hi wyf pe hooly gost & vertu / wh  
 ich pallide fory in doynge wel &  
 heelige alle me oppressid of pe  
 deuel: for god was wyf hi / & we  
 ben vitnellis of alle pigis: wh  
 ich he dūe i pe citrepe of jews  
 & of ierlm: whom pei sloude han

ginge i a tre / and god reise  
 pis in pe pynde day: & zaf hym  
 to be maid knoubū / not to alle  
 peple: but to vitnellis bifore  
 ordeyned of god / to us pat eete  
 & driken wyf hi: aftir y he roos  
 agen fro deey: & he comandide to  
 us to preche to pe peple & to wit  
 nelle y he it is y ordeyned of  
 god domelma of pe knyke & of  
 teete / to pis alle psetis here wit  
 nellis: pat alle me y bileuen  
 i hi / shul relleyn remysion  
 of synes by his name / & in whi  
 le pat petre spak pes wordis:  
 pe hooly gost fell on alle y her  
 den pe word / & pe feryful men  
 of circūciōn y came wyf petre  
 wondrūde y allo into naciōis  
 pe gte of pe hooly gost is sthed  
 out / for pei herden he spekyge in  
 langagis: & magnifyge god  
 pane petre answere ite / wher  
 ony man may forbete ypatr:  
 y sele be not baptid: yhan also relleyned pe hooly  
 name of pe lord ihu cū / pane  
 pei preide hi: y he shulde dibel  
 le wyf he synne dayes / C. 11.

**A**d pe apoclis & pe by  
 perē y were in judee her  
 den y allo hepen me rel  
 leynde pe word of god: & pei glo  
 rified god / but whine petre cam  
 to ierlm: pei pat weren of circū  
 ciōn disputide azens hi: & seide  
 whi entridest pou to me y haue  
 spucie: & hast ete wyf he / & petre  
 bigan & expoune to he by or  
 dre: & seide / i was i pe cite of  
 joppe & preiete: & i spz i ranysh  
 yng of my mynde a vision: y  
 a vessel cam don as a greet shee  
 te wyfoun cordis: & was sent

gost as we: & he co  
 mūidide he to be ba  
 tised: in pe



don fro heuene: & it cam to me /  
to which / lokige bi heeld. & 303  
four footide beethis of ye crye &  
beethis. & crepyng beethis & vo  
latils of heuene / & / herde also  
a vois p seide to me / petre ry  
se pon & ale & ete / but / seide  
nay lord: for comyn pig epyr  
vncleue: entride uene into my  
mony / & ye vois answereide pe  
seride tyme fro heuene / pat pig  
p god hap cleid: sepe p not un  
dene / & pis was don by pnes:  
& alle pigis were resseyned a  
zen ito heuene / & lo pre me anoo  
stode in pe hous i which / was:  
& pei were sent fro cesarie to  
me / & pe spirit seide to me: p /  
shilde go wy he & douce no pig  
zhe & pes hys bypen came wy  
me: & we entiden ito pe hous of  
pe ma / & he teelde to us how he  
sayz an angel i his hous: don  
dige & sepyge to hi / sende ito pon  
wype & clepe symour: p is na  
med petre / which shal speke to  
pee wordis. i which p shal be  
sant & al pin hous / & whane /  
hadde bigtyme to speke: pe hooly  
goost fel on he as ito us i pe bi  
gynnyng / & / bypouste on pe  
word of pe lord: as he seide / for  
john baptiside in watir: but ze  
shule be baptisid i pe hooly goost  
pfore if god zaf to hem pe same  
grace as to us p bilenede in pe  
lord ihu crist: who was / p myzte  
forbede pe lord p he zyne not pe  
hooly goost to he pat bilenede in  
pe name of ihu crist / whne pes  
pigis were herd: pei heelde pe  
ees. & glorified god & seide / pfor  
allo to heven me. god hap zonu

penance to hys / & pei p were sta  
terid of pe tribulaciou p was  
mand vnder itenene: well den  
forp to ferule & to cyre & to anti  
oche. & spaken pe word to no ma.  
but to krys alsoone / but sume of  
hem were me of cyre & of cure  
nen / which whne pei hadde entid  
into antioche: pei spaken to pe  
greekis & prechiden pe lord ihu /  
pe hond of pe lord was wy he / &  
moche noubr of me bileuysge  
comid to pe lord / & pe word cam  
to pe eers of pe churche p was  
at ierlm on pes pigis: & pei sente  
barnabas to antioche: & whne he  
was come & hys pe grace of pe  
lord: he ioyede & monestide alle  
me. to dwelle i pe lord in purpos  
of herde / for he was a good man:  
& ful of pe hooly goost & of fery /  
moche peple. was entresid to pe  
lord / & he wente forp to thar he  
to seke saul & whne he hadde fou  
du hi: he ledde to antioche & awei  
pei lyuede pet in pe churche: & tau  
ten moche peple / so p pe discipulis  
were named first at antioche /  
ten me: & in pes dayes: pferis  
came ouer fro ierlm to antioche  
and oon of hem roos vp agab:  
bi name: & sigetiede bi pe spirit  
agreet hugir to comysge in al  
pe world which hugir was ma  
ad vnder claudis: & alle pe  
discipulis spouide astir p ech had  
de: for to seide ito mynsterie. to  
bypen p dwelle in iudee / wh  
ich pig also peidde & seten it to  
pe adre me: bi pe hondis of bar  
nabas & saul. ¶ **A**n  
id in pe same tyme &  
roude pe kis sente po

to turnete son me of pe churche  
& he slow by siverd: James pe  
brof of john / & he 303 p it ples  
de to ierlm: & kaste to take also  
petre / and pe dayes of per f loo  
nes were: & whne he hadde ca  
nst petre: he sente hi into pson  
& bitook to fou: quat ypois of  
knyztis to kepe hi: & wold aft  
past byryng hi forp to pe peple  
& petre was kept in pridon / but  
pier was mand of pe churche w  
oute ceelid: to god for hi / but  
whne eroude shilde byryng  
hi forp: in pat nyzt petre was  
slepige by tawre tawre kny  
tis: & was boundu wy taw chey  
nes: & pe keperis bifore pe dore  
kepte pe pson / & lo an angel of  
pe lord stood nyzt: & luyt / shoon  
in pe pson hous / & whne he had  
de ampte pe spde of petre: he  
rephide hi & seide / ryle pou libit  
ly / and anoo pe chaynes felden  
don fro his hondis / & pe angel sei  
de to hym / gnde pee: & do on pin  
holis / & he due so / & he seide to hi  
do aboute pee p doris: & lue me  
& he zede out & ampte hi: & he w  
te not p it was sop p was don  
by pe angel / for he gelide hi silt  
to haue sepe aduision / and pei  
passide pe furde & pe seride war  
de & came to pe men zate p ledy  
to pe citee which anoo was ope  
nyd to he / & pei zeden out & came  
into oo street: & anoon pe angel  
passide awei fro hi / & petre tur  
nete azen to hi gils: & seide / now  
/ boot verily p pe lord sente his  
angel: & dwynde me fro pe hod  
of eroude: & fro al pe abyding of  
pe peple of ierlm: & he biheld

& cam to pe hous of marie mo  
dir of john. p is named marth:  
wher manpe were gedid to gi  
dre & frynge / & whne he knoch  
de at pe dore of pe zate: a damp  
sel rode bi name. com forp to se  
and whne she knew pe vois of  
petre: for joye she openide not  
pe zate. but ra yne & telle pat  
petre stood at pe zate / & pei sei  
den to hir / pon maddist / but  
she affermyde p it was so / &  
pei seide it is his angel / but pe  
tre abood stille & knochide / and  
whne pe hadde openyd pe dore  
pei sayzen hi: & dwouiden / & he  
bekenyde to he wy his hond to  
be stille: & telde how pe lord had  
de led hi out of pe pson / & he sei  
de / telle ze to james & to pe bri  
pen pes pigis / & he zede out: and  
wente ito anoy place / & whne  
pe day was come: p was not ly  
tal troublis a mog pe knyztis:  
whar was don of petre: & whne  
eroude hadde souyt hi & fond not:  
after p he hadde mnd enquerig  
of pe keperis. he comaidide he  
to be brongt to hi / and he cam don  
fro iudee ito cesarie: & dwellede  
per / & he was wyop to me of ti  
re & of sidon / & pei of oon accord  
came to hi whne pei hadde con  
celid wy barnas p was pe figi  
chambirlayn pei aride pees: for  
as moche p her katreis were  
vntailid of hi / & in aday p was  
ordyned. & runde was clouid  
wy figis clouid: & latt for do  
melins & spak to he / & pe peple  
cryede pe vois of god: & not  
of man / and anoo an angel of  
pe lord smoot hi: for he hadde



not zoue honowr to god / & he was  
wastid of wormes & diete & pe  
word of pe lord waride: & was  
mktiphed / and barnabas & sa  
ul turneden aze fro ierlm. wha  
ne pe mynisterie was fillid: &  
toke iohu p was named markus.

**A**d p fctis // **C. xiiij.** //  
i doctors were i pe  
chirche yat was at an  
tioche: in whiche barnabas &  
symoud p was depid blac: &  
lucius cronense & manaeu p  
was pe soukig: feet of Eroude  
tetrarke & saul were: & whne  
pei mynistrude to pe lord & fas  
tude: pe hooly gost seide to hem  
departe ze to me barnabas &  
saul into pe werk to which i  
haue takn he: pane pei fastude  
& preiet & leyden hondis on hem  
& leten he go: but pei were sent  
of pe hooly gost: & wente forp  
to selencia: & fro pems pei wente  
bi boot to cypre: & whane pei ca  
me to salampne: pei prechide pe  
word of god in pe synagogis of  
ielwis: & pei hadde also iohu i my  
nistrie: & whne pei hadde walkid  
bial pe ple to pafum: pei fou  
den a man a wiche a fals p fete  
a ier to who pe name was bari  
eli: p was wip pe pconful sergi  
us paul a prudent ma: pis depi  
de barnabas & poule: & desiride  
to heere pe word of god: but ely  
mas wiche wipstod he for his  
name is expownded so: & he souz  
te to turne alyer pe pconful fro  
biene: but saul which is seid al  
so paul was fillid wip pe hooly  
gost: & biheeld into hi & seide: a  
pou ful of gyle & al falsnesse p

lone of pe denel: p enemy of al  
ryt wysnesse: p lequett not to  
turne / & p lodeu pe ristful ierwis  
of pe lord: and now lo pe hond of  
pe lord is on pee: & pou shalt be  
blynd & not seynge pe liue to  
a tyme: & anoo iohu & cerkelle  
felde don on hi: & he yede aboute  
& souzte hy pat shulde zyne hond  
to hi: pane pe pconful: whne he  
hadde seyn pe tale: bileueyde  
pe techis of pe lord: & whne fro  
pafum pou hadde go by a boot.  
pei p were were wip hi: pei ca  
men to pgen of pamsilie: but iohu  
depride fro hem: & turnete azen  
to ierlm: & pei yede to perge: &  
came to antioche of p fide: &  
pei entride into pe synagoge  
pe day of sabotis: & lare: & astir  
pe redyng of pe lare: & of pe p  
fctis pe pnces of pe synagoge  
senten to hem & seide: brypen if  
our word of exortacion to pe pe  
ple is in zou: sepe ze: & poul roo  
& wip hond hard silence: & seide  
me of yrael: & ze pat dzed god:  
heer ze: god of pe peple of yra  
el chees our fadris: & enhaui  
de pe peple: whne pei weren  
comelgis in pe lond of egypt:  
& in an hys arme he lode he out  
of it: & by pe tyme of fourty  
zeeris: he sufride her manis  
in desert: & he destruede leuene  
folkis in pe lond of canaan: &  
bi sort departide to hem her lo  
ond as astir four hndrid & fyt  
ty zeeris: & astir pes pigis he  
zaf domehne to samuel pe pro  
fete: & fro p tyme pei ariden  
a big: & god zaf to he saul pe so  
ne of cis: a ma of pe lynage of

beiamyn: by fourty zeeris: & wha  
ne he was don alyer: he reihde to  
hem dany kyng: to whom he ba  
ar witehig: & seide: i haue fou  
de dany pe bone of jesse: aman  
astir my herte: which shal do al  
le my willis: of whos seed bi pe  
biheest god hap led out to wael  
a sauour iher: whne iohu p fch  
de bfore pe face of his comys pe  
baptym of penance to al pe pe  
ple of wael: but whne iohu fillide  
his cours: he seide: whom ze deme  
me to be: i am not he: but lo he co  
mey astir me: & i am not wozpi  
to don of pe lthoon of his feet: bu  
pen & lones of pe kyde of abrahm:  
& whiche y in zou dzed god: to i  
pe word of heelp is sent: for pei  
p dwelid at ierlm & pncis of re  
pat knewe not pis iher: & pe voi  
ces of p fctis: p bi enery sabot  
ben red: demyle & filliden: & pei  
fouiden nishi no cause of deap: & ari  
den of pilat: p pei shulde sle hy:  
& whne pei hadde endid alle pigis  
p were wztu of hi: pei token hi  
don of pe tre: & leyden hy i a gra  
ue: & god reihde hi fro deap in pe  
pride day: which was seyn by ma  
ny dayes: to he p wente vp to gi  
die wip hym fro galile to ierlm  
whiche ben til now his wtnessis  
to pe peple: & we athenen to zou  
pe biheest p was maad to oure  
fadris: for god hap fulfillid pis  
to her lones: & azenreihde iher:  
as in pe secude salm it is wztu:  
p art my sone to day: i bigat pee  
& he azenreihde hi fro deap: pat  
he shulde not turne azen into  
corruption: seide pis: for i shal  
zyne to zou pe hooly trewe pigis

of dany: And p fore i on anoyr  
side he seip: p shalt not zyne pi  
hooly to ge corruption: but dany  
i his genacion: whne he hadde  
mynistrid to pe wille of god:  
diete: & was leyd wip his fadris:  
& liz corruption: but he whom  
god reihde fro deap: sarz not cor  
ruption: p fore brypen be it kno  
wnt to zou: p by hi remysion of  
synes is teeld to zou: fro alle hy  
nes: of whiche ze myzte not be  
mstified in pe lare of moyses:  
& pis ech ma p bileuey: is iustifi  
ed: p fore se ze p it come not to  
zou p is bfore seid in pe p fctis:  
ze dispuleris se ze & wondre ze &  
be ze wterid abroad: for i worche  
a werk in zou: dayes a werk in  
zou: dayes: a werk p ze shule not  
bileue: if ony ma shal telle it to  
zou: & whane pei zeden out: pei  
preiet p in pe sabat luyng pei  
shulde speke to he pes wordis: &  
whne pe synagoge was left:  
many of ierwis & of comelgis  
worthypige god subede pou  
& barnabas: pat spaken & conce  
hde hem: p pei shulde dwelle in  
pe grace of god: & in pe sabot li  
uyng: almeest al pe citee cam  
to gidur: to heere pe word of god:  
& ierwis lizen pe peple: & weren  
fillid wip enye: & azenreide pes  
pigis p were seid of poule: & blaf  
fempden: pane poule & barnabas  
stide fastly seide to zou it bihofte  
firt to speke pe word of god: but  
for ze pntte it alyer: & han demed  
zou vntwozpi to euerlastige luf:  
lo we turne to hepe me: for lo pe  
lord comandite vs: i haue sett  
pee in pe lzt to heven me: pat



you be into heelp to pe vtmette  
of erpe & hepen me herde: & ioye  
den & glorified pe word of pe lord  
& bileuaten as manye as were  
bifore ordeyned to euilastige lyf  
& pe word of pe lord was sonu  
brial pe cūtrep but pe ierlis sti  
rude religious wymen & onest.  
& pe worpente me of pe citee: &  
stirde psecucion azens poult &  
barnabas & dreyne he out of her  
baitreis: & pei shoken alsey to  
hem pe dust of her feet: & came  
to iouye: & pe distyphs were  
filled wip ioye i pe hooly gost.

**B**ut it bifel // **C.** **Em.**  
at iouye. p<sup>r</sup> pei entri  
de to gudre. into pe synago  
ge of ierlis & spaken: so p<sup>r</sup> fulgr  
et mltitude of ierlis & grekis  
bileuede: but pe ierlis pat were  
onbileetful. reitide psecucion &  
stirde to wazappe pe souls of he  
pen me azens pe bapen but pe  
lord jaf soone pees: p<sup>r</sup> fore pei  
dwelhte moche tyme & dūe t<sup>r</sup>  
taly in pe lord. berige wtnessig  
to pe word of his grace: & ynūge  
signes & wondris to be maad bi  
pe hondis of he: but pe multitu  
de of pe citee was departid: &  
sūme were wip pe ierlis. & sū  
me wip pe apostlis but wshie  
per was maad an alaut of pe  
hepen me & pe ierlis wip her  
pūces to turmeten & to stoonē  
he: pei vndur stode & fledde to gi  
dre to pe citees of lycnonpe &  
histris & derben & to al pe cūtr  
aboute. & pei prechde pere pe  
gospel: & al pe mltitude was  
moued to gudre i pe techig of  
he poult & barnabas dwelhten

at histris: & amā at histris was  
lyt in pe feet: & hadde sete crok  
fro his modris wōmbe which ne  
ner hadde gon: p<sup>r</sup>is herde poult  
spetige: & poult biheeld hi & oys  
p<sup>r</sup> he hadde seip p<sup>r</sup> he shulde be  
maad laaf: & seide wip a greet  
vois: ryle you wip rist on p<sup>r</sup> feet  
& he lypide & walkide: & pe peple  
wshie pei hadden seipn pat p<sup>r</sup> poult  
dite: reitide her vois i lycnon tū  
ge & seide: goddis maad lyt to mē  
ben commi don to us: & pei clep  
de barnabas iūbiter: & poult mer  
cūp: for he was ledere of pe word  
& pe p<sup>r</sup>est of iūbit p<sup>r</sup> was bifore  
pe citee: brouste tohs & croune  
bifore pe zatis wip pepis & wōl  
de haue maad sacrifice and wshie  
pe apostlis barnabas & poult her  
den p<sup>r</sup>is: pei to rente her cootis  
& pei skipten out amog pe peple:  
& cryden & seipde: me what don ye  
p<sup>r</sup>is p<sup>r</sup>is pig: & we ben deodly mē  
lyt zon: & wshie wen to zon: p<sup>r</sup> ze be  
comuertid fro rese veyn pigis.  
to pe kyngge god: p<sup>r</sup> made hene  
ne & erpe & pe lee & alle pigis p<sup>r</sup>  
ben i he: which i genacionis pas  
sid: & suffride alle folkis to go to  
her oibne weyes: & zit he leste  
not hi self wiponte wtnessig  
in wsel doynge: for he jaf reyns  
fro hene & tynes berige frū  
yt: & fulshilde zon: hertis wip  
mete & gladuēlle: & pei seynge  
pes pigis: vnepis wtagūde pe  
peple: p<sup>r</sup> pei offride not to he: but  
sū ierlis came oū fro antioche  
& iouye & conuēlede pe peple  
& stonpede poult & drowen out of  
pe citee: & geillide p<sup>r</sup> he was deod  
but wshie distyphs were commi

aboute hi: he roos & wente to  
pe citee and in pe day luyngē  
he wente forp wip barnabas in  
to derben & wshie pei hadde pre  
chid to pe ilke citee & tanz ma  
ny: pei tūnetē azen to histris  
& iouye & to antioche: confer  
mūge pe souls of distyphs &  
monestige: p<sup>r</sup> pei shulde dwel  
le in seip: & seide p<sup>r</sup> by many &  
bulacionis: it bihouey us to en  
tre into pe kyngdom of hene  
& wshie pei hadde ordeyned p<sup>r</sup>  
tis to hem bi alle citees: & had  
de p<sup>r</sup>ied wip fatyngis: pei by  
token hem to pe lord i wshom pei  
bileuede: and pei passide p<sup>r</sup> lūdie.  
& came to pamtale: and pei spa  
ken pe word of pe lord in p<sup>r</sup>ge:  
& camen don to italie: & fro pē  
nis pei wente by boot to antio  
che: fro wshems pei were takū  
to pe grace of god into pe werk  
p<sup>r</sup> pei filled: & wshie pei weren  
commi & hadde gadrid pe churche:  
pei telden how grete pigis god di  
de wip hem & p<sup>r</sup> he hadde openid  
to hepen me pe doze of seip: & pei  
dwelhte not a lyt tyme wip pe  
distyphs // **C.** **¶ b.**

**A**d sūme came don  
fro iudee: & tanzte bri  
pere: p<sup>r</sup> but ze be circūcidid aft  
pe laue of moyses: ze moyn not  
be maad laaf: per fore wshie p<sup>r</sup>  
was maad not alitil dullencū  
to poult & barnabas azens he: pei  
ordeyneden p<sup>r</sup> poult & barnabas:  
& sūme oys of hem shulde go wip  
to pe apostlis & p<sup>r</sup>estis in ieru  
sale on p<sup>r</sup>is questiou: & so pei we  
re led forp of pe churche: & pass  
den bi seipye & samarie: & pei

teelden pe conuēlaciū of hepen  
mē: & pei made greet ioye to al  
le pe bapen & wshie pei came  
to ierlin: pei were resseyned  
of pe churche & of pe apostlis &  
of pe eldre mē: & teelde how gre  
te pigis god dide wip he: but sū  
me of pe erehe of farilees pat  
bileuede: risen wip & seide: p<sup>r</sup> it  
bihouey he to be circūcidid: & to  
comānde to kepe also pe laue of  
moyses: & pe apostlis & eldre mē  
came to gudre: to se of p<sup>r</sup>is word  
& wshie p<sup>r</sup> was maad a greet se  
fig herof: petre roos & seide to  
hem bapen ze wntē. p<sup>r</sup> of elde day  
es in zon: god chees by my moyn  
hepen to here pe word of pe gol  
pel & to bileue: & god p<sup>r</sup> kene we  
ss hertis bap wtnessig: & jaf  
to he pe hooly gost: as also to us  
& no pig dyner sit bi talye us  
& hem: & cleuēde pe hertis of he  
bi seip: now pāne nshan tepten  
ze god: to putte azol on pe nec  
ke of pe distyphs: which ne p<sup>r</sup>  
we ne p<sup>r</sup> oure fadris mōste ber:  
but bi pe grace of our lord ihū  
crist. we bileue to be laued: as al  
so pei: & al pe mltitude heeld pe  
es: & herden barnaban & poult.  
tellige how grete signes & wō  
dris god dide bi he in hepe mē  
& after p<sup>r</sup> pei helden pees: jame  
anwseride & seide: bapen heere  
ze me: sūmoit telde how god  
visitide first to take of hepene  
mē a peple to his name: & pe  
wordis of p<sup>r</sup>estis acordē to hy  
as it is writū: after p<sup>r</sup>is p<sup>r</sup> shal  
turne azen. & bilde pe taberna  
cle of dāny p<sup>r</sup> felle don: & p<sup>r</sup> shal  
bilde azen pe cast don pigis of it



you be into heelp to pe vtmette  
of erpe & hepen me herde: & ioye  
den & glorified pe word of pe lord  
& bileuaten as manye as were  
bifore ordeyned to euilastige lyf  
& pe word of pe lord was sonu  
brial pe cūtrep but pe ieiwis sti  
rude religious iymen & onest.  
& pe worpiste me of pe citee: &  
stirde psecucion azens poult &  
barnabas & dreyne he out of her  
baitreis: & pei shoken alpey to  
hem pe dust of her feet: & came  
to iouye: & pe distyphs were  
filled wip ioye i pe hooly gost.

**B**ut it bifel // **C.** **Em.**  
at iouye. p<sup>r</sup> pei entri  
de to gudre. into pe synago  
ge of ieiwis & spaken: so p<sup>r</sup> fulgr  
et mltitude of ieiwis & grekis  
bileuede: but pe ieiwis pat were  
onbileestful. reitide psecucion &  
stirde to wazappe pe souls of he  
pen me azens pe bapen but pe  
lord jaf soone pees p<sup>r</sup> fore pei  
dwelhte moche tyme & dūe t<sup>r</sup>  
taly in pe lord. berige wtnessig  
to pe word of his grace: & iynge  
signes & wondris to be maad bi  
pe hondis of he: but pe multitu  
de of pe citee was departid: &  
sūme were wip pe ieiwis. & sū  
me wip pe apostlis but whie  
per was maad an alaut of pe  
hepen me & pe ieiwis wip her  
pūces to turmeten & to stoonē  
he: pei vndur stode & fledde to gi  
dre to pe citees of lycnonpe &  
histris & derben & to al pe cūtr  
aboute. & pei prechide pere pe  
gospel: & al pe mltitude was  
moued to gudre i pe teching of  
he poult & barnabas dwelhten

at histris & amā at histris was  
lyt in pe feet: & hadde sete crok  
fro his modris wōmbe which ne  
ner hadde gon p<sup>r</sup>is herde poult  
spetige: & poult biheeld hi & ogy  
p<sup>r</sup> he hadde seip p<sup>r</sup> he shulde be  
maad laaf: & seide wip a greet  
vois ryle you vp rist on p<sup>r</sup> feet  
& he lypide & walkide: & pe peple  
whie pei hadden seipn pat p<sup>r</sup> poult  
dite: reitide her vois i lycnon tū  
ge & seide: goddis maad lyt to me  
ben commi don to us: & pei clep  
de barnabas iūbiter: & poult mer  
cūp: for he was ledere of pe word  
& pe p<sup>r</sup>est of iūbit p<sup>r</sup> was bifore  
pe citee: brouyte tohs & croune  
bifore pe zatis wip pepis & wōl  
de haue maad sacrifice and whie  
pe apostlis barnabas & poult her  
den p<sup>r</sup>is: pei to rente her cootis  
& pei skipten out amog pe peple:  
& cryden & seipde: me what don pe  
p<sup>r</sup>is p<sup>r</sup>is pig: & we ben deedly me  
lyt zon: & whie went to zon p<sup>r</sup> ze be  
comuertid fro rese peyn pigis.  
to pe kyngge god: p<sup>r</sup> made hene  
ne & erpe & pe lee & alle pigis p<sup>r</sup>  
ben i he: which i genacionis pas  
sid: & iūfride alle folkis to go to  
her oibne weyes: & it he leste  
not hi self wipoute wtnessig  
in isel doynge: for he jaf reyns  
fro hene & tynes berige frū  
yt: & fulshilde zon heris wip  
mete & gladuēlle: & pei seynge  
pes pigis: vne p<sup>r</sup>is wāgūde pe  
peple: p<sup>r</sup> pei offride not to he: but  
sū ieiwis came oū fro antioche  
& iouye & conuēlede pe peple  
& stonpede poult & drowen out of  
pe citee: & geillide p<sup>r</sup> he was deed  
but whie distyphs were commi

aboute hi: he roos & wente to  
pe citee and in pe day luyngē  
he wente forp wip barnabas in  
to derben & whie pei hadde pre  
chid to pe ilke citee & tanz ma  
ny: pei tūnetē azen to histris  
& iouye & to antioche / confer  
myge pe souls of distyphs &  
monestige: p<sup>r</sup> pei shulde dwel  
le in seip: & seide p<sup>r</sup> by many &  
bulacionis: it bihouey us to en  
tre into pe kyngdom of hene  
& whie pei hadde ordeyned p<sup>r</sup>  
tis to hem bi alle citees: & had  
de p<sup>r</sup>ied wip fathgis: pei by  
taken hem to pe lord i whom pei  
bileuede and pei passide p<sup>r</sup> lūdie.  
& came to pamtale and pei spa  
ken pe word of pe lord in p<sup>r</sup>ge:  
& camen don to italie & fro pe  
nis pei wente by boot to antio  
che: fro whens pei were takū  
to pe grace of god into pe werk  
p<sup>r</sup> pei filled: & whie pei were  
commi & hadde gadrid pe churche:  
pei telden how grete pigis god di  
de wip hem & p<sup>r</sup> he hadde openid  
to hepen me pe doze of seip: & pei  
dwelhte not a lyt tyme wip pe  
distyphs // **C.** **¶ b.**

**A**d sūme came don  
fro iudee: & tanzte bri  
pere: p<sup>r</sup> but ze be circūcidid aft  
pe laue of moyses: ze moyn not  
be maad laaf: per fore whie p<sup>r</sup>  
was maad not alitil dullencū  
to poult & barnabas azens he: pei  
ordeyneden p<sup>r</sup> poult & barnabas:  
& sūme ope of hem shulde go vp  
to pe apostlis & p<sup>r</sup>estis in ieru  
sale on p<sup>r</sup>is questiou: & so pei we  
re led forp of pe churche: & pass  
den bi seipye & samarie: & pei

teelden pe conuēlaciou of hepen  
me: & pei made greet ioye to al  
le pe bapen & whie pei came  
to ierlm: pei were resseyned  
of pe churche & of pe apostlis &  
of pe eldre me: & teelde how gre  
te pigis god dūe wip he: but sū  
me of pe erehe of farilees pat  
bileuede: risen vp & seide: p<sup>r</sup> it  
bihouey he to be circūcidid: & to  
comāde to kepe also pe laue of  
moyses: & pe apostlis & eldre me  
came to gudre: to se of p<sup>r</sup>is word  
& whie p<sup>r</sup> was maad a greet se  
fig herof: petre roos & seide to  
hem bapen ze wntē. p<sup>r</sup> of elde day  
es in zon: god chees by my moyn  
hepen to here pe word of pe gol  
pel & to bileue: & god p<sup>r</sup> kene we  
ssertis bap wtnessig: & jaf  
to he pe hooly gost as also to us  
& no pig dyner sit bi talye us  
& hem: & cleuēde pe hertis of he  
bi seip: now pāne nshan tepten  
ze god: to putte azol on pe nec  
ke of pe distyphs: which ne p<sup>r</sup>  
we ne p<sup>r</sup> oure fadris myte ber:  
but bi pe grace of our lord ihū  
crist. we bileue to be laued: as al  
so pei: & al pe mltitude heeld pe  
es: & herden barnaban & poult.  
tellige how grete signes & wō  
dris god dūe bi he in hepe me  
& after p<sup>r</sup> pei helden pees: jame  
anfwerde & seide: bapen heere  
ze me: sūmoit telde how god  
visitide first to take of hepene  
me a peple to his name: & pe  
wordis of p<sup>r</sup>estis acorde to hy  
as it is writū after p<sup>r</sup>is p<sup>r</sup> shal  
turne azen: & bilde pe taberna  
cle of dāny p<sup>r</sup> felle don: & p<sup>r</sup> shal  
bilde azen pe cast don pigis of it



and 7. Ithal reple it. p. opur me  
seke ye lord. & alle folkis on whi  
che my name is depid to helpe.  
ye lord doyngre pis pig. sey / fro  
ye world ye werk of ye lord is  
knowu to ye lord / for which pig  
I deme he v. of hepen me ben co  
uertid to god to be not diseid  
but to write to he. v. per abstei  
ne he fro defouligis of manne  
tis. & fro fornicaciou. & straug  
lid pigis & blood / for moyses of  
elde tymes hap i alle citees. he  
p. preche hi in synagogis. wher  
by ech sabot he is red / pane it  
plehite to ye aposthis & to ye el  
dre me wip alle ye churche. to  
chese me of he. & sende to antio  
che wip pouil & barnabas / Judas  
p. was named barlabas. & silas  
ye firste me amog bryse & wo  
ten bi ye hondis of he / aposthis  
eldre brysen to he p. ben at an  
tioche & srie & silas. brysen of  
hepe me. greetige / for we her  
den v. summe wente out fro us.  
& troublede zow wip wordis & t  
netē vpslodon zowr soulis to  
whiche me we comaudide not  
it plehite to us gaderid ito con  
to chese me & sende to zow wip  
oure moost dererworpe barna  
bas & pouil / me p. zauen her ly  
ues. for ye name of our lord  
ihū c. / per fore we sente Judas  
& silas. & ye ihūle telle ye same  
pigis to zow by wordis / for it is  
seyn to ye hooly goost & to us to  
putte to zow no pig. more of char  
ge pā pes neteful pigis. v. ze  
absteiue zow fro pe offrid. pi  
gis of manne metis. & blood strā  
ghid & fornicaciou / fro whiche

ze kepige zow. ihūle do wel / far  
ze wel / p. fore ye were let go &  
came down to antioche. & whie  
ye miltitude was gederid. per to  
ken pe epistle. whid whish whā  
pei hadde red. ye ioyede on pe  
confort. & Judas & silas. & ye  
for ye were p. letis. confortide  
bryperē & cōfer myden wip sil  
many wordis / but after p. ye  
hadden be yere a lūil while. ye  
were let go of brysen wip pes  
to hem pat hadden sent hem / but  
it was seyn to silas. to dwelle  
per. & Judas wente aloone to  
ierlm. & pouil & barnabas dwel  
te at antioche. techige & p. chige  
ye word of ye lord. wip ope ma  
nye / but after summe dayes. pouil  
sende to barnabas / the we wren  
& wryte brysen by alle citees i  
whiche we han prechid ye word  
of ye lord. hou per hā he & barna  
bas wolde take wip hi iohū. p.  
was named markus but pouil  
preide hi. v. he p. departide fro  
he fro pāmfie. & wete not w  
he into ye werk. ihūle not be  
relapued / & dissencion was mō.  
so v. ye departide actyng. &  
barnabas took mark & cam bi  
boot to cypre / and pouil chees  
sylvas & wente forp fro pe bry  
en. & was bitakū to ye grace of  
god. & he wente by srie & cilice.  
& cōfer myde ye churche. comā  
dige to kepe ye heothis of apos  
this & eldre men. ¶ **C. 4. v. 11.**  
**A**d he cam to derben & h  
tram / & lo a duple was  
per bi name thymothe  
ye lone of a jewelle criste & of  
pe fadir hepen. & brysen v. were

in hāris & coupe. zeldide good wit  
nessig to hi. & pouil wolde p. pis  
mā ihūle go forp wip hi. & he  
took & circūcidide hi. for ye wis  
v. were in ye placis / for alle wis  
te. p. his fadir was hepen / whie  
ye passide by citees. ye bitooke  
to hem to kepe ye techigis pat  
were demed of aposthis & eldre  
me. v. weren at ierlm. & ye chur  
chis were cōfermyd in feip & en  
crefiden i nonbre ech daye. & ye  
passide frigie & ye cuttree of ga  
lathie. & were forbedū of ye hoo  
ly goost to speke ye word of god i  
alie. & whie ye came into mylie.  
ye asaiēde to go into bithmye.  
& ye spirit of ihū onfride not  
hem / but whie ye hadde passid  
by mylie. ye came don to troa  
de. & a visioū by myst was the  
wid to pouil / but amā of macido  
nye p. flood. piete hi & sende / go  
pon ito macedonie & help us. &  
as he hadde seyn ye visioū. and  
we sougte to go forp into maced  
nye. & were mand certeyn pat  
god hadde clepid vs to preche to  
he / and we zeden bi ship fro tro  
ade & camen to samatracia w  
strengt cours. & ye day linyge to  
neapolis. & fro pēms to filippis.  
v. is ye firste part of macedonie.  
ye citee colouye. & were in pis ci  
tee summe dayes. & spake to gidre  
& in ye day of sabotis. we weten  
forp wipoute ye zate blydis ye  
flood wher p. zier semece to be.  
& we laten & spake to wipmen  
came to gidre. & a wōman hidda  
by name a p. uelle of ye citee of  
tiatrens. wōlthpige god her  
de / whos herte ye lord openyde.

to yme tent to res pigis. v. were  
seid of pouil & whie she was hap  
tild & hir hous. she preide & sende  
if ze han demyd p. I am feyful  
to ye lord. entre ze into my hous  
& dwelle. & she cōfeynede us.  
& it was don whie we zede to pi  
er. v. a dampfel v. hadde a spūit  
of dyuynaciou mette us. whid  
zaf greet wipnyng to hir lordis  
& dyuynig. pis hūkede pouil & vs.  
& cryede & sende / pes me ben ser  
uantis of ye hys god. p. tellen to  
zow ye wepe of helpe. & pis she  
dide in many dayes. & pouil soum  
de & turnede. & sende to ye spirit  
I comāde pee i ye name of ihū  
c. / v. pou go out of hir. & he v.  
te out i ye same oin. & ye lordis  
of hir syzen p. ye hope of her  
wipnyng. wente alwepe. & ye  
tooken pouil & silas. & ledde into  
ye doom place to ye p. nris. & ye  
brougte hem to ye manestratris.  
& leyde / pes me distriblen our  
citee. for ye be jewis. & thewe  
a custom whid it is not leefful  
to us to reselue ney to. lipen  
we ben romayus. & ye peple &  
maiestratris rūnen azens hem.  
& whāne ye hadde to rent ye co  
tis of he. ye comādidē hem to  
be betū wip zerdis. & whie ye  
hadde zowū to hem many woundis.  
ye sente hem ito p. sou. & comā  
dide to ye keper. v. he ihūle  
kepe he diligently. and whie  
he hadde take such a precept. he  
putte he ito ye yner p. sou. & strei  
nede ye feet of he in a tree / and  
at nydnyzt pouil & silas wōlth  
pede & heriede god. & ye v. were  
in kepig. herte he & hidenly a







he found amā aquila by name of  
ponte bi kynde. p<sup>re</sup>late cam fro p<sup>re</sup>ta  
lye. & p<sup>re</sup>lille his wyf. for p<sup>re</sup>clau  
dus comāndide alle ieris to de  
parte fro rome. & he cam to he  
& for he was of pe same craft. he  
dwellede w<sup>th</sup> hem & wrouyte. & pe  
were of roop makeris craft. &  
he disputide in pe synagoge by  
eth labot p<sup>re</sup>ntige among pe na  
me of pe lord ihu. & he coucelide  
ieris & greekis. & whne silas &  
tymothe came fro macedoupe.  
poul zat bilynele to pe word. &  
w<sup>th</sup>uethde to pe ieris. & ihu is  
crist. but whne pei azenfide &  
blakemyde. he sthook alkyr his  
doyis & seide to hem. zom. blood  
be on zom. heed. & shal be dene  
fro heyns fory & shal go to hepe  
me. and he passide fro yenes. &  
entruite into pe hous of a nist mā  
tite by name pat wozlthipide god  
whos hous was joyned to pe sy  
nagoge. and crispe pnce of pe sy  
nagoge. bilynele to pe lord whi  
al his hous. & manye of pe cori  
thies herde & bilynele. & were cl  
tenyd. & pe lord seide bi nyxt to po  
ul bi avilion. nple pou dzed. but  
speke & be not stille. for i am w<sup>th</sup>  
pee & no mā shal be putt to y<sup>e</sup>  
to noye pee. for moche peple is  
to me i pis citee. & he dwellede  
pere azer & lye monepis techi  
ge a mog. he pe word of god. but  
whne gallion was p<sup>re</sup>consul of achare.  
ieris rulen up w<sup>th</sup> oo wille azes  
poul. & ledde hy to pe doom & sei  
de. azen. pe laue. pis coucelip me  
to wozlthipe god. & whne poul  
bigan to oppne his mouy. gal  
leon seide to pe ieris. if p<sup>re</sup>wer

ony wickid pig. ey p<sup>re</sup>uel trespas  
ze ieris. r<sup>re</sup>thly. & shulde suste  
zon. but if questionis ben of pe  
word & of names of zom. laue.  
bile zon silt. & wole not be domel  
mā of pes pigis. & he droof hem  
fro pe doom place. and alle toke  
loftenes pnce of pe synagoge.  
& smote hi bifore pe doom place.  
& no pig of pes was to charge  
to gallion. & whne poul hadde a  
bidū many dayes. he seide far  
wel to bryper & by boot cam to  
sirie. and p<sup>re</sup>lille & aquila came  
w<sup>th</sup> hy. whiche hadde chypid his  
heed in tencris. for he hadde anky  
& he ca to effecie & pere he leste  
hem. & he zede yn to pe synagoge.  
& disputide w<sup>th</sup> ieris. and whne  
pei p<sup>re</sup>iede p<sup>re</sup> he shulde dwelle moze  
tyme. he consentide not. but he  
made farwel & seide. est. & shal  
turne azen to zon. if god wole. &  
he wente fory fro effeci. & he ca  
don to cesarie. & he zede up & gr  
ette pe churche & cam don to an  
tioche. & whne he hadde dwelle  
pere sunthar of tyme. he wente  
fory w<sup>th</sup>alkige by reike ynz. pe  
ciutrey of galathie. & fringie. &  
cōfermyde alle pe dylupis. but  
a ieris appollo bi name amā of  
ablandre of kynde amā eloquet  
cam to effecie. & he w<sup>th</sup> m<sup>re</sup> m<sup>re</sup> in  
scripturis. pis mā was taut pe  
weye of pe lord. & was feruent  
in spirit. & spak. & tautte diliget  
ly po pigis p<sup>re</sup>werē of ihu. & b<sup>re</sup>we  
oonly pe baptym of iohu. & pis  
mā bigan to do trithly in pe syna  
goge. who whne p<sup>re</sup>lille & aquila  
herde. pei tooken hy & moze diliget  
ly expolknetē to hy pe weye of

pe lord. & whne he wolde go to a  
caye. brypen certide & w<sup>th</sup>oten  
to pe dylupis. & p<sup>re</sup> shulde resley  
ne hy. whiche whne he cam. zat  
moche to hem p<sup>re</sup> bilynele. for he  
greetly oikcam ieris. & whne  
de openly by scripturis. & ihu is crist.  
Ad it bifelle. **A** whne apollo was at co  
riche. & poul whne he had  
de go pe lyet. coctis he cam to  
effecie. & toond sume of dylupis.  
he seide to he. whes ze p<sup>re</sup> bile  
nen han resleyued pe hooly gost.  
& pei seide to hy. but ney we han  
herd. if pe hooly gost is. & he sei  
de. p<sup>re</sup> fore in what pig ben ze bap  
tild. & pei seide. in pe baptym of  
iohu. and poul seide. iohu bapti  
side pe peple in baptym of pe  
nanice. & tautte p<sup>re</sup> shulden  
bilyne. & hy p<sup>re</sup> was to comyge aff  
hy. & is in ihu. whne pei herden  
pes pigis. pei weren baptild in  
pe name of pe lord ihu. & whne  
poul hadde leid on hem his hondis.  
pe hooly gost cam in hy. & pei spa  
ken w<sup>th</sup> langagis & p<sup>re</sup>fecte. and  
alle were al mest tibelue me. &  
he zede into pe synagoge & spak  
w<sup>th</sup> trust. p<sup>re</sup> monepis dylupis.  
& tretige of pe kyngdom of god.  
but whne sume were hardid &  
bilynele not. & curside pe weye  
of pe lord. bifore pe mltitude. he  
zede asey fro he & departide pe  
dylupis. & dylupis in pe stole of  
a myzt. mā ech day. pis was don  
by t<sup>re</sup>by zeeris. so alle p<sup>re</sup> dwellede  
in asie herde pe word of pe lord. ie  
wis & heven me. & god dide vtues  
not smale bi pe hond of poul. so  
pon oyk me pe sudaries weren

born fro his bodie. and oyknele  
departide fro hem. & wickid spiri  
tis wenten out. but allo sume  
of pe ieris exozistis zede aboute  
& alapde to clepe pe name of pe lord  
ihu crist. on hem p<sup>re</sup> hadde p<sup>re</sup>uel spi  
ritis & seide. & cōmre zon bi ihu.  
whom poul p<sup>re</sup>ethy. & pe were  
senene sones of a ieris stene a pnce  
of p<sup>re</sup>etis. & dide pis pig. but pe  
p<sup>re</sup>uel spirit anliberite. & seide to  
he. & knowe ihu. & i knowe poul.  
but who ben ze. & pe mā in whiche  
was pe wozlde denel. lypide on he.  
& hadde vitorie of bope & was strog  
azens he. & pei nakid & woundid flod  
de asey fro pat hous. & pis pig  
was maid knowū to alle ieris. &  
to hepe me. pat dwellen at effeci.  
and dzed fel don on he alle. & pei  
magnyfietē pe name of pe lord  
ihu. & many me bilynele & came  
knowlechege & tellige her dedis.  
And many of hem p<sup>re</sup> dwelden  
curious pigis. brouzt to gide  
bookis & brenede he bifore alle  
me. & whne pe p<sup>re</sup>is of po were  
acontyd. pei fōnden money of  
syfty poulānd pens. so strongly  
pe word of god wereide & was con  
fermyd. and whne pes pigis were  
fild. poul spōside in spirit. aff  
pat macedoupe was pallid & a case  
to go to ierlin & seide. for astir pat  
& shal be per. & bi honey me also  
to se rome. & he sente into mace  
doupe t<sup>re</sup>by me. & m<sup>re</sup>nystrud  
to hy tymothe & eraste. & he dwel  
lde for a tyme i asie. & agreeet tron  
blyng. was maid in pat daze. of  
pe weye of pe lord. for amā deme  
trie by name a wozcher. in silier.  
makide siluerne housis to dyane



ƿas to crafty me moche wyng  
 which he clepde to gidre he pat we  
 ren luche man werke. ƿe seide  
 me ƿe wite. ƿ of ƿis craft wyng  
 nyng is to vs. ƿe seen ƿe heere  
 pat ƿis poul conuertyd ƿe turney  
 aney moche peple not onuly of  
 effelie. but almeſt of al aſpe. ƿe ſey  
 ƿ ƿe ben not goddis ƿ ben mand  
 wyndis. ƿ not onuly ƿis part  
 ſhal be in perel to us to come in  
 to repreſent. but alſo ƿe teple of  
 ƿe greet dyan ſhal be acountid to  
 nouzt. ƿe ƿe manette of hit  
 ſhal bigyne to be diſturbid. who  
 al aſpe ƿe ƿe world worthip  
 whine ƿes pigis were herd. ƿe  
 were fillid wyne ƿe cryde ƿe ſei  
 de. greet is ƿe dyan of effecians.  
 ƿe ctee was fillid wyne conſur  
 on. ƿe ƿe madden an aſant wyne  
 wille into ƿe teatre ƿe took ƿe  
 us ƿe aſant me of macedonie  
 felaws of poul ƿe whine poul wold  
 haue entrid into ƿe peple ƿe diſt  
 plis ſuſtred not. ƿe alſo ſume of  
 ƿe pices of aſie ƿe were his fren  
 diſ. ſente to hi ƿe preide pat he ſh  
 ulde not ƿeue hi ſilf into ƿe tea  
 tre. ƿe ope men cryde ope ƿe pig. for  
 ƿe churche was conſulid. ƿe many  
 witten not for what cauſe ƿe we  
 re come to gidre. but of ƿe peple  
 ƿe idrowe aſpey con aſlaudre whi  
 le ƿe was pinte hi for ƿe aſlaudre  
 aride wyne his hond cilenſe. ƿe wold  
 ſelde a reſon to ƿe peple. and as  
 ƿe ƿe lene ƿe he was a ƿe. oo  
 vois of alle me was mand cryn  
 ge as by tibeine ouer. greet  
 dyan of effecians. ƿe whine ƿe ſtri  
 be hadde ceſſid ƿe peple. he ſei  
 de. men of effecie what ma is he ƿe

knowy not ƿe ƿe ctee of effelias  
 is ƿe worthip of greet dyan. ƿe  
 of ƿe child of iheruſalem. ƿe whine  
 it may not be aſeſed to ƿes ƿi  
 gis. it bihouey ƿe to be ceſſid ƿe  
 to do no ƿis folly. for ƿe han houn  
 ƿes me ney ſacrilegeris. ney  
 blaſfemyge ƿe. goddeſſe. ƿe ƿe  
 demetrie ƿe ƿe werke me ƿe ƿe  
 hi. han cauſe aſenſ ony ma. ƿe ben  
 courtis of domes ƿe ƿe. aſeſe  
 ƿe ech ope. ƿe ƿe ſeken ony of  
 ony ope ƿe. it may be aſeſid ƿe  
 ƿe lawſul churche. for whi ƿe be  
 in perel to be repreſent of ƿis  
 dapes diſſencio. ƿe no ma is  
 gilty of whom we moſt ƿe ſe  
 ſon of ƿis reuyng to gidre. ƿe whi  
 ne he hadde ſeid ƿis pig. he leet ƿe  
 peple go. **A**d after ƿe nouſe ceſſid  
 poul clepde ƿe diſtuplis  
 monette he. ƿe ſeiſe ſarikel. ƿe he  
 wente for ƿe to go into macedonie  
 ƿe whi he hadde wallid bi ƿe col  
 tis ƿe hadde monette hem by many  
 wordis. he cam to grece. wher  
 whi he hadde be ƿe moneyis  
 ƿe ƿe liden aſpys for hi ƿe  
 was to ſayle into ſirie. ƿe he had  
 de coucil to turne aſen by mace  
 donye. and ſolipater of purry ſo  
 poence ſolewde hi of theſolonyce  
 tis aſtrak. ƿe ſecidus ƿe gayus der  
 bens ƿe tymothe. ƿe aſians. titic  
 ƿe troſym. ƿes for ƿe wente bi  
 fore. abooden us at trowde. for ƿe  
 ſhippede aſter ƿe dapes of ƿeſt  
 nes fro ſhippis ƿe came to he at  
 trowde in ſyue dapes. wher we  
 dwelten ſenene dapes. ƿe in ƿe fir  
 ſt day of ƿe wole whi we ca  
 me to heke breed. poul diſpente

wyne he ƿe ſhulde go for ƿe in ƿe  
 morke. ƿe he drow along ƿe ſer  
 mon til into mydryt. ƿe many  
 laupis were in ƿe ſoler. wher  
 we were gednd to gidre. ƿe aſons  
 man curteis bi name. ſat on ƿe  
 wyndonke. whane he was fallu  
 into an heuy ſleep. while poul diſ  
 pente longe. al ſlepyng he ſel  
 doun fro ƿe yad ſtage. ƿe he was  
 taku vp. ƿe was brouzt ded. to  
 whom whane poul cam dou. he  
 lay on hi ƿe bichpide ƿe ſeiſe. ƿe  
 ƿe be troublid. for his ſoule is i hi  
 ƿe he wente vp ƿe brak breed ƿe  
 and ſpak ynow. vnto ƿe day. ƿe  
 ſo he wente for ƿe ƿe brouzten  
 ƿe child aſpys. ƿe ƿe were confor  
 tid greetly. and we were vp  
 to aſhip. ƿe ſhippede into aſlon.  
 to take poul fro ƿenis. for ſo he  
 hadde diſpolid to make nurney  
 by lond. ƿe whi he found us in  
 aſlon. we taken hi ƿe came to mu  
 tilene. ƿe fro ƿenis we ſhippede  
 in ƿe day ſulbyge. ƿe we camen  
 aſen. chyn. and anoy day we ha  
 uenede at ſamit. ƿe in ƿe day ſyn  
 ge we came to mplete. ƿe poul ƿe  
 poſide to ſhippe on to effeli. leſt  
 ony taryng wer mand to hi in  
 aſpe. for he hude. if it wer poſ  
 ſible to hi. ƿe he ſhulde be i ƿe day  
 of pentecoſte at ierlu. fro myle  
 te he ſente to effeli. ƿe clepde ƿe  
 greteſte me of burpe of ƿe ch  
 urche. ƿe whi ƿe came to hi ƿe we  
 re to gidre. he ſeiſe to he. ƿe wite  
 fro ƿe firſt day in whi ƿe cam  
 into aſpe. how wy ƿe by ech  
 tyne ƿe was ſeruyng to ƿe lord  
 wy al mekenesle ƿe mydenesle  
 ƿe teeris ƿe teptaciouſ ƿe ſelden

to me. of aſpynge of ieruis. how  
 ƿe wyndrow not of. pſtable ƿe  
 gis to ƿe. ƿe ſeiſe not to ƿe ƿe  
 taryte ƿe openly ƿe by honis. ƿe  
 ƿe witneſſe to ieruis ƿe to hepen  
 me penance into god. ƿe ſey i  
 to our lord ihu. ƿe and now lo  
 ƿe am bound in ſpirit. ƿe go into  
 ierlu. ƿe ƿe knowe not what ƿe  
 gis ſhulde come to me in it. but  
 ƿe ƿe hooly goſt bi alle ctees. ƿe  
 neſſy to me. ƿe ſey. ƿe boondis ƿe  
 tribulaciouſ at ierlu abide me.  
 but ƿe drede no ƿis of ƿeſe. ney  
 ƿe make my lyf pſcioulet. ƿe my  
 ſilf. ſo ƿe ƿe ende my courſe. ƿe  
 myſterie of ƿe word. whi  
 ƿe reſſeſſede of ƿe lord ihu. to ƿe  
 neſſe ƿe goſpel of ƿe grace of god.  
 and now lo ƿe woot ƿe ƿe ſhulen  
 no more ſe my face. alle ƿe by whi  
 ch ƿe pallide prechige ƿe kyngdom  
 of god. wherfore ƿe witneſſe to ƿe  
 ƿis day. ƿe ƿe am clene of ƿe blo  
 od of alle me. for ƿe flez not aſpey  
 ƿe ƿe teſſe not to ƿe al ƿe conſent  
 of god. take ƿe tent to ƿe ƿe to al  
 ƿe flou in whi ƿe hooly goſt lay  
 ſett ƿe biſhops to reule ƿe chur  
 che of god. whi he purchaſide  
 wyne his blood. ƿe woot ƿe aſter my  
 departyng raneſmyge wobies  
 ſhullen entre to ƿe. ƿe ſpare not  
 ƿe flou. ƿe me ſpekyge ſhewid  
 pigis. ſhule ryle of ƿe ſilf. ƿe  
 ƿe lede aſpey diſtuplis aſter hem.  
 for whi pig wake ƿe holdige  
 in myde. ƿe bi ƿe zeer. nyzt ƿe day  
 ƿe ceſſid not wyne teeris monel  
 tige ech of ƿe. ƿe now ƿe broke  
 ƿe to god. ƿe to ƿe word of his  
 grace. ƿe ƿe myzt to edifie ƿe ƿe  
 eritage in alle ƿe ben mand hoo



hy and of man / couetide siluer  
 & gold eyn dop as zow gylt wite  
 for to po pigis / were nedful to  
 me & to yele y ben wy me: pes  
 hondis mynistride / alle pes ym  
 gis / thewde to zow: for so it bi  
 honey me trauelinge to ressey  
 ne syl me / & to haue mynde of  
 pe word of pe lord ihu: for he sei  
 de / it is more blisful to yue pau  
 to resseyne / & whie he hadde seid  
 pes pigis: he kneide & he piete  
 wy alle hem / and greet wepig  
 of alle men was maid / & yel fel  
 den on pe necke of poul: & kulle  
 de hi / and lozide moost in pe  
 word y he seide: for yel shulen  
 no more se his face / & yel lette  
 hy to pe shype. ¶ **A**nd whie it was don y  
 we shulde saile & weren  
 pallid asey fro he: wy streyt  
 cours we came to chon: & y day  
 synge to rodus: & fro penys to  
 patiram: & fro penys to myra  
 and whane we fouden a shyp pal  
 lige ouer to ffenye we weten  
 vp into it: & sailed forp / and  
 whie we apperiden to cypre:  
 we lesten it at pe lefchale & lay  
 lede into ffirye & came to cyre  
 for yel y shulde be vnych  
 argid / and whie we fouden disti  
 phs: we diuellihe per senene day  
 es / whiche seiden bi spn it to po  
 ul: y he shulde not go vp to ie  
 rusalem: and whie y dayes we  
 re fillid: we zede forp: & alle me  
 wy wyues & childe ledde forp  
 vs wyounte y citee: & we kne  
 lede in pe lee bynke & we prei  
 eden / and whie we hadden ma  
 ad far wel to gidre: wente up

into pe shyp: & yel turrede ase  
 nto her oibue placis: & whane  
 y shyp sailge was fillid fro  
 ture: we came don to colomay  
 da: & whie we hadde gret wel  
 yel byen: we diuellihe o day at  
 hem: & anof day we zeden forp:  
 & came to cesarie: and we eue  
 den to pe hous of filip eingeht  
 y was oon of pe senene: & diuellihe  
 at hi & to hi weren four donz  
 vngyns y profeciede: & whie we  
 diuellihe yere by su dayes: ap  
 fete agabus by name cam ouer  
 fro iudee: yis whie he cam to us:  
 took yel girdil of poul: & bound to  
 gidre his feet: & hondis & seide: y  
 hooly gott sey pes pigis: yis ierlm  
 shulen bynde ierlm y ma whos  
 is yis girdil: & yel shule bitake  
 into he yene mens hondis: whiche  
 pig whie we herde: we preiden  
 & yel y were of pat place y he  
 shulden not go vp to ierlm: pa  
 ne poul answerde: & seide: what  
 doen yel wepige & timentige myn  
 herte: for y am redy not only  
 to be bound: but also to die i ierlm  
 for yel name of pe lord ihu: & wha  
 ne we myte not concele hi: we  
 were stille & seiden: yel wille of pe  
 lord be don: & astur pes dayes we  
 were maid redy & wenten up to  
 ierlm: & synne of pe distyphs ca  
 me wy us fro cesarie: & leden  
 wy hem aman jason of cypre an  
 eld distiple at whom we shulden  
 be herborid: & whie we came to  
 ierlm: byen resseyne / vs wil  
 fully: & in y day synge poul en  
 de wy us to james: & alle yel  
 dre me were gedrid: whiche wha  
 ne he hadde grett: he seide bi alle

pingis: what god hadde don i here  
 me bi yel mynistrerie of hi: & wha  
 ne yel herden: yel magnified god  
 & seide to hi: bzyr y seest how  
 many poulendis ben i ierlm:  
 y han bilened to god: & alle be lo  
 ueris of pe lawe: & yel herde of  
 yel: y pon techit departing fro mo  
 yles: of pilke ierlm y ben by hepe  
 me: yel sepen y yel oiben not to  
 circucide her lones: ne y oiben to  
 entre bi custom: y fore wha is: it  
 bihouer y yel mltitude come to gi  
 dre: for yel shulen heer: y y art  
 come: y fore do yon yis pig: yel  
 we sepen to yel: y ben to us fou  
 re me: yel haueu adob on hem  
 take y pes me: & hale we yel  
 hem: honge on he y yel haue her  
 heedis: & y alle me wite: y y pig  
 y yel herden of yel be fals: but y  
 yon walfist & y yel kepist yel  
 lawe: but of yele y yel uede of  
 he yen me: we wite demyge: y  
 yel abstene hem fro pig offrid  
 to ydols: & fro blood: & also fro strā  
 ghid pig: & fro fornicacion: yane  
 poul took yel me & into yel day  
 synge he was purified wy he:  
 & entride into yel temple: & thew  
 de yel fillig of dayes of purifying:  
 til yel offrig: was offrid for ech  
 of he: and whie senene dayes we  
 ren eendid: yel ierlm y were of a  
 the: whie yel hzen hi in y tem  
 ple: stride al yel peple: & lepen  
 hondis on hi: & cride: me of ur  
 helpe yel vs: yis is yel ma yazen  
 yel peple & yel laue & yis place te  
 chy euery wher alle me: more o  
 uer & hay led hepe me into yel te  
 ple: & hay tefouhd yis hooly pla  
 ce: for yel seien trofym of ierlm

in yel citee wy hi: whie yel gellide  
 y poul hadde bzynt into yel tem  
 ple: and al yel citee was moned:  
 & a renygge to gidre of yel peple  
 was maid: & yel took poul & dro  
 wen hi out of yel temple: & anoon  
 yel zatis were dolid: & whie yel  
 loutte to sle hi: it was teeld to  
 yel tribune of yel ciupany of kmz  
 tis: y al ierlm is cofoundid: whiche  
 anoon took kmz tis & centuriens:  
 & ran to he: & whie yel hadden leen  
 yel tribune & yel kmz tis: yel ceel  
 lide to hynre poul: yane yel tbune  
 cam & camte hi: & comaudide y  
 he wer bound wy akay cheynes:  
 & aride who he was: & wha he  
 hadde don: but ope cride oyr pig  
 anog yel peple: & whie he myte  
 knowe no certeyn pig for yel noy  
 se: he comaudide hi to be led into  
 yel castels: & whie poul cam to  
 yel grees: it bifel y he was born  
 of kmz tis for strengye of yel peple  
 for yel mltitude of peple suede hi:  
 & cryde take hi asey: & whie po  
 ul bigan to be lad into yel castels:  
 he seide to yel tbune: wher it is  
 leetful to me: to speke ony pig to  
 yel: & he seide: kauft yon greek:  
 wher y art not yel egyptian: whiche  
 bifore pes dayes monedit a noy  
 se: & leddit out into desert: four  
 poulend of me me llearis: & poul  
 seide to hi: for y am a ierlm of tharse  
 of cilice a citeeyn whiche cite is  
 not vnknoibn: & y preie y: sufr  
 me to speke to yel peple: & whie he  
 luffide: poul stood i yel grees: & be  
 kemide yel yel hood to yel peple: & whie  
 a greet silence was maid: he spak in  
 ¶ **B**ehrely tige & seide: ¶ **A**nd  
 yel fadris: heer ze



what reldon i zelde now to you  
 whine time herde p in ebrenz tu  
 ge he spak to hem: per zane pe  
 more silence / & he seide / i am  
 ama a jels bozn at tharse of ci  
 lize nornthid & in vis ctee bly  
 dis pe feet of gamahel tanz bi  
 pe treupe of sadus labe a long  
 et of pe labe: as also ze alle ben  
 today / and i purshabede vis wen  
 til to pe deep: byndige & bitake  
 ge into holdis me & wpmen / as  
 pe puce of pestis zeldy wituel  
 sig to me: & alle ye grettefte of  
 birp of whom also i took pitthis  
 to bryen: & wente to damask  
 to bryge fro pems me bound i  
 to ierlm: & per shulde be peyned  
 & it was don whyle i zede & ney  
 ede to damask: at mydday lude  
 ly fro henene a greet plente of  
 lzt shoon aboute me / & i felde  
 dou to pe erpe: & herde avois fro  
 henene seyge to me / saul saul  
 what purshabest p me: it is  
 hard to pee to keke azens pe pe  
 ke / & i anliberide / who art p lord  
 & he seide to me / i am ihu of na  
 zareth: who p purshabest & per  
 yat were wry me: ozen but pe  
 lzt / but per herde not pe vois  
 of hi: p spak wry me & i seide  
 lord what shal i do: & ye lord sei  
 de to me / ryle pon & go to dama  
 sk: & per it shal be leid to pee  
 of alle pigis whiche it bihouey  
 pee to do: & whine i s; not for  
 ye derete of yat lzt: i was  
 led bi pe hoond of felowis & i  
 cam to damask: & ama aname  
 p bi pe labe hadde witneslig  
 of alle jels dwellege i damask  
 cam to me & stood nyz: & seide

to me / saul brof bihold / & i pe same  
 our biheld ito hi: & he seide / god of oec fa  
 ds hap bfore ordeyned p: p i shuld be  
 we pe will of hi: & shuld be pe ryl  
 ma: & hee pe vois of his moyn / for p  
 alt be his witnesse to alle me of po ryl  
 p: p hant ley & herd / & now what dwellege  
 ryle vp & be baptisid & want he a w  
 pi synes by pe name of hym cle  
 pid to help / and it was don to  
 re me as i turnede azen ito ierlm  
 & preiede i pe temple: p i w; madd  
 ranylthig of loule: & i s; hi lei  
 puge to me / lye pon & go out  
 te of ierlm: for per shule not res  
 leyne pi witneslig of me: & i  
 seide lord per witen p: i was do  
 lige to gidre into ploy: & betige  
 bi synagogis: hem p bileneden  
 into pee: & whine ye blood of the  
 uene pi witnesse was shed out:  
 i stood nyz: & cōsentide & kepte  
 pe cloris of me p sloven hi: &  
 he seide to me / go pon for i shal  
 sende pee fer to naciōis: & per  
 herde hy til pis word: & per reise  
 de hey vois & seiden / take away  
 fro erpe such aman man for  
 it is not leetful: yat he lye  
 & whine per cride & kette away  
 her cloris: & preike dnt into  
 pe er: pe tribune comandide hi  
 to be led into castels: & to be beti  
 wry sloungis: & to be turnetid:  
 p he wite for what cause per  
 cride so to hi: and whine per had  
 den bound hi wry cordis: poul  
 seide to a centurie stondige nyz  
 to hi: wher it is leetful to you  
 to sloung a romey & vndap  
 ned: & whine vis pig was herd  
 pe centurie wente to pe thome  
 & teld to hi & seide / what art p

to doringe: for vis man is a ci  
 teleyu of rome: & ye tribune  
 cam nyz: & seide to hi / seie pon  
 to me wher you art a romay:  
 & he seide / the: & ye tribune an  
 siveride / i wry moche sūne gat  
 vis freedom: & poul seide: & w; s  
 born a citeleyu of rome / p for  
 anoon per i shulden hane tur  
 metid hi: departid away fro hi:  
 & ye tribune dreed: afor p he  
 wite p he was a citeleyu of ro  
 me: & for he hadde bound hi / but  
 in pe day linyng: he wolde bi  
 te more diligetly for what cause  
 he were aculid of ye ierlis: &  
 vnbond hi: & comandide preftis  
 & al ye coucil: to come to gidre  
 and he brouzte for poul & sette  
 hi amog hem // C. // xxiii //  
**A**d poul biheld into ye  
 coucil: & seide / bryen: i  
 wry al good cōtience hane  
 tyued bi fore god: til into vis day  
 and auange puce of preftis: co  
 mandide to men p stoden nyz  
 hi p per shulden linyte his mo  
 ny / pāne poul seide to hi / p whi  
 tid wal god linyte pee / you lutt  
 & demest me bi pe labe: & azens  
 pe labe you comandide me to  
 be linytū: & per p stood nyz: seide  
 curstū pon ye hzeite preft of god:  
 & poul seide / bryere: i wite not:  
 p he is pnce of preftis / for it is  
 wrytū p shalt not curse ye p  
 ce of pi peple / but poul wite p  
 co party was of saduces & peto  
 p of farilees: & he cryede i pe cō  
 cil bryen / i am a farile: ye lo  
 ne of farilees: i am demed of  
 pe hope & of azen plyg of deed  
 me: & whine he hadde leid vis pig:

dillencion was maid bitwre ye  
 farilees & ye saduces & ye mlti  
 tude was departid / for saduces  
 seien y no rylig azen of deed me  
 is: neyr angel neyr spirit: but  
 farilees knowleth eneypr: &  
 a greet cry was maid: & sūme  
 of farilees risen / up: & fouzren  
 seyge / we fynden no pig of y  
 nel in vis mā: what if a spirit  
 eyr an angel spak to hi: & wha  
 ne greet dillencion was maid:  
 pe tribune dreed lest poul shul  
 de be to dralke of he: & he comā  
 dide knytis to go doibn: & to ta  
 ke hi fro ye myddel of he: & to le  
 de hi into castels: & in pe nyz li  
 nge: ye lord stood nyz to hym  
 & seide / be you thide fast: for as p  
 hant witneslid of me i ierlm:  
 so it bihouey pee to witnesse  
 also at rome: & whine ye day was  
 come: sūme of ye ierlis gadrede  
 he: & made abouk & seide / p per sh  
 ulde ney ete ne dzyrke: til per  
 sloven poul / and p were mo  
 pan fourty me p made vis lye  
 rying to gidre: & per wente to  
 ye pnces of preftis & eldye me  
 & seide / wry deuocion we han a  
 volid p we shule not taste o  
 ny pig: til we sleen poul / now  
 pfore make ze knowū to ye tri  
 bune wry pe coucil: p he bryge  
 hi forp to you as if ze shulden  
 knowe sū pig more certeyh of  
 hi: & we ben redy to gle hi: by  
 fore p he come: & whine ye sone  
 of poulis eastr hadde herd ye  
 alpies: he cam & entride into pe  
 castels & teelde to poul / & poul  
 depide to hi con of pe centuries  
 & seide / leide vis zong man to ye



tribune: for he hap an pig to the  
be to hi and he took hi & ledde  
to pe tribune: & sente poull p is  
bondun piete me: to lede to pee  
pis zong ma. p hap sume ym  
gis to speke to pee: & pe tribune  
took his hood: & wente wip hi  
a hyndhalis & aride hi what pig  
is it p pou hast to liche to me:  
he sente pe Jewis ben acordid  
to preie pee. p to monke p by  
ge for poull into pe coucil: as  
if pei shulde enquer an pig more  
certeply of hy: but bilene pou  
not to he: for mo pan fourty me  
of he alpien hi: whiche han a  
voidid p pei shulde not ete ney  
drinke: til pei sleen hi: & now pei  
ben redy abydyge p biheeste  
pfore pe tribune leste pe zong  
ma: & comandise p he shulde spe  
ke to no man. p he hadde mand  
pes pigis knowen to hi: he depi  
de to guide tibe centuriens: &  
he leide to he: make ze redy tibe  
hundrid kuztis: p pei go to cesa  
rie: & hozl me seuenti & sper me  
tibe hundrid: fro pe prude our  
of nyzt: & make ze redy an hoz  
for poull to ryde on to lede hi sent  
to felle pe president: for pe tribu  
ne dreedde lest pe Jewis wolden  
take hi bi pe weye & sle hi: & at  
tirward he myzte be chalengid as  
he hadde take money: & woot hi  
a pittle: conteynge pes pigis  
claudius lissas to pe beste felix  
president: hee he pis ma p was  
take of pe Jewis & bigan to be  
slayn: I cam upon he wip myn  
oost & deliude hi fro he whine  
I knew p he was a romayn: & I wol  
de write pe cause: whiche pei pnt

iden azens hi: & I ledde hi to pe  
concul of heu: & I fond p he was  
aculid of quettionis of her labe  
but he hadde no cryme wozp pe  
dey epur boondis: & whine it was  
teeld me of pe alspies p pei arap  
den for hy: I sente hi to pee: & I  
waruede also pe aculeris: pat  
pei seye at pee fare wel: And so  
pe kuztis as pei were coman  
did taken poull: & ledde hi by myzt  
into antipatrien: & in pe day sup  
ge whine pe hozl me were lest  
shulden go wip hi: pei turnede  
azens to pe castels: & whine pei ca  
men to cesarie: pei taken pe  
pittle to pe president: & pei sente  
also poull before hi: & whine he had  
de rad & aride of what purpuse  
he was: & knew p he was of ali  
cie: I shal heer pee he seide: wha  
ne ym aculeris comen: & he coman  
dide hi to be kept i pe moot hal  
of eroude. ¶ 111. ¶ 111. ¶ 111.  
**A**d after fyne dayes a  
many pruce of prestis cam  
down wip sume eldre me: & oth  
culle a fair speker: whiche we  
ten to pe president azens poull: &  
whine poull was comend: recul  
le bigan to acule hi & leide: wha  
ne in moche pees we doen by  
pee: & many pigis ben amedid  
by p wylsom: enmore & enmore  
wher poull best felix we han rel  
eyned wip al dopyng of rankig:  
but lest I tarie pe lenger: I  
preye pee shorthy: heere us for  
p mekenesse: we han foundu pis  
wicked ma strige dissencion to  
alle ierwis in al pe world: & aur  
tour of dissencion of pe leide of  
nazarens: & he also enforde to

de soule pe temple: wipom also we  
tooken & wolden deme astur omre  
laibe: but lissas pe tribune cam  
wip greet strengpe aboue: & de  
liude hi fro our hondis: coman  
dide his aculeris: to come to p  
of wipom poull myge maist kno  
we of alle pes pigis: of whiche we  
aculsen hi: & Jewis putte to & lei  
de: p pes pigis hadden he so: & po  
ul answeride: whine pe president  
gratide hym to seye: of many  
zeeris I knowe pee p pou art do  
melman to pis folk: & I shal do  
ynowly for me wip good resou: for  
poull maist knowe: for to me be  
not more pan tikelue dayes: si  
pen I cam up to wozthipe i ie  
rlm: & ney in pe temple pei founde  
me disputinge wip our ma ney  
makige concourf of peple ney  
in synagogis ney in citee ney  
pei mou preue to pee of pe whi  
che pigis pei now aculsen me:  
but I knowleche to pee pis pig:  
p after pe beste whiche pei seyn  
erelie: lo I lerne to god pe fadir  
& I bilene to alle pigis p be wri  
tin in pe laibe & p fectis: & I have  
hope in god: whiche also pei he  
silk abide pe agenyng to co  
myge of mit me & wicked i pis  
pig: I studie wip oute hit tynge  
to have consience to god & to me  
enmore: but after many zeeris  
I cam to do almes dedis to my  
folk & offrigis & amolkis: i whiche  
pei founden me purried i pe tem  
ple: not wip cupany ney wip  
noyle: & pei canze me & cryden  
& leide: take alwey our enemy: &  
sume Jewis of alie whiche it  
bihostie to be now p sent at pee.

& acule if pei hadde any pig a  
zens me: eyn pe se hem silk leie  
if pei founden i me any pig of  
wickednelle: si pen I stonde in  
pe coucil: but onuly of pis vois:  
bi whiche I cryede stondige amog  
he: for of pe agenyng of ded  
me: I am demyd pis day of zom  
sopely felix dilayede hem: and  
knew moost certeply of pe  
weye & leide: whine lissas pe tri  
bune shal come down: I shal  
heet zom: & he comandise to a  
centurien to kepe hi: & p he had  
de reide: ney to forbete any ma  
to mynistr of his owne pigis  
to hi: & after sume dayes: felix  
cam wip drullille his wyf pat  
was a Jewelle: & depide poull &  
herde of hi pe fery pis i ca thi  
& whine he disputide of ryzwal  
nelle & chastite: & of dome to co  
myge: felix was mand treblige  
& answeride: p pteymep now go:  
but in tyme conuenable I shal  
clepe pee: also he hopide: p mo  
ney shulde be zom to hi of poull  
for whiche pig he depide hy: &  
spak wip hi & whine tibe yze  
ris were fillid: felix took a sic  
cessour porcus fectus: & felle  
wolve yue grace to Jewis: & leste  
poull bondun. ¶ 112. ¶ 112. ¶ 112.  
**T**herfore whine fectus ca  
into pe purpuse after pe  
prude day: he wente up to ieru  
salem fro cesarie: & pe princes  
of prestis & pe wozpiette of pe  
Jewis wente to hy azens poull:  
& preiden hi & aride gre azens  
hi: p he shulde comande hi to be  
led to ierlm: & pei sette alspies  
to slec hi in pe weye: but fectus



answeringe: y<sup>e</sup> poul shulde be he  
pt i celarie/sopeh y<sup>e</sup> he hi self  
shulde pcede more anyfily/ per  
fore he seide/ per y<sup>e</sup> m<sup>e</sup> you ben my  
ty: come don to gidre/ & if ony  
crime is in ye man: acuse pei  
hi/ & he dwellede amog<sup>e</sup> he more  
yan eyte epr ten dayes: & cam  
don to celarie/ & ye tof day he  
sat for domeshna: & comaudide  
poul to be brouzt/ and whane  
he was brouzt for y<sup>e</sup> felwis stode  
aboute hy whiche came don fro  
ierlm/ azens hi many & greuousle  
causis: whiche pei myzte not  
pzeue/ for poul zeldide resou in  
alle pigis y<sup>e</sup> ney azens ye lanbe  
of felwis ney azens ye teple.  
ney azens ye empour/ y<sup>e</sup> huede  
ony pig/ but festus wolde do  
grace to ye felwis: & answeri  
de to poul/ & seide/ wolt y<sup>e</sup> go up  
to ierlm/ & per be demed of yes  
pigns bifoze me/ & poul seide/  
at ye doom place of ye emp  
our/ y<sup>e</sup> stonde. where it bihoney  
me to be demyd/ y<sup>e</sup> haue not noy  
ed ye felwis: as you knowist  
wel/ for y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> haue noyed. epr  
don ony pig/ woxi deyr: y<sup>e</sup> forsa  
ke not to dye/ but if no pig of  
po is: y<sup>e</sup> yei acusen me: no ma  
may yue me to he: y<sup>e</sup> appele to  
ye empour/ pane festus spak  
wy ye coucil: & answeride/ to  
ye empour/ you hast appellid: to  
ye emp<sup>o</sup> y<sup>e</sup> shalt go/ & whne su  
dayes were passid: Agrippa  
fig & beroupe came down to  
celarie to welcome festus: &  
whne pei dwellede per many  
dayes: festus thewde to ye  
fig of poul. & seide/ a man is

left bound of felw. of which wh  
ne y<sup>e</sup> was at ierlm. pnces of p  
tis & ye eldre me of felwis came  
to me. & aride dapnacion azen  
hy/ to which y<sup>e</sup> answeride/ y<sup>e</sup> it is  
not cust to romayns to dapne  
ony man: bifoze y<sup>e</sup> he y<sup>e</sup> is accusid  
haue his acuseris pzeuent. &  
take place of defendig to putte  
auwey ye crimes y<sup>e</sup> ben put a  
zens hym/ per fore whane pei  
came to gidre hdm/ wy outen  
ony delay i ye day synge. y<sup>e</sup> lit  
for domeshna. & comaudide ye  
ma to be brouzt/ & whne his acu  
seris stode: yei seide no cause of  
whiche pigis y<sup>e</sup> hadde suspicion  
of yuel/ but yei hadde azens hy  
su questious of her veyn wozthi  
pyng: & of oon ihu deed. wh<sup>o</sup> poul  
afferride to lyue/ & y<sup>e</sup> douride  
of such maner questiou: & seide/  
wher he wolde go to ierlm. & ye  
to be demyd of yel pigis/ but  
for poul appelede y<sup>e</sup> he shulde be  
kept to ye knowyng of ye emp<sup>o</sup>:  
y<sup>e</sup> comaudide hi to be kept. til y<sup>e</sup> se  
de hi to ye emp<sup>o</sup>/ and agrippa ki  
de to festus/ y<sup>e</sup> my self wolde hee  
re ye ma/ & he seide to moztwe y<sup>e</sup>  
shalt heere hi/ & on petoy day  
whne agrippa & beroupe came  
wy greet to hir/ and entride in  
to ye auditoire wy tribunes &  
ye pncipal me of ye cite: whne  
festus band poul was brouzt/  
& fest seide/ kig agrippa & alle  
me y<sup>e</sup> ben wy vs: ze seen ye  
ma of which al pe mltitude of  
felwis pcede me at ierlm/ & aride  
& crite: y<sup>e</sup> he shulde lyue no leze  
but y<sup>e</sup> foond y<sup>e</sup> he hadde don no  
pig woxi of deyr/ & y<sup>e</sup> seme to

seide hi to ye emp<sup>o</sup>: for he appeli  
de ye pig/ of which ma: y<sup>e</sup> haue  
not certeyn. what pig/ y<sup>e</sup> shal  
wzite to ye lord/ for which pig  
y<sup>e</sup> brouzte hi to you. & moost to pee  
you kig agrippa: y<sup>e</sup> whne arig  
is mand. y<sup>e</sup> haue what y<sup>e</sup> shal wz  
te/ for it is seyn to me wyoute  
resou: to seide aboudu ma &  
not to signifie ye cause of hym.  
seide to poul/ it is luffi  
id to pee: to lpeke for pi  
self/ pane poul heeld for ye ho  
ond: & bigan to zelde resou of al  
le pigis in whiche y<sup>e</sup> am accusid  
of ye felwis/ you kig agrippa y<sup>e</sup>  
gelle me blesid at pee: whne y<sup>e</sup>  
shal defende me yei day/ moost  
for you knowist alle pigis pat  
ben amog felwis: customs & q  
tionis for which pig/ y<sup>e</sup> blesche:  
heere me paciently for alle ielw  
y<sup>e</sup> bifoze knewen me fro ye bi  
synyng/ knowe my lyf fro zong  
ye. pat fro ye bigynnyng was in  
my folk i ierlm. if yei wolen be  
re wituellig: y<sup>e</sup> by ye moost  
certeyn seide of oure religion.  
y<sup>e</sup> huede afarilee/ & now for ye  
hope of repmission y<sup>e</sup> is mand  
to oure fadris of god: y<sup>e</sup> stonde  
sugert in doom. in which hope  
oure tibelue synagis serwyge  
myt & day hopen to come/ of  
which hope. Sir kung y<sup>e</sup> am ac  
cusid of ye felwis/ what vubi  
leestful ying is demyd at you:  
if god rehy ded men: & sopeh  
y<sup>e</sup> gellede y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> ouzte do many con  
trarie pigis azens ye name of  
ihu nazarene/ which pig al is  
y<sup>e</sup> dite in ierlm/ and y<sup>e</sup> custodie

many of seyntis in prision: whne  
y<sup>e</sup> hadde take power of ye pncis  
of prestis/ & whne yei were slay.  
y<sup>e</sup> brouzte ye sentence/ & by alle  
synagis of ier/ y<sup>e</sup> pounthide he:  
& constraynete to blasfeme/ &  
more y<sup>e</sup> was woud azens he: &  
pursuade into alpen citees/ i  
whiche ye dwellede/ & wente to damall  
wy power & suffryng of pncis  
of prestis: at nydday i ye wepe  
y<sup>e</sup> sir kung y<sup>e</sup> fro heuene hit  
shynede aboute me passige ye  
shynyg of lme. & aboute he y<sup>e</sup>  
were to gidre wy me/ & whne  
we alle hadde falle down into ye  
erre: y<sup>e</sup> herte abois sepyge to me  
mehers tuge/ saul saul what  
shakest y<sup>e</sup> me: it is hard to pee:  
to like azens ye pcke/ & y<sup>e</sup> seide  
who art y<sup>e</sup> lord/ & ye lord seide/ y<sup>e</sup>  
am ihe whom you pshakest/ but  
ryle up & stound on yi feet/ for  
why to ye pig/ y<sup>e</sup> apperide to pee:  
y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> ordeyne pee my nyght & wa  
nelle of po pigis pat you hast  
seyn. & of po in whiche y<sup>e</sup> shal  
theuwe to pee/ & y<sup>e</sup> shal deliue  
pee fro pepis & folk is to whiche  
noib/ & seide pee to opyne ye  
yzen of he: y<sup>e</sup> yei be conuertid fro  
derknele to lht/ & fro power of  
sathanas to god: y<sup>e</sup> yei take re  
myssion of synes & part anlyg  
seyntis hi seyn y<sup>e</sup> is in me/ wher  
fore sir kung agrippa y<sup>e</sup> was  
not vnbilestful to ye heuely  
vision/ but y<sup>e</sup> tolde to hem y<sup>e</sup> be  
at damall first & at ierlm &  
by al ye cite of iudee & to he  
yei me: y<sup>e</sup> yei shulde do penance.  
& be couitid to god. & do woxi  
werkis of penance/ for yei cau



le Jewis taken me. Whiche I was  
in pe temple to sle me / but I was  
holpen bi pe help of god to pis  
day. I stonde witnesse to let  
le to more / I seye no pig ellis.  
van whiche pigis pe pletis t  
moyses spaken p ihule come  
if crist is to suffre. if he is pe  
furste of azen pfig of deed me.  
p ihul ihewe hyst to pe peple  
t to heven me / whiche he spak pes  
pigis. t zeldide resou. ffectus sei  
de wir greet voys / pouil p mad  
dist / many lettris turne pee to  
wodnesse / And pouil seide / I mad  
de not pou beste festus: but I  
speke out pe wordis of trewe  
t of sochzenesse / for allo pe king  
to whom I speke fidefastly. wo  
ot of pes pigis / for I deme y no  
pig of pe se is hid fro hi / for ney  
in a corner. was out of pes pi  
gis don / bileneft pou kig agrip  
pa to pletis. I woot p pou bile  
nest t agripa seide to pouil in  
hrit pig pou coucelist me to be  
maad a cristen man / t pouil sei  
de / I desire anentis god bope  
in lital t ingreet. not oonly pee.  
but alle pes y heer to day to  
be maad such as I am. out taku  
pes hoodis / and pe kig roos up.  
t pe pudent t beroupe. t per  
y saen nyz to he t whiche pei we  
ten anney. pei spake to gidre t  
seide / y pis na hay not dou ouy  
pig worpideep. ney bondis t a  
grupa seide to ffectus / pis man  
myzte be delyned: if he hadde  
not appeld to pe emperour.  
**B**ut as it is. ¶ C. vii.  
de myd hi to shuppe to  
trape. pei boken pouil

wir opn kepers to a centurie  
by name julius of pe cypary of  
knyztis of pe empour. t we we  
ten up into pe ship of adymetis  
t bigunen to sayle. t were born  
about pe placis of asye. whiche  
aristark of macdonse tellas  
myceuce dwellede stille wir ne  
t in pe day lundige we came to li  
don / and julius tretide curteist  
poul. t suffre to go to frendis  
t do his nedis / t whiche we remoue  
den fro pems. we vndur saylede  
to cyre. for y wirndis wern con  
trarie t we seilede in pe see of  
silhae t paulsie. t came to lital  
p is hie / and per pe centurien  
fond a ship of alisaudre seilge  
to ytalie. t puttde us ouer to  
it t whiche in many dayes we sei  
leden slowly. t snepe came azes  
gidydu. for pe wirnd lettde us.  
we seilede to creete bihydis lalo  
mona t snepe we seilede bihyd  
t came into a place p is depid god  
haue. to whom pe cite tellas  
was nyz t whiche moche tyme was  
passid. t whiche seilge pane was  
not sikur. for pat fastig was pas  
sid. pouil coufortde hem t seide to  
he / me I se y seilge bigney to  
be wir wrong t moche harm.  
not couli of charge t of pe ship.  
but allo of oure hynes / but pe  
centurie bileuede more to pe go  
imour. t to pe lord of pe ship. pa  
to pese pigis y were lew of pouil  
t whiche pe haueue was not able  
to dwelle in wyntur. ful manye  
ordynede coucil. to seile fro  
pems / if on ony man pei myz  
ten come to ffectus. to dwelle  
in wyntur at pe haueue of cre

te whiche biholdip to affrik t to cho  
ru. t whiche pe soup blets. per gel  
siden hem to holte purpos / and  
whiche pei hadde remoued fro  
allon. pei seilede to creete t not  
astur moche. pe wirnd t founy  
p is depid nozpeest. was azes  
it t whiche pe ship was rany  
shid. t myzte not enforse azes  
pe wirnd. whiche pe ship was  
joinn to pe blowigis of pe wirnd  
we weren born wir cours into  
an yle p is depid canda. t one  
pe we myzte gete altil boot.  
t whiche pis was taku up pei vli  
den helpis. gidre to gidre pe ship  
t dzedden lest pei shulde falle in  
to sondi placis / t whiche pe ves  
sel was vndur sett. so pei were  
born t for we were prouen in  
strong tempest. i pe day hygn  
ge pei maaden castig out. t pe  
pride day. wir her hondis peical  
tude anney pe instrumetis of pe  
ship t whiche pe sime ney pe  
ferris were sepe by many day  
es. t tepest not altil neyede.  
nots al pe hope of oure heelpre  
was don anney t whiche moche  
fastig hadde be. pane pouil do  
od in pe myddil of he t seide / a me  
it bihoste whiche ze herle me not  
to haue take anney pe ship fro  
crete. t gete pis wrong t castig  
out. t now I couceile you to be of  
good confort / for loll of no ploo  
ne of you shal be out taku of  
pe ship / for an angel of god. who  
I am t to whom I serue. stood  
nyz to me in pis nyz t seide  
poul dzedde pou not. it bihouey  
pee to stonde bifoze pe empour.  
t to god hay joinn to pee. alle

pe i pe ship wir pee / for whiche  
pis ze me be ze of good confort.  
for I bileue to my god. y so it sh  
hal be as it is lew to me / t it bi  
houey us to come into su ple.  
but asturward y in pe fourten  
pe day pe nyz cam on vs seik  
ge in pe stouy see. aboute myd  
nyzt pe ship me supposide su  
kintre to appere to hem / t pei cal  
ten dou a plomet. t fouden tibe  
ty palis of depnele. t astur ali  
til pei were departid fro pems  
t fouden ffectus palis t pei dzed  
t lest we shulde haue fallu in  
into sharp placis. t fro pe laste  
party of pe ship pei seinte four  
aneres t desyeden y pe day hadde  
be come t whiche pe shipmen  
souzte to fle fro pe ship. whiche  
pei hadden sent altil boot into  
pe see vndur colour as pei shul  
den bigyne to streathe for pe  
aneres fro pe former part of  
pe ship. pouil seide to pe centuri  
en t to pe knyztis / but pes dwel  
len i pe ship. ze morbi not be  
maad sair / pane knyztis kintide  
anney pe cordis of pe lital boot.  
t kintide it to falle anney t wha  
ne pe day was come. pouil pei  
ede alle me to take mete t seide  
pe fourtenpe day pis day ze a  
bit t dwellen fastige. t taken  
no pig / wher fore I prie you to  
take mete for joinn heelpre. for  
of noon of you pe heer of pe heed  
shal peristhe t whiche he hadde  
leid pes pigis. pouil took breed  
t dide panfigis to god i pe snt  
of alle me t whiche he hadde bzo  
ku. he bigan to ete t alle were  
maad of betti confort. t pei too



ken mete / & we were alle men  
in pe ship: two hundred seneti &  
lire / & pei were fillid wip mete.  
& dithargide pe ship & castiden  
wheete into pe see / & wthane pe  
day was come: pei enenken no  
loud / & pei biheelde an hauene  
hadde albatir banke: unto wth  
ch pei pouzten if pei myzte to  
brige up pe ship / & wthane pei  
hadden take up pe ankris: pei  
bitooken he to pe see: & slakiden  
to gidre pe wyntouris of godman  
his / & wth a litil seil lufe up: bi blo  
wyng of pe wynd pei wente to  
pe bank / & wthane we felde unto a  
place of ganel gon al aboute. w  
pe see: pei hurthide pe ship / and  
wthane pe former part was fitchid  
it diwelle comouable: & pe laste  
part was brokun of strengre of  
pe see / & couceil of pe knyztis was:  
to sle me if were in warde / lest  
ony thulde astape: wthane he  
hadde sibyned out / but pe cetu  
rien wolde kepe poul: & forbeed  
it to be don / & he comaundide he  
if myzte sibyrine: to go into pe  
see & stape & go out to pe lond / &  
pei baren sume ope on boordis /  
sume on po pigis if were of  
pe ship / & so it was don: if alle  
me astapide to pe lond. **Wm.**

**A**nd wthane we hadde a sta  
pid: pane we knelke p  
pe fle was clepid mylste  
ne / & pe heepen me diten to us not  
itel curtelie / & wthane a fper was  
kynelid: pei refreulthiden us al  
le for pe reyn if cam & cold / but  
wthane poul hadde gederid  
a quantite of kettis of vy  
nes & leide on pe fier: an

addir she cam fory fro pe heete &  
took hi bi pe hond / & wthane pe he  
pen me of pe ple ozen pe beest  
hangyge in his hond: pei seide  
to gidre / for pis wa is amaqnel  
lere / & wthane he stapide fro pe  
see: goddis weiaunce suflrip hi  
not to lyue ierpe / but he stook  
alwey pe beest into pe fier: &  
hadde noon harm / & pei geillide  
p he thulde be turned into stiel  
lyng: & falle don sudenly / & dpe  
but wthane pei abide longe & sp  
en p no pig of yuel was don in  
hi: pei turneten he to gidre & lei  
den p he was god / & in po places  
weren maneris of pe pnce of  
pe ple: puplus bi name: wthane  
resleyned vs bi pze dapes beny  
gueth & found vs / & it bifel p pe  
fadir of puplus las tranelid  
wip feneris and bloody flur / to  
whom poul entride: & wthane he  
hadde pried & leid his hondis on  
hi: he heelde hi / & wthane pis pig  
was don: alle p in pe ple hadden  
syfnessis: came & were heeld /  
whiche alid onouride us wip ma  
ny wozthypis: & putide what  
pignis were necessarie to us wtha  
ne we sthippide: & astur pe mo  
nepis we sthippide in a ship of  
ahlandre: pat hadde wyntid i  
pe ple: to which was an excellen  
signe of castoris / & wthane we ca  
men to suraculan: we diwelliden  
pei pze dapes / fro pems we sei  
lete aboute: & camen to regynum  
& astur o day wthile pe souy blew:  
i pe secunde day we came to pu  
teolos wther: wthane we founden  
brypen: we were preyed to dw  
elle per anentis hem: senene dan

es / & so we camen to rome / and  
fro pems wthane brypen hadden  
herd: pei came to us to pe chepi  
ge of appus: & to pe pze taunes /  
& wthane poul hadde seyn he: he  
dide pauligis to god & took: tr  
ist / & wthane we came to rome:  
it was knid to poul to dwelle  
bi hi gulf: wth a knyzt kepige  
hi / & astur pe prude day he cle  
pide to gidre: pe wozpne of  
pe ieris: & wthane pei camen:  
he seide to he: brypen / dide no  
pig azens pe peple eyn custe  
of sadris: & i was boundu at ie  
rusaleim & was bitakun into pe  
hondis of romays / & wthane pei  
hadden arid of me: wolden hane  
deliuerid me: for p no cause of  
dey was i me / but for ieris  
azenlepten: i was cotreyned  
to appele to pe empour not as  
hange ony pig to acule my  
peple / pfore for pis cause i p  
te to se you & speke to you / for  
pe hope of nrael: i am gurd abou  
te wip dypne / & pei seide to hi:  
nepir we han resleyned letteris  
of pee fro jude: nes ony of bry  
pen conyge stheride ef spak  
ony yuel pig of pee / but we p  
en to heer of pee: what pignis p  
fecht / for of pis secte it is kno  
wun to us: p eyn where me azen  
seyn it / & wthane pei hadde ordey  
ned a day to hym: many men  
came to hi into pe yn / to which  
he erpounede watnefige pe  
kigdom of god: & coucelide hem  
of thii of pe lawe of moyses  
& profetis: fro pe moze til  
to euentyd / & sume bileueden  
to pes pignis: if were seid of

poul: sume bileueden not / &  
wthane pei were not consentige  
to gidre: pei departide: & poul sei  
de oo word / for pe hooly goost spak  
wel bi / stape pe profete to ou  
sadris: & seide / go pou to pis pe  
ple: & sepe to hem / wth eere ze sch  
ulen heere: & ze thule not / vn  
drifonde / & ze seynge thule se:  
& ze thule not biholde / for pe her  
te of pis peple is greetly fathid.  
& wth eereis pei herde hem / &  
pei doledyn to gidre her pzen:  
lest pauenture pei se wth pzen  
& wth eereis heet: & bi herte vn  
drifonde: & be couertid: & i hee  
le he / pfore be it knoun to you:  
p pis heelp of of god: is sent  
to hepen me: & pei thule heet  
& wthane he hadde seid pes pignis:  
Jenis wente out fro hi: & had  
den moche questiou eyn unlig  
amog hem self / and he diwellide  
fulle twey zeer: in his hyzid pla  
ce: & he resleynede: alle p entide  
to hi: & prechide pe kigdom of god /  
& tauzte po pignis p ben of pe lord  
thi cit: wth all trist wip oute  
forbedyng ame. **Here endy**  
**pe dedis of aposths: & bigynep**  
**apolog on the fery: pat ben le**  
**neng i ordrey is: i. James. ij. of**  
**petr. iij. of john. & i. of jude. //**

**T**he ordie of pe seuene epist  
hs whiche ben clepid cano  
nylid: is not so amog pe  
gretis: p fully langozen pe fery  
& seibe pe ryt ordie of pe epist  
hs. As it is foundu in latyn bokis:  
for for as moche as petr is pe  
fiste in pe ordie of aposths: his  
episths ben pe fiste of he in or  
die / but as we longe liven cozet  
not



tiden pe enagehtis to pe luf of tre  
 cupe: to we han sett pes puz pe  
 help of god in her oure ordre  
 for pe firtte of hem is an epist  
 le of james: tibo of petris: pre  
 of jolmes: foon of judee: pe w  
 che epistlis: if pei hadde be treu  
 turned of pe tustlatours into  
 latyn speche: as pei were maad  
 of pe apostlis: pei shulde haue  
 maad no doute to pe rederis:  
 ne pe variatice of wordis shu  
 le not haue tpuigned it file: 22  
 meli i pat place in pe firtte ep  
 le of jolm: wher we reden of pe  
 conhet of pe trinite: wher we  
 fynde p per hay be greet erro  
 of vntrewe tustlatours: fro pe  
 treupe of pe seip: whle pei sette  
 in her tustlatours: only pe name  
 of pe ygis: p is of watir: of bl  
 od: f of spirit: f leue pe witnes  
 sig of pe fadir: f of pe sone: f of  
 pe spirit: in whiche witneslig:  
 our comyn bileue is moost it  
 rengpid: f it is preued p per is  
 oon substaunce of godhede of pe  
 fadir: f of pe sone: f of pe hooly  
 sprit: But i ope epistlis how  
 moche our tustlatoun dnuerly fo  
 operis: I leue to pe pndice of pe  
 rederis: but pou goddis maye  
 Sustachin: whle pou enquerist bi  
 sily of me pe treupe of tpture:  
 pou puttist out my elde to be gna  
 we of emyous mens teep: whi  
 che seyen p i am a peyzere of  
 hooly tpturis: but i in such  
 a werk drete not pe eipe of  
 of my enemyes: ne i shal not  
 denpen to hem: p axen pe treupe  
 of hooly tpture: *Jerom the*  
*plog on pes pithis f James seip pi*

**J**ames se lert  
 uant of god: f of our  
 lord ihu crist: to pe t  
 elue kyndedis p be m  
 laterig a brood: heelp: my b  
 yeren tene ze al ioye: whie ze f  
 len ito dptile tptacions: wh  
 ge p pe premyng of your seip: wh  
 chyp patience: f patience hap a  
 par tyt werk: p ze be par tyt f  
 hool f faple in no pig: f if ony  
 of you nedip wpldom: are he of  
 god: whiche jnyue to alle me lar  
 gely f vptreidy not: f it shal  
 be zoun to hi: but are he mterp:  
 f doute no pig: for he p dourp:  
 is lpt to auare of pe lee: whiche  
 is moued f born aboute of tptid  
 pfoze gelle not pe ilke ma: p he  
 shal take ony pig of pe lord: a  
 man double in soule: is vnta  
 ble in alle his weyes: f a melk  
 broyr: haue glorie in his engh  
 lig: f arpche ma in his loune  
 for as pe flour of gras he shal  
 palle: pe sune roos vp w heete:  
 f drete pe gras: f pe flour of it  
 fel don: f pe sam nelle of his che  
 f perulhite: f so a ryche ma we  
 leuip i his weyes: blelid is pe ma  
 p sustrip tptacion: for whane  
 he shal be premyd: he shal resley  
 ue pe crowne of lpt: whiche god  
 bihgte to me p louen hi: no man  
 whane he is teptid sepe: p he is  
 teptid of god: for whi god is not  
 a tptere of yuele ygis: for he  
 tepty of no ma: but edy ma is t  
 tid drabw f ttrid of his ordne  
 conetpug: asturward conetpug:  
 whane it hay conetpug: byn  
 gip for syue: but syue whane  
 it is fillid: sendry deip: f pfoze

my mooste dereloye bypen: wyle  
 ze erre: ech good zite f ech par tyt  
 zite is from aboue f comep don  
 fro pe fadir of lztis: anentis w  
 hom is noon onthadonkyg of re  
 ward: for wylfulh he bigat: vs  
 bi pe word of treupe: p we be a  
 bigynnyng of his creature: wate  
 ze my bypen moost loued: be  
 ech ma tust to heere: but slow  
 to speke: f slow to wryppe: for  
 pe wryppe of ma: wozchyp not  
 pe ryztyfnesse of god: for whi  
 ch pig: caste ze anei al vnden  
 nelle f plente of malice: f in  
 myltenesse relleyue ze pe word  
 p is plantid: p may saue your  
 soulis: but be ze doeris of pe w  
 ord: f not heereris only: dilley  
 nyge you silt: for if ony ma is an  
 heerer of pe word: f not a doer:  
 p is shal be licned to amia pat  
 biholdip pe chere of his bype i  
 a myzour: for he biheeld hi silt  
 f wente anky: f anoon he forzat  
 whiche he was: but he pat bihol  
 dip in pe laue of par tyt fredo:  
 f dwellyp in it: f is not maad for  
 zetful heerer: but a doer of w  
 erk: p is shal be blelid in his de  
 de: f if ony ma gellyp hi self to  
 be religious f refreyney not  
 his tuge: but dilleyney his her  
 te: pe religion of hi is veyn:  
 deue religion f vntemmed:  
 anentis god f pe fadir is p is  
 to vlyte fadirles f modurles  
 chldre: f wdonbis i her t bula  
 cion: f to kepe hi silt: vnde fou  
 lid fro vis world: *C 11*  
**B**y bypen wyle ze haue pe  
 seip of our lord ihu crist  
 of glorie i acceptiou of plooones

for if aman p hay a goldū rig f  
 m a fair clopig: comep i zoun: cu  
 paup f a poze ma entrip i a foul  
 clopig: f if ze biholde nito hi pat  
 is clopid wry deer clopig: f if  
 ze sepe to hi litte p her: wyl: but  
 to pe poze ma ze sepen: stonde p  
 pere epr litte vndir pe stool of  
 my feet: wher ze deme not ane  
 tis you silt: f ben maad domel  
 me of wickid pouztis: heet ze  
 my moost dereloye bypen:  
 wher god chees not poze men  
 i vis world: ryche in seip: f epr  
 ris of pe kygdom p god bihgte  
 to me p loue hi: but ze han dpti  
 lid pe poze ma: wher ryche me  
 oppllen not you bi pouer: f pei  
 draken you to domes: wher  
 pei blakeme not pe good name  
 p is depid to help on you: nepe  
 les if ze pfour me pe kygis la  
 we: by tpturis: p shalt lo  
 ne pi neze boze as pi self: ze  
 doen wyl: but if ze take ploo  
 nes: ze wozche syue: f ben rep  
 ued of pe laue: as trespalleris:  
 f who ene kepyp al pe laue: but  
 offendip in oon: he is maad gil  
 ty of alle: for he pat seide p shalt  
 do no lecherie: seide also p sh  
 alt not sle: p if pou douth not  
 lecherie: but pou sleeft: pou  
 art maad trespallour of fredo:  
 forwhi doom is poute mercy:  
 is to hi p doip no mercy: but  
 mercy aboue reitip dom: my  
 bypere: what shal it p fite: if  
 ony ma seie p he hay seip: but  
 he hay not pe werkis: wher  
 seip shal moibe same hi: f  
 if a broy epr listu be nakid:  
 f han nete of eche dayes hylode

pe laue: p speke ze f pusdoze:  
 as bigynnyng to be demyd by pe  
 laue of



And if ony of zow seye to he goze  
in pees. be ze maad hoot & be ze fil  
lid. but if ze zyne not to he po pi  
gis p' ben necessarie to body.  
What shal it p'fite. so also sey  
if it hay not werkis. is deed  
it self. but su mā shal seye. p'  
haft sey. & i haue werkis. shu  
we p' to me pi sey wiponte wer  
kis. & i shal shewe to pee my  
sey of werkis. p' bileuett pat  
o god is. p' doist isel & denelis  
bileuē. & treblen. but wolt p'  
bite pon weyn mā. p' sey wip  
onte werkis is puel. wher  
Abrahā oure fadir was not  
iustified of werkis. offrige  
saac his sone on ye auter. per  
foze p' seest p' sey wiponte w'  
his werkis. & his sey was fil  
lid of werkis. & pe scripture  
was fillid. seynge. Abrahā  
bileuede to god. & it was arettid  
to hi to rythwysnesse. & he was  
clepid pe frend of god. ze seen  
p' amā is iustified of werkis. &  
not of sey only in lyk maner.  
& wher also rait pe hoore was  
not iustified of werkis. & rel  
seyuede pe wellangeris. & sen  
te hem out bi anoy weye.  
for as pe body wiponte spirit  
is deed. so also sey wiponte wer  
kis is deed. **C. m.**

**W**hyperē nyle ze be maad  
many maistris. witege  
p' ze take more dom. for alle  
we offende in many p'gis. if  
ony mā offedy not in word. is  
is a partyr mā. for also he may  
lede aboute al pe body wip abn  
dil. for if we putten byndis  
to hofis monyis. for to consente

to us. & we lede aboute al pe bo  
dy of he. And lo shupis whie pei  
ben grete. & bendaym of stronge  
wipndis. & it pei ben boyn aboute  
of alptel gouernail. wher pe  
menyg of pe goimour wole so  
also pe tuge is but a litil meche.  
& rethp grete p'gis lo hofis lital  
fyer brenep a ful greet wode.  
four tuge is fier. pe vnyfite  
of wickidnesse pe tuge is ordey  
ned i our mechnis which defouly  
al pe body. & it is enflawmed of  
helle. & enflawmey pe whel of  
our byrpe. And al pe kynde of be  
estis & of foulis & of serpents  
& of ope is chaatid & po be maad  
tame of māny kynde. but no mā  
may chaatle pe tuge. for it is an  
vnpetible puel & ful of deedly ve  
ny in it we blesen god pe fadir.  
& it we curlen me. p' ben maad  
to pe lyllesse of god. of pe same  
moun passip forp blesig & cur  
lig. my byperē it bihouep not  
p' yes p'gis be don so wher a wel  
le of pe same hole brygy forlike  
te & salt watir. my byperē wher  
pr a fyge tre may make gra  
pis. epr a vyne fygis. so nep  
salt watir may make swete  
watir. who is wipis & tanyt a  
mong zow. shu we he of good  
lynig. his worchig in mylne  
se of his wylsom. p' if ze han be  
tir enye & stryngis ben i zowre  
hertis. nyle ze hane glorie & be  
lyeris azens pe treupe. for pe  
wylsom is not fro aboue comy  
ge don. but erret & beestly & ferd  
ly. for wher is enye & stry. pe  
is vntidefastnesse. & al shewid  
werk. but wylsom p' is fro abo

ne. first it is chaat. after ward p' sible.  
mylne. able to be coutehd. consenti  
ge to goode p'gis. ful of mercy. &  
of goode fruytis. demyge wipon  
te feryng. & pe fruytis of rythwyl  
nelle is loun in pees. to me pat  
maken pees. **C. m.**

**W**herof ben batels & d'etis  
a mog zow. wher not of  
zowr conetiles. p' fyte in zowre  
mechnis. ze conette & ze han not  
ze slean & ze han enye. & ze mou  
not gete. ze chide & make batel.  
& ze han not for ze aren not. ze  
aren puele. as ze shewen apen  
ly i zowr conetilis. anowtrieris  
wite not ze p' pe frenthyp of pis  
world is enemy to god. p' foze who  
enere wole be frend of pis world.  
is maad pe enemy of god. wher  
ze gellen p' pe lptur. sey veynly  
pe lptur pat dwelly in zow to  
neytry to enye. but he zyney  
pe more grace. for which p'ng  
he sey god wylstondy proude  
me. but to meke he zyney grace  
p' foze be ze luyet to god. but wipstō  
de pe deuel. & he shal fle fro zow  
neze ze to god. & he shal neze to  
zow ze synneris deule ze pe hondis.  
& ze double in soule purge ze pe her  
tis be ze wreathis & wipyle ze zowr  
lezynge be turned into wipyg.  
& ioye into lounke of herte. be ze  
mekid in pe sirt of pe lord. & he  
shal enhance zow my bryen  
nyle ze bachyte eth opir. he pat  
bachytis his hroz. epr p' demey  
his hrozir. bachytis pe laue. &  
demey pe laue. & if pon demett  
pe laue. p' art not a doere of pe  
laue. but a domesma. but oon  
is maker of pe laue & iuge. p'

may leese & deliuer. & who art you  
p' demett pi nezeboze. lo now ze  
p' leyen. to day ey to morwe we  
shule go into yilke citee. & pe we  
shule dwelle azeer. & we shule  
make marchandise. & we shu  
len make wipynge. whiche wite  
not what is to zow i pe morwe.  
for what is zowre lyl. as smoke  
apperige at a litil. & after ward  
it shal be wathid. p' foze p' ze seie  
if pe lord wole. & if we lyuen.  
we shulen do pis p'ng epr pat  
p'ng. & now ze maken fulout ioye  
in zowr p'ndis. epr such ioyis is  
wickid. perfoze it is lyne to hy  
p' kan do good. & doy not. **C. n.**

**D**oy now ze riche men.  
wep ze zellige in zowr  
wreathidnesse. p' shule  
come to zow. zowr riches ben  
rotu. & zowre clopis be etu of  
mouytis. zowr gold & siluer hay  
rustid. & pe rust of he shal be to  
zow into wipyness. & shal ete  
zowr fleulthis as fyer. ze ha tre  
sourd to zow wryppe i pe laste  
dayes. lo pe lye of zowr werk  
me. p' repiden zowre feeldis. whi  
ch is fraudid of zow. cryep. & pe  
cry of he hay entrid. into pe ee  
ris of pe lord of coftis. ze han ete  
ou pe erpe. & in zowr leatheries  
ze han norilthid zowr hertis. in  
pe day of sleynge ze broute &  
sloven pe wyl mā. & he azen  
stood not zow p' foze byperē be  
ze pacient til to pe comyng of pe  
lord. lo an erpe thier. abidy pre  
cious fruyt of pe erpe. paciet  
ly sustryge til he relleyue tide  
ful & late ful fruyt. & be ze paci  
ent & coferme ze zowr hertis.



for ye comyng of ye lord shal neze  
brypen nyle ze be sorowful ech to  
opur. p ze be not demyd lo ye yn  
ge stonnyng nyz bifoze ye zate  
Expre take ze ensauple of p  
uel goyng out & of long abidig  
tranel & of patience. ye pte  
tis p spaken to zoun i ye name  
of ye lord lo be blessen he pat  
suffrid ze herten ye suffrig  
epur patience of iob. and ze h  
zen ye ende of ye lord. for ye lord  
is merciful & doyng mercy bi  
foze alle pigis my brypen nyle  
ze libere. ney bi heuene neyr  
by erpe. ney bi what en opur  
oother but be zoun word zhe zhe  
nay nay. p ze falle not vnder  
dom. & if ony of zoun is sorowful  
preie ze wip paciet soule. & seie  
he a psalm. if ony of zoun is lyk  
leede he yn pestis of ye church  
pzepe per for hi. & anoynte w  
oyle in ye name of ye lord. & ye  
preier of fey shal saue ye lyk  
mal. & ye lord shal make hi lzt  
t if he be yn synes. per shule  
be for zoun to hi pfoze knowle  
che ze ech to opur zoun synes.  
pzeie ze ech for opur. p ze be  
saue for ye comymiel preier  
of a nist ma. is moche wozy &  
he was a deedy man lyk us. &  
i preier he preide p it shulde  
not reyne on ye erpe. & it rey  
nede not ye zee ris & fyre mo  
nepis. & est loone he preide. &  
heuene zaf reyn & ye erpe zaf  
his fruyt. And brypen if ony of  
zoun ertry fro treupe. & ony co  
uertty hi. he ower to wite. p  
he p maky a syner to be tur  
ned fro ye errour of his weye.

shal saue ye soule of hi fro deap.  
I feuerly ye mltitude of synes.  
Here endy ye pistle of James. &  
bisyne ye firste pistle of pete.  
The apostle  
of ihu crist. to ye cho  
lu me to ye comelign  
of stateryng abood. of  
pouite of galathe. of capadocie of  
alie. & bitynye. bi ye bifoze knowig  
of god ye fadir. i hale wyg of sp  
rit. bi obedience & spregyng of  
ye blood of ihu crist. grace & pees  
be mltiplid to zoun blesid be god  
t ye fadir of our lord ihu crist.  
Which by his grete mercy bigat  
vs azen ito lyunge hope by ye as  
rylig of ihu crist fro deap into en  
tage vncorruptible. & vnderfouid  
t pat shal not fade p is kept in  
heuenes for zoun p in ye ven of god  
ben kept bi ye fey. into heelp  
is redy to be shewid i ye laste ty  
me i which ze shule make ioye.  
pouy it bihouey now alyt. to be  
soy i dymers tceptacion. p ye pre  
uys of zoun fey be moche moze  
precious pan gold. p is preuyd  
by fyer. & be foundu into heryng  
t glorie & honour. i ye reuelaci  
on of ihu crist. whom whie ze  
han not seyn. ze loue ito whom  
allo now ze not leynge. blyne  
but ze pat blyneu shule haue  
ioye & gladnele p may not be  
teeld out. & ze shule be glorified  
t haue ye ende of zoun fey. ye  
heelp of zoun fey. ye boche of  
zoun soule. of which heelp pte  
tis soute & enlerchid. p pte  
of ye grace to comyge i zoun. & lous  
te which en what man tyme ye  
spurt of cit signyfyede i he. & bi

fore teelde po passionis p ben in ca.  
t ye latter glories to which it is  
shewid. for not to he llt. but to  
zoun per mynstryng po pigis pat  
now ben teeld to zoun bi he p prech  
den to zoun bi ye hooly gost lent fro  
heuene ito whom angels deliue  
to biholde for which pig be ze gi  
rd ye leendis of zoun soule. soze  
p fyt. & hope ze into ye ilke grace  
p is profid to zoun bi ye shewyng  
of ihu crist. as lones of obedience.  
not mand lyk to ye former desy  
zis of zoun vnkunyngele. but  
lyk hi pat hay clepid zoun hooly.  
p alio ze sile be hooly. i al lyng  
for it is warty ze schule be hooly.  
for i am hooly. & if ze mwardly clepe  
hi fadir. which demer wyoute  
acceptioun of psoones by ye werk  
of ech ma. lyne ze m dexe i ye ty  
me of zoun pilgrymage. wryge  
p not bi corruptible gold epur  
siluer. & ben bouz azen of zoun  
veyu lyng of fadis tradicioun.  
but bi ye precious blood as of ye  
lomb vnderfouid & vnsportid cit  
ihu p was knowu bifoze ye ma  
ky of ye world. but he is shew  
id in ye laste tymes for zoun  
p by hi ben feyful in god. p rei  
lde hy fro deap. & zaf to hi euer  
lastige glorie. p zoun fey & ho  
pe were in god. & make ze chaf  
zoun soule i obedience of cha  
rite. in loue of bryphod. of sy  
ple herte loue ze to gidre moze  
blyth. & be ze born azen. not of  
corruptible seed bi ye word of  
lyngge god & dwellege into w  
outen ende for ech fleish is hey.  
t al ye glorie of it is as flour of  
hep. ye hep duede up. & his flo  
de dou. but ye word of ye lord dwelhy

Wout eir i ye pe word. p is schid  
Therefore to zoun  
putte ze asey al malice  
t al gyle & feynyngis & e  
vies & alle bacyngis as now  
born zonge chldren resonable.  
wyoute gyle. couerte ze mylk.  
p in it ze were into heelp. if  
nepeles ze han tansid p ye lord  
is libete & neze ze to hi p is aly  
nyge stoon & repuyd of me. but  
choli of god. & honourid. & ze lile  
as quike stoonys be ze aboue bil  
did into spual housis & an hooly  
preethod to offere spual sacri  
fis acceptable to god by ihu crist.  
for which pig ye apture seip  
lo i shal sette in syon ye hyste  
corner stoon choli & precions  
t he p shal blyne in hi. shal  
not be confoundid pfoze to zoun  
p blyne. but to me p blyne  
not. ye stoon whom ye bilderi  
repreyde. p is maad into pe  
heed of ye corner. & ye stoon of  
huryng. & stoon of staudre. to he  
p offende to ye word. ney bly  
ue it in which ye ben sett. but  
ze ben a choli & syn. a kyndly  
preethod. hooly folk. a peple of  
purchasyng. p ze telle ye ver  
tues of hi p depide zoun fro  
derknessis into his wondirful  
lyt. which en tyme were  
not a peple of god. but now  
ze ben ye peple of god. which  
hadd not mercy. but now ze  
han mercy moost dere i blych  
zoun as comelyngis & pilgrymes  
to abteyne zoun fro fleishly de  
siris pat fisten azen ye soule  
t haue ze zoun conersacion good  
a moze hepe me pat i p pig p



pei bachite of zoi as of myldeore?  
pei biholden zoi of good werkis  
f. **¶** gloriſie god i pe day of visita  
cion be ze enget to ech creatu  
r for god epi to pe fig as to  
hi p is hysere in stat / ey to du  
tis as to pulke p ben sent of  
hi to pe veniſce of myldeore  
ris f to pe preliſg of good me  
for lo is pe wille of god: p ze do  
wel f make pe vnkunpneſſe  
of vnpuritet me to be doub as  
fre me f not as hantpe kyngs  
but as pe let nantis of god  
honoure ze alle me lone ze byper  
hood drede ze god honoure ze pe  
kyng / ſeruantis be ze hugetis  
mal drede to lordis not conly to  
goode f to mylde but allo to tri  
nantis for pis is grace if for co  
ſcience of god ony ma ſuffry  
heynelles f ſuffry vniſty for  
what grace is it: if ze ſynen f  
ben buſtard f ſuffren but if  
ze doen wel f ſuffren patiently  
pis is grace auentis god for to  
pis pig ze ben clepid for allo et  
ſuffrye for us f leſte enſauple  
to zoi p ze folwe pe ſteppis of  
hi whiche dide not ſyne ney gyle  
was found in his mouy f whne  
he was curſid he curſide not wha  
ne he ſuffrye he manade not  
but he bitok hi ſelf to hi p demy  
de hym vniſty f he hi ſelf baar  
oure ſynes i his body on a tree  
p we be deed to ſynes f hne to  
riſt vniſſelle by whos wau wo  
de ze ben heehd for ze were as  
ſheep errige but ze ben now  
fined to pe ſheparde f biſhop  
of zoi ſoulis **¶ C. m.**  
**A**llo wimen be pei huget  
to her hoſebondis p if ony

man bileue not to pe word: bi pe  
comſacion of wimen pei be ſe  
wōm in wipoute word f bihold  
ze indrede zoiure hooh comſacion  
of whiche p be not wipoute forp  
curious ournys of heer epi  
doynge aboute of gold epi ournys  
of cloys: but pulke pat is pe  
hyd man of herte i vncorrupti  
on f of mylde ſpirit whiche is  
riche in pe liz of god for lo ſi  
tyme hooh wimen hopege in  
god ourneden hem ſelf: f weren  
luget to her onne hoſebondis as  
ſare obeide to abraham: f depi  
de hi lord of whom ze ben doynge  
wel doynge: f dredege ony p  
bacion allo me diſelle to gode  
bi kumpe: pue ze honoure to pe  
mans freete as to pe moze feble  
f as to euene eris of grace f of  
lyf: p zoi preieris be not lett  
f in ſey al of oon wille in pier  
be ze ech ſuffryge wip op: lo ueris  
of bypſed incil: mylde meke  
not zeldige puel for puel ne p  
curlyſg for curlyſg but zemb  
id bleſſige for in pis pig ze ben  
clepid pat ze welde bleſſig bi en  
tage for he p wole lone lyf f ze  
good dayes: contreyne his tilge  
fro puel f hile lypis p pei lyeke  
not gyle f bonbe he fro puel f  
do good: ſeke he pees f parſity  
sne it for pe pzen of pe lord ben  
on niſt me: f his eeris on pe pi  
eris of he but pe cheet of pe  
lord is on me p doen puel f wh  
is it p thal anoye zoi: if ze be ſure  
f louneris of goodneſſe but allo  
if ze ſuffren ony pig for riſtbi  
nelle: ze ben bleſid but drede ze  
not pe drede of he: p ze be not  
diſtribid but halye ze pe lord

to ſam  
facion  
et in zoiure hertis f eimozze be  
ze redi to ech ma axynge zoi re  
ſou of p ſey f hope pat is i zoi  
but wip myldeſſe f drede: ha  
nyge good conſcience p in pat  
pig p pei bachiten of zoi: pei  
ben coſoundid whiche chalengen  
fallly zoiure good comſacion  
i et for it is bettr pat ze do  
wel f ſuffrye if pe wille of god  
wole: pan doynge puele for al  
lo et conys drede for onre ly  
nes he niſt for vniſt p he niſt  
ilde offre to god vs mand deed  
in fleiſth but mand quyt i ſpirit  
for whiche pig he cam i ſpirit  
allo to he p were cloſid to gode  
f pſon: p chide whiche were gū  
tyme vnbileſſid whne pei ab  
iden pe paciſce of god i pe dāes  
of noe whne pe ſhip was mid  
in whiche a fewe p is to ſeie epte  
ſoulis were mand ſaf bi watir  
f lo baptyſm of lyf four me ma  
ky vs ſaf not pe puttyg a wep  
of pe filpis of fleiſth but pe ar  
yng of a good conſcience i god  
bi pe azenpſig of on lord iſh  
et p is in pe riſthalt of god f  
ſuoleryp deap: p we ſhulden be  
mand eris of enlaſtge lyf he  
zed into henene f angels f po  
weris f vtues be mand luget  
tis to hym **¶ C. m.**  
**T**herfore for et ſuffrye  
in fleiſth: be ze allo an  
med bi pe ſame penkyg for he  
p ſuffrye in fleiſth: ceſſide f  
ſynes p pat is leſt now i flei  
th: hne not no to pe deſiris of  
me but to pe wille of god for  
pe tyme p is pallid is p now to  
pe wille of hepe me to be cen

did: whiche walkide in leatheries  
f luſtis i moche drynkig of wy  
i vmeſurable etyngis f dryk  
gis f vnleeſſid worlthypig of  
manymetis in whiche now pei  
ben aſtonped i whiche pig pei  
wondze for ze renen not to gi  
dre into pe ſame coſuſion of let  
cherie f blaſteme f pei ſhulen  
zyne reſou to hi: p is redy to de  
me pe quyt f pe deede for wh  
for pis pig it is prechid allo to  
deed men: p pei be demyd by me  
in fleiſth f p pei lye bi god in  
ſpirit for pe ende of alle pigis  
ſhal neze p fore be ze prudent  
f wake ze in preieris biſore alle  
pigis hane ze charite ech to opr  
in zoi ſelf alſatis laſtge: for  
charite kenerp pe mſtute of  
ſynes holde ze opitalite to gi  
dre wipoute grucchyg ech ma  
as he hap reſepied grace my  
niſtrige it into ech opr as goo  
de diſpenderis of pe manyfold  
grace of god if ony ma ſpekyp  
lyete he as pe wordis of god  
f ony ma myniſtryp p god be  
honourid in alle pigis by iſh  
criſt on lord to who is gloze  
f lordſhip ito wordis of wordis  
ane **¶** goost dere bynen nple ze  
go pilmage i feruour p is mid  
to zoi to teptacion as if ony  
newe pig biſalle to zoi but co  
mpne ze wip pe paſſions of et  
f hane ze ioye p allo ze be glad  
f hane ze ioye i pe reuelacion  
of his gloze if ze ben diſpſid  
for pe name of et: ze ſhulen  
be bleſid for pat p is of pe ho  
nour f of pe gloze of pe ver  
tu of god f pe ſpirit p is his

as of pe vni whiche  
god miniſtryp



thai sette on zoi but no mā of  
zoi suffre as a mā sleer eþ a  
peef. eþ cunser. eþ a defirer of  
ope mems goodis but if a cte  
mā. thame he not but glorie  
he god in his name for tyme  
is p doom bigyne at goddis ho  
if it bigyne fir st at vs. whē  
ende thal be of hem p bileue  
not to pe gospel. if a nist mā  
vnepe thal be saued. wher thū  
len pe bfeirful mā e pe hner  
appere pfore e pe p snuffe bi  
pe wille of god. bitaken her sou  
his i good deedis. to pe seirful  
maker of nouzt. ¶ **V**erfore I an euene eldre  
mā. e a witnesse of cdis  
pallours which also am a co  
mynner of p gloze. p thal be  
thetwīd i tyme to comyge. bile  
che ze pe eldre mē p ben amog  
zoi fede ze pe floe of god. p is a  
mong zoi e puruepe ze not as  
coustreyued but wilfully bi god  
not for loue of foul wpyng.  
but wilfully. uer as haunge lord  
thup in pe clergie. but pat ze be  
mand enlauple of pe floe of wil  
le of soule. and whie pe pnce of  
thepherdis thal appere. ze thū  
len releyue pe cronue of glori  
e. p may neie vade. ¶ **A**llo ze zo  
ge me be ze ligit to eldre mē  
e alle thewe ze to gidre meke  
nelle. for pe lord wpyndy prou  
de mē. but he znyer grace to me  
ke mē. perfore be ze mekid. vū  
dir pe myzt hond of god p he rey  
se zoi i pe tyme of visitaciō. e  
caste ze al zoi. bilynelle into hi.  
for to hym is cure of zoi. be ze  
dohze e wake ze. for zoure adu

larie pe denel as a rotyge hou  
goy aboute. sechge who he thal  
denou. who axend onde ze ar  
ge in pe seip. witige p pe same  
passiō is maid to pilke bryphod  
of zoi p is in pe world e god of  
al grace p depide zoi into his e  
ulastige gloze zoi suffrige aþ  
til he thal parfōme e thal cōfer  
me e thal make sad to hy be glorie  
e lordshyp ito worldis of worldis  
amē. ¶ **S**iluan seirful bryph  
to zoi as i deme. i wort thowth  
bilechige e bitnellige p p is  
pe very grace of god i whiche  
stonden pe church p is gelyrd  
in babiloyne e markus my loue  
greety zoi wel greete ze wel to  
gidre in hooly cos. grace be to zoi  
alle p ben i cte amē. ¶ **H**ere endy  
re firte pille of petre. ¶ **B**igyn  
uer pe seirful. ¶ **S**iluan seirful  
mout petre seruait  
e apostle of ihu cte  
to hem p han take w  
us pe euene seip i pe ryzthlyne  
se of om god e saupour ihu cte  
grace e pees be fillid to zoi. bi  
re knowyng of om lord ihu cte  
how alle pigis of his godlich  
tu. p ben to luf e pte ben zoi  
to us by pe knowyng of hy p  
clepide us fro his onue gloze  
e vertu. bi whom he zaf to us  
moost pzeious blyessis. pat  
by pes pigis ze thulen be maid  
felowis of goddis kynde. e fle  
pe corrupciō of pat couetile  
p is in pe world e bypunge ze in  
al bilynelle. e mynystre ze i zoi  
re seip. ¶ **S**tu e blyng. in blyng  
abstinence. i abstinence pacie  
ce. i pacience pte. in pte loue

of bryphed e in loue of bryphod  
charite. for if pe se be wpy zoi e  
ouercome. pei thule not make  
zoi voute. neþ wpyoute frist  
i pe knowyng of omre lord ihu  
crist. but to whom pes ben not  
redy. he is blynd. e gropy w  
his hond. e forzet y pe purgung  
of his elte trespassis. wherfore  
brypen be ze moze blyþ. p by go  
de werkis ze make zoi clepig  
e chehyng. cer teyn for ze doynge  
pes pigis. thulen not do hne  
omy tyme. for pus pe entyng in  
to eulastige kyngdom of om lord  
e saupour ihu crist. thal be  
mynystred to zoi plenteuouly  
for which pig. thal bigyne to  
monete zoi enmore of pes pi  
gis. e wole p ze be blyng e  
cōfermyd i pis present treupe  
forloze. I deme mly as longe  
as I am i pis tabernacle to rei  
se zoi i monettig. e I am cer tey  
p pe puttig asey of my taber  
nacle is swyft. bi pis p our lord  
ihu cte hay thewid to me. but  
i thal zyne blynelle e ofte affe  
my deap ze haue myte of pes pi  
gis. for we not luyng vnkyle  
talis han maid knowu to zoi p  
vertu e pe bfore knowyng of  
our lord ihu. but we were ind  
biholderis of his gretnele. for  
he took of god pe fadyr honour  
e gloze. by such man. vois lly  
du dou to hy fro pe greet gloze  
pis is my loued lone. i whom I  
haue plesid to me. heer ze hi e  
we herde pis vois bryngt fro he  
uene. whie we were wpy hi  
i pe hooly hil. e we han a sadder  
word of pte. to which ze zy

nyge tent don wel. as to alant  
ne p znyer lye in a derk place.  
til pe day bigyne to znye lye.  
e pe day sterre spynge i zoi  
her tis. e fir st vnder stonde ze p  
pig. p ech profecie of scripture  
is not maid by pte inter pte  
oi. for pte was not bryngt  
omy tyme by māys wille. but  
pe hooly me of god ihu wpy pe  
hooly goot spaken. ¶ **E**n. ¶ **B**ut  
allo falle pte. were  
in pe peple as in zoi thū  
len be maistur lyer is. p  
thulen bryngge yn sectis of perdi  
ciō. e pei denyen vlye lord pat  
houzte he. e luyng on he gylt  
hastly perdiō. e many thule  
sue her lecheries. by whiche pe  
weye of treupe thal be blaifmed.  
e pei thulen make marchandie  
of zoi i couetile by seyned wor  
dis. to which doom nois althile  
ago ceestly not. e pe pte of  
he nappit not. for if god sparide  
not augeis luyngge. but bitook  
hem to be turmetid e to be drawū  
dowū wpy bchdis of helle into hel  
le. to be kept into dom. e sparide  
not pe firte world. but kepte noe  
pe exte mā pe bfore goer of  
rythlynele. e bryngte yn pe gr  
et flood to pe world of vnkylful  
mē. e he drof into pondre pe ctyes  
of mē of s. e of mē of gomoz  
e daryng. turuyg wpsodou.  
e putte he pe enlauple of he pat  
were to doynge pte. e deliuer  
ete pe mlt loth oppzelid of pe w  
ong. e of pe lecherous couerla  
ciō of curtid mē. for in lye e hee  
rig he was mlt e dwelhte amog  
hem p fro day into day turmetid







tis re fadir ihu. **E**t he is re for  
zphuenes for our hines. **E**t not on  
ly for our hines. but also for re  
synes of al re world. **E**t in pis pig  
we write p' re knowe hym. **I**f we  
kepen his comādenētis. he p'  
seip p' he knowe god. **E**t kep  
not hile comādenētis. is a ly  
er. **E**t treupe is not in hi. but pe  
charite of god is parfyt. **V**erith  
in hym. **P**' kep his word. in pis  
pig. we write p' we ben i hi. **I**f  
we ben parfyt in hi. he p' seip  
p' he dwellyn in hi. he o'wip for to  
walke as he walkte. moost der  
brypen. **W**rite to you not ane we  
maidenet. but pe elde maide  
met. **P**' ze hadde fro pe bigynnyng.  
pe elde maide met. is re word p'  
ze herde. **¶ Of scoone. W**rite to  
you a newe maide met. **P**' is tre  
we bove in hi. **E**t you. for derknes  
his ben pallid. **E**t verp lizt. **A**hy  
nep nois. he p' seip p' he is in lizt.  
**E**t haty his broper. is in derknesse  
zit. **H**e p' loney his brop. dwellyn  
in lizt. **E**t Maide is not in hym.  
but he p' haty his brop. is i derk  
nessis. **E**t wandry in derknessis  
**E**t woot not whidur he goip. for  
derknessis han blyndid his yzen.  
lytle sones. **W**rite to you. **P**' you  
synes be for you to you for his  
name. **F**adris. **W**rite to you for  
ze han knowe hi. **P**' is fro pe by  
gynnyng. **¶ Zonge me. W**rite to  
you. for ze han ouercomen pe wickid.  
**W**rite to you zonge childe. for  
ze han knowe re fadir. **W**rite  
to you brypen. for ze han knowe  
hi. **P**'at is fro pe bigynnyng. **¶ W**rite  
to you zonge me. for ze ben at to  
ge. **E**t re word of god dwellyn i you.

**E**t ze han ouercomen pe wickid. **M**y  
le ze lone pe world. **N**e po pigis p'  
ben i pe world. **I**f ony mā loney  
pe world. **P**'e charite of re fadir  
is not in hym. for al pig p' is in  
pe world. is couetyse of fleth. **E**t  
couetyse of yzen. **E**t prid of hys. **W**h  
ich is not of re fadir. but it is of  
pe world. **E**t pe world. **I**thal palle. **E**t  
pe couetyse of it. but he p' dory pe  
wille of god. dwellyn wynter  
ende. **M**y lytle sones. **P**'e laste om  
is. **E**t as ze han herd p' ancrut co  
mey. **N**ow many ancrutis ben  
mad. **W**her fore we write. **P**' it is  
pe laste om. **P**'e wente fory fro  
us. but pe were not of us. for if  
pe hadde be of us. **P**'e hadde dw  
elt wy us. but p' pe be knowe.  
**P**' pe be not of us. but ze han an  
oyntig of re hooly goost. **E**t kno  
wen alle pigis. **W**oot not to you.  
as to me. **P**'e newe it. **E**t for  
ech leelg is not of treupe. **W**ho  
is a lyere. but pis p' demey. **P**' hi  
is not et. **P**'is is anet. **P**' demey  
pe fadir. **E**t pe lone. so ech p' demey  
pe lone. **H**ay not pe fadir. but he  
p' knowe chyp pe lone. **H**ay all pe  
fadir. **P**'at pig p' ze herde at pe bi  
gynnyng. dwelle it in you. for if p'  
pig dwellyn in you. **W**hich ze herde  
at pe bigynnyng. ze dwelle dwelle  
in pe lone. **E**t in pe fadir. **P**'is is  
pe biheeste. **P**' he bihite to us.  
enlastige lyf. **W**oot to you. **P**'e  
pigis of he p' dulle yue you. **E**t p'  
pe anoyntig. **W**hich ze ressemet  
of hi. dwelle in you. **E**t ze han not  
nete p' ony mā teche you. but as  
his anoyntig. teche you of alle  
pigis. **E**t it is trewe. **E**t it is not

leelg. **E**t as he tanzte you. **D**wel  
le ze in hi. **E**t now ze lytle sones. **D**w  
elle ze in hi. **P**'e hane he thal ap  
pere. **W**e hane a trust. **E**t he not co  
foudid of hi in his comys. **I**f ze w  
te p' he is iust. **W**ite ze also. **P**'ech p'  
dory. **W**hich is bon of hi. **¶ Of m.**  
**S** ze what man. **¶ Of m.**  
**S** charite re fadir. **Z**af to us.  
**P**'e be named re sones  
of god. **E**t be his sones. for pis pig  
pe world. **K**new not us. for it knew  
not hi. **M**ooft der. brypen now. **W**e  
be re sones of god. **E**t it apperi  
de not. **W**hat we thulen be. **W**e  
write p' whue he thal apper. **W**e  
thulen be hyl hym. for we thul  
le ze hi as he is. **E**t ech mā p' hay  
pis hope in hi. **M**akip hi sult ho  
oly as he is hooly. **E**t mā p'at do  
ip hys. **D**oy also. **W**ickidnesse. **E**t  
syne is wickidnesse. **E**t ze witen  
p'at he apperide to do alkep synes.  
**E**t syne is not in hi. **E**t mā p' dw  
ellyn in hi. **S**ynep not. **E**t ech p'at  
syney. **S**ep not hi. **N**e p' knew  
hi. **H**il sones. **N**o mā dulle yue you.  
he p' dory. **W**hich is bon of hi. **W**h  
ich is bon of god. **D**oy not syne.  
for pe seed of god dwellyn in hi.  
**E**t he may not do syne. for he is bo  
ru of god. in pis pig. **P**'e sones of  
god. **B**en knowe. **E**t pe sones of  
pe fend. **E**t mā p' is not iust.  
is not of god. **E**t he p'at loney not  
his brop. for pis is pe tellig. **P**'at  
ze herden at pe bigynnyng. **P**' ze lo  
ue ech o'p. not as cayn. **P**'is is

of pe yuele. **E**t slouy his brop. **E**t  
for what pig. **S**louy he hi. for his  
werkis were yuele. **E**t his bropis  
iust. **¶ Of m.** **W**hen nyle ze wondre.  
if pe world haty you. **W**e write  
p' we ben tranlland fro deap to  
lyf. for we loue brypen. for he p'  
loney not. dwellyn in deap. **E**t  
mā p'at haty his brop. is a  
mālleet. **E**t ze write p'ech mā  
fleet. **H**ay not enlastige lyf. **D**wel  
lige in hi. in pis pig. **W**e han kno  
wen pe charite of god. for he put  
tide his lyf for us. **E**t we open  
to p'ntse our synes for our bryp  
en. **H**e p' hay pe catel of pis world.  
**E**t seep p' his brop. **H**ay nete. **E**t clo  
lip his entrayls fro hi. **H**ow dw  
ellyn pe charite of god in hi. **¶**  
**O**yp lytle sones. **L**oue we not i wo  
rd. **N**e p' in tige. but in werk. **E**t  
treupe. in pis pig. **W**e knowe.  
p'at ben of treupe. **E**t i his lizt. **W**e  
monette our hertis. for if our  
herte repney us. **G**od is more  
ran our herte. **E**t knowip alle  
pigis. **M**ooft der. brypen. if our  
herte repney not us. **W**e ha  
trust to god. **E**t what en. **W**e thul  
len aze. **W**e thulen re slepue  
of hi. for we kepen hile comā  
denētis. **E**t we doe po pigis. **P**'at  
be plesant bifoze hi. **E**t pis is pe  
comādenēt of god. **P**'e bile  
ue in re name of his lone ihu. **E**t  
**E**t p' we loue ech o'p. as he zaf  
heeste to us. **E**t he p' kep his co  
mādenētis dwellyn in hi. **E**t he  
i hi. **E**t in pis pig. **W**e write p' he  
dwellyn i us. **B**i pe sp'it. **W**hich  
he zaf to us. **¶ Of m.**  
**D**ost dere brypen nyle ze  
bileue to ech sp'it. but



preue ze spiritis if yei ben of  
god. for many false pfeis: we  
ten out into pe world in pis pig  
pe spirit of god is knowen ech  
spirit y knowlechip y ihu crist  
hay come in fleuth: is of god: &  
ech spirit y fordom ihu: is not  
of god: & pis is an crist. of who  
ze herde y he come y rixt now  
he is in pe world ze lyde lones  
ben of god: & ze han ouercomi  
hi for he y is in you is more: pa  
he pat is in pe world yei ben of  
pe world: y fore yei speke of pe  
world. & ye world heere y he  
ben of god he pat knowe god:  
heere y us he y is not of god: hee  
ry not us in pis pig. we kno  
wen pe spirit of treupe: & pe  
spirit of errour. For oft der  
bryden lone ze to gode: for cha  
rite is of god: & ech y loue y  
broy: is born of god: & knowe  
god he pat loue y not: knowe  
not god. for god is charite: i  
pis pig pe charite of god ap  
peride in us. for god sente his  
oon bigeti lone into pe world:  
y we lyne by hi in pis pig is  
charite. not as we hadde lo  
ued god: but for he first loue  
de us. & sente his lone foryne  
nelle for our synel: ze moost  
der bryere if god loue us:  
we ouen to loue ech oyr: no  
ma say: eue god: if we loue  
to gode: god dwelth i us. &  
ye charite of hi is parfyte in  
us: i pis pig we knowen. y  
we dwelth in hi & he in us:  
for of his spirit he gaf to us  
& we syen & witnele: y pe  
fadir sente his lone laupou:

of pe world: who eue knowe  
chip y ihu is pe lone of god: god  
dwelth in hi & he in god: & we ha  
han knowen: & bileuen to pe cha  
rite y god hay in us: god is cha  
rite: & he pat dwelth in charite:  
dwelth in god & god in hi in pis  
pig is pe parfyte charite of god  
wip us: y we haue trust in pe  
of dom for as he is: also we ben  
in pis world: drete it not in charite:  
but parfyte charite puttyn out  
drete: for drete hay peyne: but  
he y drede: is not parfyte in cha  
rite: y fore lone we god: for he  
loue us bifoze: if ony ma sepe  
y lone god: & haye his bopy:  
he is a lyer: for he pat loue y  
not his broyr: which he sepe:  
hois may he lone god: who he  
sepe not: & we han pis coma  
demet of god: y he y lone god  
loue also his broyr. **E**ch ma y  
bileney y he is  
cit: is born of god: & ech  
man y loue y pat gendre: lo  
ue y pat is born of hi in pis pig  
we knowen. y we loue y childe  
of god: who we lone god: &  
don his maudemetis: for pis is  
ye charite of god: y we kepe  
hise maudemetis: & his ma  
demetis ben not heyr: for al pig  
y is born of god: oncomer y o  
ld: and pis is ye victorie y o  
comer ye world: onf sepe: and  
who is he y ouercomer ye world:  
but he y bileney y he is ye lone  
of god: pis is ihu crist y cam  
watr: & blood: & pe spirit is he  
pat witneleth: y crist is treupe:  
for ye ben y ihu witneleth in  
heueue: ye fadir ye lone & ye so  
not in wat conly: but i wat & blood

ly god: & ye ye ben oon: and ye  
ben y ihu witneleth in erpe:  
ye spirit: watr: & blood: & ye ye  
ben oon: it we relleue y witnele  
sig of me: ye witneleth of god  
is more: for pis is ye witneleth  
of god: y is more: for he witnele  
side of his lone: he pat bileney i  
pe lone of god: hay ye witneleth  
of god in hi: he y bileney to ye  
lone: mak y hi a lyer: for he bile  
ney not in pe witneleth y god  
witneleth of his lone: & pis is ye wit  
neleth: for god gaf to you enlasti  
ge lyf: & pis lyf is i his lone: he  
y hay ye lone of god: hay also lyf:  
he y hay not ye lone of god: hay  
not lyf. **W**rite to you ye syn  
gis: y ze wite y ze han eulastige  
lyf: which bileney ye name of  
goddis lone: & pis is ye trust: wh  
ich we han to god: y what euer  
pig we aren afur his wille he  
shal heere us: and we wite y  
he heere us: what eu pig we  
are: we wite y we han ye at  
yngis: which we aren of hy:  
he y boot pat his broyr synet:  
a syne not to depe: are he &  
lyf shal be zouni to hy: y synet  
not to depe: ye is a syne to depe:  
not for it i seie y ony ma preie  
ech wickidnesse is syne: & y syne to  
depe: we wite y pat ech man y is  
born of god: synet not: but ye  
genacion of god kep y hi: & ye  
wickid touch y hi not: we wite  
y we ben of god: & al pe world is  
lett in synel: & we wite y pe lone  
of god cam in fleuth: & gaf to us  
wat: y we knowe verr y god: &  
be i pe lone of hy: pis is ve  
god: & euerlastige lyf: my lytle

Sones kepe ze you fro mannetis:  
**H**ere endy pe firste pistle of iohu:  
y bigyn y seculde: m. p.  
He eldre man to pe C. p.  
choli lady: & to her  
children: which  
loue in treupe: & not y aloone: but  
also alle me y knowe treupe: for  
ye treupe y dwelth in you: & wip  
you shal be wipoute ende: ge  
be wip you in y pees of god ye  
fadir: & of ihu crist ye lone of ye  
fadir in treupe & charite. **W**rite  
ede ful myche for i fond of y so  
nes goynge i treupe: as we rel  
sequele maudemet of ye fadir: &  
now y preie ye lady: not as w  
tyge a newe maudemet to pee:  
but pat y we hadde fro ye bigyn  
y we lone eche oyr: & pis is cha  
rite: y we wake afur his ma  
demetis: for pis is ye comaude  
met: y as ze herden at ye bigy  
nyg walke ze in hi: for many d  
seyners wente out into pe world:  
which knowleche not y ihu crist  
hay come in fleuth: pis is a dissey  
uere & an crist: ze ze you self: lest  
ze leelen ye pigis y ze han wroght:  
y ze relleue ful meede: wryte  
y ech ma y goyn bifoze: & dwelth  
not in pe techig of cit: hay yot  
god he y dwelth i pe techig: hay  
boye ye lone & ye fadir: if ony ma  
comer to you: & bryng y not: pis  
techig: nyle ze relleue hi into  
hous: neyr sepe to hi heyl: for he  
pat sepe to hi heyl: comney wip  
his synel werks: to y bifoze sende  
to you: y be not cofoundid i pe day  
of our lord ihu crist: y haue mo y  
gis to wite to you: & i wolde  
not by parchemyn & enke: for i



hope vʒ alhal come to ʒou. ʒ speke  
mony to mony. vʒ ʒouʒ ioye be ful  
pe lone of richolū sistr greeten  
pee wel pe grace of god be wiʒ vʒ  
Innen. Verʒ eudiy pe secnde m  
alle of iohy. ʒ bigynep pe punde

**T**elore mā to / **C. p.**  
 gapius moost der bro-  
 pir. Whō / lone ī treu-  
 pe moost der brop of al-  
 le pigis / make preier. ꝑ  
 pou entre ī fare welefulp.  
 as wilouedon weleful /  
 10 yede gretly. for brypen camē  
 ī baren wituellyg to pi treupe.  
 as pon walke ī treupe / hane  
 not more grace of pes pigis. rā  
 ꝑ / heer my lones walke ī treu-  
 pe / moost dere brop pou doist ferp  
 fulp. What en pou worchit ī bi-  
 reren and ꝑ into pilgryms. Whi-  
 che zeldid wituellyg to pi chari-  
 te ī pe lizt of pe churche / whiche  
 pou ledist forp. ꝑ doist wel worpi-  
 ly to god for pi wēten forp for  
 his name. ꝑ tooken no pig of be-  
 ren mē / ꝑ fore we owen to reslep-  
 ne liche. ꝑ we be enen weorche-  
 ris of treupe / hadde wite ꝑ  
 anētun to pe churche. but pis di-  
 otrepes ꝑ loney to ber ꝑ macie  
 ī hē. reslepne not us for pis  
 pig if / ſhal come. / ſhal mo-  
 nette his werkis whiche he do-  
 w chidige azens us we ꝑuele  
 wordis / ꝑ as if pes pigis cufli-  
 len not to hi. neꝑ he reslepne  
 brypen ī forbedy hē ꝑ reslepne.  
 ꝑ putty out of pe churche / mo-  
 ost dere brop nyle pou linke ꝑ  
 nel pig. but pat ꝑ is good pig  
 he ꝑ don wel. is of god / he pat  
 don ynel. seep not god / witnel

lig is zoldū to demetriye of alle  
me: & of treuwe it self/ but alle  
we beren witnellig/ & y knowen  
y our witnellig is trewe/ y had  
de many pigs to be trewe to pee:  
but y wolde not write to y by  
enke & pene/ for y hope soone to  
se pee: & we shulde speke mony  
to mony/ pees be to pee/ frendis  
greete pee wel/ greete y wel fre  
dis bi name// **Here endyppes** the  
to wite of John 15. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

putte of Judas / c<sup>h</sup> p  
**E**das ye lernau of  
 ihu cit. & brof of same  
 to pe se y ben loued pat  
 ben i god ye kadur. & to he y ben de  
 pid & kept of ihu cit. mercy & pees  
 & charite be fillid to you moost de  
 re herfen / doynge al bylynesse  
 to warte to you of your compyn  
 heeche. hadde nete to warte to y.  
 & preyte to stryue through for  
 ye fey y is onys takn to lepytes /  
 for synne vntesful me puchly  
 entreden. y sin tyme weren by  
 fore wartin into yis doom / & on  
 turnen ye grace of our god to  
 lecherie. & demen hy pat is con  
 ly alowd our lord ihu cit / but y w  
 le monette you conys y wten  
 alle pigis / y ihu saveid his peple  
 fro ye lond of egypt. & ye laci  
 de tyme loste hem y bened not  
 & he reseruede vnder dertne se  
 aungels y kepten not her pulhood.  
 but forsoken her hors. into ye doo  
 of regreet god to eulange bon  
 dis / as lodom & gomorre & ye ny  
 coothid citees y inlyk man diten  
 fornycacio. & zeden a wep afte  
 our fleuth. & ben maid enlameple.  
 sufferge peyne of eulange fier.

i lyk man also vese þæt de foule þe  
 fleuth. ⁊ dispulen lordshyp ⁊ blas-  
 femē mageste. whiche mychel ar-  
 chaengel dispente wyþ þe deuel  
 ⁊ strook of moyses body. he was  
 not hardy to bringe yn doom of  
 blasfemye but seide. þe lord coma-  
 ndite to þee but þes me blasse  
 me. what en pigis þei knowen  
 not. for what en pigis þei knowen  
 hymdely as donke beentis. i vese  
 þei be corrupt. **C. ii.**

**W**reke be corrupcioun  
 to hem þat wente þe weie  
 of caym / & þat ben alhed out  
 þy error of balaam for mede / &  
 þat thete in þe menlesig of choro  
 res be i her meti freetige to gadre to  
 filþe wyoute drede fedige hem  
 silf / þes ben clowdis wyoute wa  
 ter / yat ben born aboute of þe wy  
 dis / her nest trees wyoute fru  
 yt / ribbes deed drakn up bi þe  
 roote / waibis of þe wode see fo  
 myge out her cofusions / errige  
 dextris / to whiche þe tempest  
 of derfneslis is kept wyoute  
 ende / but enoch þe leuþe fro a  
 dam pfectede of yele / & leide / lo  
 þe lord comy wyþ his hoolþ þou  
 landis / to do doo azens alle mē  
 & to repreue alle vnþersful mē  
 of alle þe werkis of þe wickid  
 nulle of hem / bi which yerdiden  
 wickidþ / & of alle þe harde wor  
 dis / þat wickid syners han spoke  
 azens god / þes ben gruccheris  
 ful of pleyntis wandrige afur  
 her desiris / & þe mony of hē lye  
 þy prde / worthþigge þlonēs  
 bi cause of wyng / & 3e moost  
 deer bryen be mydeful of þe  
 wordis whiche ben bifore leid  
 of apostlis of our lord ihu crist

Whiche seiden to you. y<sup>e</sup> in ye laste  
tymes y<sup>e</sup> shulen come gylours.  
wandrige after her owne desy  
ris. not in pntee/ yese be whiche  
departe hem selfe. beestly men  
not hauntyge spirit. but ze mooste  
der berpen. aboue bilde you selfe.  
on youre moost hooch seip. & preie  
ze in ye hooch gost. & kepe so hys  
ye loue of god. & abyde ze ye in  
ty of oure lord ihu crist ito hys  
enlastige/ & repue ze yes men  
pat heu demyd. but saue ze hem.  
& take ze hem fro ye fyer/ & do ze  
mercy to ope me in ye drede of  
god. & hate ze also yilke defouhid  
coote. which is fleishly/ but to  
hy y<sup>e</sup> is myzty. to kepe you wypon  
te syne. & to ordeyne bifoze ye  
sit of his gloze you wilbe myd  
i fulout ioye. in ye comyng of ou  
re lord ihu crist. to god aloone our  
saiuyour. in ihu crist our lord. be  
gloze & magnifyyng empire  
& power bifoze alle worldis & now  
& into alle worldis of worldis amē //

Here endyþe pistle of Judas: &  
bigyneþe þe plog on apocalips //

**A**lle men þæt wolen hyne meke  
 hi in crist. As þe apostle se-  
 þ: suffren pletuaciou aften. pat  
 þou lone þæt nezeft to þe seruise  
 of god. stonde þou i riȝt wylnes.  
 ⁊ in drede. ⁊ make redy þu loue  
 to tēptaciou for tēptaciou is  
 a mānis lyf: on þe erpe / but þæt  
 ferþful mē fagle not in hē: þe  
 lord cōfōrtiþ hem ⁊ cōfermep  
 seringe / I am wiȝ þou vnto þe  
 ente of þe world. ⁊ litil floe. ni-  
 le ȝedrede / þfore god þe fadir  
 seiȝge þe tribulaciouns. whiche  
 hoole church was to suffren:



þ was foundid of þe apostles on  
crist þe soun / disposid þey þe so  
ne / þe hooly gost to shew þe  
þe me dæde hem þe lasse / & al þe  
trinite shewid it cõt in his ma  
hod: & cõt to john by an angel.  
& john to hooly churche. of which  
reuelacioun john made þis book.  
wherfore þis book is seid apoca  
lips: þis is to seye reuelacioun for  
het it is conteyned þat god shewid  
to john: & ioon to hooly chur  
che / how grete þis hooly chur  
che sufferid in þe firste tyme: &  
now suffer & shal suffer in þe  
laste tymes of auncit / whiche tri  
bulacioun shal be so greet: þat if it  
mouke be. þei þer chosun. be mo  
uyd / and which meedis shal shew  
al releyne for þes tribulaciouns.  
now & tyme to come: þat meedis  
þat þei bihoote maken þe glad  
whom þe tribulaciouns þat þei  
teeld makyn aferd / þore þis bo  
ok amog oþere scripturis of þe  
newe testamēt: is depid bi þe  
name of pferie: & it is more ex  
cellent þan pferie: for as þe ne  
we testamēt is worþier þan þe  
olde: & þe gospel þan þe lawe / so þis  
pferie passip þe profecies of þe  
olde testamēt: for it shewip sa  
cramētis þat þei now aparty ful  
fillid of cõt & of hooly churche / or  
ellis for to oþe is oon man pferie  
cie: but to þis is þe man pferie  
zoue to gidre: þis is of þat þis  
passid: & of þat þis is present: &  
of þat þis is to come: & to cōfer  
me þe autorite of it. þat comey  
þe autorite of hi þat sendip: & of  
hi þat berip: & of hi þat releyney  
þe þat sendip is þe tyme: þe þat

berip þe angel. þe þat releyney ion  
but whiche þes þis be shewid  
to john i vision: & þe þen þe k  
dis of vision: it is to seyn / vñ  
which kynde þis be conteyned for  
þis vision is bodily: as whiche we  
seyn oon þis þat bodily þen  
þis is spiritual or / imaginari.  
as whiche we seyn slepige or / wa  
fige. we bihold þe ymagis of þi  
gis by which þe oon þis is sig  
nyfied: as farao slepige oon þe  
ris of cozi: & moyses wafige þi  
þe bystly þene / an oon vision is  
of vñdirstondig: as whiche þis  
reuelacioun of þe hooly gost: þis  
vñdirstondig of þis tyme: we cōfer  
uen þe trewe of mysteries: as  
john saiz þis þis: þat þei conteyn  
ned in þis book for not onli þe  
þis in spirit þe figuris: but also  
þe vñdirstood in þis tyme: þe þis  
þat were signyfied bi þe: john þis  
& þisoot in þe yle of pathmos.  
whiche he was exild of domician  
þe moost wicked pnce: & a tyme  
cōpellid hi to þis tyme: for while he  
was holdid in onlankre of domi  
cian in þe yle of pathmos: & þe  
churche þat he hadde goimed þe  
were spronge many vices & di  
uerse eresies: for þat were gime  
eretikis þat þat seiden: þat crist  
was not tofore marie: for as mo  
che as he was in tyme þis of  
þis: whiche eretikis john in þe  
bigynnyng of hi gospel. vñd  
irney & seip: in þe bigynnyng was  
þe sone: & in þis book whiche he  
seip: / I am alpha & oo: þis is þe bi  
gynnyng & þe ende: & tyme also sei  
den þat hooly churche shuld ende  
tofore þe ende of þe world for

charge of tribulaciouns: & þat shul  
de not vñdirstonge for her tra  
ney: enlastige meede: þat fore  
withge to distre þe erroines  
of þe: wherby þat crist was bi  
gynnyng & ende: wherfore þis  
þe tofore me was no god four  
med: & after me þat shal not be: &  
þat hooly churche þis exercise of  
tribulaciouns: shal not be endid  
but shal profeten: & for þe ref  
seyne an enlastige meede: john  
writip to þe seuen churche of asie:  
& to her seuen bihopis of þe forlond  
þis / ensonyng & techinge bi þe al  
þe genal hooly churche: & so þe mat  
of john i vis wret is: specially of þe  
churche of asie: & also of al hooly chur  
che whiche shal suffer i þis þat  
seut tyme & whiche shal vñdirst  
fonge i tyme to come: & his entet  
is to shew to pacience: which is to be  
kept: for þe tyme is short: & þe  
meede greet: þe man of his trefyng  
is lich: first he sette biþre a prolog  
& a saluacioun: wher he makyn þe hee  
retis benygne: & talke wel tent: &  
whiche he hay lett it to fore: he comey  
to þe tellig: but tofore þis tellig he  
shew: þat cõt is eue woute bigynnyng  
& woutende: & her ligg hi þat þe  
I am alpha & oo: bigynnyng & ende: & al  
ard he comey to hi tellig: & departip  
it into seuen visionis: & whiche þe be  
edid: þat book is edid: he lettip tofore þe  
plog: & seip: þe apocalips of ihu cõt vñ  
dirstode þis is as it is i oþ: þe vision  
of þis: & also þe pablis of salomon:  
**Ierom** this plog on þis apocalips  
seip al þis: / C. p. //  
**A**pocalips of ihu cõt. wh  
ich god zaf to hi to ma  
ke opyn to his seruati

his: whiche þis it biþone to be  
mand soone: & signyfied sendige  
bi his angel to his seruati john  
whiche bar witnessig to þe word  
of god: & witnessig of ihu cõt in  
þes þis whiche eney þis he say  
shuld is he þat redip & he þat heerip  
þe wordis of þis pferie: & þei þat  
þis þat ben writun: & for þe tyme  
is nyz: john to seuen churche þat  
ben in asie: grace & þes to zoi.  
of hi þis: & þat was: & þis to comy  
ge: & of þe seuen spiritis: þat be  
in þe list of his trone: & of ihu cõt.  
þis is a feyful witness: þe firt bi  
getid of deed men: & þis of figis  
of þe erpe: whiche louete us & wa  
shide us fro our synes i þis blood:  
& made us a kyngdom & þis to  
god & to his fadir: to hi be glozie  
& empire: unto worldis of worl  
dis amē. **A**lo he comey wry clow  
dis: & ech þis shal be hi: & þei þat  
þat þe hi: & alle þe þis of  
þe erpe: whiche biþeple hem sile  
on hi: & he amē. **A** I am alpha & oo.  
þe bigynnyng & þe ende seip þe lord  
god: þis is & þis was: & þis to comy  
ge almyty. **A** john zoi: þis þis  
& partener i tribulacioun & kyngdo  
& pacience i cõt ihu. was in an yle  
þis depid pathmos: for þe word  
of god: & for þe witnessig of ihu.  
þis was in spirit in þe lordis day: &  
þis biþpude me a greet vois  
as of a tripe seynge to me: write  
þon in a book þat þis þis þis  
& seide to þe seuen churche þat þei  
in asie: to efesus: to smyrna: to  
þis: & to iatya: & to sardis:  
& to philadelfia: & to laodicia: and  
þis turnede þat whiche se þe vois  
spak wry me: & þis tyme & þis say



seuene candilsticks of gold. & in  
ye myddel of pe seuene candilthe  
his golden: con lyk to pe lone of  
ma clouid wip along: garuemet  
& gird at pe teetis wip a golden  
girdil: and pe heed of hi & his hee  
ris. Were whut as whut wolle:  
& as snow: & pe hzen of hi as flam  
me of fyer: & his feet lyk to la  
toun as in a brennyge chymenei:  
& pe vois of hi: as pe vois of  
many watris: & he hadde in his  
rythond seuene sterres: & a  
kiserd wharp on euey side we  
te out of his moun: & his face:  
as pe hime whynny in his bren  
& whane he hadde seyn hi: he  
de don at his feet as deed: & he  
puttude his rythond on me: & he  
seide: nyle þu drete: I am pe fir  
ste & pe laste: & I am alyue & I  
was deed: & lo I am lymyge into  
wordis of wordis: & I haue pe  
keyes of deop & of helle: þu foz  
wryte þou whiche pigis þu hast  
seyn: & whiche ben: & whiche it  
bihouey to be don afur þes pigis:  
pe sacramet of pe seuene ster  
ris. Whiche þou sprest in my ry  
thond: & pe seuene goldū candil  
sticks: pe seuene sterres: be an  
gels of pe seuene churchis: & pe  
seuene candilsticks: ben se  
uene churchis. **¶**

**A**nd to pe angel of pe  
church of efesus: wry  
te þou þes pigis seyn he þu holdy  
pe seuene sterres in his rythond:  
whiche walky in pe myddel of pe  
seuene goldū candilsticks: & wo  
ot þu werkis & tynel: & þu paci  
ence: & þu want not suffre  
ynel me: & þu hast alynd he þu

seyn þu þu ben apostlis & ben  
not: & þu hast foude he heris:  
& þu hast patience: & þu hast suffrid  
for my name: & failedest not: but  
I haue azens þe afeue pigis:  
þu hast lest þu fustecharte:  
þu foz be þu myddel ful fro whē  
þu hast falle: & do penance: & do  
pe fuste werkis: errellis: I co  
me to þe soone: & I shal wone  
þu candilstick fro his place:  
but þu do penance: but þu hast  
þis good pig: þu hastidest þe  
dis of nycholapris pe whiche al  
so I hate: he þu hap eers heere he  
whar pe spirit seyn to pe churchis:  
to hy þu comey: I shal zyne to  
ete of þe tre of lyf: þu is in þe pa  
radys of my god. **¶** And to pe an  
gel of pe church of Smyrna wry  
te þou þes pigis seyn pe fuste &  
pe laste: þu was deed & lymyge:  
woot þu tribulacioun: & þu ponert:  
but þu art ryche: & þu art bla  
ssmed of he þu seyn þu ben  
iheris & ben not: but þu seyn  
nagoge of sathanas: drete þu  
no pig of þes pigis whiche þu  
shalt suffre: lo þu denel shal se  
de hime of zoun into þu: þu  
be teptid: & þu shal haue tribu  
lacioun: ten dayes: be þu fustid  
to þe deop: & I shal zyne to þe a  
crokne of lyf: he þu hap eers  
heer he: whar pe spirit seyn to  
pe churchis: he þu comey: shal  
not be hurt of pe secunde deop: **¶** And  
to pe angel of pe church of per  
gam: wryte þou þes pigis seyn  
he þu hap þe siberd wharp on  
ech syde: I woot wher þu dwel  
lit: wher þe seete of sathanas  
is: & þu holdist my name & seyn

edist not my fery: & in þu daies  
was antis my feryful wrytel  
se þu was claynat zoun: wher sa  
thanas dwelth: but I haue azen  
þe a feue pigis: for þu hast þe  
me holdige þe techis of balam:  
whiche tynge balat: for to sente  
alaudre bifore þe lones of israhel:  
to ete of sacrificis of ydolis: &  
to do fornicacioun: so also þu hast  
me holdige þe techis of nycholap  
ris: also do þu penance: if ony  
pig lesse: I shal come soone to þu:  
& I shal fytte wip he: wip þe  
siberd of my moun: he þu hap e  
ris heere he: whar pe spirit seyn  
to pe churchis: to hy þu comey:  
I shal zyne angel mete hyd: & I  
shal zyne to hym a whut stoon:  
& in þe stoon a newe name wrytu  
whiche no mā knowyþ: but he þu  
taky. **¶** And to pe angel of pe church  
of tyatra: wryte þu þes pigis  
seyn pe lone of god: þu hap þe  
as flamme of fyer: & his feet  
lyk latoun: I knowe þu werkis &  
fery & charite: & þu seruple & þu  
patience: & þu laste werkis no  
þan þe former: but I haue a  
zens þe a feue pigis: for þu  
suffrid þe womā jelabel whiche  
seyn þu she is a profetesse: to te  
che & disseyne my seruantis: to  
do lecherie: & to ete of pigis of  
fryd to ydolis: & I zaf to hy tyme  
þu she shulde do penance: & she  
wolde not do penance of her for  
nyncacioun: & lo I sente hy into  
abyd: & þu þu doen lecherie wip  
hyr: shulen be in moost tribula  
cioun: but þu do penance of  
her werkis: & I shal sle her so  
nes into deop: & alle churchis wh

ile wryte: & I am serchige reyn  
nes & heris: & I shal zyne to  
ech man of zoun afur: his werkis:  
& I seyn to zoun & to opere þu ben  
at tynge: who eue han þis te  
chig: & þu fneue not þe hynelle  
of sathanas: how þu seyn: I sh  
al not sente on zoun anopre char  
ge: nepeles holte þe þu þu ha:  
til I come: & to hy þu shal comey:  
& þu shal kepe til into þe ende  
my werkis: I shal zyne werkis:  
I shal zyne pouer on folkis: & he  
shal gofne hem in an ynn zerd:  
& þu shulen be brokū to gize:  
as a vessel of a potter: as also  
I resseyne of my fadyr: & I sh  
al zyne to hy a mozte ster: he  
þu hap eers heer he: whar pe spi  
rit seyn to pe churchis. **¶**

**A**nd to pe angel of pe church  
of sardis: wryte þu  
þes pigis seyn he þu hap  
pe seuene spiritis of god: & pe  
seuene sterres: I woot þu werkis:  
for þu hast a name þu lymyge:  
& þu art deed: be þu wakige: and  
coferme þu ope pigis þu were to  
dyinge: for I fynde not þu werkis  
fille bifore my god: þu haue  
þu in myde how þu resseyne  
dest & herdest: & kepe & do penan  
ce: þu foz if þu wake not: I shal  
come as a nyte: & þu shalt not  
shalt not wryte in whar oin: I sh  
al come to þe: but þu hast a fe  
we names in sardis: whiche han  
not desouid her clouis: & þu shu  
len walke wip me in white clouis:  
for þu ben woxy: he þu comey:  
shal be clouid þu wip white do  
uis: & I shal not do aney þu na  
me fro þe book of lyf: & I shal



knowleche his name before my  
fadir. & before hys angels. he p  
hap eeris heer. he. what re spi  
rit seip to pe churchis. And to  
pe angel of pe church of siladel  
fie. Wryte pou pes pigis seip re  
hoolp & trewe. p hap pe keye of  
damp. which openy. & no man  
closp. he closp. & no man openy.  
I woot p werkis. & lo. I zat before  
pee adore opened. which no man  
may close. for pou hast a litil ver  
tu. & hast kept my word. & dem  
est not my name. lo. I thal yme  
to pee of pe synagoge of sathana.  
which seien p. pei ben ieris & be  
not. but hen. lo. I thal make hem.  
p. pei come & worship before pi  
feet. & pei shal wite. p. I loude  
pee. for pou kept pe word of my  
paciencie. & I thal kepe pee fro  
pe oin of temptaciou. p. is to comp  
ge into al pe world to tepte me  
p. dwellen in erpe. lo. I come soone.  
holde p. pat p. pou hast. p. no man  
take p. crowne. & hi. p. thal ou  
come. I thal make a piler i pe  
teple of my god. & he thal no mo  
re go out. & I thal wryte on hym  
pe name of my god. & pe name of  
pe citee of my god. of pe newe ie  
rhu. p. comy dou fro heuene of  
my god. & my newe name. he  
p. hap eeris heer. he. what re spi  
rit seip to churchis. And to pe  
angel of pe church of laodice.  
Wryte p. p. pes pigis seip amē. pe  
seipful witnesse & trewe. which  
is bigymyng of goddis creatur.  
I woot p werkis. for nep pou  
art coold nep p. art hoot. I wolde  
p. pou were coold ep hoot. but  
for pou art lewe. & nep coold ne

pe hoot. I thal bigyme to caste  
pee out of my moyn. for p. leist  
p. am ryche & ful of goodis. & I  
hauene de of no pig. & pou woot  
not p. pou art alyche. & wret  
che ful & pore & blynd & nakid. I con  
cele pee to bpe of me. & send gold &  
p. ned. p. pou be maid ryche. &  
be clord wry. & hite cloris. p. re  
cofusiou of pi nakidnesse be not  
seene. & anoynte ym. & zen wry  
acollerie. p. pou se. I repreue &  
chastile. whom I loue. p. pou  
like p. goode me. & do penance.  
lo. I soude at pe doze. & knocke  
it ony ma. heery my vois. & ope  
ney pe zate to me. I thal entre  
to hi. & he wry me. I thal yme to  
hi. p. thal oncome. to lute wry me  
i my trone. as also. I oncam. &  
sant wry my fadir. in his trone.  
he p. hap eeris heer. he. what re  
spirit seip to churchis. **C. 11.**  
**A**dore was opened i he  
uene. & pe firdie vois p.  
herde. was as of a tripe spe  
rige wry me. & seide. & he pou  
wry. hider. & I thal thebe to pee.  
which pigis it bihonye to be don  
soone after pes pigis. & no. I was  
in spirit. & lo a seete was set in  
heuene. & upon pe seete oon sit  
tige. & he p. sant. was lyk pe liz  
of astoon. & jaspis. & to sardyn. & a  
repulou was in ciupas of pe  
seete. lyk pe liz of sinatragdyn.  
& in pe ciupas of pe seete. were  
xiiij. finale seetis. & aboue pe  
trones four. & twenty eldre me  
sittige. hild aboute wry. & hite  
cloris. & in pe heedis of hem gol  
di crownes. & lewis & vois. &

p. d. ynges came out of pe tro  
ne. & seuen laipis. & heryge bi  
foze pe trone. which ben pe se  
uene spiritis of god. & before pe  
seete as a see of glas. lyk a cristall.  
And ipe myddil of pe seete. & in  
pe ciupas of pe seete. four. beer  
tis. ful of pzen. before & byhyde.  
& pe firdie beer. lyk a lion. & pe  
secunde beer. lyk a calf. & pe yad  
de beer. haryge a face as of a  
man. & pe four. beer. lyk an e  
gle. & pe four. beer. lyk a lion. & pe  
tis. haden euy of hem. & heryge wry  
gis. & al aboute. & wry. yne. pei  
were. ful of pzen. & pei hadden  
not reste. day & nyzt. seynge.  
hooly. hooly. hooly. pe lord god al  
myty. p. was. & y. is. & p. is to  
comye. & wry. pe four. beer  
tis. & heryge. & honour. & ble  
sig. to hi. p. sant. on pe trone. p.  
heryge. & to. & wry. & to. & wry. & to.  
pe four. & twenty eldre me. fel  
den dou. before hi. p. sant. on pe  
trone. & worshippe. hi. p. heryge  
to. & wry. & to. & wry. & to. & wry. & to.  
nes. before pe trone. & seide. pou  
lord oure god. art. wry. to take  
gloze. & honour. & vtu. for pou  
madist. of nouzt. alle pigis. & for  
pi. wille. po. wry. & be. maid. of. nouzt.  
**C. 12.**  
**A**nd I say in pe ryz. **C. 13.**  
hond of pe littere. ou. pe  
trone. a book. wry. wry.  
yne. & wry. & seide. wry. se  
uene. seelis. & I say. a strong. an  
gel. & heryge. wry. a greet. vois.  
who. is. wry. to. opyne. pe. book.  
& to. vndo. pe. seelis. of. it. & no. i  
heuene. nep. terpe. nep. wry. erpe. wry.  
opyne. pe. book. nep. biholy. it.  
& I. wepte. moche. for. no. was

founde. wry. to. opyne. pe. book.  
nep. to. se. it. & oon. of. pe. eldre. me.  
seide. to. me. wepe. pou. not. lo. a  
lyon. of. pe. lynage. of. juda. pe.  
roote. of. damp. hap. ouercomi.  
to. opyne. pe. book. & to. vndon. pe.  
seuene. seelis. of. it. and. I. say.  
& lo. in. pe. myddil. of. pe. trone. &  
of. pe. four. beer. tis. & in. pe. myd  
dil. of. pe. eldre. me. a. loun. & ou  
dige. as. slayn. p. hadde. seuen.  
hones. & seuen. pzen. which.  
ben. seuen. spiritis. of. god. sent.  
into. al. pe. erpe. and. he. cam. &  
took. of. pe. ryz. hond. of. pe. snter.  
i. pe. trone. pe. book. & wry. he.  
had. openy. pe. book. pe. four.  
beer. tis. & pe. four. & twenty. eldre.  
me. fel. den. dou. before. pe. loun. &  
had. ech. of. he. harpis. & goldi.  
violis. ful. of. odours. which. be.  
pe. preieris. of. seyntis. & pei. sy  
gen. an. ewe. song. & seide. lord.  
oure. god. pou. art. wry. to. take  
pe. book. & to. opyne. pe. seelis. of.  
it. for. pou. were. slayn. & azen.  
bouzt. us. to. god. in. pi. blood.  
of. ech. lynage. & tige. & peple.  
& naciou. & madist. us. a. kyngdom.  
& prestis. to. oure. god. & we. shi  
len. regne. ou. erpe. & I. say. & her  
de. pe. vois. of. many. angels. al.  
aboute. pe. trone. & of. pe. beer. tis.  
of. pe. eldre. me. & pe. nouzt. of.  
he. was. pou. sendis. of. pou. sendis.  
seynge. wry. a. greet. vois. pe.  
loun. p. was. slayn. is. wry. to.  
take. vtu. & godhede. & wry. dom.  
& strengpe. & honour. & gloze.  
& blessing. & ech. creature. p. is.  
in. heuene. & p. is. on. erpe. & vnd.  
erpe. & pe. see. & wry. che. pigis. be.  
in. it. & herde. alle. seynge. to. hy







ȝ castide into erpe / ȝ pūdȝis ȝ vol  
 ces ȝ leuȝis wēre mānd. ȝ a gre  
 et erpe monyȝ / ȝ pe seueue an  
 gelis yʒ hadden seueue trūpis.  
 mādē hem redy yʒ pei shulde  
 trūpe. ȝ pe fūste aūgel trūpi  
 de. ȝ hail was mānd ȝ fier mēd  
 to gidre in blood. ȝ it was sent  
 into erpe / ȝ pe pūde part of  
 pe erpe was bzent. ȝ pe pūde  
 part of trees was bzent. ȝ al  
 re greue gras was huent. And  
 pe secūde aūgel trūpide. ȝ as  
 a greet hūl bēmyȝe ȝ by fier. Was  
 cast into pe see. ȝ pe pūde part  
 of pe see was mād blood. ȝ pe pū  
 de part of creatur was deed. yʒ  
 hadde hūes in pe see. ȝ pe pū  
 de part of shypis pulthide. ȝ  
 pe pūde aūgel trūpide. ȝ a gre  
 et fier re bēmyȝe as a hūl bōd  
 felde fro heueue. ȝ it felde into pe  
 pūde part of flōdis. ȝ into pe  
 wellis of watris. ȝ pe name of  
 pe fier is seid wermōd. ȝ pe pū  
 de part of watris was mād  
 into wermōd. ȝ many mē wēre  
 deed of pe watris. for po wēre  
 mānd buttr. And pe fourpe  
 aūgel trūpide. ȝ pe pūde pt  
 of pe sūne was smyrtū. ȝ pe pū  
 de part of pe moone. ȝ pe pūde  
 part of sherris. so yʒ pe pūde pt  
 of hē was dectid. ȝ pe pūde  
 part of pe day shynede not. al  
 so of pe nyȝt. And ȝ laȝ ȝ herde  
 pe vois of an egle flegge bi pe  
 myddil of heueue ȝ laȝe ȝ a greet  
 vois. wo wo wo. to mē yʒ diuēllē in  
 erpe. of pe ope voices of ȝre aūgels.

**A**nd þe fyfþe aungel trūpi  
 ʒe ʒaȝ; v̄ a sterre hadde

falle doñ fro heuene into erpe: ⁊  
 pe keye of pe pitt of derknesse was  
 zoun to it: ⁊ it opende pe pitt of  
 depnesse: ⁊ a smoke of pe pitt aro-  
 ode vp. as pe smoke of a greet  
 furneis: ⁊ pe fine was derlid ⁊ pe  
 eyr of pe smoke of pe pitt ⁊ loc-  
 tis wente out of pe smoke of pe  
 pitt into erpe: ⁊ pouer was zoun  
 to hem. as doxpious of pe erpe  
 han pouer: ⁊ it was comaundid  
 to hem: v̄ pei schulde not herte pe  
 gras of pe erpe. neyr ony gre-  
 ne yig. neyr ony tree: but onep  
 men: v̄ han not pe signe of god  
 in her forhedis: ⁊ it was zoun to  
 hem. v̄ pei schulde not ele he: but  
 v̄ pei schulden beturmetid fyne  
 moneyis: ⁊ pe turmetig of hem.  
 as pe turmetig of a doxpious: v̄  
 dehuē he lympt anā: ⁊ in po dōp-  
 es me schulen seke deep: ⁊ pei sch-  
 ulen not fynde it: ⁊ pei schulen  
 desyre to dpe: ⁊ deep schal fle fro  
 hem: ⁊ pe lucnesse of locuris: v̄  
 lyk hozlis maad redy into bareil  
 ⁊ on pe heedis of hem as ciuibes  
 lyk gold: ⁊ pe facis of he as pe fa-  
 cis of me: ⁊ pei hadde heeris as  
 heeris of wyemen: ⁊ pe teep of  
 hem werē as teep of hōis: ⁊ pei  
 hadde haburions: as frū habur-  
 ions: ⁊ pe voices of her byhyng:  
 as pe vois of charis of many  
 hozhis renyge into bareil: ⁊ pei had  
 den taphis lyk doxpious: ⁊ put  
 eis werē in pe taphis of he: ⁊ pe  
 myst of he was to noye men  
 fyne moneyis: ⁊ pei hadde on he  
 aking pe aūgel of depnesse. to  
 whom pe name bi ebreis. is lā  
 badon: but bi greek apolloñ: ⁊  
 bi latyn he hap a name ext m̄

nas þæt is dūstner. Ð wo is þas  
 sid. ⁊ lo 3it comē tibeþ woos. Ðas  
 tū þes rīgis. Also þe 3itte aūgel  
 triūpide / and ⁊ herde a vois fro  
 soure corneris of þe goldū anten.  
 þæt is bifore þe þien of god. ⁊ septe  
 to þe siʒte aūgel ⁊ hadde a trū  
 þe / onbynde þou soue aūgels.  
 ⁊ þen bouēd in þe greet flood  
 eufrates / ⁊ þe soue aūgels wēre  
 unboiū. ⁊ whiche wēren redy in  
 to oure ⁊ day ⁊ moneye ⁊ 3eer to  
 3lee þe wride part of mē / ⁊ þe  
 nouēze of þe oost of hozlme. Was  
 twēty þouland lipis ten þou  
 and / ⁊ herde þe nouēze of hē ⁊ so  
 ⁊ 3az hozlis in bilou / ⁊ þei pat  
 latten on hē. hadde firy habirious  
 ⁊ of iacynut ⁊ of byrmston / ⁊ þe  
 heedis of þe hozlis wēre as hee  
 dis of hōis. ⁊ fyer ⁊ smoke ⁊  
 byrmston comē forw of þe mo  
 up of hē / of þes þre plagis. þe  
 wride part of mē was slayn. of  
 þe fier ⁊ of þe smoke ⁊ of þe smo  
 ke ⁊ of þe byrmston ⁊ camē out  
 of þe moun of hē / for þe pouer  
 of þe hozlis is in þe moun of hē.  
 ⁊ in þe taylis of hē / for þe taylis  
 of hem ben lyk to serpentis. ha  
 uynge heedis. ⁊ in hē þei nopen  
 ⁊ petryn mē þæt wēre not slay  
 in þes plagis. neyr dide penaū  
 ce of þe wērtis of her hondis. ⁊  
 þei worþshippe not deuelis ⁊ 3y  
 mylacris of gold ⁊ of 3iluer ⁊ of  
 bras ⁊ of stoon ⁊ of tree / whiche  
 neþ mon se. neþ heet neþ wan  
 dre / ⁊ diden not penaūce of her  
 wāteggis. neþ of her wiahet  
 tis. neþ of her fornyraciōn. neþ  
 of her pestis. wēre slayn.  
 ⁊ 3az amos.

stronge angel comynge dou fro  
 heuene clopid wip a clowde: &  
 re reynboiwe on his heed: & re  
 face of hi was as re sunne: &  
 re feet of hy as a piler of fy  
 er: & he hadde in his hond a myl  
 booke openyd: & he sette his ryz  
 foot on pe see: & re left foot on  
 pe erpe: & he criete wip a gre  
 et vois: as a lion whne he ro  
 urp: & whne he hadde criet. pe  
 seuene pndris spoken her voices  
 & whne re seuene pndris hadde  
 spokē her voices: // was to wri  
 tige / & / herte a voyce fro heue  
 ne: seynge / make p whar pi  
 gis re seuene pndris spoken.  
 & myle p wryte he & re angel  
 wsho // sayz stondige aboue pe  
 see. & aboue pe erpe: like vp his  
 hond to heuene: & swoor bi hy p  
 tounep into wordis of worldis:  
 pat made of nouzt heuene & po  
 pgis whiche be in it: & pe erpe:  
 & po pngis p ben in it: & pe see:  
 & po pngis pat ben in it: // tyme  
 shal no more be: but in re dayes of re vois  
 of re seuene angel. whne he  
 shal bigyne to triuwe: pe mystrie  
 of god shal be endid: as he prechi  
 de bi his seruantis p fctis: & / her  
 de a vois fro heuene. eftlone  
 spekige wip me. seynge / go pou  
 & take pe booke p is openyd fro pe  
 hood of re angel p stonid abo  
 ue pe see: & on pe lond: & / wente  
 to pe angel & seide to hi: p he sh  
 ulde zyne me pe booke: & he seide  
 to me / take pe booke & deuour it.  
 & it shal make yi wombe to be  
 bittur: but in yi moup it shal be  
 sikete as hony: & / took pe booke  
 of re angels hond & deuourde



it: & it was in my mouy as libe  
te hony: & iwhne i hadde denouid  
it: my iwboune was butir: & he  
seide to me: it bihouep yee ete bo  
ne to profecie to heepen me: &  
to pepis & lagagis & many ligis  
**A**d a reed lyk a // C. H.  
zerd was zouni to me: &  
it was seid to me: ryle y  
i mete pe temple of god & ye aue:  
i me y iwbouthepeu i it: but caste  
y out pe forzerd y is iwbouthepe  
teple i mete not it: for it is zo  
mi to hepen me: & pe iwhule de  
foule ye hooky citee: bi four ty  
moneris & tibe yne: & i lthal zy  
ne to my tibe y witneslis: & pe  
iwhulen pfectie apouland dayes  
eibo hndrid & sarty: & iwhulen be  
clodid wip sackis: yele be tibe y  
ne oshues: & tibe y candelstickis  
i pe stoude in ye list of ye lord  
of ye erpe: & i ony ma iwole a  
noye he: fier lthal go out of ye  
mouy of he & lthal deuon her  
euemys: & i ony iwole hirt he:  
pus it bihouep hym to be slayn  
yes han power to close heuene:  
y it reyne not in ye dayes of her  
pfectie: & pe han power on wats  
to turue hem i to blood: & to luy  
te ye erpe wip euery plage:  
i as ofte as pe iwole: & iwhne  
pe iwhulen ende her witneslis:  
pe beett y tibe y v p fro depnel  
se: lthal make batel azens hem:  
i lthal oucome hem: & lthal sle  
hem: & pe bodies of hem iwhule  
ligge in ye strectis of ye greet  
citee y is clepid goothly sodom  
i egypt: iwher ye lord of he was  
crucified: & sume of lhnagis i  
of pepis & of langagis & of he

rene me: iwhule se ye bodies of  
he by pre dayes & an half: & pe  
iwhulen not suffice ye bodies of  
he: to be put in biriels: & me en  
habitage ye erpe iwhulen haue  
ioye on he: & pe iwhule make my  
rie: & iwhulen seide iwhis to gide:  
for pes tibe y pfecties tirmetide  
hem y dwellen on ye erpe: & aff  
pre dayes & an half: pe spirit of  
lyf of god entride into hem: &  
pe iwhulen on her feet: & greet  
diede felde on he y spren hem:  
i pe herde a greet vois fro heu  
ne: seyrge to he: come vp hndrid  
i pe iwhulen into heuene in a clo  
de: & ye euemys of he hys he:  
i m pat our a greet erpe mouy  
was mand: & ye teupe part of  
pe citee felde dou: & pe names  
of me seueue pouland werer  
slayn i ye erpe mouy: & pe  
topir iwerer sent into drede: & i  
uenglorie to god of heuene: & pe  
seurde iwo is gon: & lo pe prude  
iwo lthal come some: & pe seueue  
angel triupide: & grete vois  
werer mand in heuene & seide: ye  
re iwhine of pis iwole is mand ou  
lord and of crist his loue: & he lth  
al regne into woldis of woldis  
amen: & pe foun: & iwhen eldye  
me y sacre in her seetis in ye list  
of ye lord: felden on her faces:  
i iwbouthepe de god i seide: iwe don  
pafis to yee lord god almygty:  
iwhich art: & iwhich iwere: & iwh  
ich art to conyge: iwhich hant  
takn pi grete veru: & hant  
regued: & folkis ben iwoy: & pi  
iwrappre cam: & tyme of dede me  
to be deined: & to zelde meede to  
pi seruauitis & pfectis & iwholus

i dredige pi name: to finale i to  
grete: & to distre hem y coru  
piden ye erpe: // C. H.  
**A**d pe temple of god i he  
uene was openyd: & ye  
arke of his testamēt was seyn  
in his temple: & lertigis iwerer mand:  
i voices & pndis & erpe mouy  
i greet hal: & a greet signe appe  
ride in heuene: a iwhma clodid  
wip pe lime: & pe moone vndur  
hir feet: & in ye heed of hir a cro  
sne of tibelst steris: & she had  
de in iwboune: & she crieu in tra  
uelige of childe: i is tirmetid:  
y she ber childe: & anoy signe was  
seyn i heuene: & lo a greet reed  
dragu y hadde seueue heedis &  
ten hoznes: & in ye heedis of hi  
seueue drademes: & pe tail of  
hi dzouy ye prude part of ster  
is of heuene: & sente he into ye  
erpe: & pe dragon stood bifore ye  
iwhman y was to berige childe:  
y iwhne she hadde born childe: he  
iwhule deuon hir lone: & she  
bar a knaue childe: y iwas to  
reulige alle folkis i an iwhze  
rde: & hir lone was ranylthid  
to god: & to his trone: & pe iwo  
ma fleiz into wildrness: iwher  
she har a place mand redy of god:  
y he fede hir per a poulynd day  
es eibo hndrid & larty: & agre  
et batel was mand in heuene:  
i myzel & hile angels fouzte w  
pe dragon: & pe dragon fanyte  
i hile angels: & pe iwhaden not  
myzt: ney ye place of he was  
foudu more in heuene: & iwhke  
dragon was cast doibn: ye greet  
olde serpent: y is clepid ye denel  
i sathanas pat dilleuuey al ye

wold: he was cast dou into ye  
erpe: & hile angels werer sent wip  
hi: & i herde a greet vois in heuene:  
seyrge: nois is mand heetpe & d  
tu i iwhdom of our god: & ye po  
wer of lns ctt: for ye aculer of  
our bypen: is cast dou: iwhich  
aculide he bifore ye list of our  
god: day & myzt: & pe oucam hi  
for ye blood of ye loub: & for ye  
word of his iwhnessis: & pe lo  
met not her lynes til to depe:  
y fore ze heuene be ze glad: &  
ze y dwellen i he: iwo to ye erpe  
i to ye lee: for ye send is come  
dou to zou: & har greet iwrappre:  
iwrappre y he har lthil tyme: &  
astir y pe dragon sz y he was  
cast dou to erpe: he pwr lthilte  
de ye iwhman y bar pe knaue  
childe: & tibe y iwhngis of a gre  
et egle werer zouni to ye iwh  
ma: y she iwhule fle into desert  
into hir place iwher she is sed:  
bi tyme i tymes & half tyme:  
fro pe face of ye serpent: & ye ser  
pent sente out of his mouy aff  
ye iwhman: iwher as a flood: y  
he iwhule make hir to be dzau  
of pe flood: & ye erpe helpide ye  
iwhman: & pe erp openyd his  
mouy: & loop vp: ye flood y  
pe dragon sente of his mouy:  
i pe dragon was iwooy azens  
ye iwhman: & he wente to ma  
ke batel wip ope of hir seed: y  
kepen ye mandemetis of god:  
i han ye iwhnessis of iwhi ctt:  
i he stood on ye graucl of ye lee:  
**A**d i say a be // C. H.  
hanyge seueue heedis:  
ten hoznes: & on his hoznes ten







of god & his puge re long of mo  
vles pe servant of god. & pe lo  
ng of re lomb & seide grete &  
wondur ful ben piberkis. lord  
god almyty. piberkis ben ma  
t trewe lord kig of worldis lo  
rd who thal not drede pee. & ma  
gnyfie pi name. for you aloo  
ne art merciful for alle folkis  
thulen come & woldhipe i pi  
syt. for p idomes ben opyne

**A**nd after pes visio i say. &  
lo pe temple of pe tabernacle of  
writnes. was openid i heve  
ne. & seuene angels haunge  
seuene plagis. wente out of  
pe temple. & were clopid wip a  
doon clene & whyt. & were bi  
fore gird wip goldn girdils a  
boute pe brestis. & oon of pe fou  
re beestis. zat to pe seuene an  
gels. seuene goldn violis ful  
of pe wrappe of god. p tynep  
into worldis of worldis. & pe  
temple was ful of smoke of pe  
mageste of god. & of pe vru of  
hi. & no man myzte entre into pe  
temple. til pe seuene plagis of  
seuene angels were endid.

**A**nd i herde. **C. xvij.**  
a greet vois fro heve  
ne. seynge to pe seuene  
angels. go ze & stede out pe se  
uene violis of goddis wrappe.  
into pe erpe. & pe firste angel  
wente & stede out his viol into  
pe erpe. & alwoude teers & wost  
was mand on alle. p hadde pe ca  
ret of pe beest. & on he p wosth  
pide pe beest. & his ymage. **A**nd  
pe secunde angel stede out his  
viol into pe sea. & pe blood was  
mand as of a deed yig. & ech ma

nyge. was deed in pe see. **A**nd  
pe thre angel stede out his vi  
ol on pe floodis. & on pe wellis of  
watris. & seide. mit art you lord.  
y art & p wer holy. p deuert pes  
mygis. for pei stede out pe blood  
of halerwis & pferis. & pon hat. so  
mi to hem blood to drynke. for pei  
ben wost. & i herde anoy seynge  
the lord god almyty. trewe & iust  
ben p idomes. **A**nd pe fourthe an  
gel stede out his viol into pe su  
ne. & it was zonu to hy to tynne  
te me wip heete & fier. & me sta  
liden wip greet heete. & blasphem  
den pe name of god haunge pe  
wer on pes plagis. nep pei dide  
penaunce. pat pi thulde. & me glo  
rie to hi. **A**nd pe fyfthe angel  
stede out his viol. on pe see. & of  
pe beest. & his kigdom was mand  
derk. & pei eeten to gudre her ti  
gis for sorwe. & pei blasphemid  
god of heuene for sorwis of her  
wostis. & pei dide not penaunce  
of her werkis. **A**nd pe sixte  
angel stede out his viol. & p  
ilke greet flood enstres. & dre  
de pe watir of it. p wepe wer  
mand redy to kigis fro pe time  
rilyg. & i say. pe vndene spi  
ritis bi pe maner of froggis  
go out of pe moyn of pe dragon.  
& of pe moyn of pe beest. & of pe  
moyn of pe fals pfer. for pei be  
spiris of deuels. makege sig  
nes. & pei goon soz to kigis of  
al erpe. to gadre hem to al ba  
tel to pe greet day of almyty god.  
lo i come as anyst peef. blestid  
is he p wakip & kep his cloys.  
p he wandre not nakid. & rat  
pei be not pe fals hede of hi. & he

thal gadre he into a place. p is  
clepid in ebrews her magedon. **A**nd  
pe seuene angel stede out his  
viol into pe er. & a greet vois  
wente out of heuene fro pe tro  
ne. & seide. it is don. & leitygis we  
re mand. & voices & pndis. & a  
greet erpe moynge was mand.  
which man neie was fipe me  
were on erpe. such erpe moynge  
so greet. & tce was mand into pe  
parties. & pe citees of hepenem  
felden dou. & greet babylon cam  
into mynde before god. to zyne  
to it pe cupe of indignacion of  
his wrappe. & ech yle fley abey.  
& hillis ben not found. & greet  
hal as a talent. cam dou fro he  
uene into me. & me blasphemid  
god for pe plage of hal. for

**A**nd was mand ful greet.  
ad oon of pe. **C. xviii.**  
seuene angels cam. pat  
hadde seuene violis. & spak wip  
me & seide. come pon. i thal the  
we to pee re dagnacion of pe  
greet hoor. p sittip on many  
watris. wip which. kyngis of er  
pe diden fornyacion. & pei rat  
dibellen in pe erpe be mand dū  
kū of pe wyn of hir lecherie.  
& he took me into desert in spi  
rit. & i say. a womā sittige on  
a reed beest ful of names of blaste  
mye. haungege seuene heedis  
& ten hornes. & pe womā was  
emzoud wip spū. & reed. & on  
gild wip gold. & pteous doon  
& peeris. haungege a goldn cup  
pe in hir hond ful of abhomy  
nacions. & vndenesse of her  
fornycacion. & a name wirtū  
in pe forheed of hir mysterie.

babylon pe greet modir of for  
nyacions. & of abhomynacions  
of erpe. & i say. a womā drūke  
of pe blood of seyntis. & of pe  
blood of martiris of ihu. & whie  
i say hir. i wondre wip gre  
et wondrig. & pe angel seide to  
me. why wondrist you. i thal seie  
to pee pe sacramet of pe womā.  
& of pe beest. p berip hir. p hap  
seuene heedis & ten hornes. pe  
beest which pon syet. was &  
is not. & the thal fye fro dep  
nelle. & the thal go into. p. wip  
yng. & me dibellige in erpe  
thulen wondre. whos names  
ben not wirtū in pe book of lpf.  
fro pe makynge of pe world. se  
ynge pe beest. p was. & is not.  
& pis is is pe wirt. who p hap wip  
dom. pe seuene heedis be seuene  
hillis. on which pe womā sit  
ty. & kigis seuene ben. fipe han  
feld dou. oon is. & anoyr comep  
not. & i whie he thal come.  
it bihouep hi to dibelle alhozt  
tyme. & pe beest. p was & is not.  
& she is pe eytpe. & is of pe se  
uene. & thal go into perulthig.  
& pe ten hornes. which pon hatt  
seyn. ben ten kigis. p. & han  
not take kyngdom. but pei thū  
len take pouer as kigis. oon  
our astir pe beest. p. & han a  
coucil. & thūle brake her. ver  
tū & pouer to pe beest. pes thū  
len fize wip pe lomb. & pe lomb  
thal oitcome he. for he is lord  
of lordis. & kig of kigis. & pei  
ben wip hi. ben clepid chosū & fe  
yful. & he seide to me. pe watris  
which pon hatt seyn. where  
pe hoor sittip. ben peplus & fol



his & langagis / & pe ten hozues  
proun haat leyn in pe beest: pes  
thulen make hir desolat & nakid  
& thulen ete pe fleitthis of hir  
& thule brene to gide hir wip  
fier: for god zaf into pe hertis  
of hem: p'pei do p'pat is plesant  
to hi: p'pei zyne her kyngdom to  
pe beest: til pe wordis of god be  
endid: & pe woman whom pou  
haat leyn: is pe greet citee pat  
hay kyngdom on figis of pe erpe:

**A**nd after pes / **C. xviij.**  
vignis / siz anoy angel  
compyge don fro heuene  
hauyge greet poiber: & pe erpe  
was lityned of his gloze: & he  
criede wip strong vois: & leide  
greet babiloyu felde don felde don:  
& is maid pe habitacion of deu  
lis: & pe kepynge of ech vndene  
spirit: & pe kepig of ech vnde  
ne foul: & hateful: for alle folkis  
drunken of pe wraipe of fornyca  
cion of hir: & figis of pe erpe &  
marchantis of pe erpe: dide for  
nyccacion wip hir: & pei be maid  
rich of pe vertu of delis of  
hir: & heide anoy vois of heu  
ne: leyge / my peple go ze out  
of it: & be ze not parceneris of  
pe trespallis of it: & ze thule  
not resseyne of pe woundis of  
it: for pe synes of it came til  
to heuene: & pe lord hadde myde  
of pe wickidnesse of hir: zelde ze  
to it: as she zeldide to you: & dou  
ble ze double pigis. after her wer  
his / in pe dymke p'she medhde  
to you: meynge ze double to hir  
as moche as she glonfiede hir  
sulf & was in delis: so moche  
turmet zyne to hir & weylung:

for in hir herte she seip / I sitte a  
queene & I am not a widowe: &  
I shal not be weylung: & p'fore  
in o day hir woundis thule come.  
depe & moynig & hugir: & she sh  
al be brent in fyre: for god is str  
ong: p' shal deme hir: & pe figis  
of pe erpe thulen by wepe & bi  
weple hem sulf on hir: whiche di  
den fornyccacion wip hir: & lyue  
den in delices: whiche pei thule  
be pe smoke of pe breynge of  
it: stondige fer for drede of pe  
turmetis of it: & leyge wo wo.  
wo: pilke greet citee babiloyu.  
& pilke stronge citee: for in con  
our ydoom comep: & marchan  
tis of pe erpe thulen wepe on  
it & moine: for no ma shal bre  
more pe marchandise of hem /  
pe marchandies of gold & of sil  
uer & of p'ccious stoon: & of pe  
erl & of bies & of purp & of silk.  
& cortyn: & ech tre thym: & alle  
vessels of yner & alle vessels of  
p'ccious stoon: & of bras & of wu  
& of marbil: & canel & amonye  
& of swete smellege pigis &  
opnemetis & encense: & of wy  
& of oyle & of flour & of wheete  
& of werkebeestis & of sheep  
& of hozlis & of cartis & of ser  
uantis & of lyues of men: &  
ym applis of pe delyt of ylyt  
wente away fro pee: & alle fette  
pigis & ful dere p'itheden fro  
pee: & marchandis of pes pigis  
thulen no more fynde pe pigis /  
pei pat ben maid ryche of it:  
thulen stonde fer for drede of  
meintis of it: weylunge & mo  
ynge & seynge / wo wo pilke  
greet citee: pat was clopid is

into  
place

bys & spure & reed starlet: & was  
ouer gild wip gold & p'ccious sto  
on & margaritis: for in con our  
so many richellis benditute /  
& ech goi nouit & alle p'saile bi  
thip: & manmeris & pat wordje  
in pe see: stonde fer & cride / seyn  
ge pe plate of pe breynge of it:  
seynge / what is lyk pis greet  
citee: & pei caste poudr on her  
heedis: & criede wepige & mo  
ynge & seynge / wo wo pilke  
greet citee in which alle p'shan  
thippis in pe see ben maid ry  
che of p'ccles of it: for in con our  
it is desolat / heuene & hooh apol  
this & p'phetis: make ze ful out  
woie on it: for god hay demyd you  
re dom of it: and o strong angel  
took wy a stoon as a greet myl  
ne stoon: & kette into pe see: & lei  
de / i pis bre pilke greet citee  
babiloyu shal be sent: & now it  
shal no more be foundu: & pe vo  
ys of harpis: & of me of musyk.  
& seynge wip pype & tripe:  
shal no more be foundu in it: &  
pe vois of myne stoon shal no  
more be herd in pee: & pe lyzt  
of lanterne shal no more shi  
ne to pee: & pe vois of pe hole  
boute & of pe wyf shal no mo  
ze ze be herd in pee: for in mar  
chantis weren p'ccis of pe erpe  
for in pi wickidraffis: alle folkis  
erride: & pe blood of p'ccetis &  
seynis is foundu in it: & of alle  
men p'ben slayn in erpe: **C. xix.**

**A**fter pes vignis / heide: as  
a greet vois of many tri  
pis in heuene: leyge alle  
thya / heringe & gloze & vertu is  
herd in it: & ech crafti ma & ech  
craft: shal no more be

to our god: for trewe & iust ben  
pe domes of hi: which demyde of  
pe greet hoore pat desolide pe  
erpe in hir lecherie: & vengide  
pe blood of his seruautis: of pe  
hoondis of hir: & eft pei leide al  
lethya: & pe smoke of it steyr  
vp: into pe wordis of wordis /  
& pe foune & tweinty senyours:  
& four beestis felden don: & wor  
thypide god sittege on pe trone.  
& leide ame: allethya: & adois we  
te out of pe trone: & leide / alle pe  
seruautis of our god sepe ze he  
rygis to our god: & ze p'dreden  
god: smale & grete: & / herde a  
vois of a greet tripe: as pe vois  
of many watris: & as pe vois  
of grete p'ndis seynge allethya:  
for our lord god almyty hay reg  
ned / joye we & make we myrre:  
& zyne gloze to hi: for pe weddi  
gis of pe lomb came: & pe wyf  
of hi made redy hir sulf: & it is  
zoun to hir: pat she keuer hir  
wip whyt billyn thynnyge: for  
why billyn is iustifynge of  
seynis: & he leide to me / wite pou  
blelid ben pei p'ben clepid to pe  
soper of weddigis of pe lomb:  
& he leide to me / pes wordis of  
god ben trewe: & / felde don bi  
foze his feet: to worthype hym /  
& he leide to me / se pou p'pon do  
not / I am a seruant wip pee &  
of pi bzyere: hauyge pe witnes  
sig of ihu: worthype pou god:  
for pe witneslig of ihu: is spirit  
of p'fecie / and / I say: heuene ope  
nyd: & lo a whyt hozl: & he p'sat  
on hi was clepid fer ful & loyfast:  
& wip ryzthysness he demey &



firtip / 7 pe pzen of hi were as fla  
 me of fper: 7 in his heed ma  
 ny diademes / 7 he hadde a name  
 writen. Which no man knew: but  
 he / 7 he was clopid in a clop sp  
 reyn / wip blood: 7 pe name of  
 hi was depid pe sone of god: 7  
 pe oostis p ben in heuene: fuede  
 hym on whyte horsis. clopid w  
 bulryn whyt 7 dene: 7 a swerd  
 tharp on ech syde cam forp of  
 his mony: p wip it he smyte  
 folkis / 7 he shal reule hem wip  
 an yru zerd / 7 he tredip pe prest  
 of wipn of strong / 7 eiauce of pe  
 drappe of almyti god: 7 he har  
 writen in his clop 7 in pe heme:  
 King of kyngis 7 lord of lordis.  
 And I say: an angel stonde in  
 pe sune: 7 he crieð wip greet wol  
 7 leide to alle briddis p floken by  
 pe myddel of heuene / come ze 7  
 be ze gaderid to pe greet laper  
 of god: 7 ze ete pe fleish of figs.  
 7 fleish of tribunes. 7 fleish of  
 trouge me 7 fleish of horsis 7  
 of po p satty on hem / 7 pe fleish  
 of alle fre me 7 bonde me: 7 of  
 smale 7 of grete / 7 I say: pe be  
 est 7 pe kyngis of erpe. 7 pe oostis  
 of hem gaderid: to make batel w  
 hi p sant on pe hors 7 wip his ost  
 7 pe beest was canzt: 7 wip hir  
 pe fall p fete. p made signes by  
 fore hir / in whiche he dilleuue  
 hem p toke pe carect of pe beest.  
 7 p wipstipede pe ymage of it /  
 pes tkeyne weren sent quike  
 into pe pool of fper: brenyng  
 wip bymstoon 7 re ope were  
 slayn wip pe swerd of hy pat  
 satt on pe hors pat comen forp

of pe mony of hy. 7 alle briddis  
 were fillid wip pe fleish of he  
 And I say: an  
 angel comyge don fro  
 heuene. hanng pe kepe  
 of tephelle: 7 a greet chayne i his  
 hond / and he canzte pe dragon pe  
 elde serpent. p is pe denel 7 eadha  
 nas: 7 and he boond hi bi a pouled  
 zeeris / and he sente hi into dep  
 nelle 7 doliue on hi: 7 he dilleue  
 no more pe folkis. til a poulend ze  
 ris be fillid / after pes pigis it bi  
 honer hym to be vuboudu a hel  
 tyme. And I say: seetis. 7 pe  
 saten on hem: 7 doom was zom  
 to he / 7 pe sonis of me biheebid  
 for pe wipneillig of whi: 7 for pe  
 word of god 7 he p wipstipede  
 not pe beest. ney pe ymage of  
 it: ney token pe carect of it in  
 her forhedis ney in her hondis.  
 7 pei lyuede: 7 reguede wip eit a  
 poulend zeeris / ope of leed men  
 lyuede not: til a poulend zeeris  
 ben endid / pis is pe firtte aser y  
 lig / blelid 7 hooly is he p har pa  
 rt in pe firtte asenrylig: 7 pes  
 me: pe secude deap har not power:  
 but pei shule be p firs of god 7  
 of crist: 7 pei shulen regue wip  
 hia poulynd zeeris / 7 whie a  
 poulend zeeris shule be endid:  
 sathanas shal be vuboudu of  
 his prilon / 7 he shal gon out 7  
 shal dilleue folkis. p ben on  
 four corneris of pe erpe: gog  
 7 magog / and he shal gadze he  
 into batel: whos nothie is as  
 pe gravel of pe see / 7 pei shule  
 up on pe broodnesse of erpe: 7  
 euyzornede pe castels of sey

tis 7 pe loved citee: 7 her cam don  
 of god fro heuene: 7 denouride he  
 7 pe denel p dilleuue he: was  
 sent into pe pool of fier: 7 of bym  
 stoon wher bope pe beest 7 falli  
 profetis shule be tirmetid day  
 7 nyzt: into woldis of woldis  
 amen. And I say: a greet wipst  
 trone: 7 oon sitrige on it: fro wh  
 os hte erpe fledge 7 heuene 7 pe  
 place is not foundu of he / and  
 7 syz deede me grete 7 smale ston  
 dige in pe lizt of pe trone: 7 bo  
 pis were openyd: 7 deede me we  
 ren demyd of pes pigis p were  
 writen in pe bookis after pe wer  
 tis of hem / 7 pe se zaf hile deede  
 me p were in it / 7 deap 7 helle  
 zane her deede me: pat weren  
 in hem / 7 it was demyd of ech: af  
 tar pe wer tis of he 7 helle 7 deap  
 were sent into pe pool of fier:  
 pis is pe secude deap: 7 he p was  
 not foundu writen in pe book of  
 lyf: was sent into pe pool of fier.  
 And I say: ne  
 be heuene 7 newe erpe  
 for pe firtte heuene 7 pe  
 firtte erpe wente away: 7 pe see  
 is not now: 7 John say: pe hooli  
 citee ierlm newe. comyge don  
 fro heuene maid redy of god.  
 as a wyf ourned to hir huse bon  
 de. And I herde a greet / vois  
 fro pe trone: seynge / lo pe ta  
 bernacle of god is wip me: 7  
 he shal dwelle wip hem / 7 pei  
 shulen be his peple: 7 he god  
 wip hem shal be her god: 7 god  
 shal wippe away ech teer fro pe  
 yze of hem / 7 deap shal no more  
 be. ney mozyng ney crying:

ney sorwe shal be ouer: whiche  
 firtte pigis wente away: 7 he  
 seide p sat in pe trone / lo I ma  
 ke alle pigis newe: 7 he seide to  
 me / write p for pes wordis be  
 moost feyful 7 trewe: 7 he sei  
 de to me / it is don / I am alpha  
 7 oo. pe bigynng 7 ende / I shal  
 byue firtly of pe welle of quike  
 watir: to hi pat wurstip / he pat  
 shal oucome: shal welde pes  
 pigis / 7 I shal be god to hi: 7 he  
 shal be sone to me / but to ferd  
 ful me 7 vnbileueful 7 cursid  
 7 maquellers 7 fornycatours.  
 7 to wicthys 7 wipsthipers of y  
 dols 7 to alle lyeris: pe part of  
 hem shal be in pe pool brenyng  
 wip fier 7 bymstoon. p is pe se  
 cude deap. And oon cam of pe  
 leuene angels hanng / 7 whis  
 fulle of pe laste seuene veyn  
 ces: 7 he spak wip me 7 seide / co  
 me pou 7 I shal ltheue to pee  
 pe spouelle pe wyf of pe lomb  
 7 he took me up in spyr it: into  
 a greet hul 7 hys 7 he ltheuue to  
 me pe hooly citee ierlm comyge  
 don fro heuene of god: hanng  
 pe clerece of god / 7 pe lizt of it  
 lyt a pcioul stoon: as pe stoon fal  
 pis. as cristall / 7 it hadde a walle  
 greet 7 hys: hanng twelue zatis /  
 7 in pe zatis of it twelue angels:  
 7 names of twelue lynagis of pe  
 sonis of irael / fro pe east 7 ze  
 tis. 7 fro pe uozp 7 ze zatis. 7 fro  
 pe loup 7 ze zatis. 7 fro pe west  
 7 ze zatis / 7 pe walle of pe citee  
 hadde twelue fundamētis: 7 i he  
 pe twelue names of twelue a  
 postlis 7 of pe lomb: 7 he p spak



Wip me hadde a goldil mefne of  
a rehede: p he shulde mete pe  
citee & pe zatis of it & pe wal  
& pe citee was sett in a squar  
and pe lengpe of it is so moche  
as moche as is pe brede: & he  
p mant pe citee wip pe rehede  
bi fur longis tibelie ponfdis  
& pe hize & pe lengpe & brede  
of it: ben euene: & he mant pe  
wallis of it of an hundid & fou  
re & forty cubitis: bi mefne  
of ma p is of an engel and pe  
bildig of pe wal pof was of  
pe stoon jaspis: & pe citee it self  
was clene gold lyk clene glas  
& pe fundemetis of pe wal of pe  
citee: weren ourned wip al pre  
cious stoon: pe furste fundemet:  
jaspis: pe secide: safyris: pe  
rynde calledonyis: pe fourpe:  
smaragdus: pe fynepe: sardo  
ny: pe sytte: sardus: pe seu  
pe: crisolite: pe eytpe berulhis  
pe nynepe: topfius: pe tēpe an  
lopasshis: pe enleupe: jacinth  
pe trefpe amantus: And tibel  
ne zatis ben tibelie margari  
tis: bi ech & ech zate was of ech  
margarite. **A**nd pe stretis of  
pe cite were clene gold: as of  
glas ful thynge: & i say: no  
teple i it: for pe lord god almy  
ty & pe lomb: is temple of it  
& pe citee hay no nede of sūne  
nef moone: p pei thynne in it  
for pe clere of god thal lize  
ne it: & pe lomb is pe lantern  
of it: and folkis thulen walke  
in lize of it: & pe kigis of erpe  
thule bryge her gloze & hono  
into it: & pe zatis of it thulen

not be cloid bi day: & myzt thal  
not be pere: & pei thule bryge  
pe gloze & honour of folkis ito  
it: nef ony mā defoulid i doyn  
ge abhominacion & leessing: it  
hal entre into it: but pei pat be  
writu: in pe booke of lize: & of pe  
lomb: **E** **M** **I** **I**  
**A**nd he thulde to me  
a flood of quyle watir  
thynge as cristall: comyge to  
yp of pe seete of god & of pe lomb  
in pe myddil of pe street of it:  
on ech side of pe flood: pe tree  
of lize bryngyge foz tibelie fr  
uytis: zeldige his fruyt bi ech  
monepe: & pe leeuys of pe tree:  
ben to helpe of folkis: & ech cur  
lid pig thal no moze be: but pe  
seetis of god & of pe lomb thule  
be in it: & pe seruaitis of hi: th  
ulen serue to hi: & pei thule se  
his face & his name in her forhe  
dis: & myzt thal no moze be: pei  
thulen not hane nede to pe lize  
of lantern: nef to lize of sūne  
for pe lord god thal lize he: & pei  
thulen regue into wordis of wor  
ldis: & he seide to me: pes wordis  
ben most feryful & trewe: & pe lord  
god of spiris of pferis: sente his  
angel: to thelwe his seruaitis:  
what pigs it bihouey to be don  
soone: And lo: come swyfeld: bled  
lid is he: p keppe pe wordis of pro  
fecie of pis booke: & i am iohn: p  
herde & sy: pes pigs: and afir  
ward p: i hadde herd & seyn: i fel  
de don: to wortthipe bifole pe feet  
of pe angel p thewide to me: pes  
pigs: & he seide to me: se pou pat  
p do not: for i am seruait is pee

& of p bryeren pferis: & of hem v  
kepen pe wordis of pferie of pis  
booke: wortthipe p god: And he sei  
de to me: signe ep seele pou not  
pe wordis of pferie of pis booke:  
for pe tyme is ny: he pat noyep:  
noye he zit: and he p is in filpis:  
were foul zit: & a mit mā: be ml  
tified zit: & pe hooly be halewid  
zit: lo: i come soone: & ny meede  
wip me: to zelde to ech man afte  
his werkis: i am alpha & oo: pe  
furste & pe laste: bryngyge & ede  
blelid be pei p iwanthen her sto  
ohis: p pe power of hem be i pe  
tree of lize: & entu bi pe zatis in  
to pe citee: for wipoute fozp: hoi  
dis & wicthis & vichast me & mā  
quelleris: & seruyge to idols: &  
ech y loney & makep leessig: i ihc  
sente ny angel to wituelle to f  
pes pigs in churchis: i am pe roo  
te & lize of damp: & pe thynge  
moze steri: & pe spirit & pe spou  
selle: seyen: come pou: and he pat  
heerip: seye come pou: & he pat  
pistip come: & he pat wole: take  
he freely pe watir of lize: & i wa  
nelle to ech mā: heerige pe wordis  
of pferie of pis booke: if ony mā  
thal putte to pes pigs: god th  
al putte on hy: pe veiancis wri  
tu in pis booke: & if ony mā do a  
wey of pe wordis of pe booke of p  
profecie: god thal take a wey pe  
part of hi fro pe booke of lize: & fro  
pe hooly citee: & fro pes pigs p be  
writu i pis booke: he seyn p berip wa  
nellig of pes pigs: ihe amē: i co  
me soone amē: come p lord ihu: pe  
gite of our lord ihu cr: be wip zoi  
alle amē. **A**nd edw apocalips  
of iohn: pe ende of pe newe testamet



**H**er bygynnyng a rule par tellip in whiche chapitris of pe bible ze mon fynde  
 ye leuous patris a goqels par ven rad by al pe zeer in holy churchie.  
**First sonday in aduent** Mathew xxi. d. And we knowen **ende** Cloyd in pe lord shi at /  
**Wednesday** James .v. b. Be ze patient til **ende** of same in hys pyns /  
**Friday** Mark .i. a. pe bigynnyng of **ende** zou i pe name of yelod /  
 Isaye li. a. Heerly me ze par **ende** zou in pe yoli goost /  
 ag. iij. a. In po dayes ioun **ende** of generaciouns /  
**Monday** Romis xv. b. ffor what ende yi **ende** her synnes /  
**Wednesday** Luk xxi. c. Tokenes schule be **ende** of pe holy goost /  
 Sadurie viij. b. I am turned azen **ende** schulen not passe /  
 ag. xi. c. I am turned azen **ende** and i rztlyfthede /  
**Friday** Isaye lvi. d. Truly i sey to zou **ende** of leryng heere he /  
 Ioon i. d. Upon yi wallis ie **ende** and not forsaken /  
**Monday** I Corintis iij. a. So a man gentile us **ende** lie hay teeld out /  
**Wednesday** ag. xi. b. Whane ioun i toud **ende** etch man of god /  
 Isaye ii. a. And per schal be i **ende** yi weye bifoze yee /  
**Friday** Isaye vii. c. Pe lord spak to agh **ende** pe lord oure god /  
 Luk i. d. Pe angel gabriel **ende** and chere good /  
 Isaye xi. a. And per schal go **ende** aftir yi word /  
 Luk pe first. e. And marie wos **ende** of hys reynes /  
**Saturday** I saye xix. f. And marie wos **ende** myn heelp /  
**Sunday** ii. lec. I saye xxi. a. pei schulen aye. **ende** pe lord oure god /  
 iii. lec. I saye xxi. a. Glace schal delect **ende** oure lord amyn /  
 iii. lec. I saye xxi. c. Upon an hy tyl **ende** oure lord /  
 iii. lec. I saye xxi. d. pei pyns sey **ende** sey oure lord /  
 v. l. Daniel ii. g. fforsope an angel **ende** i pe lord schap bi /  
 vi. l. Daniel ii. a. We preien zou **ende** in to worldis /  
 vii. l. Daniel ii. a. We preien zou **ende** lztynng of his conyng /  
 viii. l. Daniel ii. a. In pe fyttenep **ende** heelp of god /  
**Monday** I saye iij. b. Jone ze in y lord **ende** in trust ielu /  
 Ioon i. c. Whane ielvis sen **ende** was baptysyng /  
**Wednesday** I oel. ii. g. Jone ze sones of **ende** dwelle in syon /  
 Luk. vii. c. And pis word wate **ende** is more pau he /  
**Friday** Sach. ii. f. Donytir of syon **ende** pe lord amyn /  
 ag. vii. c. Se ze a be war. **ende** sepe to no man /  
**Tristmange** I saye xxi. a. ffor syon i schal na **ende** to pe lord in pee /  
**even** Romis. i. a. Doult ye seruant **ende** of ihu crist /  
 ag. i. d. Whane marie pe **ende** fro her synnes /



the say to re  
fus  
Abona per  
bil of syon

Seragefi  
me



7. *Bra*

111



**Monday** Jonas. iii. a. pe word of pe lord **ende** and dide not/  
 Ioon. vii. f. pe prins & pe fan **ende** schulden take/  
**Tuesday** Daniel. xii. e. zene to us daniel **ende** lake of Ihouis/  
 Ioon. vii. a. Ihe walkide in to ga **ende** of pe Iewis/  
**Wednesday** Ier. xxi. c. pe lord Qak to m **ende** lauis hepe ze/  
 Ioon. x. e. ffeetis of halew **ende** i in pe fadre/  
**Thursday** Daniel. iii. h. Daniel fiete pe **ende** wouneft of eris/  
 Ioon. vii. g. perfor of par ayn **ende** in to his hous/  
**Friday** Ier. xxi. d. Iord alle pat fars **ende** to trede hem/  
 Ioon. xi. g. perfor pe bichapis **ende** hile discaphis/  
**Saturday** Ier. xxi. e. pe wulde men of **ende** in woodneft/  
 Ioon. vi. k. Gruli truli i sey to **ende** con of pe tielne/  
**Palme** I. Irod. x. a. pe Iones forlope **ende** appende i a cloude/  
**Sunday** I. Ioon. xii. c. I myche puple p **ende** wente aftir hi/  
 I. Ier. xxi. d. ffele ze pis ping **ende** of god pe fadre/  
 I. Ier. xxi. e. ze wren pat aft **ende** + conteynen tweje chap  
**Monday** I. Ier. xxi. d. Iord god aene to. **ende** he on his god/  
 I. Ioon. xii. a. Ihu cam bifore v **ende** dileuete in ihu/  
**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. e. pou lord forlope **ende** thewid my cause/  
 I. Ier. xxi. a. Dack & pe fette **ende** and comeyney ii. chap.  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. g. Sei ze to pe dour **ende** zolten to us/  
 I. Ier. xxi. a. Who leuete to o **ende** for trepassours/  
**Thursday** I. Ier. xxi. a. pe halidat of perf **ende** + conteynen almoft ii. c.  
**Friday** I. Ier. xxi. c. Whane ze comen **ende** wir pis world/  
 I. Ioon. xii. a. Bifore pe fette **ende** to zoi. so to ze/  
**Saturday** I. Ier. xxi. d. In Ier tribulacou **ende** + not sacrifice/  
**Good** I. Ier. xxi. a. pe lord forlope **ende** fory of pe lord/  
**Sunday** I. Ier. xxi. e. he wente out is **ende** + conteynen ii. chap.  
 I. Ier. xxi. a. In pe fiste god **ende** harte fuffillid/  
 I. Ier. xxi. e. And now pe mo **ende** to pe lord. + lete/  
**Monday** I. Ier. xxi. a. And leuete w **ende** and fro reyn/  
**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. e. Moyses wrot a **ende** vnto ye **ende**/  
 I. Ier. xxi. a. If ze han m **ende** way in glorie/  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. a. In ye enentid of pe **ende** bifore leid to zoi/  
**Thursday** I. Ier. xxi. c. Cleste ze out ye **ende** and of trupe/  
**Friday** I. Ier. xxi. a. Marye maudelem **ende** he leide to zoi/  
**Saturday** I. Ier. xxi. h. ze witen pe word. **ende** by his name/  
**Monday**

**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. c. To tibeine of he **ende** brekige of breod/  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. f. Bysen & Iones **ende** azeireide ihu/  
**Thursday** I. Ier. xxi. e. Ihe stood in pe m **ende** to alle folkis/  
**Friday** I. Ier. xxi. c. Petr ap. & au **ende** be teen a wey/  
**Saturday** I. Ier. xxi. a. Ihe cfrsone Iche **ende** azein fro deap/  
**Sunday** I. Ier. xxi. e. pe angel of pe **ende** cam to celarpe/  
**Monday** I. Ier. xxi. c. Marye acoo at ye **ende** leide to me/  
**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. f. Crist onys diete **ende** wylfalk of god/  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. e. Saluene discap **ende** of pe world/  
**Thursday** I. Ier. xxi. a. Putte ze a wey al **ende** ze han mersy/  
**Friday** I. Ier. xxi. a. In o day of pe wo **ende** azen fro deap/  
**Saturday** I. Ier. xxi. b. Al ping pt is twi **ende** of god in hym/  
**Sunday** I. Ier. xxi. d. Whane it was e **ende** list in his name/  
**Monday** I. Ier. xxi. c. If cult is wechid **ende** man in his ordi/  
**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. d. Ihe was eerly pe **ende** teelden to ope/  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. e. Obepe ze to zoi **ende** of worldis and  
**Thursday** I. Ier. xxi. b. Marye maudelei **ende** in to pis day/  
**Friday** I. Ier. xxi. f. Crist suffite for **ende** of oure soulis/  
**Saturday** I. Ier. xxi. c. I am a good lye **ende** and o sheepherte/  
**Sunday** I. Ier. xxi. e. Writige pat not **ende** wir outen **ende**/  
**Monday** I. Ier. xxi. a. In o day of pe wo **ende** pat p was toen/  
**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. d. If poen pe gilt of **ende** cult oure lord/  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. d. pe discaphis of i **ende** tope ben kept/  
**Thursday** I. Ier. xxi. d. I biseche zoi as **ende** to turenris/  
**Friday** I. Ier. xxi. d. Al lital & pane ze **ende** f zoi zoe ioye/  
**Saturday** I. Ier. xxi. a. my lital Iones i **ende** lrt schyne now/  
**Sunday** I. Ier. xxi. f. A question was **ende** dwellyn in hym/  
**Monday** I. Ier. xxi. b. ffor alle ze ben ye **ende** edifie ze eth oyr/  
**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. y. I lrt cam in to **ende** so i lrtke/  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. d. Ich good zite & **ende** saue zoiure sonlis/  
**Thursday** I. Ier. xxi. b. I go to hi pat sen **ende** telle to zoi/  
**Friday** I. Ier. xxi. a. Ryle ze haue pe **ende** reisy doom/  
**Saturday** I. Ier. xxi. c. Holy fadir hepe **ende** hem fro yuel/  
**Sunday** I. Ier. xxi. f. ze seen pat ama **ende** werhis is deed/  
**Monday** I. Ier. xxi. f. I lital Iones i **ende** sue afturward/  
**Tuesday** I. Ier. xxi. f. Be ze doers of pe **ende** and fro pis world/  
**Wednesday** I. Ier. xxi. h. Gruli truli i sey **ende** out fro god/

7 per mact out  
 hope aue



**Procession** James. v. f. knowleche ze ech **ceude** multitude of synes/  
**moneday** Luk. xi. b. who of you schal **ceude** pat aȝen hym/  
**Ascenaon** Mat. iij. f. Of ye multitude **ceude** was need to ech.  
**Ascenaon** Jon. xviij. a. Whane he hadde **ceude** come to pee/  
**Ascenaon** Mat. i. a. Deofle first I made **ceude** in to heuene/  
**Ascenaon** Mat. xvi. f. Whane ye euleuene **ceude** signes toleuinge/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. c. Be ze prudent **ceude** crist omre lord/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. g. Whane pe confort **ceude** I toold to you/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. pat also ze sit be **ceude** wy outen **ceude**/  
**Soneday** Luk. x. ij. I schal sente pe bi **ceude** + blessinge god/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. God tēptide alpa **ceude** dwelte pere/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. f. moyses wrot a so **ceude** fustilide it/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. And seueue **ceude** and hydyng/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. Heere pon is I pe **ceude** lōnete is men/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. It bifel whane ap **ceude** kīdom of god/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. c. It ze loue me ke **ceude** to him my silt/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. Whane pe dayes **ceude** pingis of god/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. If ony man loney **ceude** to me so I to/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. g. Petir openete his **ceude** pe lord ihu crist/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. God louete so pe **ceude** doen in god/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. c. Whane ye apollis **ceude** pe holy goost/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. Truli I seȝ to you **ceude** plenteuouly/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. Ione ze nȝtlyfne **ceude** har of vois/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. f. Petre stōd wy pe **ceude** schal be last/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. i. No man may come **ceude** of pe world/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. g. ffilyp cam down **ceude** in pat cytee/  
**Soneday** Luk. ix. a. Twelue apollis **ceude** enerywhere/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. e. men of isrl heere **ceude** wy pi face/  
**Soneday** Luk. v. e. It was doen of d. **ceude** pingis to day/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. I schal heelde out **ceude** schal be last/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. c. pe lord spak to m **ceude** lord almyht/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. g. moyses seide to pe **ceude** zonen to pee/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. pe lord spak to m **ceude** to me a peple/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. k. pe angel of pe k. **ceude** I to pe worldis/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. i. Al pe cytee cam **ceude** I pe holy goost/  
**Soneday** Luk. x. f. I hȝt was up fro pe **ceude** kīdom of god/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. I say + lo a toȝe **ceude** of worldis/

**Soneday** Jon. iij. a. per was a man of **ceude** eulaſtunge list/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. For I haue taken **ceude** blood of pe lord/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. l. my fleisch is vili **ceude** wy outen **ceude**/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. c. God is charyte **ceude** also his broȝer/  
**Soneday** Luk. x. e. per was a ȝche **ceude** bileue to hym/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. e. we not synge in **ceude** zoure hertis/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. c. Rle ze ceeme y **ceude** of heuenes/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. Hle ze wondre **ceude** werk + trupe/  
**Soneday** Luk. x. d. A man made a g **ceude** taste my coper/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. e. perfore I seȝ + **ceude** of trupe/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. f. And whane he w. **ceude** yese pingis/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. Be ze mekid vnd **ceude** make sad/  
**Soneday** Luk. x. a. Duplicans + syn **ceude** dinge penāte/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. f. pe lord helpide me **ceude** of worldis amen/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. e. ze pon consēfuge **ceude** in to helle/  
**Soneday** Rom. viij. e. I ceeme pat pe pi **ceude** of omre bodi/  
**Soneday** Luk. vi. g. Be ze iustifil as **ceude** broȝeris ze/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. v. In pis ping we. **ceude** as he walkide/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. c. Hise discipulis an **ceude** fro pat hour/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. f. In seȝ alle of oo **ceude** in zoure hertis/  
**Soneday** Luk. v. a. Whane pe puple **ceude** sueten hym/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. I bideche firste of **ceude** and in trupe/  
**Soneday** Luk. viij. b. It was doen iou **ceude** obeȝen to hym/  
**Soneday** Rom. vi. d. Whiche enē we b. **ceude** crist omre lord/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. But zoure nȝtful **ceude** oȝtre pi zift/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. e. I wrot not to f. **ceude** eulaſtunge list/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. Whane ihc was. **ceude** anentis god/  
**Soneday** Rom. vi. e. I seȝ pat ping y **ceude** ihu omre lord/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. Whane myche pe **ceude** he leste hem/  
**Soneday** Rom. viij. a. Rom no pig of **ceude** list and pees/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. a. I hȝt wente bi cor **ceude** cōtempnyd in oȝer/  
**Soneday** Rom. viij. d. Bryȝen we ben det **ceude** to gūe wy cit/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. d. Be ze war of fal **ceude** of heuenes/  
**Soneday** Rom. v. b. God comendy his **ceude** lord ihu crist/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. g. wailtir we saien **ceude** not quenched/  
**Soneday** Mat. x. b. pat we be not **ceude** moult suffre/  
**Soneday** Luk. x. a. per was a ȝche **ceude** tabernaculis/



**wednesday** Rom. vj. d. Witen ze not þat **ende** of ruffulnesse/  
**luk. xvj.** c. he pat is trewe. **ende** ablygacion biþ to god/  
**.i. Soneday** i. cor. xij. a. ze witen þat iſhu **ende** as he wole/  
**luk. xix.** g. he ſai þe cytee **ende** day in þe temple/  
**wednesday** i. cor. xv. a. Not eþ fleiſch is **ende** þis ſpual/  
**luk. xxi.** b. Take ze heede to **ende** māys ſone/  
**.ii. Soneday** i. cor. xv. c. Briperen i make **ende** voide i me/  
**luk. xxv.** a. he ſeide alſo to **ende** be enhaunſid/  
**wednesday** i. cor. vj. c. Witen ze not þat **ende** i þoure bodi/  
**luk. xxvj.** a. he ſeide alſo to **ende** ſinge to hi/  
**.iii. Soneday** ii. cor. iij. b. We han ſich trit **ende** in gloze/  
**ag. vj.** f. iſt zete our ſið **ende** men ſpeke/  
**wednesday** ii. cor. iij. c. We prechen not. **ende** oure lodies/  
**ag. xj.** e. pane iſt bigan **ende** pan to þou/  
**.iiii. Soneday** Galat. iij. d. Biheedis weteu **ende** pat bileuen/  
**luk. x.** f. Bleſid be þe þe **ende** liſt maner/  
**wednesday** i. cor. x. d. Briperen be ze iſhu **ende** han bileued/  
**ag. xij.** d. þe farices weteu **ende** in his name/  
**.v. Soneday** Gal. v. d. Walke ze i ſpuit **ende** i conerſis/  
**luk. xvi.** d. iſt wente in to **ende** maid yee ſane/  
**wednesday** ii. cor. vi. f. iſt ze here zoli **ende** drete of god/  
**luk. xxi.** d. Don of þe peple **ende** god feediþ he/  
**.vi. Soneday** Gal. v. i. g. If we lyuen bi ſp. **ende** of þe fey/  
**ag. vj.** f. No man mai ſer **ende** caſt to þou/  
**wednesday** i. cor. i. c. We witen þat þe **ende** in caſt iſhu/  
**luk. x.** a. It was doen i þon **ende** peſe yingis/  
**.vii. Soneday** Eſſe. iij. e. I ate þe taile **ende** of woldis/  
**luk. xvj.** b. iſt wente in to a **ende** his puple/  
**wednesday** Colof. ij. c. Se ze þat no man **ende** alle gittis/  
**ag. viij.** e. and þei camen to **ende** to no man/  
**.viii. Soneday** Eſſe. iij. a. I bouiden for þe **ende** in us alle/  
**luk. xxi.** a. Whane he hadde **ende** ſchal be hyed/  
**wednesday** Amos. ij. c. I to dayes comen. **ende** lord þi god/  
**on ymbir** Eſſe. viij. a. All þe peple gade **ende** zoe ſtrengþe/  
**ag. ix.** d. Don of þe tūpam **ende** i ſaſyng/  
**ſſe. xxi.** b. iſt be þou coner **ende** walke i hem/  
**ſſe. xxi.** f. Don of þe farice **ende** þou in pees/

**.i. Soneday** i. cor. i. e. þe lord god ſpak to **ende** halp dayes/  
**ag. x.** f. þe lord god ſpak to **ende** lord þoure god/  
**luk. x.** f. lord oure god ſeþ **ende** f. wite dayes/  
**Saturday** i. cor. x. e. þe word of þe lord **ende** lord of woldis/  
**ag. x.** k. þe angel of þe lord **ende** i to woldis/  
**ag. x.** a. þe tabernacle was. **ende** redempcion/  
**ag. x.** b. Aman hadde a ſige **ende** doen of hym/  
**.ii. Soneday** i. cor. i. d. I to paulingis to i **ende** lord iſhu caſt/  
**ag. x.** f. ffrandes heeringe. **ende** æt hym more  
**wednesday** Rom. x. f. iſt ſeþe þon þy de **ende** þou alle men/  
**ag. x.** f. þe kigdom of þene **ende** of þe world/  
**.iii. Soneday** Eſſe. iij. f. Se ze remilid i þe **ende** to þe uedy/  
**ag. x.** a. iſt wente up i to **ende** priet to he/  
**wednesday** ii. cor. ij. g. Briperen ſtonde ze **ende** paience of ca/  
**ag. x.** g. Diſcipulis came to **ende** of þeris lete he/  
**.iiii. Soneday** Eſſe. v. d. Se ze: hois warly **ende** drete of aſt/  
**ag. x.** a. iſt anſwerite i qut **ende** ſeþe choſen/  
**wednesday** ii. cor. ij. a. Ze confortid iſt **ende** in alle þingis/  
**luk. xxi.** c. he ſeide to hi þe **ende** reſurre of god/  
**.v. Soneday** Eſſe. vi. c. Se ze confortid i þe **ende** þe word of god/  
**joon. iij.** f. Alun k yng was **ende** al his hous/  
**wednesday** i. cor. i. c. ze loued bripen of **ende** þe lord iſhu/  
**luk. vj.** c. It was doen i a no **ende** of iſhu/  
**.vi. Soneday** Philip. i. b. Onaſinge þis ilk **ende** þring of god/  
**ag. x.** f. þe kigdom of þe **ende** þoure heitis/  
**wednesday** Rom. iij. d. We witen þat iſhu **ende** of iſhu caſt/  
**ag. x.** e. Truly i ſeþ to þou **ende** þoure ſynnes/  
**.vii. Soneday** Philip. iij. f. Bripen be ze iſt **ende** ſoget to hym/  
**ag. x.** d. pane farices zete **ende** þen of god/  
**wednesday** Rom. v. d. It þou þe gilt of **ende** caſt oure lord/  
**ag. x.** f. Whane þei came **ende** and for me/  
**.viii. Soneday** Colof. i. c. perfore we ſeþe **ende** of ſynnes/  
**ag. x.** c. Whilis þe iſt qut **ende** camelid to/  
**wednesday** i. cor. i. c. i mple þat ze beu **ende** glorie of god/  
**ag. x.** f. A man hadde tibo **ende** bileuede to hi/  
**.ix. Soneday** i. cor. i. b. I to dayes comen **ende** oure lord/  
**joon. vj.** b. Whane iſhu hadde **ende** i to þe world/







**Goat of petur** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *thi cam i to pe* *ceude* *also i heuenes*  
**S. matthi ap** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *petur was up in* *ceude* *i apollis*  
**Ammon** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *i knowleche to pe* *ceude* *my charge lye*  
**ou of de ladi** *Luk. i.* *d.* *pe lord spak to a* *ceude* *thi se goud*  
**S. George** *James. i.* *a.* *braveren de me ze* *ceude* *p louen hi*  
**mark euas** *Jon. xij.* *b.* *i am a vi vyne* *ceude* *doen to you*  
**scip riod** *Effect. iij.* *b.* *to ech of us ge* *ceude* *pleinte of at*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *a.* *i am a vi vyne* *ceude* *doen to you*  
**scip riod** *Sapient. v.* *a.* *kythi se me schi* *ceude* *of hem is*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *a.* *Be not soe hette* *ceude* *to vis ying*  
**scip riod** *Gal. v.* *c.* *i tride on you in* *ceude* *i to pe wold*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *a.* *per was a man* *ceude* *chastite luf*  
**scip riod** *Effect. iij.* *f.* *How ze ben uot* *ceude* *goud holly goot*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *d.* *vis is my comau* *ceude* *yeue to you*  
**scip riod** *Jer. i.* *b.* *doen is pe word* *ceude* *and plamte*  
**scip riod** *Luk. i.* *a.* *per was a pit zach* *ceude* *to pe lord*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *pe lord sey yese* *ceude* *chosun yee*  
**scip riod** *Luk. i.* *b.* *pe tyme of berug* *ceude* *of his peple*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *petur i ion ben* *ceude* *bifelde to him*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *e.* *thi sey to symon* *ceude* *glorifie god*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *troude pe kyng* *ceude* *peple of ieris*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *thi cam i to pe* *ceude* *also i heuenes*  
**scip riod** *Gal. i.* *c.* *brisen i make* *ceude* *glorifie god*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *petur ansuende* *ceude* *chastite luf*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *e.* *sch bishop taken* *ceude* *of melchisedech*  
**scip riod** *Luk. i.* *f.* *Abrahi man were* *ceude* *up to ierlm*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *a.* *who schal fynde* *ceude* *in ye zatis*  
**scip riod** *Luk. i.* *b.* *Don of ye famer* *ceude* *go pon i pres*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *pe lord sey yese* *ceude* *chosun yee*  
**scip riod** *Luk. i.* *d.* *zacharie seide to* *ceude* *among men*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *yese ben men of* *ceude* *preysing of hi*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *f.* *thi conpelle ye* *ceude* *goudis sone*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *haue ze mynde* *ceude* *lyuer of seiv*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *b.* *it while he spak* *ceude* *sitar i modir*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *How ze ben uot* *ceude* *pe holly goot*  
**scip riod** *Jon. xij.* *d.* *pane pe modir* *ceude* *of my fadu*

**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *I am to pe hous* *ceude* *of pe ppriti*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *thi cam into pe* *ceude* *also in heuenes*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *thi ve bigynnyng* *ceude* *wypholding*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *f.* *It was doen whan* *ceude* *and kepen it*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *In alle yingis i* *ceude* *of smelle*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *b.* *he entide i to a* *ceude* *away fro hir*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *i schal knowleche* *ceude* *anteynyng pe*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *If ony man wole* *ceude* *i his kyngdom*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *he yat souy scarle* *ceude* *soe rithuuelle*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *f.* *Sit a corn of whe* *ceude* *worshipen*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *he p souy scarf* *ceude* *anteynyng*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *b.* *he parlouey fad* *ceude* *not lese his meete*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *Don out ze douris* *ceude* *of gpris*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *he entide i to* *ceude* *away fro hir*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *Blessid is ye ma* *ceude* *to gytere*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *f.* *I am a vi vyne* *ceude* *doen to you*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *How ze ben uot* *ceude* *holly goot*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *b.* *stryf was ind* *ceude* *of israel*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *pe abidng* *ceude* *be eulged*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *troude seide* *ceude* *in abriel*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *thi ve bigynnyng* *ceude* *wypholding*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *f.* *It was doen* *ceude* *+ kepen it*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *I as a vyne* *ceude* *chastite luf*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *b.* *pe look of pegenia* *ceude* *cleud crist*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *i tride on you* *ceude* *you i crist*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *How is ye doom* *ceude* *children of luf*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *How fair is di* *ceude* *i refreliching*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *f.* *It was doen whan* *ceude* *+ kepen it*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *Blissful ye man* *ceude* *sidere weren*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *b.* *thi weente out* *ceude* *to penance*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *c.* *pe liknesse of se* *ceude* *lest schynnyng*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *Blissful ye man* *ceude* *in his blood*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *Discipulis camen* *ceude* *in heuenes*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *f.* *Agreet batel was* *ceude* *diuinen i he*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *a.* *Discipulis camen* *ceude* *in heuenes*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *b.* *pe liknesse of se* *ceude* *schynnyng*

**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *d.* *and thyle poul* *ceude* *recoynge it was*  
**scip riod** *Mat. xij.* *e.* *and thie cam don* *ceude* *moche in heuene*



**euangelist.** Luk. x. a. pe lord ihu oday **ceude** worpi his huyre  
**vigil of s.** Sap. iii. b. pe soules of pe rit **ceude** wip outen **ceude**  
**synod & iude** Ioon. xv. c. I am a vyne. ze pe **ceude** be doen to you/  
**S. Symour** Rom. viii. d. we witen p<sup>r</sup> to nie **ceude** oure lord/  
**day & iude ap<sup>r</sup>** Ioon. xv. e. pis is my coman **ceude** xue to you/  
**alhalawen.** Ipe. v. f. I say & lo in pe mnd **ceude** of wordis/  
**euen** Ioon. xv. g. holy fadir kepe **ceude** & I in hem/  
**alhalawen** Ipe. vii. h. I say a noy angel **ceude** of wordis amen/  
**day** q<sup>r</sup>. v. i. ihu seluge pe pu **ceude** in heuenes/  
**Wie coulen** J. tel. iiii. j. we wolen not p<sup>r</sup> **ceude** in yere wordis/  
**day** Ioon. xi. k. martha seide to ihu **ceude** to pis world/  
**S. clement** filip. iiii. l. my berperen moost **ceude** bok of luf/  
**Iuk. xix.** m. Anworpi ma wete **ceude** to ierlm/  
**There eendip ye p<sup>r</sup>opre cautoy. and bigymep ye comou saay**  
**for pope** J. de. v. a. Esh bishop taken **ceude** of melchisedech/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. b. Se ze wake ze **ceude** wake ze/  
**Iuk. xix.** c. Al worpi man we **ceude** in to ierlm/  
**for bishop** Esh. xiii. d. Rule ze led a wey **ceude** is disterued/  
**& martir** fil. iiii. e. my berperen moost **ceude** pe bok of luf/  
**Iuk. xix.** f. Esh bishop take **ceude** of melchisedech/  
**for bishop** q<sup>r</sup>. x. g. No ping is hid. **ceude** is in heuenes/  
**& martir** Esh. xiii. h. Rule ze be led a **ceude** is disterued/  
**Iuk. xix.** i. I am a vi vyne. **ceude** doen to you/  
**for bishop** J. de. vii. j. we ben maid a q<sup>r</sup> **ceude** denborpe sones/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. x. k. whane pei p<sup>r</sup>luen **ceude** dret ze not he/  
**Iuk. xix.** l. No man holdige **ceude** heueli gloue/  
**for bishop** J. de. vii. m. Be p<sup>r</sup> m<sup>r</sup>ful. but p<sup>r</sup> haat **ceude** p<sup>r</sup>secutio/  
**& martir** Iuk. x. n. Ihe p<sup>r</sup> henry zou **ceude** writu in hauenes  
**king & m<sup>r</sup>** B. al. xiii. o. Bliffid is pe ma **ceude** of halewis/  
**Iuk. xix.** p. It ony man comep **ceude** my discipulis/  
**for bishop** B. al. li. q. my lord god pou **ceude** of pe lord/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. r. pe lugdom of heue **ceude** pigis & colde/  
**Iuk. xix.** s. I schal knowledy **ceude** sustepynge yee/  
**for bishop** B. al. li. t. pe lord hay zouen **ceude** be bleffid/  
**& martir** J. de. vii. u. Of vugyns I ha **ceude** ladi & spuyt/  
**virginus & m<sup>r</sup>** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. v. pe lugdo of heue. **ceude** day ne ye hour/  
**Iuk. xix.** w. Howe fair is a da **ceude** i refraichyng/  
**Sap. iiii.**

B. al. xiii. p. ma is bleffid  
 lord oure god. q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. r. It ony  
 ma wote an his kyngdom

**martris** math. xvi. a. pe reuine luk to ten. **ceude** ne ye hour/  
**for bishop** B. al. li. b. any lord you haat **ceude** name of pe lord/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. c. pe lugdo lsk to tre **ceude** yingis & colde/  
**Iuk. xix.** d. whiche bi fey ouer **ceude** wunetig of fey/  
**for bishop** J. de. vii. e. But a toen of wyl **ceude** wordchpe hi/  
**& martir** B. al. li. f. blaid is pe ma **ceude** of halewis/  
**Iuk. xix.** g. It ony man wole **ceude** i his kyngdo/  
**for bishop** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. h. I wunet distore **ceude** his conyng/  
**& martir** Iuk. xix. i. Strif was maid **ceude** lymedis of iust/  
**for bishop** J. de. vii. j. Streu ful of g<sup>r</sup> and yet **ceude** he dret/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. k. lo I sente to zou **ceude** name of pe lord/  
**Iuk. xix.** l. ze dredynge ye lo **ceude** is pe lord / ony s<sup>r</sup>/  
**for bishop** B. al. li. m. So ze i to al ye w. **ceude** were hool/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. n. I schal knowledy **ceude** sustepynge yee/  
**Iuk. xix.** o. Esh ze be lad a **ceude** god is disterued/  
**for bishop** Esh. xiii. p. pe nrtibit forso **ceude** chosen of hi/  
**& martir** Iuk. xix. q. Be ze war of soue **ceude** angels of god/  
**Iuk. xix.** r. pat man is bleffid **ceude** lord oure god/  
**for bishop** B. al. li. s. No ping is hid. **ceude** p<sup>r</sup> is i heuenes/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. t. Esh bishop tak **ceude** of melchisedech/  
**Iuk. xix.** u. Ihe wente a dou **ceude** his nyp corn/  
**for bishop** Sap. v. v. nrtibit mie for **ceude** certeyn place/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. w. whane pei p<sup>r</sup>luen **ceude** dte ze not he/  
**Iuk. xix.** x. whane hure ren **ceude** myche i heuene/  
**for bishop** J. de. vii. y. we ben maid a f **ceude** denborpe sones/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. z. lo I sente zou as **ceude** schal be saif/  
**Iuk. xix.** aa. pe soules of rity **ceude** wip oute **ceude**/  
**for bishop** Sap. iiii. ab. whane ze schulen **ceude** i to wunetig/  
**& martir** Iuk. xix. ac. bleffid is pe man **ceude** iweren to gidere/  
**Iuk. xix.** ad. Ihe v<sup>r</sup> henry zou **ceude** writu i heuenes  
**for bishop** B. al. li. ae. pe lord ladde pe rit **ceude** eulastinge deernede/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. af. A ma par goep i pil **ceude** ioye of y lord/  
**Iuk. xix.** ag. any lord god pou **ceude** name of pe lord/  
**for bishop** B. al. li. ah. Se ze wake ze & **ceude** wake ze/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. ai. lo ye ariet preit. **ceude** smel of swetnede/  
**Iuk. xix.** aj. pe lord hay zoue. **ceude** be bleffid/  
**for bishop** B. al. li. ak. ze ben saif of ety **ceude** sa i heuenes/  
**& martir** q<sup>r</sup>. xiii. al.

for bishop  
 &



**confessours** Sap. x. **v.** pe lord lade pe **ceute** chylatige cleernes/  
 Luk. xix. **v.** A bovy man wen **ceute** up to ierlm/  
 Sap. viii. **a.** wisdom oucomy **ceute** iherlm of hi/  
 Mt. xv. **a.** pe kyngdm of to **ceute** ne pe hour/  
 ij cor. x. **a.** the pat gloney in **ceute** vgyu to crst/  
 Jer. i. **b.** daen is pe word **ceute** + plaunte/  
**virgin not** Luk. i. **a.** per was a ppet **ceute** to pe lord/  
**martr** Mat. iij. **a.** qd lord god pou **ceute** of pe lord/  
 Mt. xii. **a.** pe kyngdm lyk to **ceute** vrgis + colde/  
 S. ioh. vi. **f.** pe ope weie maad **ceute** offrige hi list/  
 Luk. xii. **f.** Be joe leendis god **ceute** schal come/  
**Confessour** Mat. xii. **a.** pe lord har joue **ceute** be blestid/  
**+ doctour** Mt. v. **v.** ze deu salt of pe **ceute** is i hermes/  
 Sap. x. **a.** pe lord lade pe ngt **ceute** detenend/  
 Mt. xii. **f.** Se ze wake ze + **ceute** wake ze/  
 Mat. xii. **a.** pe iustise man **ceute** i to genacou/  
**for an abbot** Luk. x. **f.** so man tendy a **ceute** lgt to pee/

Theere cendy pe table upon pe table upon pe tennal and upon pe  
 propre scoz. and upon pe comoun scoz of pistis + gospels of pe  
 newe lawe pat den led in pe churche poun pe zeer: wip pe cotraous  
 of he where ye schulen be founden i pe zeer/



from the myddys of September unto the myddys of December is open tyme of plantyng and yet from the  
myddys of January unto the myddys of March is right good tyme if gode wille whan ye wyne is dry & vny-  
ed up dayer clere & felle lene | xxij . xxviij . xxxiiij . xxxviii . xlv . dages after the cometyng  
if it is gode to graffe in oz in dayer before ye change  
the for plantyng of al maner thyng the day of the change the secunde and the iii<sup>d</sup>  
the best dayer.

Dintte a stotte of welsh in ye erth in a longe pitte lyke a fozell, and lette hit growe, pan a bone in ye  
 make holey enelonge in whar dyfyst put smale byndes of a mulberry tree cutte in wyse of weggys at  
 plantynge endir to stonde iuste in ye dyfyst, wch hole shal be fast with erth, and hyde ye stotte wel w<sup>th</sup>  
 and noon oper tree shal peryshe yat is plantid in this wyse, after ye first yer or ye seconde yer salte  
 alwys ye brambling with a sharpe salve and transplante him in apte places.  
 make a bare place ye quantite of ij fygge brede in a faw bolle of aspelence or pearce, claye hit, and  
 hit fast with mosse as ye doo in hynging, and so sette it growe al ye yer, and yer wol rise a greet  
 and ye next yer ye may unbynde it, and set it wher ye desire, and thus may ye haue a gardyn in  
 tyme of greetnesse of a gode stasse.  
 Take longe rodys dryse and sette him in a moysse grounde or in a moysse grounde by thene the ij. sep  
 many dayes, and than a none vpon asphelmasse sleve ye rodys atter ende and put ye rodys darre in  
 ye erth, and so lette him growe, and in euery fore whan seson comyth sette a grasse, and so let it be  
 al ye next yer than salve of euery kynde and in tyme of seson sette him, and within ij. or 4. yer  
 ye may haue a fygge gardyne without coke that wol be ye second or ye thirde yer saluagely.  
 Slofys also of trees sette in tyme of yer wol be sone, but it wol be longe or they be greet  
 Take ye harde peppys of rose yat ben ripe, and solwe him in ye erth in ffeirel or in marche, d  
 whan yey sprynge delbe him wel with water, and after a yer complete y<sup>e</sup> mayste transplante by  
 delbe a bone ye rose y<sup>e</sup> space of an hand brede or ij. And ayoyste her growys with warme water  
 so mayste y<sup>e</sup> haue roses tyndy.  
 Bynde Onyon rede or leke seed in a sotte lymmen clowse, wete him wel and putte in ye erth mo  
 in spring depe, so shal thay wege greet.  
 Grasse on an holme tree a grasse of an Oke, and it shal be grene wynt<sup>r</sup> and somer



